

HER YÖNÜYLE İNGİLİZCE DİL BİLGİSİ

MASTERING ENGLISH GRAMMAR

- * En geniş dilbilgisi kapsamı**
- * Ayrıntılı dilbilgisi açıklamaları**
- * 733 Alıştırma**
- * ANAHTAR**

AYHAN SEZER



Mastering English Grammar (MEG), Türkçe konuşurlara, İngilizce dilbilgisini öğretmek amacıyla, anadili Türkçe olan, dil eğitimiyle uğraşan ve kendisi de dil öğrenen bir dilbilimci tarafından hazırlanmıştır. Burada Türk kültürümüze özgü alçakgönüllüğü bir kenara bırakıp MEG'in çok az dilbilgisi kitabının sahip olduğu bilimselliğe uygun altyapıya en çok yaklaşan bir dilbilgisi kitabı olduğunu belirtmek istiyorum.

Mastering English Grammar (MEG), bir dilbilgisi kitabıdır. Yaşayan, soluk alan, toplumu yansıtın İngilizce'nin dilbilgisi kitabıdır. Kitapta, günlük yaşam, politika, sağlık, tarih, eğitim, edebiyat, toplum sorunları çerçevesinde gerçek kullanım örnekleri sunulmaktadır. Örneğin, Chapter 1'de tümce ögelerinin tanıtımı için kullanılan

American Indians	became the victims of the most merciless genocide.
------------------	---

gibi tümce örnekleri doğrudan gerçek dünya bilgisi aktaran metinlere dayanırmaktadır. Bu bölümdeki tümceler, Federal Kızılderili İşleri Bürosu Başkanı Kevin Gover'in 8 Eylül 2000 günü yaptığı, Kızılderililerden, kendi bürosu adına —Beyaz Saray günümüze kadar Kızılderililerden resmen özür dilememiştir— özür dileyen açıklamasından alınmıştır.

Bu açıklamada Kevin Gover, Kızılderililere şu sözü de vermektedir:

We will not deliberately spread disease among Indian tribes again.

(Bundan böyle Kızılderili kabileler arasında kasten hastalık yaymayacağız.)

MEG, yine Chapter 1'da (Subject-Predicate) ayrimını göstermek üzere aşağıdaki örnekte bu sözü aktarıyor:

The BIA	promised not to deliberately spread disease again among Indian tribes.
------------	---

Christopher Columbus, resmi ABD tarihine göre Amerika'yı "keşfeden" kişidir. Pek çok İngilizce ders kitabı, sözümona "invent" ve "discover" eylemleri

arasındaki farkı öğretmek için “**Columbus discovered America/Graham Bell invented the telephone**” gibi tümceler kullanmaktadır. Üzerinde milyonlarca kişinin yaşadığı bir kitanın “keşfedildiğini” söylemek, DISCOVER eyleminin anlamını açıklamaktan çok, gizlemek olduğu çoğu zaman gözden kaçabilemektedir. Bu tür örnekleri oluşturanların aslında dil öğretmek bahanesiyle tarihsel gerçekleri kendi çıkarları doğrultusunda şekillendirmeye çalışıklarını söylemek mümkündür.

MEG, Amerika'yı “keşfettiği” söylenen ve adına ulusal kutlama günü belirlenmiş olan Columbus'un, resmi ABD tarihinin dışında, Amerika'nın gerçek halklarına nasıl göründüğünü gerçek metinlerden alınan tümcelerle göstermektedir:

Christopher Columbus turned out to be a blood-sucking slaver.

So greedy was Christopher Columbus that he did not hesitate to kill for money.

Noam Chomsky considers Columbus a merciless fortune hunter.

Christopher Columbus had no respect for human life.

MEG, topraklarında güneş batmayan İngiliz İmparatorluğunun tarihinden aşağıdaki gibi bir örnek de sunuyor:

Kenya'da görevli iken İngiliz ordusunun sergilediği vahşete tanık olan John Nottingham şöyle diyor:

I feel ashamed to have come from a Britain that did what it did.

(Bu) yaptıklarını yapmış olan=BUNLARI YAPMIŞ OLAN bir Britanya'ya ait (vatandaş) olmaktan utanıyorum.

Belirsiz tanımlık olan a'nın özel adlarla nasıl kullanılabileceğihi gösteren bu güzel örnek, yapay örneklerin çok ötesinde bir derinlik içermektedir. Üstelik te olması gereği gibi dil kullanımı ile gerçek yaşamı yapay değil, doğal olarak ilişkilendirmektedir.

Bütün bu örneklerin sunulmasının amacı, dilbilgisinin, sadece dile dair birsey değil, doğrudan dilin kendisi olduğu gerçekini sezdirebilmektir. Dilbilgisel öğelerin, içinde yaşadığımız evreni algılayabilmemizi sağlayabildiğini sezdirilmektedir.

MEG, İngilizce dilbilgisinin bütün temel özelliklerini kapsamakta ve ayrıntılılarıyla incelemektedir. **MEG**, özellikleri nedeniyle, Türkler için yazılmış İngilizce dilbilgisi kitapları içinde kapsamı, seçilen örnekler ve kullanılan dilbilgisi modeli ile özel bir yere sahip olacaktır.

İngilizce öğrenenlerin de öğretmenlerin de önemli sorunlarından biri dilbilgisini bir bütünlük çerçevesinde yeterince ayrıntılı olarak sunan kitap bulabilmek ol-

muştur. Bu büyük eksikliği gidermek üzere, MEG, İngilizce dilbilgisinin hemen hemen bütün temel taşlarını kapsamaya çalışmaktadır. *Reduction*, *Ambiguity*, *Parallelism* ve *Emphasis* gibi konular ilk kez MEG'de ayrıntılarıyla ele alınmaktadır. Ayrıca ele alınan bütün konular için yeterince alıştırma da sunmaktadır.

MEG'in, diğer İngilizce dilbilgisi kitaplarından çok önemli bir farkı da dilbilgisi açıklamalarının mümkün olduğunda üretken-dönüştümlü dilbilgisi modeline dayandırılmasıdır. Üretken-dönüştümlü dilbilgisi kuramı Amerikalı dilbilimci Noam Chomsky'nin ortaya attığı bir kuramıdır. Bu kuram, dilbilgisini, bir anadil konuşurunun **bilinçaltı dilbilgisi** şeklinde algılamaktadır. Daha açık bir anlatımla, her insan, anadilini, bilinçaltında sahip olduğu kurallar sayesinde kullanabilmekte ve iletişim sağlayabilmektedir.

Örneğin, “*burning wood*” hem “*odun yakmak*”, hem “*yanan odun*” hem de “*yakacak odun*” anlamlarına gelmektedir. Bir bağlam içinde *burning wood* öbeğinin hangi anlamda kullanıldığını anlamak İngilizce konuşur için basit bir olgu olduğu düşünülebilir. Oysa bu öbeğin hangi anlama geldiğini anlayabilmek için konuşur karmaşık zihinsel işlemler kullanmak durumundadır. İngilizce konuşurun bu işlemleri kullanmasına olanak sağlayan şey sahip olduğu **bilinçaltı dilbilgisi**'dir. Üretken-dönüştümlü dilbilgisi bu dilbilgisini açıklamaya çalışır. Bir başka deyişle, anadilini konuşan insanın bilinçaltı düzlemdede bildiklerini, bilinçüstü düzlemdede betimlemeyi amaçlar.



Üretken-dönüştümlü dilbilgisi, dil incelemelerinde, bilinçaltı dilbilgisine dayalı yöntemler kullanıldığından geleneksel dilbilgisinden farklı bir bakış açısı sunmaktadır. MEG, bu yeni bakış açısını, okurun daha önce öğrendiği geleneksel dilbilgisi açıklamalarından yararlanabilmesine uygun şekilde sunmaya çalışmaktadır.

Üretken-dönüştümlü dilbilgisi kuramı, dili, sınırlı sayıda kuralla sonsuz sayıda tümcə üretebilen ve insan beyinin işletebildiği bir dizge olarak görmektedir. MEG, bu dizgenin açıklanmasına çalışmaktadır

MEG, dilbilgisi açıklamalarını, üretken-dönüştümlü dilbilgisinin derin yapı-yüzey yapı ayrimını gözeterek sunmaya çalışmaktadır. Üretken-dönüştümlü dilbilgisi kuramına göre her tümcenin bir görünen yapısı (*yüzey yapı*) bir de anlam yapısı (*derin yapı*) vardır. İnsanların dille anlaşabilmeleri, bu bilgiye bilinçaltında sahip oldukları için mümkün olabilmektedir.

İngilizce konuşur,

Burning wood is difficult.

Burnning wood is dangerous.

Burning wood is expensive.

tümcelerinin

For someone to burn wood is difficult.

Wood which is burning is dangerous.

Wood which is used in stoves is expensive.

(derin yapı) tümcelerinin “kısıltılmış=yüzey yapı” şekilleri olduğunu bilinçaltı dilbilgisinin gözleriyle görebilmektedir.

Yine İngilizce konuşur TIME FLIES tümcesinin derin yapısındaki

Noun PhraseØNoun	Verb PhraseØVerb
time (Noun)	flies (Verb)

tümcesinin, ya da

Noun PhraseØNoun	Verb PhraseØVerb + NP
you	time (verb) flies (Noun)

buyruk tümcesinin yüzey yapısı olabileceğini görebilir.



MEG, konuşurların bilinçaltı bilgilerini açıklamaya çalışan üretken-dönüşümlü dilbilgisi kuramının bulgularını, uygulamaya dönük bir yaklaşımla, İngilizce öğrenmeye veya öğretmeye çalışanların yararlanmasına açmayı amaçlamaktadır. Dilbilgisi açıklamaları ve alıştırmaları bu kaygıyla hazırlanmıştır.

MEG'in, İngilizce dilbilgisini öğrenmek ve öğretmek isteyenler için sık sık başvurulacak bir kaynak kitabı olacağına inanıyorum.

CONTENTS

Önsöz	ix
Chapter 0 Dilbilgisi Öğreniminin Önemi Üzerine	xxi
<hr/>	
PART 1 ♦ FOUNDATIONS OF THE SENTENCE	
CHAPTER 1	3
CHAPTER 2	10
CHAPTER 3	15
Tümce Öğelerinin Gizi, 20; Adlaştırmmanın Sonsuzluğu, 24; Ad Öbegi Yapmanın Bir Başka Yolu, 25; Adlaştırma Örnekleri, 27; Sıfatlaştırma Örnekleri, 28	
CHAPTER 4	29
Temel Adsız Ad Öbekleri, 30; Temel Adlı Ad Öbekleri, 32; Ön Niteleyiciler, 33; Art Niteleyiciler, 34	
CHAPTER 5	37
CHAPTER 6	41
CHAPTER 7	47
1. NP BE ADJ, 47; Adjectives with "Objects", 49; 2. NP ¹ BE NP ¹ , 50; 3. NP BE ADV, 51; 4. THERE BE NP, 54	
CHAPTER 8	57
5.a NP IntV, 57; 5.b NP IntV, 58; 5.c NP IntV, 58; 5.d NP IntV, 59; 6. NP ¹ TrV NP ² , 61; 7. NP ¹ TrV NP ² , 63; 8. NP ¹ TrV NP ² NP ³ , 65	
CHAPTER 9	69
9. NP ¹ TrV NP ² NP ² , 71; 10. NP ¹ TrV NP ² ADJ, 73	
CHAPTER 10	76
11. NP ¹ TrV NP ² BARE INF, 78; 12. NP ¹ TrV NP ² TO INF, 80; 13. NP ¹ TrV NP ² V-ING, 83; 14. NP ¹ TrV NP ² V-EN, 85	
CHAPTER 11	88
15. NP ¹ LV NP ¹ , 90; 16. NP LV ADJ, 91	
CHAPTER 12	101
CHAPTER 13	108
İşlevlerine Göre, 110; Yapılarına Göre, 115	
CHAPTER 14	122
Subject-Verb Agreement, 123; Pronoun Agreement, 145;	

CHAPTER 15	Cleft Sentences	153
<i>IT-Cleft, 155; WHAT-Cleft, 155; Zarf Tümceciklerini Vurgulayan Ayrık Yapılar, 160; Ayrık Tümcelerden Yapılan Sorular, 161</i>		
CHAPTER 16	Inversion	163
CHAPTER 17	Shortened Responses and Statements	176
Yardımcı Eylemler ve Kip Belirteçleriyle Kısaltma, 181; Düşünce ve Söz Eylemleriyle <i>SO</i> ve <i>NOT</i> , 184; Infinitive Öbeklerinin Kısaltılması, 186		

PART 2 ♦ QUESTIONS

CHAPTER 18	Questions	191
Yardımcı Eylemlerle Başlayan Sorular, 192; Olumlu ve Olumsuz Sorular, 195; Kip Belirteçleri Soruları, 196; Tercih Soruları, 197; Soru Sözcükleriyle Başlayan Sorular, 199; - <i>EVER</i> soru sözcükleri, 213; Soru Sözcükleriyle Yapılan Sorulara Kısa Yanıtlar, 216; <i>ELSE</i> ile Soru Sözcükleri, 219		
CHAPTER 19	Tag Questions	220
Eklenti Sorularının Yapılış Nedenleri, 221; Tense'lerle Eklenti Soruları, 222; Kip Belirteçleriyle Eklenti Soruları, 223		

PART 3 ♦ AUXILIARIES

CHAPTER 20	Primary Auxiliaries	235
CHAPTER 21	Modal Auxiliaries	241
can, 243; <i>will</i> , 245; <i>may</i> , 248; <i>might</i> , 249; <i>must</i> , 253; <i>shall</i> , 257; <i>should</i> , 259; <i>would</i> , 263; <i>could</i> , 267; <i>can vs. could</i> , 270; <i>could vs. was/were able to</i> , 271; <i>rica ve İzin İstemede kip belirteçleri kullanımı</i> , 272; <i>dare (kip belirteci)</i> , 273; <i>dare (eylem)</i> , 274; <i>ought to</i> , 275; <i>need</i> , 277; <i>used to</i> , 279; <i>be able to</i> , 281; <i>can vs. is/am/are able to</i> , 282; <i>could vs. was/were able to</i> , 282; <i>is/am/are going to</i> , 285; <i>be going to vs. will</i> , 286; <i>was/were going to</i> , 286; <i>is/am/are to</i> , 288; <i>was/were to+v</i> , 289; <i>was/were to + have v-en</i> , 289; <i>have to / have got to</i> , 290; <i>had to</i> , 293; <i>be supposed to</i> , 294; <i>had better</i> , 295; <i>would rather</i> , <i>would sooner</i> , <i>had rather</i> , <i>had sooner</i> , 297; <i>would prefer</i> , 299; <i>be used to</i> , 300; <i>get used to</i> , 301		

CHAPTER 22	Perfect Modal Auxiliaries	304
<i>will have</i> , 305; <i>would have</i> , 305; <i>must have</i> , 306; <i>may have</i> , 307; <i>might have</i> , 308; <i>should have</i> , 310; <i>could have</i> , 313; <i>geçmişe ilişkin Varsayımlar</i> , 314; <i>needn't have</i> , 315; <i>ought to have</i> , 316; <i>Chart of Modal Auxiliaries</i> , 321; <i>Perfect Modals Tablosu</i> , 325; <i>Functional Classification of Modals</i> , 326		

PART 4 ♦ THE ENGLISH TENSES

CHAPTER 23	The English Tenses	331
CHAPTER 24	The Simple Present Tense	333

CHAPTER 25	The Simple Present Continuous Tense	344
Simple Present vs. Present Continuous, 347		
Present Cont. Tense İle Kullanılmayan Eylemler, 347		
CHAPTER 26	The Future Tense	350
CHAPTER 27	The Future Continuous Tense	355
CHAPTER 28	The Simple Past Tense	358
CHAPTER 29	The Simple Past Continuous Tense	366
CHAPTER 30	The Present Perfect Tense	372
Past Tense vs. Present Perfect Tense		
CHAPTER 31	The Present Perfect Continuous Tense	389
Present Continuous vs. Present Perfect Con., 392		
Present Perfect vs. Present Perfect Cont., 393		
CHAPTER 32	The Past Perfect Tense	396
Past Perfect vs. Simple Past		
CHAPTER 33	The Past Perfect Continuous Tense	403
Past Perfect Cont. vs. Past Perfect, 405		
CHAPTER 34	The Future Perfect Tense	406
CHAPTER 35	The Future Perfect Continuous Tense	408
Sequence in Tenses, 410		
A Test Battery on the English Tenses, 412		

PART 5 ♦ EMBEDDING

CHAPTER 36	Embedded Sentences	421
CHAPTER 37	Noun Clauses	428
That-Ad İçtümcecikleri, 431; Whether Or Not-Ad İçtümceciği, 444; QW-Ad İçtümceciği, 448; A Test Battery on Noun Clauses, 452		
CHAPTER 38	Wish Clauses	458
CHAPTER 39	Indirect Speech	466
Dolaylı Anlatımdan Dolaylı Anlatıma, 468; Tense Değişiklikleri, 468; Zamir Değişiklikleri, 471; Zaman Zarfi Değişiklikleri, 471; Yer Zarfi Değişiklikleri, 472; SAY ve TELL Dışında Giriş Eylemleri, 475; Evet/Hayır Soruları, 475; Soru Sözcüklü Sorular, 476; Özel Durumlar, 478; Dolaylı Anlatıma Genel Bakış, 481; Metinde Söylenenlerin Aktarılması, 482; Tense Değişikliği Yapılmayacak Durumlar, 483; Birden Çok Tümçenin Dolaylı Anlatıma Aktarılması, 485		
CHAPTER 40	Adjective Clauses	503
Relative Pronouns, 508; Connective Relative Clauses, 522; Birbirlerinin Yerine Kullanılan Relative Pronouns, 529; -EVER'lı İçtümcecik Bağlaçları, 533; Definitions, 536; Discontinuous Adjective Clauses, 538; Defining & Non-defining Relative Clauses, 543		

CHAPTER 41	Adverb Clauses	547
Zarf İçtümceciklerinin Tümce İçindeki Yerleri, 550; Adverbial Clauses of Time, 551; of Place, 557; of Manner, 558; of Cause and Reason, 561; of Contrast/Concession, 567; of Condition, 575; of Purpose, 577; of Result, 580; of Duration, 586; of Contingency, 587; of Reservation, 589; Reduction of Adverbial Clauses, 591; Zarf İçtümceciklerinde -EVER Bağlaçları, 591		
CHAPTER 42	Conditional Clauses	593
Koşul Tümcelerinin Yapısı ve Türleri, 595; Generalizations, 596; Real Present, 598; Unreal Present, 599; Unreal Past, 604; Mixed Type, 607; Koşul İçtümceciklerinde Kullanılan Diğer Bağlaçlar, 609; Gizli Koşul Tümcecikleri, 617; Koşul Tümcelerinde Özel Durumlar, 619; Çeşitli <i>IF</i> Kullanımları, 624		
CHAPTER 43	Comparison and Contrast	626
Karşılaştırmaların 4 Biçimi, 627; Sıfatların ve Zarfların Üstünlük ve En Üstünlük Yapıları, 628; Üstünlük ve En Üstünlük Derecelerde Düzensiz Sıfatlar, 631; Üstünlük ve En Üstünlük Derecelerde Düzensiz Zarflar, 631; Karşılaştırma Yapılarına Toplu Bakış, 632; Sıfatlarla ve Zarflarla Üstünlük Derecesi, 636; Karşılaştırma Yapılarında Kullanılan Pekştiriciler, 639; Karşılaştırma Yapılarının Çeşitli Kullanımları, 641; En Üstünlük Derecesi, 648; Eşitlik, 650; Benzerlik, 657		
<hr/> PART 6 ♦ THE PASSIVE AND THE CAUSATIVE <hr/>		
CHAPTER 44	The Passive Voice	665
Edilgen Çatının Kullanılma Nedenleri, 667; 12 Tense İle Edilgen Çatı, 671; Kip Belirteçleri İle Edilgen Çatı, 673; Tümce Kalıpları İle Edilgen Çatı, 674; Eylemsilerle Edilgen Çatı, 683; Gizli Edilgenlik, 685; İki Sözcülü Eylemlerde Edilgen Çatı, 686; <i>GET</i> Eylemi İle Edilgen Çatı, 687; Edilgen Tümcelerde Tarz Zarfları, 688; Düşünce ve Belirtme Eylemleriyle Edilgen Çatı, 689; Soru Tümcelerinde Edilgen Yapı, 693; Yalancı Edilgenlik, 695; Bilimsel Metinlerde Edilgen Çatı, 697		
CHAPTER 45	The Causative	705
Ettirgen Çatının Kullanıldığı Tümce Kalıpları, 705; Ettirgen Çatının 5 Eylemi, 706; HAVE'in 3 Biçimi ve 4 İşlevi, 713		
<hr/> PART 7 ♦ VERBALS <hr/>		
CHAPTER 46	Verbals	717
CHAPTER 47	Gerunds	724
Simple ve Perfect Gerunds, 726; Gerund'ların İşlevleri, 727; Gerund Kullanım tablosu, 728; GERUND'ları Nesne Olarak Alabilen Eylemler, 731; Nesne Durumunda Bulunan Gerund Öbeklerinin Özneleri, 733; Ad mı, Ulaç mı?, 745		
CHAPTER 48	Infinitives	749
Infinitive'lerin İşlevleri, 750; Infinitive Kullanım Tablosu, 751; Hem VERB+TO-INF hem de VERB+OBJ+TO-INF Kalıbında Kullanılabilen Eylemler, 759		

CHAPTER 49	Participles	771
CHAPTER 50	Comparison of Verbals	787
Gerund Phrases vs. Infinitive Phrases, 787; Anlam Farkı Olmadan Gerund ve Infinitive Nesne Alabilen Eylemler, 789; Anlam Farkıyla Gerund ve Infinitive Nesne Alabilen Eylemler, 789; Infinitive ve Gerund Karşılaştırma Tablosu, 792; Gerund Öbeği mi , Participle Öbeği mi?, 796		

PART 8 ♦ THE EIGHT PARTS OF SPEECH

CHAPTER 51	Parts of Speech	805
CHAPTER 52	Nouns	816
Adlara Özgü Konumlar, 817; Adların, Ad Nitelikleri Olarak Kullanılması, 818; Cins Adlar/Özel Adlar, 819; Somut Adlar/Soyut Adlar, 820; Sayılabilir/Sayılamayan Adlar, 821; Hem Sayılabilir Hem Sayılamayan Adlar, 822; Topluluk Adları, 824; Adlarda Cinsiyet, 825; Zamirlerde Cinsiyet, 825; Adların Türetilmesi, 826; Birleşik Adlar, 828; Tekil ve Çoğul Adlar, 829; Düzensiz Çoğullar, 833; Belli Adlarla Küme Gösteren Adlar, 837; Adlarda İyelik, 838; Adları Nasıl Tanıyalırız? 844; Hem Ad Hem Eylem Olarak Kullanılabilen Sözcükler, 846; Hem Ad Hem Sıfat Olarak Kullanılabilen Sözcükler, 846; İvedilik Adları, 847		
CHAPTER 53	Verbs	848
Transitive ve Intransitive Eylemlerin Özel Durumları, 851; İlgi Eylemleri, 853; Linking Verbs Olarak Kullanılabilen Eylemler, 853; Eylemlerin Tümce İçindeki Konumu, 855; Eylemlerin 5 Şekli, 856; Düzensiz Eylemler, 856; Eylemlerde Tense ve Mood, 862; Eylem Türetilen Ekler, 863; Yardımcı Eylemler, 864; Eylemleri Nasıl Tanyabiliriz?, 866; İvedilik Eylemleri, 866; Troublesome Verbs, 867; Diğer Sözcük Türleriyle Karıştırılan Eylemler, 869; Eylemlerin Anlambilimsel Sınıflandırılması, 872; Belli İlgeçlerle Kullanılan Eylemler, 872		
CHAPTER 54	Adjectives	874
Sıfatların Tümce İçindeki Konumları, 875; Sıfatların Türleri, 876; Adları Nitelendiren Soru Sözcükleri, 878; Nitelikçilerin Adlar Önündeki Sırası, 879; Pekiştiriciler, 882; Sıfatların Sözdizimsel Özelliklerine Toplu Bakış, 883; Adjective+Preposition Dizini, 887; Sıfatlarda Karşılaştırma, 894; Karşılaştırmada Düzensiz Biçimler, 895; Sıfatlarda Eşitlik Derecesi, 895; Sıfatlarda Üstünlük Derecesi, 896; Sıfatlarda En Üstünlük Derecesi, 897; Sıfat Türetme Ekleri, 899; Sıfatları Nasıl Tanıyalırız?, 899; Hem Sıfat Hem Eylem Olarak Kullanılan Sözcükler, 900; Hem Sıfat Hem Zarf Olarak Kullanılan Sözcükler, 901; Sıfatları İzleyen İlgeçler, 902; İvedilik Sıfatları, 905;		
CHAPTER 55	Adverbs	906
Eylemleri Nitelendiren Zarfların Türleri, 906 Tarz Zarfları, 907; Hız Zarfları, 909; Zaman Zarfları, 910; Yet, Still, Just, 911; Yer Zarfları, 911; Sıklık Zarfları, 912 Zarfların Diğer Türleri, 915 Derece Zarfları, 915; Sıra Zarfları, 918; Vurgulama Zarfları, 918; Tümce Nitelikçiler, 920 Zarfların Tümce İçindeki Konumu, 922; Inversion with Adverbs, 924; Zarflarda Karşılaştırma, 930; Zarf Türetme Ekleri, 931; Sıfat ve Zarf Biçimleri Aynı Olan Sözcükler, 932; Pekiştiriciler, 933; Zarfları Nasıl Tanıyalırız?, 932		

CHAPTER 56	Pronouns	937
Zanırlerin Yaygın İşlevleri, 938; ; Zamirlerin Türleri, 940; Zamirlerin Doğru Kullanımı, 957		
CHAPTER 57	Prepositions	962
CHAPTER 58	Prepositions of Place and Position	970
CHAPTER 59	Prepositions of Direction	989
CHAPTER 60	Prepositions of Time	999
CHAPTER 61	Other Types of Prepositions	1005
of Manner, 1005; of Possession, 1006; of Agent, 1007; Measurement, 1007; of Purpose, 1007; of Cause, 1008; of Contrast, 008; of Exception, 1008; of Reference, 1009; İlgeçlerin Diğer Türleri, 1009; Some Common Prepositional Idioms, 1010; Yaygın Birleşik İlgeçler, 1013		
CHAPTER 62	A General Look at Prepositions	1016
Birbirleriyle Karıştırılan İlgeçler, 1023; Hem İlgeç Hem Bağlaç Olarak Kullanılan Sözcükler, 1025; İlgeç ve Bağlaç Çiftleri, 1025; Yaygın İlgeç Öbekleri, 1026; AD+İLGEÇ Öbekleri, 1032; ADJECTIVE+PREPOSITION, 1033; VERB+PREPOSITION, 1034		
CHAPTER 63	As vs. Like	1043
CHAPTER 64	Conjunctions	1048
Coordinating Conjunctions, 1051; Correlative Conjunctions, 1053; Paired Subordinating Conjunctions, 1056; Sentence Connectors, 1056; Subordinating Conjunctions, 1059; Bağlaçların Gücü, 1062		
CHAPTER 65	Interjections	1063
CHAPTER 66	Articles	1065
Belirsiz Tanımlıklar A/AN'ın Kullanımı, 1065; Ø Tanımlığın Kullanılması, 1069; Belirli Tanımlık THE'nin Kullanımı, 1073; THE ve Ø'nin Özel Adlarla Kullanımı, 1075; ÖZEL EYLEM+NESNE Birleşmeleri, 1079; Tanımlıklarla Tür Gösterimi, 1079		
CHAPTER 67	Determiners	1086
Ad Tanımlayıcılarının Sırası, 1088; Ad Tanımlayıcılarının Niteledikleri Adlara Göre Sınıflandırılması, 1091; Ad Tanımlayıcılarının Zemir Olarak Kullanımı, 1092; Indefinite Determiner'lerin Özel Kullanımı, 1097		
CHAPTER 68	Intensifiers	1100
Pekisitiricilerin Karşılaştırma Yapılarında Kullanılması, 1104		
CHAPTER 69	Quantifiers	1105

PART 9 ♦ PHRASAL VERBS

CHAPTER 70	Phrasal Verbs	1117
Bağıntılı Eylemlerin Yapısı, 1118; İki Sözcülü Eylemlerin Sınıflandırılması, 1124; Geçmişsiz Bağıntılı Eylemler Dizini, 1125; Ayrılabilen Bağıntılı Eylemler, 1127; Ayrılamayan Geçişli Bağıntılı Eylemler, 1129; Üç Sözcülü Bağıntılı Eylemler, 1130		

CHAPTER 71	Phrasal Verbs with Common Verbs	1135
Yayın Eylemlerle Kurulan Bağıntılı Eylemler, 135; BACK, 1135; BLOW, 1135; BREAK, 1136; BRING, 1137; CALL, 1139; CARRY, 1140; COME, 1140; CUT, 1142; DIE, 1143; DO, 1143; DRAW, 1144; DROP, 1144; FALL, 1144; FILL, 1144; GET, 1145; GIVE, 1148; GO, 1149; HAND, 1151; HOLD, 1151; KEEP, 1151; LET, 1152; LOOK, 1152; MAKE, 1155; PASS, 1156; PICK, 1158; PUT, 1158; RUN, 1158; SEE, 1161; STAND, 1161; TAKE, 1162; TURN, 1164		

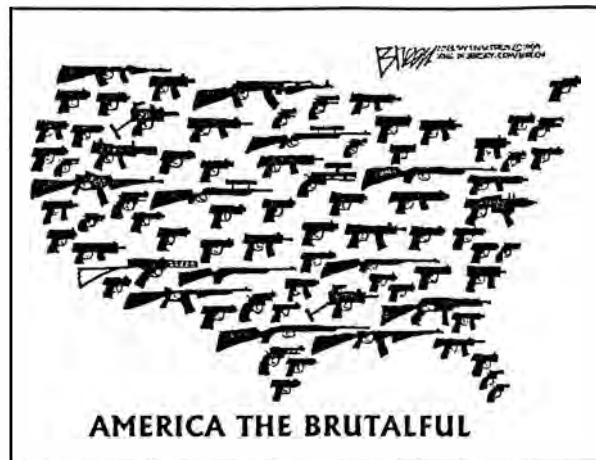
PART 10 ♦ ADVANCED FEATURES OF THE SENTENCE

CHAPTER 72	Connecting Sentences	1185
Coordination&Subordination, 1187; Conjunctions, 1190; Coordinating Conjunctions, 1191; Correlative Conjunctions, 1197		
CHAPTER 73	Subordinating Conjunctions	1205
Ad İctümceciği Bağlaçları, 1207; Sifat İctümceciği Bağlaçları, 1208; Zarf İctümceciği Bağlaçları, 1209; Subordinating Conjunctions Gibi Kullanılan İlgeçler, 1201; Zarf İctümceciği Bağlaçlarına Örnekler, 1211		
CHAPTER 74	Sentence Connectors	1217
AND Type, 1218; BUT Type, 1218; OR Type, 1218; SO Type, 1218		
CHAPTER 75	Coherence	1221
Coherence Sağlamانın 3 Yolu, 224; Coherence Signal'ları İşlevsel Sınıflandırılması, 1228; Metin İçi İlişkiler, 1232; Tümce Çeşitlerinde Noktalama İşaretleri, 1237; Conjunctions Tablosu, 1238		
CHAPTER 76	Sentence, Clauses and Phrases	1239
Temel Tümcecikler, İctümcecikler, 1240; Öbekler, 1242; Prepositional Phrases, 1244; Gerund Phrases, 1246; Infinitive Phrases, 1247; Participle Phrases, 1248; Appositive Phrases, 1249; Absolute Phrases, 1250		
CHAPTER 77	Modification	1255
Sıfatlar ve Zarflar, 1255; Gerund ve Participle Öbeklerle Güncel Kullanımlar, 1258; İngilizce'nin 4 İlginç Niteleme Yöntemi, 1260; Niteleyicilerin Sırası, 1261; Zarfların Sırası, 1262; Sentence Modifiers, 1263; Discontinuous Modifiers, 1265; Levels of Modification, 1266		
CHAPTER 78	Dangling Modifiers	1268
Şaşkın Niteleyicilerin Sınıflandırılması, 1270 Gerund Phrases, 1270; Participle Phrases, 1271; Infinitive Phrases, 1271; Prepositional Phrases, 1272; Reduced Adverbial Clauses, 1272; Reduced Adjective Clauses, 1273; Adverbs, 1273		
CHAPTER 79	Negation	1276
Özel Durumlar, 1278; Olumsuz Tümcelerde Anlam Bulanıklığı ve Anlam Karışıklığı, 1282		

CHAPTER 80 Parallelism	1287
İkili Bağlaçlarla Paralel Yapılar, 1290; Karşılaştırma Tümcelerinde Paralellik, 1294; Kaymalar, 1295; Söz Sanatı Olarak Paralellik, 1296; Paralel Yapıların Etkisi Arıtmak Üzere Bozulması, 298	
CHAPTER 81 Ambiguity	1300
Anlam Bulanıklığına Yol Açıyan Öğeler, 302 Sözcükler, 1302; İyelik Eki, 1305; Sifatların Kapsamı, 1305; İlgeç Öbekleri, 1305; Sifat İçtümcecikleri, 1306; Zamirler, 1306; Belgisiz Zamirler, 1306; Gerunds&Participles, 1307; Infinitives, 1309; Tümce Kahıpları, 1309; Karşılaştırma Yapıları, 1310; Olumsuz Tümceler, 1310	
CHAPTER 82 Ellipsis	1312
Kısa Yanıtlar, 1313; Kisaltılmış Öbekler, 313; QW Clauses, 1314; Compound Sentences, 1314; Multiple Modals, 1314; Adverbial Clauses, 1315; Öznenin Eksiltilmesi, 316	
CHAPTER 83 Reduction	1318
of Adjective Clauses, 1319; of Adverb Clauses, 1325; of Noun Clauses, 1329; of Compound Sentences, 1330; with SO, NOT, NEITHER, NOR, TOO, 1331	
CHAPTER 84 Emphasis	1334
Vurgulama Nedenleri ve Yöntemleri, 1335; Konuşmada Vurgu, 1335; Yazında Vurgu, 1335; <i>Do, Does, Did</i> , 1336; Vurgulama Sözcükleri, 1338; Yinelenen Belli Sözcükler, 1339; Zarların Özneden Sonra Kullanımı, 1339; Önlem Tümceleri, 1339; Düz Tümce Ezgiziyle Söyleden Soru Tümceleri, 1339; Devrik Yapı, 1339; Ayrık Tümceler, 1340; <i>No Such Thing As</i> , 1341; <i>Not</i> , 1341; <i>No</i> , 1342; <i>At all, whatsoever, in the least, in the least bit, in the slightest</i> , 1342; Vurgulama Yapıları Tablosu, 1344	
KEY TO THE EXERCISES 1345	
Kaynakça 1467	
English-Turkish Glossary, 1469	
Türkçe-İngilizce Terimler Sözlüğü, 1473	
Türkçe Dizin, 1476	
English Index, 1479	

CHAPTER O

Dilbilgisi Öğreniminin Önemi Üzerine



Robert Phillipson'in *Linguistic Imperialism* adlı kitabının basım yılı 1992'dir. *Linguistic Imperialism*, İngiltere ve Amerika'nın İngilizce öğretimini kendilere askeri, ekonomik, politik ve kültürel çıkarlar sağlamak üzere nasıl kullandığını, Üçüncü Dünya ülkelerini onların doğal ve insan kaynaklarını sömürmek için nasıl kandırdığını anlatan bir kitaptır.

İngilizlerin açıkça söylediği gibi, eskiden savaş gemileri gönderip ganimetler elde edilirken şimdi İngilizce öğretim ordusu ile aynı amaca ulaşmaktadır.

Phillipson'ın kitabı, İngilizce öğretiminin aslında bir sömürü yöntemi olduğunu, bu yöntemin inanılmaz bir propaganda gücüne sahip olduğunu çok iyi anlatmaktadır. Aradan geçen 14 yıllık süreye rağmen Phillipson'un sesinin Türkiye'de duyulamamasının nedeni de kuşkusuz bu büyük propaganda gücüdür.

Phillipson (1992:185-219), ABD ve İngiltere'nin, bu iki sömürgeci ülkenin, İngilizce öğretimi mesleğini nasıl kendi çıkarları doğrultusunda yönlendirdiğini anlatırken Üçüncü Dünya ülkelerine yutturulan 5 büyük yalanı da şöyle sıralamaktadır:

BEŞ BÜYÜK YALAN

1. İngilizce öğretimi sadece İngilizce kullanılarak yapılmalıdır.
2. Bir İngiliz ya da Amerikalı en iyi İngilizce öğretmenidir.
3. İngilizce öğretimi ne kadar erken başlarsa o kadar iyidir.
4. Ne kadar İngilizce'yle yüzyüze gelinirse o kadar iyi olur.
5. Başka diller kullanılırsa İngilizce düzeyi olumsuz etkilenecektir.

Bu yalanları çürütmek şu andaki işimiz dağıl ama bu yalanlara kapılan Üçüncü Dünya ülkeleri gibi Türkiye'nin de anaokullarında İngilizce öğretimine harcadığı paralarla kaynak israfına neden olduğu gibi anadili öğretimini de tehlikeli ölçülerde ihmal eder duruma düştüğünü, ülkede NPL (Neurolinguistic Programming) gibi soytarılıkların süregeldiğini de belirtmeden geçmeyelim.

AMERICA THE BRUTALFUL

Amerika'nın İngiltere ile birlikte Irak'ı işgal ettiği günlerde çizilen yukarıdaki karikatürde altyazı, karikatüristin bilerek ve ustaca yaptığı bir dilbilgisi yanlığını içeriyor. *Brutal* "vahşi, insanlıktan nasibini almamış" bir sıfatır ve {-ful} sıfat türetme ekini kullanarak *brutalful* gibi bir sözcük türetilmesi de mümkün değildir çünkü {-ful} sadece adlara eklenebilen bir ektir. Karikatürist *brutalful* gibi bir sözcük türetiyor ve *America the Beautiful* (*Güzel Amerika*) yapısına öykünerek *America the Brutalful* (*Vahşi insanlarla dolu Amerika*) öbeğini oluşturuyor. *America the Beautiful* yapısı, adlara belli ünvanların eklenmesine olanak sağlayan yapıdır. *America the Brutalful* ile karikatürist Amerika'nın ünvanının "güzel" olmasından çok "vahşi insanlarla dolu" olması gerektiğini vurguluyor. Karikatürist, *America the Beautiful* öbeğinin yaygınlığından yararlanarak *America the Brutalful* öbeğiyle vurucu bir bildiri sunmuş oluyor.

Yukarıdaki karikatürü anlayabilmek, bu karikatürdeki inceliği görebilmek için *Noun + The Adjective* yapısını tanıyabilmek *America the Brutalful* ile hangi dilbilgisi kurallının hangi şekilde ve neden çiğnendiğini görebilmek gerekmektedir. Bir başka deyişle, karikatüristin ne söylemek istedığını anlamak, ancak dilbilgisi kurallarını ayrıntılarıyla bilmekle ve hangi kuralların hangi amaçlarla çiğnenebileceğini bilmekle mümkündür.

Bu karikatür, "*Önemli olan dilbilgisi kurallarını bilmek değil, iletişim kurabilmektir*" sloganının aslında ne kadar komik olduğunu, iletişimın ancak ve ancak kurallara dayalı olarak sağlanabileceğini açıkça göstermektedir.

ANADİL KONUŞURLARI NE KADAR ETKİLİ İLETİŞİM KURABİLİR?

Çoğu yabancı dil eğitimi uzmanının bilmediği bir gerçek vardır: *dil, çok iyi bir iletişim aracı değildir*. Örneğin, hemen bir önceki tümcede (yabancı) dil eğitim uzmanları mı yoksa (yabancı dil) öğretim uzmanları mı kastediliyor? Türkçe dilbilgisi kapsamında her iki yorum da doğrudur. Bütün dillerde birden çok anlama gelebilecek çok sayıda yapı bulunmaktadır.

Gerçekten de dil, yapısı gereği iletişim kurmayı çoğu zaman zorlukla ve kısmen sağlayabilen bir dizgedir. İletişimin başarısı, iletişim kurmaya çalışanların diliñ dizgesi yani dilbilgisi hakkındaki bilgileriyle doğru orantılıdır.

Aşağıda ana dili İngilizce olan eğitimli kişilerce yazılmış tümce örneklerini inceleyeceğiz.

Don't let worry kill you—let the church help.

Yukarıdaki tümce bir kilisenin broşüründe yer almaktadır. Papazın söylemek istediği ile gerçekten söylediğeri farklı olmuş. Papaz, endişelerin bizi öldürmesini engellemek için kilisenin yardımcı olmak istedığını anlatmak istiyor olmalı ama yukarıdaki tümcesi endişelere gerek kalmadan kilisenin de bizi öldürebileceğini söylüyor.

Yine kilise broşürlerinden iki örnek:

Ladies, don't forget the rummage sale. It's a chance to get rid of those things not worth keeping around the house. Don't forget your husbands.

Papaz gerçekten kocaların evde fazlalık olduğunu mu söylemek istiyor?

Remember in prayer the many who are sick of our church and community.

Papaz gerçekten dua ederken kiliseden ve bölgeden bıkmış insanların anımsamasını mı istiyor?

Bir kuru temizleme mağazasının vitrininde şu ilân asılıdır:

Anyone Leaving Their Garments Here for More Than 30 Days Will Be Disposed of.

Bu tümceye göre atılacak olanlar elbiseleri kuru temizleme mağazasında 30 günden fazla bırakılan kişiler. Mağaza sahibi elbiseleri atacağını söylemek istiyor olmalı ama kurduğu tümcenin anlamı başka.

Bir başka mağazada da şu ilan görülmüþür:

Why go elsewhere and be cheated when you can come here?

Mağaza sahibi gerçekten, "Bizim mağaza dururken kazıklanmak için başka yere niye gidesiniz ki?" mi demek istiyor?

Yine bir mağaza ilâni:

Don't kill your wife. Let our washing machine do the dirty work.

Mağaza sahibi gerçekten erkeklerle eşlerini öldürmek için çamaşır makinası mı satmaya çalışıyor?

Aşağıdaki karikatürde de anadili İngilizce olan iki kişi konuşuyor. Eğitimsiz olan er "dilbilgisi yanlısı" yapıyor, doktor da onun yanlışlarını düzeltmeye çalışıyor ama başarılı olamıyor çünkü erin "dilbilgisi" bilgisi yok.



Verdiğimiz örneklerin ve karikatürün açıkça gösterdiği şey, anadilimizi kullanırken de dilbilgisinin bize gerektiğidir. Gerçekten de yetersiz dilbilgisi eğitimi sayısız ortamlarda iletişim ya sekteye uğratmakta ya da bütünüyle olanaksız kılmaktadır.

YABANCI DİL ÖĞRENİMİNDE DİL BİLGİSİ

Kişinin kendi anadilini kullanırken bile dilbilgisi eğitimine gereksinmesi varsa yabancı dil öğrenirken aynı gereksinme olmayacak mıdır?

Özellikle son 30 yıldır medyada, yabancı dil kurslarında, yerli yabancı özel dil eğitim merkezlerinde, "*Dilbilgisini değil, dili öğren*" sloganı işleniyor, öğrencilerin ve öğretmenlerin zihinlerine kazınıyor. Çeşitli bilimsel toplantırlarda dilbilgisi öğretiminin gereksizliği vurgulanıyor.

Bilkent Üniversitesinde öğretim üyeliği yapan bir Amerikalı Ankara'da sunduğu bir bildiride dilbilgisi öğretiminin gerekliliğini savunarak şöyle konuşmuştu.

Bir dili konuşmak için dilbilgisini bilmeye gerek yoktur. Ben de dilbilgisi bilmem. Bakın ben, ancak beş yıl İngilizce öğretmenliği yaptıktan sonra it's ile its'in iki ayrı sözcük olduğunu, it's'in aslında iyelik göstermediğini farkettim. O halde siz de İngilizce dilbilgisi öğrenmeden İngilizce öğrenebilirsiniz.

Doğrusu, Amerikalı uzman yukarıdaki sözlerini o anı "dilbilgisiz dil öğretimi" savunması adına kurtarmak için değil de gerçekten inanarak söylediyse Amerikalı dil öğretim uzmanının "dilbilgisiz dil öğretim" propagandasının zavallı bir

kurbanı olduğu düşünülmelidir. Kendisi dilbilgisi öğrenmeden İngilizce konuşabildiği için Türklerin de doğal olarak bunu yapabileceğini varsayıyor. Aslında, ancak 5 yıl İngilizce öğretmenliği yaptıktan sonra its ve it's arasındaki farkı görebilmış bir uzmanın herhangi bir konuda söylediklerinin ne kadar ciddiye alınabileceğini de düşünmek gerekir.

Yine Ankara'da kitabının reklamını yapmak için konuşan bir İngiliz ders kitabı yazarına kitabında *running shoes* ve *running water* öbeklerinin aynı tür öbekler olarak gösterildiği söylenilince, yazar bunların gerçekten aynı tür öbekler olduğunu bir kez daha yineledi. Kendisine *running water* öbeginde suyun RUN ettiği hatırlatıldı ve aynı yapıda kurulmuş gibi görünen *running shoes* öbeginde ise ayakkabının RUN etmediği ifade edildi. Yazar, zaten ayakkabıların kendi başlarına koşmasının mümkün olmadığını ve dolayısıyla yaklaşımının doğru olduğunu savundu. Kendisine *flying carpet* öeği hatırlatılınca, bu öeEGIN sadece masallarda görülebileceğini söyleyerek kendini savunmaya devam etti. İngiliz yabancı dil öğretim uzmanımız *Flying aeroplanes can be dangerous* tümcesi karşısında da donup kaldı. Bu tümcenin neden iki anlama gelebildiğini öğrencilere açıklayabilecek bilgi birikiminden yoksundu.

Örnek olarak gösterdiğimiz bu iki "uzman" ne yazık ki yabancı dil öğretim "uzmanlarının" azınlığını değil çoğunluğunu temsil etmektedir. Aslında bu "uzmanlar" gerçekte "anadili İngilizce olan kişiler"dir sadece. Çalışma alanları dil eğitimi olan gerçek uzmanların bu sözde "uzmanlarla" karıştırılmaması gerekmektedir. Ne yazık ki Türkiye daha çok sözde uzmanların çalışma alanı olmuş ve pek çok okulumuz ve kurumumuz sözde uzmanların etkisinde kalmıştır.

"DİLBİLGİSİZ DİL ÖĞRETİMİ" NASIL DOĞDU?

Doğal olarak insanlar zorluklardan kaçınırlar. Son derece ustalıkla yürütülen bir propaganda dizisiyle çoğu insan dilbilgisi öğrenmenin zor, öğretmenin daha da zor olduğuna inandırılmıştır. Yani hem öğrencinin hem de öğretmeninin dilbilgisinden kaçınma eğilimleri bulunmaktadır.

Bu eğilimler, yirminci yüzyılın özellikle ikinci yarısında büyük bir iş kolu haline gelen İngilizce Öğretimi Sanayi tarafından teşvik edildiler ve geliştirildiler. Bu sanayi "dilbilgisiz dil öğretimi" aldatmacasını bilimsel paketler içinde sunmaya başladı. Bu bilimsel görüşlü propaganda öylesine etkili oldu ki kimse dil ve dil öğrenmeye ilişkin apaçık gerçekleri göremez oldu.

"Dilbilgisiz dil öğretimi" yaklaşımının İngilizce öğretimi sanayinin göz bebeği olmasının önemli nedenleri vardır. Birincisi, hep aç bırakılan İngilizce kitabı piyasası için İngilizce dilbilgisi bile.ı yazar arama zahmetinden kurtulmuştur. İkincisi, İngilizce öğretecek İngiliz ve Amerikalıların İngilizce dilbilgisi bilme gerekliliği ortadan kaldırılmıştır. Böylelikle mesleği ne olursa olsun her İngiliz

ve her Amerikalı İngilizce öğretmeni ve hatta İngilizce öğretim uzmanı yapılmıştır.

İngilizce Öğretim Sanayisi dilbilgisiz dil öğretimi propagandasını öylesine başarılı sürdürmüştür ki, örneğin, bir Türk fizik profesörünün Türkçe dersi verebilmesi kimsenin aklından bile geçemeyecek bir olasılık olmasına karşın hemşirelik okulu mezunu bir İngilizin ülkemizde İngilizce öğretmesinde hiçbir sakınca görülmemiştir.

Fakat anımsayıñ, İngilizce öğretim sanayi bizlere ancak beþ yil İngilizce öğretmenliği yaptıktan sonra it's ile its arasındaki farkı anlayabilmış uzmanlar hediye etmiştir. Üstelik de bu uzmanlar üniversitelerimizde dil programlarını yönlendirmek üzere görevlendirilmiştir.

Dilbilgisi öğretimini "çað dışý" bulan uzmanların iki temel savı vardır:

1. Dilbilgisi öğrenmek, dili öğrenmek için yetmiyor. Mesale, dilbilgisini öğrenmiş olan bazı kimseler konuşup iletişim kuramıyor.
2. Dil iletişim için olduğuna göre zaten dilbilgisi değil iletişim öğretilmelidir.

Bu "uzmanlar" kasıtlı olarak pazarları olan ülkelerin yöneticilerini de öğretmenlerini de öğrencilerini de yanlıltılar. Yukarıdaki savlarının her ikisi de gerçekte dil konusunda ve dil eğitimindeki bilgisizlige dayanmaktadır.

Bu uzmanlar "dilbilgisi eğitimi"nin dilbilgisi kurallarının ezberletilmesi olduğunu söylüyor ve bunun yanlış olduğunu ifade ediyorlar. Dilbilgisi öğretiminin tanımını kendileri yaparak kandırmacalarını sürdürüler. Oysa "dilbilgisi öğrenme", dilbilgisi kurallarını kullanmayı öğrenme olmalıdır. Dilbilgisi kurallarını kullanamayan kimse o kuralları öğrenmemiþ demektir çünkü dilbilgisi kuralları yapıları geregi dil kullanımını zorunlu kılmaktadır.

YANLIŞ OLAN DİL BİLGİSİ ÖĞRETİMİ DEÐİL, DİL BİLGİSİ ÖĞRETİMİNİN ŞEKLİDİR.

She was a beautiful woman fifty pounds ago.

-Mark Twain

İngilizce Öğretim Sanayisinin sözde uzmanları gerçekte son derece basit bir aldatmacaya başvurmaktadırlar. Onlara göre, dilbilgisi öğretmenler eski ve etkisiz alıştırmalar kullanmaktadır o halde dilbilgisi öğretiminden bütünüyle vazgeçmek en iyisidir. Onların bu mantığıyla düşünmek gerekirse örneğin, bazı tedavi yöntemlerinin yanlış olduğu ortaya çıktıığına göre bütünüyle tiptan ve tıbbi tedaviden vazgeçmek gerekecektir.

Sözde uzmanlar, dilbilgisi öğretmeden iletişim kurmayı öğretebileceklerini iddia ediyorlar. Bu, çamaşır makinasının üzerindeki düğmelerin işlevlerini göstermeden çamaşır makinasını doğru kullanmayı öğretmeyi iddia etmek kadar saçma bir iddiadır.

Dilbilgisi öğretimi, Mark Twain'in *She was a beautiful woman fifty pounds ago* tümcesini açıklayabilecek, bu tümcenin kurulmasını sağlayan öğeleri belirleyecek ve dahası, öğrencinin benzer tümceleri kurmasını sağlayacak bilgilerin aktarılmasını mümkün kılmalıdır. İngilizce Öğretim Sanayisinin sözde uzmanlarının bunu yapabilmesi mümkün değildir; bu nedenle yaptıkları bütünüyle dilbilgisi eğitiminden vazgeçmemek olmuştur.

Kötü Bir aldatmaca:
Dilbilgisi Değil, Anlaşmak Önemlidir.
Gerçek: Dilbilgisi yoksa anlaşma da yoktur.

Dilbilgisi öğrenmek ve iletişim kurmayı öğrenmek birbirinin seçenekleri değildir; *dilbilgisi, iletişim sağlayabilmek için olmazsa olmaz bir koşuldu*.

İngilizce öğrenen birisi aşağıdaki tümcelerin neden iki anlamda geldiklerini bilinçli olarak bilmek durumundadır. Bu da ancak dilbilgisi bilgisile mümkündür.

Flying aeroplanes can be dangerous.

- Aeroplanes which fly can be dangerous.
- For someone to fly aeroplanes can be dangerous.

Did you see the girl by the table with the beautiful legs?

- Did you see the girl (who have beautiful legs) by the table?
- Did you see the girl by the table which have beautiful legs?

İngilizce Öğretim Sanayisinin sözde uzmanları büyük bir başarıyla "dilbilgisi değil, anlaşmak önemlidir" sloganını yaymaktadır. Bu slogan tam arılamıyla bir cehalet örneğidir. Öyle ya, anlaşabilmenin olabilmesi için konuşanın ve dinleyenin ortak kuralları olması gerekmektedir; sözgelimi, *a book from Shakespeare* ile *a book by Shakespeare* arasındaki farkı konuşan ya da dinleyen bilmezse anlaşma nasıl sağlanabilir?

Satranç da her oyun gibi kuralları olan bir oyundur. "Kurallara boş verin, satranç oynayın," diyen birisi ne kadar ciddiye alınabilir? Ne yazık ki kurallara boş verin iletişim kurun diyenlerin uzun süredir ciddiye alınması hem emek hem kaynak israfına yol açmaya devam ediyor.

Yabancı Dil Öğreniminde Dilbilgisi

Bir dili yabancı dil olarak öğrenmek isteyen kişinin bilmesi gereken bir gerçek vardır: *her dil, belli sayıda kurala dayalı olan bir dizgedir* ve bir dili

öğrenmek, ister anadilimiz olsun ister yabancı dil olsun, o dilin dizgesini oluşturan kuralları öğrenmek anlamına gelmektedir.

Dilbilgisi öğrenmeden dil öğrenmeye çalışmak, frenin, debriyajın, gaz pedalının yerini öğrenmeden, hangisinin ne işe yaradığını öğrenmeden araba kullanmayı öğrenmeye çalışmaya benzer. Araba, arada sırada hareket edebilir ama yukarıda örneklediğimiz kilise broşürlerini hazırlayan papazlar gibi sağa sola çarpıp canınızdan da olabilirsiniz.

Dil öğrenimi konusunda öğretmen olsun öğrenci olsun herkesin bilmesi gereken gerçekler şunlardır:

1. Betimleyemediğiniz bir şeyi öğretemezsiniz.

Sıfatla adları birbirinden ayırt edemeyen birisinin yapabileceği şey öğrencilerin yabancı dil öğrenmesine engel olmaktadır.

Sıfatlarla adları ayıramayan birisi *America the Brutalful* karikatüründen anlaması gerekeni anlayamayacaktır, karikatürün inceliğini göremeyecek, açıkçası iletişim gerçekleşmeyecektir.

2. Yabancı dil öğretmeni, öğrencinin anadiliyle öğrendiği yabancı dil arasındaki temel farklılıklarını bilmek zorundadır. İngilizce öğrenen bir Türk bir Arabin ya da Japon'un farklı farklı bilmeleri gereken şeyler vardır; ama bunları bilmek daha çok da öğretmenin görevidir.

Pek çok İngiliz ve Amerikalı dil öğretmeni öğrencilere *washed, cleaned* ve *wanted* sözcüklerinin sonundaki eklerin neden değişik telaffuz edildiğini açıklamaktan acizdir. Bu insanların tuhaftığına bakın ki kendilerinin açıklamadığı dil gerçeğinin öğrenciler tarafından keşfedilmesi gerektiğine inanmaktadır. Daha da tuhaftı bu eki doğru telaffuz edemeyen öğrenci bunu kendi kusuru olarak görmektedir. Oysa kusurlu taraf, öğrenciye telaffuz ile ilgili bilgileri aktaramayan ve Türk öğrencilerinin karşılaşacağı telaffuz zorluklarını uygun alıştırmalarla gideremeyen öğretmendir.

3. Kendisi bir yabancı dil öğrenmemiş kimseňin başkalarına yabancı dil öğretilebilmesi hemen hemen olanaksızdır.

4. Bir dili öğretecek kişi, dilbilgisini bilmek zorunda olduğu gibi, dilbilgisinin nasıl öğretileceğini de bilmek zorundadır.

Pek çok İngilizce öğretim uzmanı övünerek kendilerinin sıfatla ad arasındaki ayrimı bile bilmediklerini söyleler ve İngilizce öğrenenlerin de bu farkı bilmelerine gerek olmadığını iddia ederler. Evrende bundan daha aptalca çok az iddia vardır.

5. Belli bir dilin konuşurları için yazılacak dilbilgisi kitabının öğrencilerin dilini de çok iyi bilmesi gereklidir.

Dilbilgisi öğretimine karşı çıkanların sloganı olan "dilbilgisi değil, anlaşmak önemli" sloganı, dil öğrenenleri iki açıdan yaniltmaktadır.

Birincisi, anlaşma olacaksız dilbilgisi olmak zorundadır. İkincisi, bir dili öğrenenler herhangi bir ağızı değil, ölçülü dili öğrenmek durumundadır. Yukarıda xxiv. sayfadaki karikatürde **EITHER** ve **TOO** sözcüklerinin ölçülü dildeki kullanımını bilmeyen askerin neden olduğu komik durum gösterilmektedir.

İngilizce ya da Türkçe Düşünmek

Kurulan ya da söylenilen tümceleri açıklama yeteneğinden yoksun olan yabancı uzmanların büyük bir başarıyla yerleştirdikleri bir inanış vardır: biz Türkler, Türkçe düşündüğümüz için İngilizce konuşurken yazarken yanlış yapmaktayız. Bu kesinlikle doğru değildir. Yanlış yapılmasının tek nedeni, ilgili kuralların öğrenilmemesidir.

A monkey that is smoking a cigarette yapısına bakarak bunun (*sigara içen maymun*) yapısından farklı olduğunu söyleyerek düşünce sistemlerinin farklılığına kanıt gösterilmek isteniyor. Oysa İngilizce pekala *a cigarette-smoking monkey* yapısını kurmaktadır. Hem de öbürtüne göre daha yaygın olarak kullanmaktadır. *An economy which was hit by crisis* Türkçe karşılığında farklı görülmektedir ama zaten bu yapı İngilizce'de çoğu zaman *a crisis-hit economy* (*kriz vurmuş ekonomi*) olarak görülmektedir.

<i>cigarette-smoking (sigara-içen)</i>	<i>monkey</i>	<i>sigara içen maymun</i>
<i>crisis-hit (ekonomi-vurmuş)</i>	<i>economy</i>	<i>kriz vurmuş ekonomi</i>

İngilizce anadil konuurlarının çok sık kullandığı bir yapı "*different than*" dir; aynen biz Türkler gibi. Yabancı uzmanlar herhalde "*different than*" kullanıcılarını Türkçe düşünen Amerikalı ya da İngilizler olarak değerlendirmektedir.

DİL ÖĞRENMEYİ ENGELLEMEK ÜZERİNE

Medyges (1994:6) Türkiye'de hep göz ardı edilmiş bir gerçeğin altını çiziyor:

Bütünyle niteliksiz ya da çok az eğitim görmüş onbinlerce Amerikalı ve İngiliz dünyanın dört bir köşesinde İngilizce öğretmektedir. Bu insanların bir kısmı kendi ülkelерinde iş bulabilecek niteliklere sahip değildirler. Bir kısmı da sırt çantalarını yüklenmiş macera peşinde, yeni yerler görmek, yeni insanlarla tanışmak arzusunda olan, bu arada biraz para kazanmayı da uman gençlerdir.

Bu insanlar ne yazık ki Türkiye'de de çok rahat iş bulabilmektedir. Daha da ilginci ve acısı bu insanlar özel okulların reklam vasıtası olabilmektedir.

Bu tür insanlar iyi niyetli bile olsalar İngilizce öğretebilirler mi? İyi niyetli olmak nasıl kalp ameliyatı yapmaya yetmezse, dil öğretmeye de yetmez.

İnsanın yabancı dil öğrenme yeteneğine sahip olduğu bir gerçektir. Dil öğretmenlerinden beklenen bu yeteneğin gelişmesine yardımcı olmalarıdır. Dil dizgesini, dilbilgisini tanımayan, bu konuda bilgisiz olan öğretmenler ve yabancı uzmanlar ne yazık ki tam tersini yapmaktadır. Hiç kuşku yok ki *pekol çok kişi ve öğrenci kitaplara ve öğretmenlere rağmen yabancı dil öğrenmektedir.*

Yabancıların hazırlamış olduğu kitaplar, dili ölü bir varlık olarak sunmaktadır. Öğrencinin biliççaltına, "America is my dream country" benzeri sloganlar kazınmak istenmektedir. Öğrencinin dili, yaşadığı dünyanın anlatılmasında kullanılan yaşayan bir varlık olarak edinmesi, onunla yeni bildiriler yaratması asla istenmemektedir. Çünkü öğrenci bunu yapabilirse düşürüldüğü dil emperyalizmi tuzağının farkına varma şansına sahip olabilecektir.

MEG, okullarda ve kurslarda İngilizce öğrenmeye çalışanların hiç karşılaşamayacakları dil örneklerini tutarlı bir dilbilgisi betimlemesi içinde sunmaktadır. **MEG**'in Türkler için hazırlanmış vazgeçilmez bir İngilizce dilbilgisi kaynağı olacağına inanıyorum.

..... İşte Bir Amerikalının Ağızından Ders Kitaplarının Sakladığı Gerçek

NO EXIT IN AMERICA Andy Singer

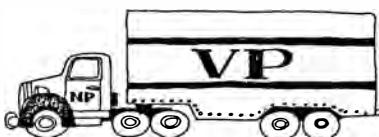
GANGSTA NATION

THIS COUNTRY IS OBSESSED WITH GANGSTERS. WE LOVE THE GODFATHER MOVIES, GOODFELLAS, PRIZZI'S HONOR, SCARFACE AND THE SOPRANOS. WE LISTEN TO GANGSTA RAP ARTISTS "SING" ABOUT KILLING AND ROBBING PEOPLE, AND WE ROMANTICIZE AL CAPONE AND JESSE JAMES. MAYBE IT'S BECAUSE WE'RE A NATION OF GANGSTERS, SKIMMING MONEY AND RESOURCES FROM OTHER COUNTRIES AND RUNNING A VAST ECONOMIC PYRAMID SCHEME. WE TRAFFICK IN PHARMACEUTICALS, PESTICIDES AND WEAPONS,...AND WE RUN PROTECTION RACKETS IN KUWAIT, ISRAEL AND QATAR. WHEN SOME REGIONAL CRIME BOSS (LIKE SADDAM HUSSEIN) GETS OUT OF LINE, ...WE "WHACK" HIM!



Aristo'nun bu yaklaşımı, aslında günümüzde de geçerliliğini korumaktadır. Aristo'nun iki öğesinin günümüz İngilizcesindeki karşılığı **subject** ve **predicate**'tir. Aşağıda Tümce 1'de, **hakkında konuşulan kimse**, yani **subject**, *American Indians*'tir. *American Indians* hakkında söylelenen **became the victims of the most merciless genocide of all times** öbeği de **predicate**'tir.

SUBJECT	PREDICATE
1 American Indians	became the victims of the most merciless genocide of all times.
2 The Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs	is responsible for the deaths of hundreds of thousands of Indians.
3 The Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs	once attempted to wipe out Indian languages and cultures.
4 The head of the Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs	apologized Friday for the agency's legacy of racism and inhumanity.
5 The head of the Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs	promised not to deliberately spread disease again among Indian tribes.



SUBJECT = ÖZNE
PREDICATE = YÜKLEM

Türkçe dilbilgisi öğrenirken, büyük bir olasılıkla, yüklem terimini duydunuz ama ne olduğunu anlayamamış olabilirsiniz. **Yüklem**,其实英語 **predicate** karşılığı olarak düşünülmüş bir terimdir. Aşağıda yukarıdaki tümce-lerin çevirileri olan örnekleri inceleyelim.

ÖZNE	YÜKLEM
1 Kızılderililer	tarihin en acımasız soy kırimının kurbanı oldular.
2 Federal Kızılderili İşleri Bürosu	yüzbinlerce Kızılderilinin ölümünden sorumludur.
3 Federal Kızılderili İşleri Bürosu	bir zamanlar Kızılderililerin dillerini ve kültürlerini yok etmeye çalışmıştır.
4 Federal Kızılderili İşleri Bürosu Başkanı	Cuma günü, büronun, "ırkıçılık ve insanlık dışı tutum mirası" için özür diledi.
5 Federal Kızılderili İşleri Bürosu Başkanı	Kızılderili kabileler arasında tekrar kas-ten hastalık yaymayacakları konusunda söz verdi.

EXERCISE 1

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde öznelerin (*subject*) altını tek çizgiyle, yüklemelerin (*predicate*) altını çift çizgiyle çiziniz.

1. The income disparity between the rich and the poor has rapidly widened.
2. The Americans who invaded Iraq were so ruthless that they even raped little Iraqi boys.
3. American-style fast foods harbor organisms that could harm us.
4. Life on earth and man's activities depend upon the continuous circulation of the earth's water.
5. A significant proportion of the world production of cocoa today is grown and harvested on plantations by African slaves.
6. The first bananas to reach the United States came to New York City from Cuba in 1804.
7. Many accidental deaths and disabilities can be avoided with proper safety procedures.
8. Two out of every five families in New York owned a slave in 1703.
9. Drugs used to treat patients with the disorder called depression are known to be antidepressants.
10. Food production in many developing countries has barely kept up with population increases.



EXERCISE 2

Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs'in kuruluşunun 175. yıl döneminde, başkan Kevin Gover, büronun geçmişte Kızılderililere uyguladığı ırkçı ve insanlık dışı tutum için özür diliyor. Aşağıda konu ile ilgili Associated Press haberinden alınan tümceler bulunmaktadır. *Subject*/Öznelerin altını tek çizgiyle, *predicate*/yüklemelerin altını çift çizgiyle çiziniz.

The agency is believed to be responsible for the deaths of hundreds of thousands of Indians.

1. The Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs (BIA) participated in the ethnic cleansing of the Western Indian tribes.
2. The BIA accepts the moral responsibility of putting things right.
3. The deliberate spread of disease and the cowardly killing of women and children were what the white American did to American Indians.

4. The U.S. Army decimated the mighty bison herds so that the Indians would die of hunger.
5. Poison alcohol was given to the Indians to destroy their minds and bodies.
6. Indian languages and religious practices were banned.
7. Poverty, ignorance and disease have been the product of the BIA.
8. The government has formally apologized for abuses in government-run boarding schools for Indians.
9. The government seized the Indian children and taught them to be assimilated into who they were.
10. Kevin Gover recited a litany of wrongs which the BIA inflicted on Indians since its creation as the Indian Office of the War Department.
11. Now, 95 percent of the Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs' 10,000 employees are Indian.
12. The Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs has changed into an advocate for tribal governments.
13. Kevin Gover said he was apologizing on behalf of the Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs.
14. Lloyd Tortalita, the governor of New Mexico's Acoma Pueblo tribe, welcomed the apology.
15. Both Canada's government and the White House still refuse to apologize from the Indians for their government-imposed sufferings.
16. The high rates of alcoholism, suicide and violence in Indian communities today are the result of the BIA's work.

Yabancı Dil Öğretiminde Tümce Çözümlemesi



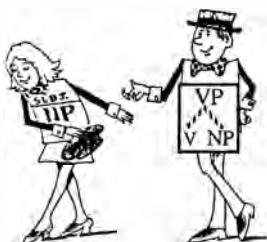
Tümce çözümlemesinde her tümcenin iki öğedenoluştugu dilbilimin temel gerçeklerinden biridir. Bu iki öğeye verilen adlar değişmektedir. **Özne/Yüklem (Subject/Predicate)** olarak adlandırılabilen bu iki öğe **Noun Phrase/Verb Phrase (Ad Öbeği/Eylem Öbeği)** olarak da adlandırılabilir. Yukarıdaki resim **Özne/Ad Öbeği/Subjek/Noun Phrase** terimlerinin aynı öğeyi göstermek için kullanıldığını gösteriyor.

Yabancı dil öğretiminde tümce çözümlemesi de aslında bu genel değerlendirme dayanmaktadır. Ne var ki dilin bu gerçeği, dil öğretiminde öğrenmeyi daha kolay kılaceği düşüncesiyle biraz farklı bir şekilde sunulmaktadır.

Aradaki farkı gösterebilmek için çözümleme örneklerini aşağıda sunuyoruz. Önce SUBJECT+PREDICATE tablosunu verelim.

	SUBJECT (NOUN PHRASE)	PREDICATE (VERB PHRASE)
1	The doctor	bought his wife a birthday present.
2	His wife	bought the doctor a birthday present.
3	The doctor	loved his wife.
4	The doctor	got a birthday present.
5	His wife	loved the doctor.
6	A birthday present	pleased the doctor.
7	Rolling stones	gathers no moss.
8	The early bird	catches the worm.
9	The federal government	refuses to apologize for what had been done to American Indians.
10	Canadian governments	are also guilty of abusing American Indians.

Yabancı Dil Öğretimi Yaklaşımına Göre



Şimdi yabancı dil öğretiminde kullanılan çözümlemeye örnekler verelim. Bu tür çözümlemede eylem öreguntaının öğelerine ayrılarak verildiğini görüyoruz.

☞ Tablodaki 9. tümcede öznenin "işi yapan şey" olmadığına dikkat ediniz.

	SUBJECT	VERB	INDIRECT OBJECT	DIRECT OBJECT
1	The doctor	bought	his wife	a birthday present.
2	His wife	bought	the doctor	a birthday present.
3	The doctor	loved	—	his wife.
4	The doctor	got	—	a birthday present.
5	His wife	loved	—	the doctor.
6	A birthday present	pleased	—	the doctor.
7	Rolling stones	gathers	—	no moss.
8	The early bird	catches	—	the worm
9	Only poverty, ignorance and disease	have been given	to American Indians.	

Dilbilgisi kitaplarında sıkılıkla gördüğümüz bu çözümlemede dil öğrencisinin aklını karıştıran bir tutarsızlık vardır. **Subject**, **indirect object** ve **direct object** terimleri anlamsal terimlerdir. **Subject**, hakkında konuşulan kişi ya da şey, **direct object**, tümcede belirtilen işten doğrudan etkilenen kişi ya da şey, **indirect object** de dolaylı olarak etkilenen kişi ya da şeydir. Bir ögenin, **subject** mi, **direct object** mi, **indirect object** mi olduğunu ancak tümcenin anlamını çıkardıktan sonra bileyebiliriz. Örneklerde görüldüğü gibi, **his wife** öbeği hem **subject**, hem **direct object** hem de **indirect object** olarak kullanılmıştır.

SUBJECT	VERB	INDIRECT OBJECT	DIRECT OBJECT
The doctor	bought	his wife	a birthday present.
His wife	bought	the doctor	a birthday present.
The doctor	loved	—	his wife.

Bu yaklaşımda kullandığımız **verb** terimi ise anlamsal değil, yapısal bir terimdir. **Bought**, **loved** ve **got** sözcükleri eylemdir, onları tümce içindeki yerlerinden bağımsız olarak eylem diye adlandırabiliriz.

Only poverty, ignorance and disease	have been given	to American Indians.
--	------------------------	-----------------------------

Yukarıdaki tümcede **only poverty, ignorance and disease** öbeğinin özne olmasına rağmen işi yapan şey olmadığını anımsayınız.

Yabancı dil öğretimi yaklaşımını tutarlı bir hale getirelim. Örnek tümcelerde **subject**, **direct object** ve **indirect object** olarak kullanılan öbekleri yeniden inceleyelim. Görüldüğü gibi aynı öbek, hem **subject**, hem **direct object** hem de **indirect object** olarak kullanılmaktadır. Bu öbeklerin ortak özelliği, son sözcüklerinin bir ad olmasıdır: **doctor**, **wife** ve **present**.

the doctor	his wife	a birthday present
-------------------	-----------------	---------------------------

Bu öbeklere son sözcüklerini dikkate alarak **ad öbekleri (noun phrases)** diyelim. Artık, bütün öğelerin yapısal ölçütle sınıflandırıldığı tutarlı bir tümce çözümlemesi gösterebiliriz.

NOUN PHRASE (özne)	VERB	NOUN PHRASE (dolaylı nesne)	NOUN PHRASE (dolaysız nesne)
The doctor	bought	his wife	a birthday present.
The IMF	brought	our country	more poverty.
Americans	offered	the Indians	only slavery.

EXERCISE 3

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde eylemlerin altını tek çizgiyle ad öbeklerinin altlarını çift çizgiyle çiziniz.

1. Several factors cause fatigue.
2. Two of the major religions of the world are Christianity and Islam.
3. The USA has built up the biggest military machine in history.
4. The Chinese became the first manufacturers of paper.
5. Most people do not recognize the sound of their own voices.
6. A nation that enslaves another forges its own chains. —*Karl Marx*
7. Fire department paramedics have saved many heart-attack victims.
8. The US deliberately destroyed Iraq's water supply during the Gulf War.
9. We often give our enemies the means for our own destruction.
10. A little neglect may breed great mischief.
11. That his computer had bugs caused him nightmares.
12. A person angry with the world makes a poor neighbour.
13. That the CIA is a terrorist organization is clear from its record of terrorist activities.
14. The rich have owned the government of the USA since the days of Andrew Jackson. —*President Franklin D. Roosevelt*
15. Ultimately the only way to stabilize the population is to improve living standards.

EXERCISE 4

Aşağıdaki parçada bazı eylemler koyu dizilmiştir. Bu eylemlerin özneleri ve nesneleri olan ad öbeklerini bulunuz.

(0) invented>**subject**:one of their scientists; **object**: it

The Chinese became the first manufacturers of paper when one of their scientists (0) **invented** it as a convenient material for money. Their secret of making a pulp from grasses, fibers, old rags, and water was brought to Europe by the Arabs. Centuries later rags were still being used in paper mills.

By 1850, the ever-increasing demand for cheap paper (1) **led** men to find a solution. They (2) **searched for** another raw material. A man named Keller (3) **got** an idea from inspecting a bee's nest, which was made of a material that resembled paper. It had been taken by the bees from the fiber of trees. Keller (4) **found** that he could duplicate the work of the bees and make paper from wood fiber. Soon trees (5) **were cut down** widely. This(6) **provided** badly-needed wood pulp for the industry.

However, the search still goes on. We (7) **require** more paper than ever before, but we no longer can afford to destroy our forests and trees. Recent experiments have (8) **shown** that cornstalks and peanut hulls can be used satisfactorily in making paper.

Chapter 2

DEEP STRUCTURES AND SURFACE STRUCTURES



Bir buzulun su üzerindeki kısmının buzulun sadece 1/7'si olduğunu bileyenler, bir buzul göründüklerinde buzulun gerçek büyüklüğü hakkında bir tahminde bulunabilirler.

Buzulun görünen bölümüne *yüzey yapı* (*surface structure*) diyelim.

Buzulun su altında kaldığı için görülemeyen bölümüne de *derin yapı* (*deep structure*) adını verelim.

Bir bakıma tümceler de buzullara benzemektedirler. 300 yıl kadar önce , dil bilginleri, tümcenin "görünüşü", yani söylenilen ve yazılan şekli ile "anlamı", yani o tümceden anlaşılan şey arasında belirgin farklılıklar olduğunu söylemeye başladılar.



Örneğin,

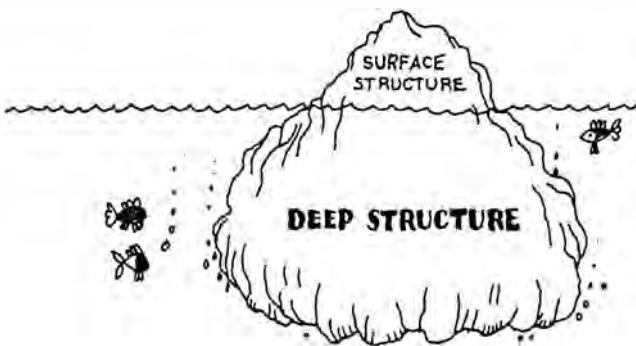
Invisible God created the visible world.

tümcesinin tek bir tümce olarak görünmesine rağmen, bu tümcede insanların 3 yargı bulduklarını söyleyerek iddialarını kanıtlamaya çalışılar.

1. *God is invisible.*
2. *God created the world.*
3. *The world is visible.*

Bu eski dil bilginlerinin söyledikleri doğruydu. Ne var ki diğer dil bilginleri onlarla aynı görüşleri paylaşmadılar.

Dil bilginlerinin savları 300 yıl sonra tekrar gündeme geldi. Amerikalı dilbilimci Avram Noam Chomsky (d. 1928), 1957'de basılmış olan, *Sözdizimsel Yapılar* adlı kitabında, 300 yıl öncesi dil bilginlerinin söylediklerini açıklayan ve onların görüşünü temel alan bir dilbilim kuramı geliştirdi. Tümçenin görünüşüne **yüzey yapı** (*surface structure*), tümceden çıkarılan anlama da **derin yapı** (*deep structure*) adını verdi.



Görünüşte dil öğretim alanı da Chomsky'nin görüşlerine ağırlık verdi. Ne var ki, dil öğretimi açısından, Chomsky'in kaderi, eski dil bilginlerinin kaderinden pek farklı olmadı. Örneğin, hemen hemen hiçbir İngiliz dilbilgisi kitabı ya da İngilizce öğretim dizisi onun kuramına dayanmamıştır. Oysa Chomsky'nin dilbilim kuramı, yabancı dil öğrenmeyi ve öğretmeyi son derece kolaylaştıracak bir kuramdır.

Chomsky'nin derin yapı ve yüzey yapı ayrimını biraz daha açmaya çalışalım. Aşağıdaki ifadeler tümce olarak kullanılabilmektedir. Bu ifadeler, doğrudan duyulan ya da yazılı olarak görülen ifadelerdir.

1. *Yes.*
2. *Have a nice day.*
3. *Ready?*
4. *What a day!*
5. *Okay.*
6. *What?*

Yes, kendi başına anlamsız görülmektedir. Ama şu örneğe bakalım.

Mother:	<i>Have you cleaned up your room?</i>
Son:	<i>Yes.</i>

Bu konuşmada duyulan yanıt tümcesi sadece YES'tır. Oysa anlaşılan yanıt tümcesi, "*Yes, I have cleaned up my room*" dur. Bir başka deyişle, *Yes, Yes, I have cleaned up my room* tümcesinin görünüşüdür. Ona yüzey yapı

diyebiliriz. Görünen bu yüzey yapının anlamı olan *Yes, I have cleaned up my room* da tümcenin derin yapısı diyebiliriz.

Yüzeyde gördüğümüz şeye verdiğimiz anlam, durumdan bizim çıkarabildiğimiz anlamdır. Örneğin, balıkadamların çalışma yaptığı bir geminin güvertesinden şöyle bir manzara görülsün.



Denizde olanın ne iş yaptığı bilerek gördüğümüze şöyle bir anlam verebiliriz.



Aynı manzarayı kumsalda gördüğümüzü varsayalım.



Bu manzaraya vereceğimiz anlam şöyle olabilir.



Chomsky'nin dilbilgisi kuramı, deniz yüzeyinde gördüğümüz elin, gerçekte hangi varlığını bir parçası olduğunu tahmin etmemize olanak sağlayan insan yeteneğinin, dil becerisi içinde de var olduğu inancına dayanıyor. Diğer bir deyişle, insan, yüzey yapılarla bakarak, derin yapıları algılama yeteneğine sahiptir.

Örneğin, yukarıda gösterilen tümcelerin derin yapıları belli durumlarda şöyle olabilir.

1. Yes=Yes, I have cleaned up my room .
2. Have a nice day=I wish you a nice day.
3. Ready?=Are you ready to begin?
4. What a day!=What a terrible day it has been!
5. Okay=Okay, I'll do it.
6. What=What did he want?

Chomsky'nin dilbilgisi kuramı, görülen parçaaya dayanarak bütünü görme yeteneği kadar, bütüne bakarak parçaları ve parçalar arasındaki ilişkiyi kavrama yeteneği ile de ilgilendiriyor. Bir buzdolabı görüldüğünde, algılama sadece görülene değil, buzdolabının içinde neler olabileceği bilgisine de dayanır. Buzdolabının kapağı açılınca, bölümler bağımsız birimler olarak değil, bir bütünü parçaları olarak algılanır.



Kapısı kapalı bir buzdolabı gördüğümüzde, kapısı açıldığında neler görebileceğimizi nasıl tahmin edebiliyorsak, tümcelerin görünüşüne bakarak “derin yapılarını” da öyle tahmin edebiliyoruz.



SEPTEMBER 11



The 3,000 innocent people who died in the terrorist attack on the World Trade Center, are victims of policies which have been pursued by the United States. Their deaths are the consequence of reckless and reactionary decisions made in Washington, in pursuit of oil and other imperialist geo-strategic interests, over the last 20 years.

—David North, February 23, 2002

David North'un iki tümcesi okunduğunda, İngilizce konuşur, bu tümcelerin birçok tümcenin birleşmesinden oluştuğunu algılar. Bu, derin yapıdaki birçok tümcenin, yüzey yapıda iki tümce olarak görülmesi olgsudur.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. The 3,000 people are victims of policies. | 9. The decisions are reactionary. |
| 2. The 3,000 people are innocent. | 10. The decisions were made in Washington. |
| 3. The 3,000 people died in the attack. | 11. The decisions were made in pursuit of oil interests. |
| 4. The attack was done by terrorists. | 12. The decisions were made in pursuit of other imperialist interests. |
| 5. The attack was on the World Trade Center. | 13. The other imperialist interests are of geo-strategic nature. |
| 6. The policies have been pursued by the United States. | 14. The decisions have been made over the last 20 years. |
| 7. Their deaths are consequence of decisions. | |
| 8. The decisions are reckless. | |

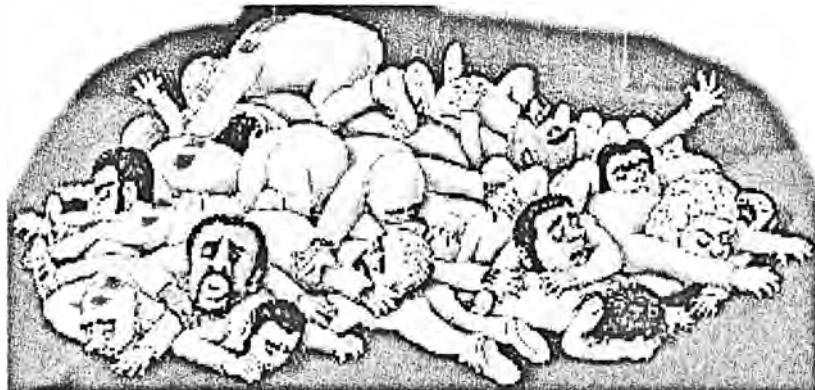
Yabancı dil öğreniminde, derin yapı-yüzey yapı ayrimını görebilmek, daha etkin öğrenmeyi sağlayacaktır. Bu nedenle, elinizdeki kitapta dilbilgisine derin yapı-yüzey yapı ilişkisi içinde açıklamalar getirilecektir.

EXERCISE 5

Aşağıdaki yüzey yapılarına bakarak tümcelerin derin yapısında neler olduğunu tahmin etmeye çalışınız.

1. The young Turkish skin-diver found a big beautiful oyster.
The skin-diver found an oyster. The oyster was big.
The skin-diver was young. The oyster was beautiful.
The skin-diver was Turkish.
2. THE US is the world's biggest haven for war criminals. (<http://www.mediareviewnet.com>)
The US is the haven. The haven is for criminals.
The haven is of the world. The criminals are of war.
The haven is the biggest.
3. Our birds built a small nest in the attic.
4. A white goat ate our red roses.
5. Summer television shows are for idiots.
6. The experienced detective calmed the terrified hostages.
7. The travellers on the boat saw many strange things.
8. The rain which fell in the night revived our dying flowers.
9. The cage the talented young man built had a well-designed door.
10. The cowboy who has fallen off the white horse is limping.
11. Life in a university dorm is usually hectic.
12. Driving in a large city requires nerves of steel.
13. Television commercials encourage young people to spend more and more.
14. A daily newspaper can be a good source of information.
15. The assassination of John Kennedy had a profound impact on American society and culture.

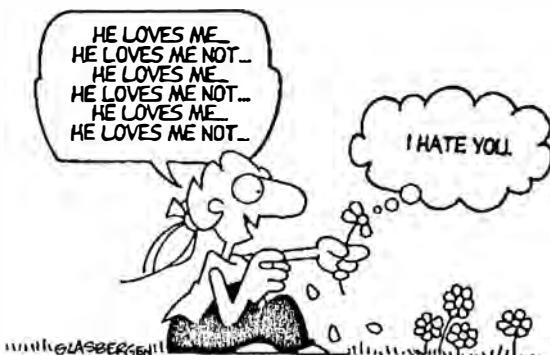
Stepping Stones to American and European Wealth



Chapter 3

THE TWO BASIC ELEMENTS OF THE SENTENCE

TÜMCENİN İKİ TEMEL ÖĞESİ



Dilin temel birimi tümcedir. Yargı, tümceyle başlar. Metinlerin tuğlaları da tümcelerdir. Bir dili öğrenmek, aslında tümcelerinin kuruluşlarının sırlarını kavramayı gerektirir. Bu bölümde sırları açıklamaya başlayacağız.

Çoğu insan tümceyi tanadığını sanır. Oysa tümceye ilişkin yanlış yargı ve inançlar, doğrularından çok daha fazla yaygındır.

Türkler için yazılan çoğu dilbilgisi kitabı, Türkçe tümcelerle İngilizce tümcelerin yapılarının çok farklı olduğunu belirtmeden geçmez. Çoğu kişi de tartışmasız kabullenir bu yargıyı. Hatta İngilizce ve Türkçe tümcelerin farklılıklarını, Türkler için İngilizce öğrenmenin en büyük sorunları arasında gösterilir. Bu bölümde bu yaygın yargıların pek de doğru olmadığını göstermeye çalışacağız.

Farklı dillerin tümceleri arasında hemen göze çarpan farklılıklar olduğu doğrudur. Kuşkusuz Türkçe ve İngilizce tümce yapıları arasında hemen göze çarpan farklılıklar bulunmaktadır. Bütün dilbilgisi kitabı yazarları, bütün dil eğitimcileri bu farklılıkların üzerinde dururlar. Bu farklılıkların yabancı dil öğrenmeyi nasıl zorlaştırdığını açıklamaya çalışırlar. Oysa farklı dillerin tümceleri arasındaki farklar görünüş farklardır. Temelde bütün dillerde tümceler, benzer şekilde kurulurlar.

Tümce evrensel bir dil birimidir; herhangi iki dilin tümceleri arasındaki temel benzerlikler her zaman farklılıklardan daha önemli ve daha çoktur. Bir kere, tümcenin temel öğeleri bütün dillerde aynıdır. Ayrıca bütün diller tümcenin oluşumunda aynı işlemleri kullanmaktadır. Bu işlemlerin kullanılmasındaki görünüş farklılıklarını vurgulayıp durmak, tümcelerin temeldeki benzerliklerini görmeyi engellemektedir. Farklılıklar vurgulamak yerine tümcenin evrensel özellikleri üzerinde durmak hem anadilimizin hem de yabancı dilin tümcelerinin sırrını çözmemize yardımcı olacaktır, çünkü bütün dillerde tümceler aynı temel öğeleri kullanmaktadır.

Tümceye ilişkin en yaygın ve en yanlıltıcı inanış, tümcenin, sözcüklerin ardarda sıralanmasıyla oluşan bir birim olduğu görüşüdür. Gerçek şudur: tümce belirli öğelerden oluşan bir birimdir. Tümce, her ögesinde hangi öbeklerin yer alabileceğini kendisi belirler. Sözcükler, tümce içinde, tümcenin öğeleri olarak değil, tümcenin öğeleri içinde bulunan birimler olarak bulunurlar. Tümceyi kuran sözcükler değil, tümcenin kuruluş işlemleridir.

Bu karikatürde çiçeğin söylediği tümce üç sözcük içeriyor.



1. I
2. you
3. hate

Bu sözcükler, matematsel olarak 6 değişik şekilde sıralanabilirler.

- | | |
|-------------------|-------------------|
| 1. I / you/ hate | 4. hate / you/ I |
| 2. I / hate / you | 5. you / hate/ I |
| 3. hate/ I /you | 6. you / I / hate |

Bu tümcelerden 2 (I hate you) ve 5 (you hate I) İngilizce için doğru sıralanışa sahiptir. Tümce 5'in doğru şekli kuşkusuz (you hate **ME**) olacaktır. Aslında bu durum, tümcelerin çok önemli bir özelliğine ışık tutmaktadır. Aşağıda bu özelliği açıklayacağız.



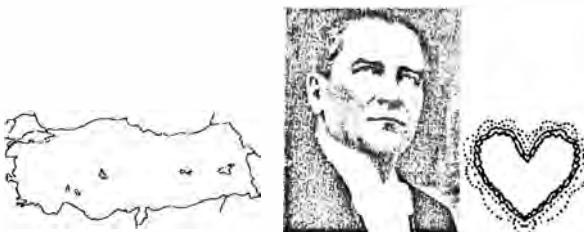
Türkçe'de 6 değişik dizilişin de mümkün olmasının özne ve nesne ayrimının eklerle yapılmış olmasından kaynaklandığına dikkat ediniz.

*Avrupa terörü besliyor.
Avrupa besliyor terörü.
Terörü Avrupa besliyor.
Terörü besliyor Avrupa.
Besliyor terörü Avrupa.
Besliyor Avrupa terörü.*

BASIC ELEMENTS OF THE SENTENCE

TÜMCENİN TEMEL ÖĞELERİ

Tümcenin yargı taşıyan bir birim olduğunu biliyoruz. Bir başka deyişle, tümce, kendisine bir anlam yüklenilebilen bir sözcük dizisi gibi görülür. Ne var ki gerçekte tümce sözcüklerin dizilişi değil, tümcenin öğelerinin dizilişidir. Bu özelliği örneklerle açıklamaya çalışacağız.



Böyle bir resim dizilişine bakıp İngilizce ve Türkçe'de şu tümceler kurulabilir:

Türkiye Atatürk'ü seviyor.

Turkey loves Atatürk.

Bu tümcelerin oluşturulmasındaki tek fark, İngilizce ve Türkçe tümcelerde sözdiziminin farklı olmasıdır. Tümcelerin oluşturulmasında Türkçe konuşurlarla İngilizce konuşurlar aynı bilgileri kullanmaktadır.

Tümcede bir iş bulunur, bunu eylem ifade eder: *SEV-, LOVE*

Tümcede işi yapan vardır. *Turkey, Türkiye*

Tümcede işten etkilenen vardır: *Atatürk*

Resimlerin sırasını değiştirelim:



Şimdi şu tümceler yapılacaktır:

Atatürk Türkiye'yi seviyor.

Atatürk loves Turkey.

Aynı bilgiler kullanılacaktır:

Tümcede bir iş bulunur, bunu eylem ifade eder: *SEV-, LOVE*

Tümcede işi yapan vardır. *Atatürk*

Tümcede işten etkilenen vardır: *Turkey, Türkiye*

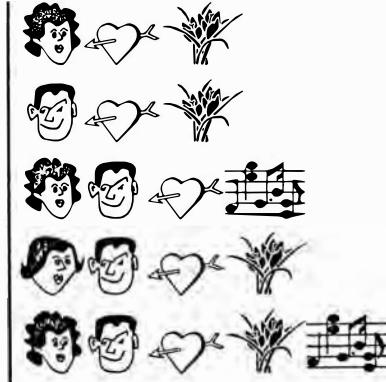
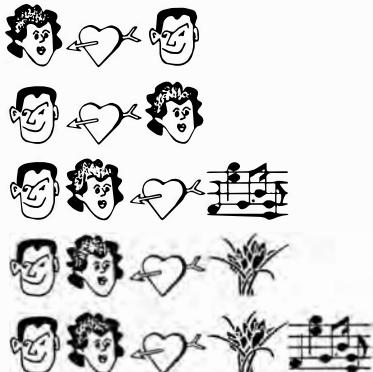
Bu tümcelerde İngilizce ve Türkçe konuşurların paylaştığı önemli bir bilgi daha görülmektedir. Aynı öğe, işi yapan öğe olabileceğinin gibi işten etkilenen öğe de

olabilir. **SEV-me** işini ilk örnekte Türkiye, ikinci örnekte ise Atatürk yapmaktadır.

Bir Lucy ve Fred Öyküsü



Aşağıdaki resim dizilerine bakarak tümceler yazabilir misiniz?



Şimdi ⚡ işaretinin **BUY** eylemini simgelediğini düşünerek aşağıdaki dizi için nasıl bir tümce kurulabilir?



Fred BOUGHT Lucy a record player.
Fred BOUGHT a record player for Lucy.



Lucy BOUGHT Fred a record player.
Lucy BOUGHT a record player for Fred.

Artık İngilizce'nin tümce yapısına ilişkin kurallar verebiliriz. Bunun için, kullandığımız sözcüklerin, hangi sözcük türlerine ait olduğunu görelim.

NOUN:	Fred, Lucy, Turkey, record player, Atatürk
VERB:	love, buy

NOUN	VERB	NOUN
Atatürk	loves	Turkey.
Turkey	loves	Atatürk.
Fred	loves	Lucy.
Lucy	loves	Fred.

Bu tablo İngilizce'ye ilişkin iki önemli gerçeği gösteriyor.

1. Eylemin solundaki AD işi yapandır. Bir başka deyişle *özne (subject)* olarak kullanılmaktadır. Eylemin sağındaki ad da işten etkilenendir. Bir başka deyişle, nesne (*object*) olarak kullanılmaktadır.
2. **ADLAR, aynı biçimleriyle hem özne hem de nesne olarak kullanılmakadır.**

Türkçe'ye bakalım. Türkçe'de nesne olan adın bir ek aldığıını görüyoruz. Nesne ek ile belirtildiğinden tümcede herhangi bir yerde kullanılabilir görülmektedir.

Gençler	Atatürk'ü	seviyor
Gençler	seviyor	Atatürk'ü
Atatürk'ü	seviyor	gençler
Atatürk'ü	gençler	seviyor
Seviyor	Atatürk'ü	gençler
Seviyor	gençler	Atatürk'ü

Ama bir de şu tabloya bakalım.

Para	mutluluk	getirmez
Para	getirmez	mutluluk
Mutluluk	para	getirmez
Mutluluk	getirmez	para
Getirmez	mutluluk	para
Getirmez	para	mutluluk

Bu tablo bize Türkçe'de belli durumlarda, özne ve nesne ayrimının sözdizimi tarafından yapıldığını göstermektedir. Tümcede kullanılan her iki ad da (*para, mutluluk*) herhangi bir işaret taşımadıysa, ilk kullanılan öznedir.

Para mutluluk getirmez. (Para özne)

Mutluluk para getirmez. (Mutluluk özne)

TÜMCE ÖĞELERİNİN GİZİ



Fred Loves Lucy tümcesinden söz ederken AD, EYLEM, ÖZNE ve NESNE terimlerini kullandık. Tümcenin yapısı için de NOUN + VERB + NOUN şeklinde bir kural verdik.

Pek çok dilbilgisi kitabında da aşağıdaki gibi bir tablo görmek mümkündür.

NOUN	VERB	NOUN
Fred	loves	Lucy

Aynı tümcenin bu şekilde iki ayrı biçimde çözümlenmesine yol açan neden, tümcenin önemli gizlerinden biridir. Bu gizi birazcık olsun aralayabilmek için bir soru soralım: *Fred* özne midir, nesne midir? Bu sorunun yanıtı kuşkusuz şudur: *Fred*'in kendi başına özne ya da nesne olması söz konusu değildir. Ancak bir tümce içinde kullanıldığında onun özne ya da nesne olduğunu söyleyebiliriz.

Bir soru daha soralım: *Fred* ad mıdır, sıfat mı? Yanıt, *Fred* bir addır. *Fred*'in ad olup olmadığını bilmemiz için onu tümce içinde görmemiz gerekmeyeğine dikkat ediniz.

Bir dilde sadece adlar ve eylemler olsaydı, kullanılabilecek tek tümce kalibi da NOUN+VERB+NOUN olsaydı, o dilin mümkün olan bütün tümcelerini üretmek için 3 kural yeterdi.

1. Noun → (**Fred, Lucy, rose, etc.**)
2. Verb → (**love, hate, give, etc.**)
3. Sentence → **Noun+Verb+Noun**

Bu üç kural bile, binlerce sözcüğü olan bir dilde milyarlarca tümce üretebilirdi.

Şöyle bir kural verebiliriz: *tümcenin iki temel ögesi ad ve eylemdir.*

Adların, tümce kalıplarında ne kadar önemli bir yer tuttuklarını aşağıdaki tablo göstermektedir. Bu tabloda İngilizce tümce kalıplarının tamamı verilmektedir.

	is a pilot.
	is brave.
	is here.
	lives in Ankara.
	loves Lucy.
The present is for	
Lucy's best friend is	
All his friends like	

Lucy gave		a watch as a present.
All his friends find		clever.
His boss considers		his friend.
Lucy saw		flying a plane.
Lucy saw		to wash his car.
Lucy helped		taken to the hospital.

Sentence → Noun+Verb+Noun Kuralı bir dil gerçekini gösteriyor mu?

Gerçekte dilin gizini sergilemesi gereken SENTENCE → NOUN+VERB+NOUN kuralı, dilbilgisi kitaplarında tam tersine, bu gizi saklar biçimde sergilenmektedir. Gerçek şudur: **tümceler, sözcüklerin dışında, bir bakıma onlardan bağımsız br yapıya sahiptir.**

Uydurma sözcüklerle bir İngilizce tümce kuralım:

YAMLOPS HORKED ZIZZIES.

Yamlops ve *Zizzies* sözcüklerinin sonundaki ekinin çoğu eki olduğunu tahmin edebiliriz. HORK eyleminin sonundaki {-ed} past tense eki olabilir. Bu tümceye göre, *Yamloplar, zizzy'leri horkmuşlardır*. Bu tümcenin betimlemesi olarak da NOUN + VERB + NOUN yazabiliriz. Ama bir de şuna bakalım:

KIKOUS YAMLOPS	IKY HORKED	GINTY ZIZZIES.
----------------	------------	----------------

Artık bu tümce için **NOUN+VERB+NOUN** kuralını yazamayız. Ama biliyoruz ki bu tümcedeki KIKOUS YAMLOPS, ilk tümcedeki YAMLOPS görevinde, GINTY ZIZZIES de ilk tümcedeki ZIZZIES görevindedir.

Şimdi dil gerçekine dayalı bir gözleme bulunalım. İngilizce'de 3 öğeden oluşan bir tümce kalibi vardır. Bu kalıpta 1. ve 3. üye için AD, ikinci üye için de EYLEM kullanılabilir. Bir başka deyişle, 1. ve 3. üyeler için kullanılabilecek seçeneklerden biri ADDır.

Şimdi bu tümcenin kuralını şöyle yazalım:

Sentence → X+Z+X

Z'nin EYLEM olduğunu kabul edelim, bu durumda soru, X'lerin neler olabileceğidir. *Fred loves Lucy* tümcesi bize X'in bir ad olabileceğini gösteriyor. *I hate you*, tümcesi de X'in pronoun olabileceğini gösteriyor. Ne var ki çok az İngilizce tümçede X'in sadece bir ad ya da zamir olarak gerçekleştiği görülür. Peki başka hangi yapılar X olarak kullanılabilir?

Bu noktada X teriminden kurtulalım. Mademki adların X olabildiğini biliyoruz ve mademki X'ler çoğu zaman bir *öbek* (phrase) şeklinde görünüyor, o halde X'e Noun Phrase (Ad Öbeği) diyelim. Şimdi daha gerçekçi bir kural yazabilirim:

Sentence → NOUN PHRASE + VERB + NOUN PHRASE

Şimdi tümçenin temel öğelerinin, *ad öbekleri* ve *eylemler* olduğunu söyleyebiliriz. Bütün diller için geçerli olan üç gerçeği belirtelim.

- Dillerde sınırlı sayıda tümce kalıbı vardır.**
- Tümceleri birleştirmenin sınırlı sayıda yolu vardır.**
- Dillerin, tümceleri ad öbeği şekline sokmakta kullandığı sınırlı sayıda ve betimlenebilen yolları vardır.**

Bu gerçeklerin, açıklanması gereken sırları olduğunu belirtelim. Bir dil öğrenmek, bu sırların açıklığa kavuşturulması ile başarılabilir. Bu sırları, ilgili böümlerde teker teker sergilemeye çalışacağız. Burada 3. gözleme ilgili, yani tümcelerin ad öbeği şekline sokuluşunu gösteren, bir örnekleme sunacağız.

Bütün dillerde, tümceleri ad öbeği şekline sokacak işlemler vardır.
Bu işlemleri tanımadan yeni bir dil öğrenmeye çalışmak, gereksiz yere öğrenmeyi zorlaştıracaktır.

Şimdi söylediklerimizi örnekleylelim. FRED LOVES LUCY tümcesi için NOUN PHRASE +VERB+NOUN PHRASE kuralını yazmıştık. Bu kural işleyen bir kuraldır. Yani sadece FRED LOVES LUCY tümcesinin yapısını gösteren bir kural değil, tümce kuruluşuna olanak sağlayan düzeneklerden birini gösteren bir kuraldır.



Bu durumda tümce kurmak istiyorsak sadece iki sorunun yanıtını almamız gerekiyor.

- 1. AD ÖBEĞİ nedir? Hangi öğeler ad öbeği olabilir?**
- 2. Hangi sözcükler eylemdir?**

Bu sorulara geçici olarak yanıt verelim. Söz gelimi, bütün adların ve özne ve nesne durumundaki zamirlerin ad öbeği olabileceğini söyleyelim. Eylemlerin de devinim gösteren sözcükler olduğunu söyleyelim. Dahası, bir sözlüğün adları,

zamirleri ve eylemleri gösterdiğini anımsayalım. Şimdi örnek olarak bir zamir (*I*) bir de ad (*English*) seçelim. Eylem olarak da *know*'u alalım.

Kuralımızı uygulayalım.

NOUN PHRASE	VERB	NOUN PHRASE
I	know	English.

Başka hangi öğeler ad öbeği olabilir? Bütün dillerde, tümceleri ad öbeği haline getirme yöntemleri olduğunu söylemiştık. O halde

1. Bir tümceyi ad öbeği haline getirelim.
2. Bu yeni ad öbeğini yukarıdaki kalıptaki ad öbeklerinden biri olarak kullanalım.

İNGİLİZCE'DE bir tümceyi ad öbeği haline getirmenin bir yolu, düz tümcelerin başına *THAT* getirmekten ibarettir.

FRED LOVES LUCY tümcesi **THAT FRED LOVES LUCY** şekline getirilince *ad öbeği* olmaktadır. Şimdi bu yeni ad öbegimizi yukarıdaki tümcenin bir ad öbeği olarak kullanalım.

NOUN PHRASE	VERB	NOUN PHRASE
I	know	that Fred loves Lucy.

Bir tümcenin ad öbeği haline sokulması işlemeye **ADLAŞTIRMA** işlemi diyoruz. Bu işlemin, türetme ekleriyle, (*act-action*)örnüğünde görülen ad türetme işleminden çok farklı olduğunu görmeye çalışınız.

ADLAŞTIRMA İŞLEMİNİN geleneksel dilbilgilerinde **NOUN CLAUSE** adı verilen tümce öğeleri de yarattığını görmüş olabilirsiniz. Ayrıca **INDIRECT SPEECH** kuruluşunun da (*Jack says that Fred loves Lucy*)örnüğünde olduğu gibi bir adlaştırma ürünü olduğunu anlamış olabilirsiniz.

EXERCISE 6

Aşağıdaki tümceleri adlaştırınız ve verilen diğer öğelerin yardımıyla tümceler kurunuz.

1. President George Bush has misled the American public. (*Robert Jensen says*)
Jensen says that Bush has misled the American public.
2. Smoking causes cancer. (*Scientists claim ...*)
3. Anxiety is a normal emotion. (*Psychologists believe ...*)
4. The worst crime is murdering a human being. (*All philosophers agree ...*)

5. Buying a house requires careful planning. (*I was told ...*)
6. Liver and wheat germ are a prime source of protein and B vitamins. (*Health experts claim ...*)
7. The USA places no value whatsoever on human life. (*History proves conclusively ...*) [<http://free.freespeech.org/>]
8. The USA government is a plutocracy—the rule of the rich. (*It has now become obvious ...*) [<http://free.freespeech.org/>]
9. The wealthy nations of the world are doing nothing about the problem of food scarcity in Somalia. (*The scholars complain*)
10. Known reserves of petroleum are only sufficient until the end of the century. (*Most energy experts believe ...*)

ADLAŞTIRMANIN SONSUZLUĞU

Yukarıda örneklediğimiz adlaştırma kuralını yineleyelim: BAŞINA **THAT** GETİRİLEN DÜZ TÜMCE AD ÖBEĞİ OLUR.

Bu kuralı uygulayarak

I	know	that Fred loves Lucy.
---	------	-----------------------

tümcesini üretmişтик.

Madem ki *I know that Fed loves Lucy* bir tümcedir o halde kuralımız bu tümceye de uygulanabilir. Yani bu tümce *that I know that Fred loves Lucy* şeklinde bir AD ÖBEĞİ yapılabilir. Ve madem ki *that I know that Fred loves Lucy* bir ad öbeğidir o halde yine bir başka tümcenin ad öbeği olarak kullanılabilir.

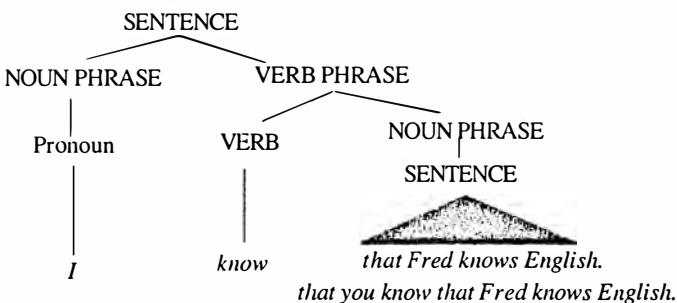
You	know	that I know that Fred loves Lucy.
-----	------	-----------------------------------

Şimdi *You know that I know that Fred loves Lucy* dizisi de bir tümce olduğuna göre yine ADLAŞTIRMA İŞLEMİ çalışabilir. *Nobody knows that you know that I know that Fred loves Lucy* tümcesi üretilibılır.

ADLAŞTIRMA İŞLEMİ kuramsal olarak sayısız kez yinelenebilir. Tek kısıtlama insan beyninin algılama yeteneği ve beğenisi ölçüleridir.

Şimdi **NOUN PHRASE + VERB + NOUN PHRASE** kuralının nasıl işlediğini iki ayrı tabloda gösterebiliriz.

NOUN PHRASE	VERB	NOUN PHRASE
I	know	English.
I	know	that Fred knows English.
You	know	that I know that Fred knows English.



Tümce başına THAT eklenecek şekilde gerçekleştirilen ADLAŞTIRMA İŞLEMİNİN sonsuz uzunlukta tümce üretilebilmeye yeteneğinde olduğuna dikkat ediniz. Çoğu zaman farklı sandığımız tümceler aynı işlemle üretilmektedir.

AD ÖBEĞİ YAPMANIN BİR BAŞKA YOLU

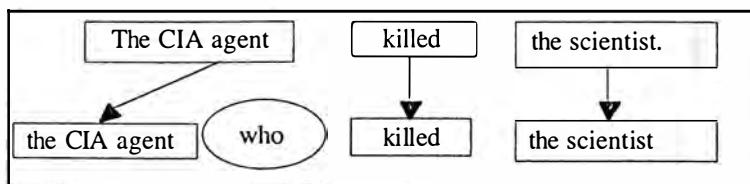
Önce bir başka ad öbeği yapısı verelim: ARTICLE + NOUN → AD ÖBEĞİ. (→ işaretini "çessittir" anlamında kullanıyoruz.) Bu eşitliği de bir kural gibi değerlendirebiliriz. Yani ARTICLE + NOUN her zaman bir ad öbeğidir. Şimdi yeni bir tümce yazalım.

NOUN PHRASE	VERB	NOUN PHRASE
The CIA agent	killed	the scientist.

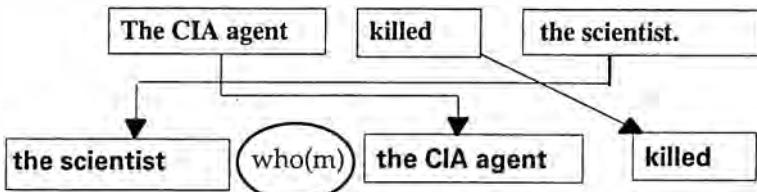
Bu tümceyi ad öbeği şeklinde sokabilir misiniz? Evet, *that the CIA agent killed the scientist* bir ad öbeğidir ve onu *We know that the CIA agent killed the scientist* tümcesinde kullanabiliriz.

Şimdi *The CIA agent killed the scientist* tümcesine başka bir işlem uygulayarak onu ad öbeğine dönüştüreceğiz. Bu işlemde iki seçenek vardır.

I.



II.



Bir tümceyi ad obeği haline getirmenin bu yoluna **SIFATLAŞTIRMA** diyeceğiz. **SIFATLAŞTIRMANIN DA** bir AD ÖBEĞİ üretim işlemi olduğunu görüyoruz.

Bu işlem, geleneksel dilbilgilerinde ADJECTIVE CLAUSE (RELATIVE CLAUSE) adı verilen yapıları üretmektedir. İSTE dile ilişkin apaçık ama hep gözden kaçmış bir gerçek: ADJECTIVE CLAUSE'lar gerçekte tümcelerin AD ÖBEĞİ haline dönürtülmesine olanak sağlayan öğelerdir.

Aynı tümceden iki ayrı ad obeği üretildiğini gördük:

-
1. *the CIA agent who killed the scientist*
 2. *the scientist WHO(M) the CIA agent killed*
-

ADLAŞTIRMA VE SIFATLAŞTIRMANIN YAYGINLIĞI

PRONOUNS	ARTICLES	VERBS	NOUNS
I you nobody	the	know love	Fred Lucy teacher woman

Yukarıdaki tablodaki sözcükler başlangıç düzeyindeki öğrencilerin bildikleri sözcüklerdir. Aşağıda bu sözcüklerle adlaştırma ve sıfatlaştırma işlemleri kullanıldığından kurulabilecek tümcelerden bir örnek demeti sunuyoruz. Gerçekte bu kadar sözcükle bile İngilizcenin en karmaşık yapılarının da örneklenebileceği binlerce tümce kurulabileceğini görmeye çalışınız. Dillerin sonsuz sayıda yeni tümce kurabilmesinin gizi bu işlemlerde yatkınlıkta. Örnekleri incelemeden önce aşağıdaki tabloya bakarak **NOUN PHRASE+VERB+NOUN PHRASE** kuralının ne kadar doğurgan olabileceğini görmeye çalışınız.

NOUN PHRASE	VERB	NOUN PHRASE
I	know	nobody.
The woman who loves the teacher	knows	nobody.
Nobody	knows	the woman who loves the teacher
The teacher who loves the woman	knows	that I love nobody.
The woman whom the teacher loves	loves	nobody.
The woman	knows	nobody that the teacher loves.
Nobody that I know	loves	the teacher that you know.
Nobody that I know	knows	the teacher that you love.
I	know	nobody who loves the teacher.

ADLAŞTIRMA ÖRNEKLERİ

Let every man teach his son, teach his daughter, that labor is honorable.

-- Robert Green Ingersoll (1833-1899)

1. We know *that the USA invaded many countries*.
2. Some people say *that the US harbours terrorists and war criminals*.
3. I know *that some people believe that the US harbours terrorists and war criminals*.
4. I know *that you know that some people believe that the US harbours terrorists and war criminals*.
5. Very few American citizens know *that most people believe that the US harbours terrorists and war criminals*.
6. *That the US harbours terrorists and war criminals* surprises some people.
7. Many people know *that the US is not waging war against terrorism*.
8. Michael Moore claims *that President George W. Bush is a liar*.
9. It has just been announced *that the hunt for chemical, biological and nuclear weapons in Iraq has been fruitless*.

SIFATLAŞTIRMA ÖRNEKLERİ

Ignorance is the soil in which belief in miracles grows.

-- Robert Green Ingersoll (1833-1899)

10. We know the European countries *that harbour terrorists*.
11. We know the terrorists *that the European countries harbour*.
12. We know Karen Fogg, *who hates Turks*.
13. President George W. Bush, *whom many Americans hate*, has told the world many lies about Iraq.
14. The CIA, *which is not accountable to the democratic government*, has committed thousands of crimes.

15. CIA agents who are disguised as American journalists, businessmen, missionaries and charity volunteers have committed countless atrocities.
16. The CIA framed many political opponents for crimes which they did not commit.

ADLAŞTIRMANIN VE SIFATLAŞTIRMANIN BİRLİKTE BULUNDUĞU ÖRNEKLER

17. We listened to the journalist *who explained that the USA invaded many countries*.
18. Everybody knows that the US has the biggest military force that the world has ever seen.
19. It is obvious that the USA, which has the biggest military force, will attack any country that challenges her interests.
20. President Bush, whose government sponsors international terrorism, says that the US is waging war against "terrorism".
21. That the US is a proven threat to its neighbours and beyond is a fact one should never forget.
18. People who believe that it is cruel to keep animals in captivity are true animal lovers.
19. President Bush, whom nobody seems to like, keeps asking why so many people hate the USA.
20. The USA, which says that it does not target civilians, has killed civilians in countless numbers.

Göründüğü gibi, karmaşık gibi görünen tümcelerin yapısı adlaştırma ve sifatlaştırma gibi bütün dillerde görülen işlemlerle oluşturulmaktadır. Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki adlaştırma ve sifatlaştırma örneklerini görmeye çalışınız.

The US promotes the deception that a country can be bombed around the clock with only a few civilian casualties. It announces in advance of a bombing campaign that some civilian deaths are inevitable, and then, when they occur, says that they were accidental and unintended.

The US claims that it is conducting a war on terrorism against a network (al-Qaeda), which it created to fight proxy wars on its behalf (in Afghanistan and the Balkans.)

The US uses cluster bombs, which continue to kill, usually children, well after a war is finished.

Stephen Gowans: <http://www.mediamonitors.net/>



Chapter 4

THE NOUN PHRASE

AD ÖBEĞİ

the greatest secret of language

Dilbilgisi kitaplarında hiçbir konu, *ad öbeği (noun phrase)* kadar ihmal edilmiş ya da doğrudan doğruya yanlış şekilde sunulmuş değildir. Bu bölümde ad öbeği kavramını ayrıntılarıyla açıklamaya çalışacağız.

AD ÖBEĞİ (NOUN PHRASE) TERİMİ

Söyle başlayalım: aşağıdaki tablonun boş kutularına konabilecek öğelere ad öbeği diyelim.

	LOVES	
↓		↓
Fred	loves	Lucy.
Everybody	knows	that Fred loves Lucy.
The American Army	massacred	thousands of Indians.
The American Army, which showed no mercy,	killed	Indian children and women.
The American general	showed	no mercy.
A man without a smiling face	must not open	a shop.
Most unbiased historians	say	that the American Army massacred thousands of Indians.
He who says what he likes	shall hear	what he doesn't like.
Most TV viewing experts	claim	that watching too much TV rots the brain.
Being persistent and careful	brings	happiness and success.
To discover a cure for the common cold	obsessed	him.

Ad öbeği olarak kullanılan öbeklere baktığımızda önemli bir ayrim göreceğiz.

Everybody	knows	that Fred loves Lucy.
-----------	-------	-----------------------

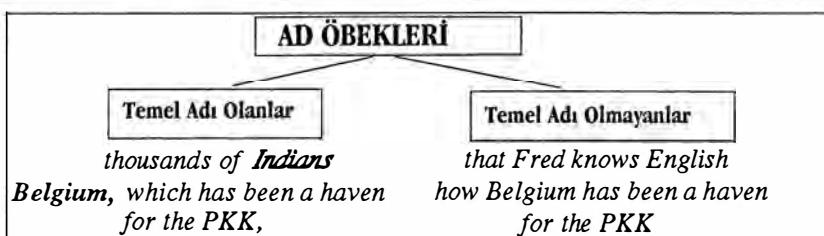
Ad öbeği olarak kullanılan *that Fred loves Lucy*, bir bütün olarak **KNOW** eyleminin nesnesi olarak görev yapmaktadır. Daha önce gösterdiğimiz gibi, *Fred loves Lucy* tümcesi bir ad öbeği haline getirilmiştir.

Aşağıdaki tümcede nesne olarak kullanılan ad öbeğine bakalım: *thousands of Indians*.

The American Army	massacred	thousands of Indians.
-------------------	-----------	-----------------------

Bu ad öbeğinde söz konusu kimse (*Indians*)dır. *Thousands of*, sayı göstererek *Indians* adını nitelmektedir. Nitelenen bu ada, **temel ad** diyelim.

Ad öbeklerini genel olarak iki sınıfa ayıralım: **temel ad taşıyanlar** ve **temel adı olmayanlar**.



Şimdi özne olarak kullanılan şu ad öbeğine bakalım:

the American Army, which showed no mercy,

Bu ad öbeğinde, söz konusu olan ad **army** olmalıdır. **The** ve **American** sözcükleriyle **which showed no mercy** içümceciği **army** adını nitelmektedir. Bu ad öbeğinin yapısını şöyle bir kuralla gösterebiliriz.

Ad Öbeği→	ön niteleyiciler	temel ad	art niteleyiciler
Noun Phrase→	prenominal modifiers	noun head	postnominal modifiers
	<i>the American</i>	army	<i>which showed no mercy</i>

TEMEL ADSIZ AD ÖBEKLERİ

Temel adsız ad öbekleri, *that Fred loves Lucy* örneğinde olduğu gibi bir tümcenin ad öbeği haline getirilmesi işlemi sonucunda oluşurlar. Örnekleri inceleyelim.

1. **Roses have thorns.** → Sentence
that roses have thorns → NP
 We know *that roses have thorns*.
 It is obvious *that roses have thorns*.
 It goes without saying *that roses have thorns*.

2. Do all roses have thorns? → Sentence
if all roses have thorns → NP
 We don't know *if all roses have thorns.*
3. Why do roses have thorns? → Sentence
why roses have thorns → NP
 We don't know *why roses have thorns.*
4. How should we grow roses? → Sentence
how we should grow roses → NP
how to grow roses → NP
 We don't know *how we should grow roses.*
 We don't know *how to grow roses.*
5. Roses have thorns. → Sentence
for roses to have thorns → NP
 It is natural *for roses to have thorns.*
6. She likes roses. → Sentence
her liking roses → NP
Her liking roses is understandable.
7. The claim is that smoking causes cancer. → Sentence
the claim that smoking causes cancer → NP

BELÇİKA VE TERÖRİZM

Aşağıda Belçika Hükümetinin Erol Sabancı'nın katilini koruma altına almaya çalışarak 2000 yılında terörizme verdiği dolaylı destekle ilgili yayın organlarından derlenmiş yargı örnekleri bulacaksınız.

TÜMCE → AD ÖBEĞİ

The Belgian government indirectly supports terrorism.	→	that the Belgian government indirectly supports terrorism
---	---	---

We know that the Belgian government supports terrorism.

It is obvious that the Belgian government supports terrorism.

It needs no explanation that the Belgian government supports terrorism.

Does the Belgian government indirectly support terrorism?	→	if the Belgian government indirectly supports terrorism
---	---	---

We don't know if the Belgian government heartily supports terrorism.

Why does the Belgian government support terrorism?	→	why the Belgian government supports terrorism
--	---	---

We don't know why the Belgian government supports terrorism.

How does the Belgian government support terrorism?	→	how the Belgian government supports terrorism
--	---	---

We know how the Belgian government supports terrorism.

The Belgian government supports terrorism.	→	for the Belgian government to support terrorism
--	---	---

It is customary for the Belgian government to support terrorism.

The Belgian government indirectly supports terrorism.	→	the Belgian government's indirectly supporting terrorism
---	---	--

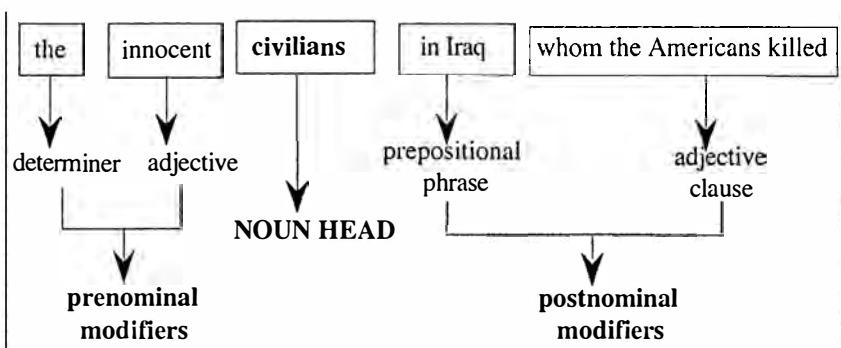
The Belgian government's indirectly supporting terrorism is detectable.

The claim is that the Belgian government indirectly supports terrorism.	→	the claim that Belgian government indirectly supports terrorism
---	---	---

The claim that the Belgian government indirectly supports terrorism needs no proof.

TEMEL ADLI AD ÖBEKLERİ

Temel adlı ad öbeklerinde, temel adın hem önünde hem de arkasında nitelikler bulunabilir. Aşağıdaki örnekte temel ad *civilians*'dır. Temel adın önüne gelen niteliklere *prenominal modifiers* (ön nitelikler) arkasına gelenlere *postnominal modifiers* (art nitelikler) adı verilmektedir.



Aşağıdaki kutuda ön nitelikçi olarak kullanılabilen öğe örnekleri görüyoruz.

					children
				school	children
			Iraqi	school	children
		poverty-stricken	Iraqi	school	children
	little	poverty-stricken	Iraqi	school	children
those	little	poverty-stricken	Iraqi	school	children

Yukarıdaki örneklerde *children* temel ad olarak kullanılıyor. Temel adı niteleyen niteleyicilerle birlikte ad öbeği oluşmaktadır.

those Iraqi CHILDREN	<i>who are extremely poor</i>
	<i>beaten to death by Americans</i>
	<i>who are students</i>

Yukarıdaki örneklerde temel ad yine *children*'dır. Those ve Iraqi ön niteleyici (*prenominal modifiers*) olarak kullanılıyor. Who are extremely poor, beaten to death by Americans ve who are students öbekleri de art niteleyici (*postnominal modifiers*) olarak kullanılmaktadır.

PRENOMINAL MODIFIERS ÖN NİTELEYİCİLER

Temel adı nitelemek üzere önüne gelebilecek belli öğeler bulunmaktadır. Temel adın önünde birden fazla ön niteleyici varsa bunların belli bir sırada dizilmeleri gereklidir.

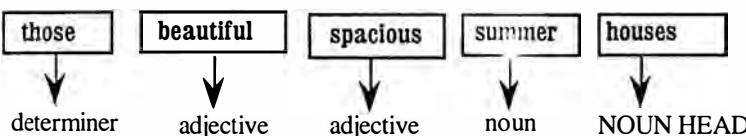
Ön niteleyiciler (*prenominal modifiers*) 3 bölge ayrılabilir.

1. Determiners

- a. **Articles:** *a, an, the*
- b. **Possessive Adjectives:** *my, your, his, her, its, our, their*
- c. **Possessive cases:** *Ali's*
- d. **Demonstratives:** *this, that, these, those*

2. Adjectives

3. **Noun Modifiers:** Bunlar niteleyici olarak kullanılan adlardır.



POSTNOMINAL MODIFIERS ART NİTELEYİCİLER

Art niteleyiciler (*postnominal modifiers*) gerçekle ya sıfat içtümcevikleri (*adjective clauses*) ya da bunların kısaltılmış şekilleridir.

Postnominal Modifiers Örnekleri

1. the room *which is clean* > the *clean* room
2. the room *which is spotlessly clean*
the room, *spotlessly clean*, > the *spotlessly clean* room
3. the room *which is large and empty*
the room, *large and empty*, > the *large and empty* room
4. the room *which is downstairs* > the room *downstairs*
5. the house *which looks comfortable*
the house *looking comfortable* > the *comfortable-looking* house
6. the apartment *which is located at the rear*
the apartment *located at the rear*
7. the book *which we should read* > the book *to read*
8. the man *who will speak* > the man *to speak*
9. the man *whom we should see* > the man *to see*
10. the first man *who crossed the Atlantic*
the first man *to cross the Atlantic*
11. the man *who had a pistol*
the man *with a pistol*
12. the apartment *where he lives*
13. the film *the title of which I don't remember*
14. the students *three of whom I have never seen before*
15. the young people *whose only aim in life is to prevent pollution*
16. the island, *which is a paradise for birds*,
the island, *a paradise for birds*,
17. the story *which was cleverly told*
the story, *cleverly told*, > the *cleverly told* story
18. the place *where we should go*
the place *to go*
19. the man *with whom we should eat*
the man *to eat with*
20. the meeting *which is tomorrow*
the meeting *tomorrow* > *tomorrow's meeting*

TEMEL ADLI NP'ler diğer türde göre çok daha yaygın olarak kullanılmaktadır.
Bu nedenle

Ad Öbeği →	ön niteleyiciler	temel ad	art niteleyiciler
Noun Phrase →	prenominal modifiers	noun head	postnominal modifiers

kuralı, İngilizce dilbilgisinin temel taşlarından birini oluşturmaktadır.

EXERCISE 7

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ad öbeklerinin altını çiziniz. Ad öbeğinde temel ad varsa, ikinci bir çizgiyle gösteriniz.

1. The book Helen wrote about witchcraft has sold well.
2. Psycholinguistics investigates how language is acquired.
3. Any fool can ask a question which forty wise men cannot answer.
4. Junk is anything that has outlived its usefulness.
5. The new government has promised workers higher wages.
6. Great people consider flattery of all kinds worthless.
7. Writing a good book takes a long time.
8. Modern scientists still accept certain theories developed in ancient times.
9. Everybody in our village avoids passing the cemetery at night.
10. Atlantis was a legendary island whose exact location is unknown.
11. To leave lethal weapons where children may find them is unwise.
12. Clothing that is made of synthetic fibers is easy to wash and dry.
13. Using drugs and smoking are injurious to one's health.
14. Scurvy is the classic disease related to deficiency in Vitamin C.
15. One of the most conspicuous features of American life has been the growth of popular health cults.
16. We know that living organisms are composed of lifeless molecules.
17. Some psychiatrists believe that stuttering is a symptom of a psychic disorder.
18. The effects of acid rain can be devastating to many forms of life, including human life.
19. Alcoholism is another leading cause of amnesia.
20. The potato is probably one of the most important vegetable crops in the United States today.

Aşağıdaki karikatürde Dennis, *to be in the doghouse* (başı dertte olmak, gözden düşmek) deyimini bilmediği için babasını köpek kulübesinde arıyor.



"I thought you said Dad was in the doghouse."

Dennis'in adlaştırmayı nasıl kullandığına dikkat ediniz.

Mother: *Dad is in the doghouse.*

Dennis: You said that *Dad was in the doghouse.*

Dennis: I thought that you said that *Dad was in the doghouse.*

The Sick Rose

William Blake, 1794

O Rose, thou art sick!

The invisible worm

That flies in the night,

In the howling storm,

Has found out thy bed

Of crimson joy,

And his dark secret *love*

Does thy *life* destroy.

Yandaki şiirde 2-5 dizelerinin tek tümce olduğuna dikkat ediniz. Bu tümcede öznedeki temel adın *worm*, nesnedeki temel adın da *bed* olduğunu görüyoruz.

6-7 dizelerindeki tümcede öznedeki temel ad *love*, nesnedeki temel ad ise *life*.



1) *thou*=you

2) *art*=are

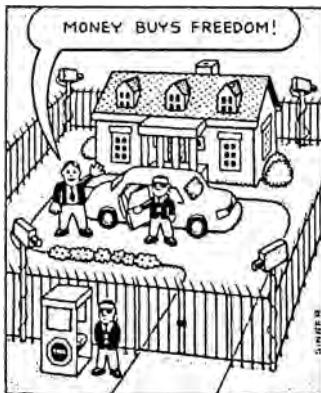
2) *thy*=your

4) *does thy life destroy*=destroys your life

Chapter 5

BASIC SENTENCE PATTERNS OF ENGLISH

temel tümce kalıpları



1. *Money buys freedom.*
2. *He who says what he likes shall hear what he does not like.*

Bu iki tümcenin ortak özelliği nedir? Her iki tümce de aynı tümce kalıbiyla kurulmuştur.

NOUN PHRASE	VERB	NOUN PHRASE
Money	buys	freedom.
He who says what he likes	shall hear	what he does not like.

Bütün dillerde az sayıda tümce kalıbı kullanılır. Görünüşte bir tümce ne kadar uzun olursa olsun dayandığı tümce kalıbı, o sınırlı sayıdaki kalıplardan birisidir. Bu kalıpları tanımak dil öğrenmeyi çok kolaylaştırmaktadır.

Daha önce ATATÜRK LOVED TURKEY tümcesinin NOUN PHRASE + VERB + NOUN PHRASE olarak kalıplastyırılabilceğini görmüştük. Şimdi bir tabloda bu tümce ile *Money buys freedom* ve *He who says what he likes shall hear what he does not like* tümcelerini diğer örneklerle birlikte görelim.

NOUN PHRASE	VERB	NOUN PHRASE
ATATÜRK	LOVED	TURKEY.
Money	buys	freedom.
He who says what he likes	shall hear	what he does not like.
A rolling stone	gathers	no moss.
Travel	broadens	the mind.
A man who seeks God	has already found	Him.
A man with money	does not know	what hunger is.
The Belgian government	massacred	thousands of natives in Congo.
A man without a smiling face	must not open	a shop.
That he has published a book	surprises	all his close friends.
Most historians	claim	that European wealth comes from blood-sucking imperialism.
Being persistent and careful	brings	happiness and success.
To discover a way to amass wealth in the shortest time	obsessed	all European nations that employed wildest forms of imperialism.

Bu tabloda NP olarak kullanılan öbeklere ve öbeklerin tümce içindeki yerlerine dikkat ediniz. Uzunlukları ve karmaşıklıkları farklı gibi görünen bu tümcelerin aynı yapıda olduğu görülmektedir. Bu gerçeği biraz daha görselleştirmek için NP'i ve VERB'i birer şekilde gösterelim.

() → NOUN PHRASE

() → VERB

Bu şekilleri kullanarak yukarıdaki tabloyu şöyle gösterebiliriz.



İngilizce'deki temel tümce kalıplarını gösterebilmek için aşağıdaki öğelere gereksinim vardır.

NOUN PHRASE=		VERB=
TO BE=		LINKING VERB (LV)=
SIFAT (ADJ) =		ZARF (ADV)=
TO-INFINITIVE=		BARE INFINITIVE=
V-ING=		V-EN=

Bu öğeleri kullanarak, İngilizce'nin tümce kalıplarını şöyle gösterebiliriz.

İNGİLİZCE TÜMCE KALIPLARI

1	☺	✿	☺	
2	☺	✿	▣	
3	☺	✿	⌚	
4	THERE	✿	☺	⌚
5	☺	✡		
6	☺	✡	☺	
7	☺	✡	☺	⌚
8	☺	✡	☺	☺

9	☺	✡	☺	☺
10	☺	✡	☺	▣
11	☺	✡	☺	↶
12	☺	✡	☺	⇒
13	☺	✡	☺	↶
14	☺	✡	☺	↷
15	☺	◎	☺	
16	☺	◎	▣	

Sayfa 40'ta tümce kalıpları tablosunu örnek tümçelerle sunuyoruz. Görüldüğü gibi tabloda 16 değil, 17 tümce kalıbı bulunmaktadır. Onyedinci tümce kalıbı, aslında bir tümce kalıbı olmaktan çok, İngilizce'nin Türkçe'de bulunmayan özel bir zamir kullanımına, sözde özne IT'in kullanımına ayrılmıştır. Bu kullanımı, *The Slot-filling It* Bölümünde (Chapter 12) inceleyeceğiz.

Tümce kalıpları içinde ad öbeklerini tanımanın kaçınılmaz bir zorunluluk olduğunu söyleyebiliriz.

Aşağıdaki tabloda, (an accountant), (the house) ve (the ball) ad öbeği olarak tanıdığında tümce kalıplarını görmeyi çok daha kolay olacağını anlaşıyor.

TO BE AND LINKING VERBS

1		is	happy.	
2		is		
3		is	at home.	

4	THERE	is			here.
15		remained			.
16		feels		happy.	

OTHER VERBS

5		cried.		
6				
7		found		at home.
8		bought		
9		considers		a friend.

10		finds		clever.
11		lets		drink beer.
12		wants		to cook pizza.
13		saw		jogging.
14		had		painted.

BASIC SENTENCE PATTERNS OF ENGLISH

Aşağıdaki tabloda bu kitabı写的tarafından İngilizce temel tümce kalıpları olarak belirlenmiş kalıplar gösterilmektedir.

Gifts from enemies are dangerous.	1	NP BE ADJ
Time is money.	2	NP ¹ BE NP ¹
Wine is in ; wit is out.	3	NP BE ADV
There is a devil in every grape.	4	THERE BE NP ADV
Time flies.	5	NP IntV
He lives in Ankara.		
The film lasted an hour.		
Good clothes open all doors.	6	NP ¹ TrV NP ²
Work keeps the devil away.	7	NP ¹ TrV NP ² ADV
We gave her nothing.	8	NP ¹ TrV NP ² NP ³
We gave nothing to her.		
They chose him captain.	9	NP ¹ TrV NP ² NP ²
The devil keeps the idle busy.	10	NP ¹ TrV NP ² ADJ
Sad films make me cry.	11	NP ¹ TrV NP ² BARE INF
She advised me to stop smoking.	12	NP ¹ TrV NP ² TO-INF
We saw Lucy crying.	13	NP ¹ TrV NP ² V-ING
She had her house painted.	14	NP ¹ TrV NP ² V-EN
He remained a poor person.	15	NP ¹ LV NP ¹
Money feels warm.	16	NP LV ADJ

It is difficult to give up smoking.	17	Slot-filling IT
-------------------------------------	----	-----------------



17. Kalıp, gerçekte bir tümce kalıbı değildir. *IT* zamirinin özel bir kullanımını göstermektedir. Bu kalıp Chapter 12'de incelenmektedir.

CHAPTER 6

KERNEL SENTENCES

Çekirdek Tümceler

First There Was the Kernel Sentence Önce Çekirdek Tümce Vardı

BASIC SENTENCE PATTERNS tablosu 16 tümce kalibi sunuyor. Bu kaliplar elinizdeki kitabın yazarı tarafından belirlenmiştir. Başka dilbilgisi kitaplarında daha az ya da daha çok sayıda tümce kalibi görmüş olabilirsiniz. Kimi dilbilgisi kitaplarından İngilizce'de yüzlerce hatta binlerce tümce kalibi varmış izlenimi edinmiş de olabilirsiniz.

Bu kitapta tümce kalıplarının saptanmasında, derin yapı-yüzey yapı ayrimına dayalı bir dilbilgisi yaklaşımı kullanılmıştır. Bu yaklaşım göre *KERNEL SENTENCE=ÇEKİRDEK TÜMCE* kavramını açıklamaya çalışalım.

Çekirdek tümce, derin yapıda kurulması mümkün olabilen en küçük tümce diye tanımlanabilir. Örneğin, *LUCY CRIED*, çekirdek bir tümce olmalıdır. Kurulması için gereken öğeler dışında herhangi bir öğe taşımamaktadır. Oysa *LUCY CRIED IN HER ROOM* çekirdek bir tümce değildir çünkü kurulması için gerekli olmayan *IN HER ROOM* ögesini taşımaktadır.

Ad öbeği konusunda söylenenleri anımsayarak *Lucy cried, Time flies* ve *Power corrupts* tümcelerinin kuralını şöyle gösterebiliriz:

NOUN PHRASE	VERB
Lucy	cried.
Time	flies.
Power	corrupts.

Daha önce gördüğümüz FRED LOVES LUCY (NOUN PHRASE + VERB + NOUN PHRASE) kalibıyla karşılaştırdığımızda LUCY CRIED tümcesinin üç öğe değil iki öğe taşıdığını görüyoruz.

Bir tümce kalibinin iki öğe, diğerinin üç öğe taşmasına yol açan neden LOVE ve CRY eylemlerinin özellikleridir. Şimdi tümce kalıplarını belirleyen eylemlerin bu özelliğine yakından bakalım.

THE VERB : THE ❤(HEART) OF THE SENTENCE

Tümce kalıplarında, NOUN PHRASE'lerin temel öğelerden biri olduğunu, diğer bir temel ögenin de VERB olduğunu söylemiştık. Eylemin, tümcenin kalbi olduğunu söyleyebiliriz. Eylemler için belirtilmesi gereken önemli gerçek şudur:

Bir tümcedeki ad öbeklerinin SAYISINI ve NİTELİKLERİNİ belirleyen öğe eylemdir.

O halde bir dildeki tümce kalıplarının sayısı, eylem türlerine bağlıdır. Bu nedenle İngilizce'deki eylem türlerine bakalım.

I. DURUM EYLEMLERİ

- A. TO BE (*OL-*)
- B. Linking Verbs (*İlgili Eylemleri*)

II. DEVİNİM EYLEMLERİ

- A. Intransitive Verbs (*Geçişsiz Eylemler*)
- B. Transitive Verbs (*Geçişli Eylemler*)
 - 1. Monotransitive Verbs (*Tek nesne alan eylemler*)
 - 2. Ditransitive Verbs (*Çift nesne alan eylemler*)

I. DURUM EYLEMLERİ

Durum eylemleri, bir iş, hareket ya da kılış göstermeyen eylemlerdir. İngilizce'de *TO BE* eylemi ile *LINKING VERB* adı verilen bir bölüm eylem durum eylemi olarak kullanılmaktadır.

TO BE eyleminin, zaman ve kişiye bağlı olarak, *BE*, *BEING*, *IS*, *AM*, *ARE*, *WAS*, *WERE*, *BEEN* şekilleri vardır. *TO BE* eylemini izleyebilen üç öğe vardır: *ad öbekleri*, *sifatlar* ve *zarflar*.

NP	BE	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ADJ} \\ \text{NP} \\ \text{ADV} \end{array} \right\}$
Fred	is	handsome. a pilot. here.

LINKING VERBS gerçekte *TO BE* eyleminin bir türevidir. Durum yanında bir tür devinim de gösterirler. Linking Verbs, ad öbekleri ve sıfatlar tarafından izlenir.

NP	BE	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{NP} \\ \text{ADJ} \end{array} \right\}$
Fred	became looks	a pilot. happy

II. Devinim Eylemleri

Devinim eylemleri bir iş, hareket ya da kılıç gösteren eylemlerdir. Dilbilgisi kitaplarında bu eylemler nesne alıp almamalarına göre TRANSITIVE (GEÇİŞLİ) ya da INTRANSITIVE (GEÇİŞSİZ) olarak sınıflandırılırlar. CRY nesne gerektirmeyen yani geçisiz bir eylemdir; bu nedenle sadece iki ögeli tümce kalıpları oluşturur: Lucy cried. LOVE, nesne gerektiren yani geçişli bir eylemdir. Bu nedenle LOVE üç ögeli tümceler oluşturur: Lucy loves Fred.

Kimi geçişli eylemler iki nesne gerektirmektedir. Örneğin BUY eylemi, hem DIRECT(DOLAYSIZ) hemde INDIRECT(DOLAÝLI) nesne gerektirir: Fred bought Lucy a rose.

Eylemlerin bu sınıflandırılmasına baktığımızda其实े tümce kalıpları aşağıdaki gibi gösterilebilir.

1.	TO BE ile	Lucy is a student. Lucy is happy. Lucy is here.
2.	Linking Verbs ile	Lucy became a doctor. Lucy looks happy.
3.	Geçisiz eylem ile	Lucy cried.
4	Tek nesneli geçişli eylem ile	Fred loves Lucy.
5	İki nesneli geçişli eylem ile	Fred gave Lucy a rose.

Devinim eylemlerinin kullanıldığı tümce kalıplarını karşılaştırmalı bir tabloda gösterelim:

NP	VERB	NP	NP
Lucy	cried.		
Fred	loves	Lucy.	
Fred	gave	Lucy	a rose.

Yukarıda belirtilenlerin ışığında İngilizce'nin ÇEKİRDEK TÜMCE KALİPLARI aşağıdaki tablodaki gibi öztlenebilir.

1	NP¹	BE /LV	NP¹	
2	NP	BE /LV	ADJ	
3	NP	BE	ADV	
4	NP	Int V		
5	NP¹	Tr V	NP²	
6	NP¹	Tr V	NP²	NP³

TÜMCE KALIPLARININ BELİRLENMESİNDE MASTERING ENGLISH GRAMMAR YAKLAŞIMI

İngilizce tümce kalıplarının rahatça görünüp tanınmasını sağlamak amacıyla iki yöntemle başvurduk.

Birincisi, *TO BE* ve *LINKING VERBS* ile gerçekleşen olasılıkları ayrı ayrı gösterdi.

Fred	is	handsome. a pilot. here.	Sentence Pattern 1 Sentence Pattern 2 Sentence Pattern 3
Fred	became	a pilot. looks happy.	Sentence Pattern 15 Sentence Pattern 16

İkincisi, çekirdek tümce olmamakla birlikte, "kalıplAŞmış" yüzey yapılarını da tümce kalıbı olarak belirledik. Örneğin tümce kalıpları tablosunda 13. Tümce Kalıbı *WE SAW LUCY CRYING* derin yapısında iki tümce bulundurmaktadır: *Lucy was crying. We saw it.* Derin yapıdaki iki tümce yüzey yapıda hemen hemen her zaman *We saw Lucy crying* şeklinde göründüğünden NOUN PHRASE + VERB + NOUN PHRASE + V-ING şeklinde bir tümce kalıbı saptanmıştır.

ÇEKİRDEK TÜMCelerİN BİRLEŞMESİ ÜZERİNE

Şimdi dillerin en önemli gizini açıklama noktasına geldik. Diller, belli sayıda çekirdek tümce üreten bir düzeneğe sahiptir. Üretilen çekirdek tümcelerin sayısı, eylemlerin özellikleriyle sınırlıdır. Bu çok az sayıdaki çekirdek tümce kalıbı, yine çok az sayıda yöntemle birleşerek, çok değişik görünüslü tümceler üretmesini sağlarlar.

James Thurber'in "The Unicorn in the Garden" öyküsü şu tümceyle başlıyor.

Once upon a sunny morning a man who sat in a breakfast nook looked up from his scrambled eggs to see a white unicorn with a gold horn quietly cropping the roses in the garden.

Bu tümce gerçekte birçok çekirdek tümcenin birleşmesinden oluşmaktadır.

1. It was a long time ago.
2. It was a morning.
3. The morning was sunny.
4. A man was sitting in a nook.
5. The nook was for breakfast.

6. He was eating eggs.
7. The eggs were scrambled.
8. He looked up.
9. He saw a unicorn.
10. The unicorn was white.
11. The unicorn had a horn.
12. The horn was golden.
13. The unicorn was cropping the roses.
14. The unicorn's cropping was quiet.
15. The roses were in the garden.

Thurber'in tümcesinde iki önemli iş görünüyor:

1. *He looked up.*
2. *He saw a unicorn.*

Gerçekte bu iki çekirdek tümce AND bağlacı ile birleştirilebilir.

A man looked up, and he saw a unicorn.

Her dilde olduğu gibi İngilizce'de de istenen sayıda tümce AND bağlacı ile birleştirilebilir. Kimi durumlarda bir infinitive öbeği AND'in yerini alabilir.

A man looked up TO SEE a unicorn.

Diğer çekirdek tümcelerin bu iki tümce içine hangi işlemlerle yerleştirildiğini diğer bölümlerde göreceğiz. Thurber'in tümcesinde A MAN LOOKED UP bölümünün diğer bütün parçalara hükmettiğini söylebiliriz.

ÇEKİRDEK TÜMCELERİN İKİ BİRLEŞME YÖNTEMİ VARDIR.

1. COORDINATION

A man looked up. + The man saw a unicorn. = <i>A man looked up, and he saw a unicorn.</i>
--

2. EMBEDDING (SUBORDINATION)

A man looked up. + He sat in a breakfast nook. = <i>A man who sat in a breakfast nook looked up.</i>

Aşağıda, toplamalarda kullandığımız tümcelerin bu iki yöntemle birleştirilmiş başka şekillerini de veriyoruz.

1. A man who looked up saw a unicorn.
2. The man who sat in a breakfast nook looked up and saw a unicorn.
3. The man who looked up and saw a unicorn sat in a breakfast nook.

4. The unicorn was seen by a man who sat in a breakfast nook and looked up.

Bir dili öğrenmek, o dilin (1) temel tümce kalıplarını ve (2) bu kalıpların birleştirilme işlemlerini öğrenmeyi gerektirir.

Dilin en önemli gizlerinden biri şudur: BİR TÜMCE ne kadar uzun olursa olsun, bir çekirdek tümce kalıbına kendini uydurmak durumundadır.

NP	VP
A man who sat in a breakfast nook	looked up.
Two of our birds in the cage	died.
The woman whose husband died in a traffic accident	cried.

NP	VP	NP
Fortune	favours	the bold.
An inch of gold	cannot buy	an inch of time.
A mask of gold	usually hides	an ugly face.
Art	has	an enemy called ignorance.

TÜMCE KALIPLARI TABLOLARINDA KULLANILAN TERİMLER VE SİMGELER

NP	\rightarrow	Noun Phrases
NP ¹ ...NP ¹	\rightarrow	Ad öbekleri aynı kimseyi ya da şeyi gösteriyor. <i>Fred is a pilot</i> , (NP ¹ BE NP ¹) şeklinde gösteriliyor çünkü FRED ve PILOT aynı kimsedir.
ADJ	\rightarrow	Adjective
ADV	\rightarrow	Adverb
BE	\rightarrow	The verb BE
IntV	\rightarrow	Intransitive Verb
TrvV	\rightarrow	Transitive Verb
LV	\rightarrow	Linking Verb
BARE INF	\rightarrow	Infinitive without TO
TO INF	\rightarrow	Infinitive with TO
V-ING	\rightarrow	Gerund
V-EN	\rightarrow	Past Participle: eat, ate, eaten

Chapter 7

SENTENCE PATTERNS WITH BE



TO BE eylemi ile 4 tümce kalımı kurulmaktadır.

NP	BE	{ ADJ NP ADV }		THERE	BE	NP	(ADV)
----	----	----------------------	--	-------	----	----	-------

1. NP BE ADJ = Man is mortal.

NOUN PHRASE	BE	ADJECTIVE
Butterflies	are	beautiful.
Gifts from enemies	are	dangerous.
What he is saying	can be	true.
Inflation in some countries	is	inevitable.
Our efforts to prevent pollution	has not been	fruitful.
A word to the wise	is	sufficient.
Driving while drinking	can be	fatal.
What he said about himself	was	true.
That life for the poor is difficult	is	obvious.
To be overweight	is	risky.
A man who has good friends	is	lucky.

Bu kalıpta devrik yapı (*inversion*) kullanılabilmektedir.

Is she clever! (Ne kadar şanslı! Amma da şanslı!)

Am I lucky! (Ne kadar şanslıyım! Amma da şanslıyım!)

She is beautiful, but clever she is not!

Cursed is everyone who places his hope in man. –*Saint Augustine*

Happy is the man who says he is a Turk.

EXERCISE 8

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ad öbeklerinin altını tek çizgiyle, sıfatların altlarını da çift çizgiyle çiziniz.



1. *BUT, AND* gibi bağlaçlarla birleştirilmiş tümcelerde ayrı ayrı çekirdek tümcelerin olduğuna dikkat ediniz.
Anything is possible, BUT nothing is easy.
2. Karşılaştırma yapılarında *THAN* öbegini dikkate almayın.
The hands that help are far better than the lips that pray.
—Robert G. Ingersoll

1. Anything is possible, but nothing is easy. — Bill Gray
2. Justice without force is powerless; force without justice is tyrannical. — Blaise Pascal
3. Everything I want is either illegal, immoral, or fattening. — A. Woollcott
4. He that is good for making excuses is seldom good for anything else. — Benjamin Franklin
5. The ink of the scholar is more sacred than the blood of the martyr. — Mohammed
6. Patience is bitter, but its fruit is sweet. — J. J. Rousseau
7. Any system which depends on human reliability is unreliable. — Tom Gibb
8. To look into the future with eyes of fear is never safe. — Edward H. Harriman
9. These mushrooms can be poisonous.
10. That Christopher Columbus was a greedy thief is obvious.
11. The claim that television enlightens people is ridiculous.
12. Preparing for a debate can be both difficult and enjoyable.

EXERCISE 9

Aşağıda verilen öğeleri kullanarak tabloya uygun şekilde 10 tümce kurunuz.

NOUNS	<i>television, the Turkish flag, computers, basketball players, pollution, Germans, dogs, Ankara, his handwriting, some mushrooms</i>
ADJECTIVES	<i>perfect, clever, beautiful, useless, poisonous, harmful, friendly, fast, tall, red and white</i>

NOUN PHRASE	BE	ADJECTIVE

ADJECTIVES WITH "OBJECTS"

The Belgian government is GUILTY OF forced labour, systematic rape, torture and murder of 10 million Congolese.



*"Here is my report card—I am tired
of watching TV anyway."*

Kuşkusuz sıfatların nesne almaları söz konusu değildir. Bununla birlikte kimi sıfatlar, anımları gereği bir ad öbeği gerektirirler. Yukarıdaki tümcede Belçika hükümetinin "neden suçlu olduğu" OF ilgicini izleyen ad öbeği ile ifade edilmektedir. Türkçe'de eylemlerin ifade ettiği durumlar, İngilizce'de bir sıfat ile ifade edilebilir.

I am tired of watching TV. = Televizyon izlemekten sıkıldım.

I am happy that I have a job.

I am glad to be here.

They are fond of soap operas.

EXERCISE 10

Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyiniz ve Türkçe'ye çevirmeye çalışınız.

1. She is furious with her husband.
2. I am disappointed with your performance.
3. She is afraid of heights.
4. We are aware of the consequences of smoking.
5. We are astonished at the results of the election.
6. She is happy to be our friend.
7. I am pleased that you can come with us.
8. I am certain that it will rain today.
9. She is eager to learn Turkish.
10. George Orwell was disgusted with the British Empire.
11. She became aware of someone watching her.
12. She is always apprehensive of strangers.
13. Life is full of surprises.
14. He was ashamed of his shabby clothes.
15. This drug is highly beneficial to garden flowers.

2. NP¹ BE NP¹

Atatürk is the pride of our human heritage. –*El Nuevo Herald*

2

NOUN PHRASE ¹	BE	NOUN PHRASE ¹
Time	is	money.
Zeal without knowledge	is	fire without light.
Parks	are	the lungs of a city.
All that glitters	isn't	gold.
All I know	is	that I know nothing.
The sad truth	is	that millions die of hunger.
His only dream	has been	to be a famous writer.
Switzerland	is	a mountainous country.
A critic	is	a legless man who teaches running.
A good conscience	is	a soft pillow
My belief	is	that smoking must be banned.



1. Bu kalıpta BE eylemi "eşittir" anlamında kullanılıyor.
2. Her iki NP de aynı şeyi ya da kişiyi gösterdiğinde her ikisi de NP¹ olarak gösterilmiştir.

EXERCISE 11

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ad öbeklerinin altlarını çiziniz.

1. Music is the universal language of mankind. – *H. W. Longfellow*
2. The chief danger in life is that you may take too many precautions. -*Alfred Adler*
3. A man is literally what he thinks. – *James Allen*
4. Happiness is good health and a bad memory. –*Ingrid Bergman*
5. The first step to knowledge : to know that we are ignorant. – *Lord Cecil*
6. All diplomacy is a continuation of war by other means. – *C. Eulai*
7. Education is a progressive discovery of our ignorance. – *W. Durant*
8. An empty stomach is not a good political advisor. – *A. Einstein*
9. Ads are the cave art of the twentieth century. – *Marshall McLuhan*
10. The car he finally chose was a cheap one.
11. The only cure for grief is action. – *George Henry Lewes*
12. The reward of a thing well done is to have done it. – *R. Waldo Emerson*
13. Fatigue is the best pillow. – *Benjamin Franklin*
14. Diligence is the mother of good luck. – *Benjamin Franklin*
15. A nation without heroes is a nation without future. – *M. Manne*
16. A man who makes no mistakes is a man who does nothing.

3. NP BE ADV= Everybody is here.

3.a

NOUN PHRASE	BE	ADVERB
All the students	are	in the library.
The examination	is	over.
Everybody	is	here.
The best time to see Van	is	in the summer.
The meeting	will be	in an hour.

 **BÜ KALIPTA KÜLLANILAN (ADV) ÖRNEKLERİ:**

 *above, away, below, down, downstairs, here, home, in, inside, now, off, on, out, outside, over, then, there, tomorrow, up, upstairs, yesterday*

Bu kalıpta, yer gösteren zarflar ve ilgeç öbekleri devrik (inverted) yapıda kullanılabilir. Bu tür devrik yapı, yazın ve bilim metinlerinde daha sık kullanılır.

3.b

ADVERB	BE	NOUN PHRASE
In the middle of the room	was	a shapeless object.
Under the chair	is	your diamond ring.
Among the pine trees	is	a beautiful cottage.
After five o'clock	is	the best time for the meeting.
Here	is	what she has bought.
Under the leaves	was	the missing ring.
Among my most treasured possessions	were	two antique pistols.

 Yer gösteren tümcelerde iki yaygın kullanım daha vardır.

1. *Bazı eylemler, devrik yapıda TO BE eyleminin yerini alırlar.*

Under the leaves lay the golden ring.

Above the trees stands a spectacular mountain.

The statue is in the middle of the garden.

In the middle of the garden is a statue.

In the middle of the garden stands a statue.

2. **THERE**

There is a statue in the middle of the garden.

In the middle of the garden is a statue.

There is opportunity in the middle of every difficulty.

In the middle of every difficulty is opportunity.

EXERCISE 12

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ad öbeklerini ve zarfları/zarf öbeklerini altlarını çizerek gösteriniz.

1. The stolen diamond ring was under her pillow.
2. Somewhere in the attic was a long-forgotten pistol.
3. Above the trees is a spectacular mountain.
4. The American Indians are in the poorest sections of the United States.
5. MacDonald's is now all over the world.
6. The next meeting of the managers will be in two weeks' time.
7. Ecological side-effects are now everywhere.
8. Adventure-seekers of all nationalities will be at the foot of this mountain soon.
9. British imperialism has been in Asia for more than three centuries.
10. Nothing but two half-eaten apples were on the table.

EXERCISE 13

Aşağıdaki parçada devrik zarfların ve ad öbeklerinin altını çizin ve parçayı devrik tümceleri düz tümce haline getirerek yeniden yazınız.

Down the middle of the valley runs a clear, fast stream in which one may fish. In the low land along the stream are the farmlands; beyond are the pastures. Behind the tops of the hills are the big mountains. At the very top is the pure, brown rock of El Erminato Mountain, which shows snow until the mid of summer. Flowers cover the pasture lands in season.

– Oliver La Farge, *Behind the Mountains*

EXERCISE 14

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin hangi kalıba girdiklerini belirleyerek yanlarına 1(NP BE ADJ), 2(NP¹ BE NP¹) ya da 3 (NP BE ADV) şeklinde yazınız.

1. He who follows another is always behind. _____
2. Debt is a prolific mother of folly and of crime. – Benjamin Disraeli _____
3. Necessity is the mother of invention. – Jonathan Swift _____
4. All I know is what I see in the papers. – Will Rogers _____
5. Science without religion is lame; religion without science is blind.
– Albert Einstein _____
6. Rest is a good thing, but boredom is its brother. – Voltaire _____
7. In skating over thin ice, our safety is in our speed. – R. W. Emerson _____
8. The man who can make hard things easy is the educator. – Ralph Waldo Emerson _____
9. Man is still the most extraordinary computer of all. – J. F. Kennedy _____
10. Television is the chewing gum for the eyes. _____

11. Parks are the lungs of the city. __
12. Good poetry is immortal. __
13. Cigarettes are killers that travel in packs. __
14. The meeting will be tomorrow. __
15. Being a foreigner in Turkey can be enjoyable. __
16. All the students are in the cafeteria. __
17. Blue jeans are always in. __
18. Confidence is a plant of slow growth. __
19. All that glitters is not gold. __
20. The weapon found near the body was a pistol made in Europe. __
21. Policeman are the guardians of the law. __
22. The dinner was over. __
23. Sally must have been the thief they have been looking for. __
24. The fish caught by the boys was a trout weighing three pounds. __
25. The United States is a nation built on the red man's bones. __
26. Lake Superior, with a surface area of 31,700 square miles, is the second largest lake in the world. __
27. British imperialism has always been barbarous and greedy. __
28. The "sixth sick sheik's sixth sheep's sick" is the toughest tongue twister in the English language. __
29. Americans are probably the most pain-conscious people on the face of the earth. __
30. The common belief that knowledge of English is a panacea for poverty is ridiculous. __

Aşağıdaki şiirde çokbilmiş insanların dünyanın her tarafında başbelası olarak algılanlığı anlatılmaktadır. Şiirin Tümce Kalabı 2 olarak örgülüendiğine dikkat ediniz.

NOUN PHRASE ¹	BE	NOUN PHRASE ¹
Those who always know what is best	are	a universal pest.

Those Who Know
Piet Hein

**Those who always
know what's best
are
a universal pest.**

4. THERE BE NP ADV

Dillerin çoğunda, varlık, yokluk, mülkiyet gibi kavramların ifade edilmesinde özel yapılara başvurulmaktadır. Varlık yokluk ifade edilmesi açısından Türkçe **VAR** ve **YOK** sözcüklerine sahip olmasıyla önemli bir ayrıcalığa sahip olan dillerdendir. İngilizce'de ise varlık yokluk ifade edilmesi yapısal açıdan sorunluştur. İngilizce varlık yokluk ifade etmeyi bir bakıma dolaylı şekilde yapabilmektedir.



Her üzüm tanesinde bir şeytan vardır, tümcesinin İngilizce karşılığı *There is a devil in every berry of the grape* olmalıdır. Bu tümcede kullanılan THERE nasıl açıklanabilir? Bu sorunun yanıt Türkçe tümcede yattırıyor. Türkçe tümcede VAR sözcüğü rahatlıkla *her üzüm tanesinde* öbeğinin vurgulanmasına yani konuşmanın konusu olmasına olanak sağlamaktadır. İngilizce'de Türkçe tümcenin doğrudan karşılığı olarak

In every berry of the grape is a devil.

tümcesi kurulabilir. Bu şekilde IS eylemine dolaylı olarak varlık ifadesi eklenmiş olmaktadır. Bu yapıda bir zarf öbeği özne konumunda kullanılmaktadır. Yazılı resmi dilde kullanılan bu yapı günlük sözlü ve yazılı dilde *in every berry of the grape* ilgeç öbeğinin tümce sonuna itilmesiyle değişikliğe uğrar.

In every berry of the grape

is a devil.

is a devil

in every berry of the grape

Öznenin yeri boş kalamayacağından, THERE ile tamamlanır.

THERE

is a devil

in every berry of the grape.

Göründüğü gibi THERE'li tümceler其实 devrik tümcelerdir. Yaygın olarak kullanılmaları bu gerçeğin gözden kaçmasına neden olmaktadır.

4.a

THERE	BE	NOUN PHRASE	ADVERB
There	is	nothing	in the box.
There	are	two tigers	in the cage.
There	is	a devil	in every berry of the grape.
There	will be	several celebrities	in the meeting.
There	are	some good books	in their library.

4.b tablosunda, 4.a tablosundaki THERE'li tümcelerin özgün şekillerini gösteriyoruz.

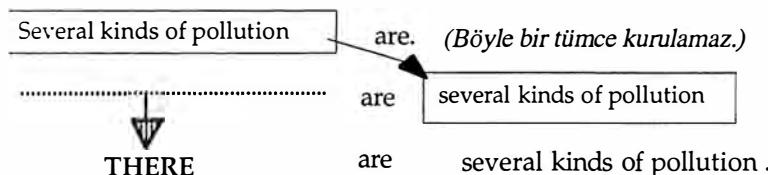
4.b

ADVERB	BE	NOUN PHRASE
In every berry of the grape	is	a devil.
Behind every successful man	is	a woman.
High above the mountains	were	two small villages.
Near the primary school	was	a candy shop.



THERE'li tümceler yer gösterdiklerinde gerçekle devrik yapılardır. *ON THE TABLE IS A BOOK* bugün günlük kullanımda tuhaf görünmesine karşılık özgün yapıdır.

In every berry of the grape is a devil ve *There is a devil in every berry of the grape* tümcelerde VARLIK gerçekle bir YER bağlamında ifade edilmektedir. Bir başka deyişle, bir şeyin bir yerde bulunduğuunu belirterek onun var olduğunu dolaylı olarak ifade etmiş oluyoruz. THERE, yerden bağımsız olarak da varlık yokluk ifade etmekte kullanılabilmektedir. TO BE eyleminin var olma anlamı olsaydı, örneğin *No useless plants* gibi bir tümce mümkün olurdu. TO BE eyleminin VARLIK anlamı olmaması karşısında İngilizce varlık/yokluk ifade edebilmek için THERE sözcüğüne başvurmaktadır.



4.c

THERE	BE	NOUN PHRASE
There	are	several kinds of pollution.
There	are	no useless plants.
There	can be	no roses without thorns.
There	are	two types of secondary schools.

Aşağıdaki örnekleri de inceleyiniz.

1. There was no wind.
2. There won't be enough time for the meeting.
3. There is no time for us to visit you.

4. There is no such thing as an honest thief.
 5. There was much foolish talking.
 6. There was very little done that day. = Very little work was done that day.
 7. There is nothing I can do for you. = I can do nothing for you.
 8. There is nothing to do. = We don't have anything to do.
 9. There was every reason for him to be angry with you.
 10. There is a map on page 45.
 11. There is a big sale now at Gima.
 12. There are three kinds of books that I like to read.
 13. There are many doctors to help you.
 14. There is a storm approaching. = A storm is approaching.
 15. There is a book I have been looking for a year.
 16. There must be something wrong with him
 17. There is every reason for a healthy person to be happy.
 18. There is no good in arguing with the inevitable.
-

EXERCISE 15

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ad öbeklerinin altını çiziniz. Mümkünse THERE'li tümceyi 3. tümce kalıbında (NP BE ADV) yazınız.

1. There might be life on the moon.
2. There is no such thing as a primitive language.
3. There can be no such thing as an honest politician. –Mencken
4. There are thousands of kinds of lichens.
5. There are multiple causes for soaring medical costs.
6. There was a bounteous supply of food in the cellar.
7. There are approximately 800,000 American Indians today on reservations.
8. There is a remedy for all things but death.
9. There is no evidence that the tongue is connected to the brain. –F. Tyger
10. In recent years, there has been an increasing awareness of environmental pollution.
11. There is a great deal of variation among the breed of horses.
12. There is no easy panacea that will solve our complicated international situation.
13. There was a strange object in the box.
14. There lies opportunity in the middle of every difficulty.
15. There stands a surprised mother-in-law behind every successful man.

Chapter 8

SENTENCE PATTERNS 5-8

tek çekirdekli tümçeler

Eylemin, tümcenin kalbi gibi olduğunu belirtmiştık. Eylemler, geçişli (transitive) ya da geçisiz (intransitive) olmalarına göre çeşitli tümce kalıpları oluşturmaktadır.

DIE	Intransitive	<i>The patient died.</i>	1 NP gerekiyor.
DRINK	Monotransitive	<i>The king drank the poison.</i>	2 NP gerekiyor.
BUY	Ditransitive	<i>Tom bought Lucy flowers.</i>	3 NP gerekiyor.

Bu tümce kalıpları bir tek eylem tarafından yönetilmektedir. Bir başka deyişle, tümcenin gösterdiği iş "BUY=satın almak" işidir. Diğer yandan, *Tom saw Lucy playing the piano* tümcesinde iki ayrı iş (SEE=görmek ve PLAY=çalmak) bulunmaktadır. Yani bu tümce bir değil iki çekirdek taşımaktadır. Şimdi tek çekirdekli tümce kalıplarını inceleyelim:



5.a NP IntV=Time flies.

Geçisiz eylemler nesne almazlar. Bu nedenle geçisiz eylemlerin tümce kurabilmesi için tek bir ad öbeği yeterlidir.

5.a

NOUN PHRASE	INTRANSITIVE VERB
Ostriches whose size is awesome	cannot fly.
A watched pot	never boils.
What is to be	will be.
The cost of living all over the world.	is going up.
The patient	is sleeping.
A man who will lie	had better not speak.
All the people in the shipwrecked boat	died.
Quite a few species	are dying out.
All our hopes	have vanished.



Bazı eylemler hem geçişli hem de geçisiz olarak kullanılabilir.

FLY¹ (Intransitive) Most birds can fly.

FLY² (Transitive) She can fly a helicopter.



Bazı geçisiz eylemler, yer, mesafe, ölçü ya da zaman gösteren bir öge gerektirebilir.

She is living. = Yaşıyor.

She lives in London. = Londra'da oturuyor.

They marched a long way.

The storm lasted two days.

The meeting took 2 hours.

The thermometer rose several degrees.

You shouldn't lie on the wet grass.

Bu eylemleri 5.b tablosunda gösterelim.

5.b

NOUN PHRASE	INTRANITIVE VERB	TIME EXPRESSION
The film	lasted	an hour.
A creaking door	hangs	long.
They	keep	late hours.
The examination	took	the whole day.
She	lived	a long time.



Tümcede eylemin anlamına bağlı olarak MANNER, PLACE, TIME ve REASON öğelerinin yer alabileceğini ama bu öğelerin aslında tümce kalibinin bir parçası olmadığını anımsayalım. **He died** tümcesi, kendi başına tam bir tümcedir. **The film lasted** ise tam bir tümce olamamaktadır. Bu nedenle 5.b kalibini kullanıyoruz.

Geçisiz eylemler 5.C kalibinde görüldüğü gibi, zarflarla kullanıldıklarında devrik yapılar da kurabilir.

5.c

ADVERB	Int V	NOUN PHRASE
Away	flew	the birds.
Down the street	ran	the thief.
Out	flew	the bird.
Out of the plane	stepped	the pop singer.
From a tiny sprout	grew	a huge tree.



"Here comes Shorty."

Kimi eylemler THERE ve HERE zarflarıyla, devrik tümcelerde kullanılır.

appear
come
go
happen

live
remain
seem

5.d

THERE/HERE	Int. Verb	NOUN PHRASE
There	appeared	a face at the window.
There	comes	a time when everybody has to die.
There	goes	our bus.
There	lived	a young king.
There	remain	two problems to solve.
Here	comes	Shorty.

Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyiniz.

Once upon a time there lived a wicked king.

There seem to be two major reasons for their failure.

There comes a time when we must all face defeat.

There goes Jim.

There seems to be a general assumption that brilliant people cannot stand routine.

There seem to be but three ways for a nation to acquire wealth: by war, by commerce, or by agriculture. – *Benjamin Franklin*

EXERCISE 16

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ad öbeklerinin ve eylemlerin altını çiziniz..

1. Either I have grown, or all my trousers have shrunk. (Dikkat: *Either .. or* ile bağlanmış iki ayrı tümce var.)
2. Many ships have sunk in the Bermuda triangle.
3. Many lakes froze in Finland last year.
4. In 1954 an American athlete, Roger Bannister, ran a mile in less than four minutes.
5. Our telephone has rung at least a hundred times today.
6. Christmas comes but once a year.
7. Gelatin comes from the skins and bones of animals.
8. Modern cars come in a wide variety of colors. (Günümüzün arabaları çok değişik renklerde üretiliyor.)
9. Life on this planet must have begun millions of years ago.
10. Happiness never comes to some people.

11. Tolerance comes with age. – *Goethe*
12. Nothing good ever comes of violence. – *Martin Luther King, Jr.*
13. She comes from a rich family.
14. Some diseases run in families. (Bazı hastalıklar kalıtsaldır.)
15. His desires run ahead of his thinking. (Arzuları aklının önünde gidiyor.)
16. Still waters run deep.
17. Electric trains can go faster.
18. Economic and political stability of a country go together.
19. Go to bed with lamp and rise with the lark.
20. Success doesn't come to you; you go to it.

GEÇİŞLİ Mİ, GEÇİŞSİZ Mİ?

He can run fast.

He runs a big company.

Time flies.

She can fly an aeroplane.

Power corrupts.

If thought corrupts language, language can also corrupt thought. -Orwell

Geçişsiz eylemlerin nesne almayan eylemler olduğunu belirtmiştik. WALK, RUN gibi hareket gösteren eylemlerin, pek çok dilbilgisi kitabında belirtildiği gibi, nesne gerektirmeyen eylemler olduğunu, yani geçişsiz eylemler olduğunu söyleyebiliriz.



Geçişsiz eylemlerin, geçişli kullanımları da olabilmektedir.

Only good people should run a country.

Television channels run awful programs in summer.

She walks her dog in the park every morning.

She died a tragic death.

Geçişli eylemlerin nesne alan eylemler olduğunu belirtmiştik.



Geçişli eylemlerin nesnelerinin kullanılmadığı durumlar vardır.

- A. Bir eylemin yaygın nesneleri tümcede görünmeyebilir.

I have already eaten. (my dinner)

She doesn't drink. (alcoholic drinks)

- B. İşi yapan önemli değilse, nesne özne kullanımında kullanılır.
Geçişli eylem, geçişsiz eylem gibi görünür.

The door opened.

All the windows broke.

Her iki öbekteki eylemler için ***derin yapu/yüzey*** yapı ayrimı bir açıklama yapmasına olanak sağlamsaktadır.

She walks her dog./She causes her dog to walk.

The door opened./Someone or something opened the door.



"Margaret is washing. I am drying, and Joe picks up the pieces."

6. NP¹ TrV NP²

A small leak will sink a great ship.
One rotten apple spoils the whole barrel.
A long face shortens your list of friends.

Bu kalibri tek nesne alan eylemler oluşturmaktadır.

6

NOUN PHRASE	TR. VERB	NOUN PHRASE
Good clothes	open	all doors.
A rolling stone	gathers	no moss.
The abundance of money	ruins	youth.
Those who do nothing	make	no mistakes.
God	helps	those who help themselves.
He that increases knowledge	increases	sorrow.
Those who make no mistakes	usually do	nothing.
Excessive sunlight	damages	the skin.
The chef	invented	a secret formula for salad dressing.

**HANGISİ? NP Tr-V mi, NP¹ Tr-V NP² mi?**

Geçişli eylemlerin geçisiz gibi kullanılabildiğini belirtmiştık.
Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

Roses grow well in our garden. (Sentence Pattern 5)

Mrs. Thorn grows roses every year. (Sentence Pattern 6)

His last book is selling well. (Sentence Pattern 5)

His father is selling books. (Sentence Pattern 6)

The window broke. (Sentence Pattern 5)

Jack broke the window. (Sentence Pattern 6)

EXERCISE 17

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ad öbeklerinin altını çiziniz.

1. American imperialism thoroughly corrupted the national government and the media.
 2. The frog does not drink up the pond in which he lives. – *Indian Proverb*
 3. Psycholinguistics investigates how language is acquired.
 4. Every country has the government it deserves. – *Joseph de Maistre*
 5. People who live in glass houses should not throw stones. – *Proverb*
 6. He who sups with the devil needs a long spoon. – *Proverb*
 7. History has seen wars which used up less ammunition than a cease-fire does today.
 8. A small leak will sink a great ship. – *Proverb*
 9. He that falls in love with himself will have no rivals. – *B. Franklin*
 10. One half of the world does not know how the other half lives.
 11. Rising oil prices are affecting the entire world.
 12. He himself could not answer the question he asked.
 13. Just the thought of standing in that line tires me.
 14. That he has lost his job does not worry him a bit.
 15. Raising children requires great patience and undivided attention.
-
-

EXERCISE 18

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin kalıplarını, yanlarına 5 ya da 6 yazarak belirleyiniz.

1. He rose early today. __
2. Shops open at 9 in Ankara. __
3. Porpoises have often come to the rescue of shipwrecked sailors. __
4. Several balloons burst with a tremendous noise. __
5. I have driven this car two thousand miles. __
6. Has the bell rung yet? __
7. All the children rode on the Ferris Wheel. __
8. The tomato plants have frozen this year. __
9. During some operations doctors freeze some parts of the body. __
10. Joe runs five miles every morning. __

11. The new manager is running the business very well. ___
12. They sank two of the enemy ships.
13. The book he wrote about C^rA's wrongdoing is selling well.
14. Birds of a feather flock together. ___
15. A new broom sweeps well. ___
16. The number of people in rural areas has ~~decreased~~ ___ in this decade. ___



"Show it to your mother. She appreciates nonsense."

7. NP¹ TrV NP² ADV

Don't keep all your eggs in one basket.

He put his valuable documents in a safe. Pattern 7

He saw the valuable documents in a safe. Pattern 6

Yukarıdaki iki tümce arasında öğeleri açısından çok önemli bir fark vardır. Birinci tümcede, bütün öğeler gereklidir. Örneğin, **He put his valuable documents* gibi bir öbek tümce olamaz. Buna karşılık *He saw the valuable documents* tam bir tümcedir. Birinci tümcenin kabul edilebilir bir tümce oluşturması için IN A ^AFE öbeği gereklidir. PUT gibi zorunlu olarak bir zarf öbeği gerektiren eylemlerin sayısı sınırlıdır.

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	ADV
You	must keep	your money	in a bank.
The child	put	his head	in his mother's lap.
Some people	put	all their eggs	in one basket.
A bad temper	gets	its owner	into serious trouble.
An apple a day	keeps	the doctor	away.

Bu tümce kalıbında kullanılan eylemler:

cast	fill	leave	place	take
feed	get	keep	put	
find	lay	make	set	

Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

- CAST** Cast no dirt into the well that gives you water.
- FEED** They are now feeding the data into the computer.
- FIND** He found himself in a strange place.
- FILL** An empty purse fills the face with wrinkles.
- GET** You can't get water out of a stone.
- LAY** He broke the vase and laid the blame on his brother.
- LEAVE** She left her car keys at home.
- KEEP** Keep your eyes on the stars, and your feet on the ground.
- MAKE** They make clay into bricks.
- PLACE** They placed an advertisement in the local newspaper.
- PUT** Put these words in alphabetical order.
- SET** He set his sword on the table.
- TAKE** They took all the wounded to the hospital.
- VEST** Article 11 of the Constitution of the United States vests "executive power" in the president.
-

EXERCISE 19

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin kalıplarını yanlarına 5, 6 ya da 7 yazarak belirleyiniz.

1. They are trimming the bushes. ____
2. A bad temper gets its owner into serious trouble. ____
3. The driver turned sharply. ____
4. Glass breaks easily. ____
5. Even the boldest zebra fears the hungry lion. ____
6. You shouldn't put all your eggs in one basket. ____
7. Migrant workers pick the strawberries in early June. ____
8. This book reads well. ____
9. She set her best plates on the table. ____
10. They laid the dead animal on the wagon. ____
11. Take one of each. ____
12. Jack took all the books to his office. ____
13. Imported apples cost 3,000,000 TL a kilo. ____
14. Gold dust blinds all eyes. ____
15. Traveling and meeting new people will enrich our life. ____
16. One rotten apple spoils the whole barrel. ____
17. A truth that is told with a bad intent can beat all the lies you can invent.
– William Blake ____

18. A cripple in the right way may beat a racer in the wrong one. –F. Bacon
 19. The eye sees only what the mind is prepared to comprehend. –H. Bergson
 20. The vile odors from the swamp keep people away. __
 21. All attempts to salvage the wrecked ship failed. __
 22. To learn the craft of boat building takes many years. __
 23. Keep your eyes on the stars, and your feet on the ground. –Roosevelt __
 24. A panacea for all diseases does not exist. __

8. NP¹ TrV NP² NP³

You can't teach an old dog new tricks.



I brought them a list of your favourite dishes.

Bu kalıptaki eylemler iki nesne almaktadır. Geleneksel olarak bu nesneleri *direct object* (dolaysız nesne) ve *indirect object* (dolaylı nesne) olarak adlandırıyoruz. *Direct* ve *indirect* terimlerinin anlamla ilgili olduğunu söyleyebiliriz. Eylemin gösterdiği işten doğrudan etkilenen *direct object* olmaktadır. Örneğin, aşağıdaki karikatürde **SEND** eyleminin doğrudan etkilediği *some cookies*, *direct object* (dolaysız nesne)dir.



“Mrs. Wilson sent you some cookies. Here's most of them.”

8.a

NP¹	TrV	NP²	NP³
We	showed	them	our new car.
She	made	her guests	coffee.
She	chose	herself	a nice dress.
Everybody	envies	her	her figure.
The detective	asked	her	where she had been.
She	asked	me	one or two questions.

Bu kalıpta önce DIRECT OBJECT kullanıldığında INDIRECT OBJECT'ten önce bir ilgeç (preposition) kullanılmaktadır. Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

We showed **them** our new car.

We showed **.....** our new car TO **thein**.

8.b

NP¹	TrV	NP³	Prep	NP²
We	showed	our new car	to	them
She	made	coffee	for	her guests.
She	chose	a nice dress	for	herself.
The detective	a ked	two questions	of	me.
The professor	explained	the problems	to	the students.

Bu kalıpta özel durumlar da bulunmaktadır. Örneğin, ENVY eylemi sadece 8.a kalıbında kullanılabilir. Diğer taraftan da EXPLAIN sadece 8.b kalıbında kullanılmaktadır. Aşağıdaki tabloda 8. tümce kalıbindaki özel durumları gösteriyoruz.



8. KALIPTAKİ EYLEMLERİN KULLANIMLARINA GÖRE SINIFLANDIRILMASI

Tabloda görülebileceği gibi, tümcenin eylemi ***send*** ise ve indirect object, direct object'ten sonra kullanılıyorsa, indirect object ile **TO** ilgeci kullanılıyor. Tümce-nin eylemi ***buy*** ise, kullanılan ilgeç **FOR** oluyor. Tümcenin eylemi ***bring*** ise, anlam değişikliğiyle, hem **TO** hem de **FOR** kullanılabilir.

Envy gibi eylemler, sadece **INDIRECT OBJECT+DIRECT OBJECT** dizilişine izin veriyor. **Say** gibi eylemler sadece **DIRECT OBJECT+TO INDIRECT OBJECT** dizilişine izin verir. **Repeat** gibi eylemler **DIRECT OBJECT+FOR INDIRECT OBJECT** dizilişi gerektirir.

Ask eyleminin *ask someone a question / ask a question of someone* yapılarında kullanıldığına dikkat ediniz.

1	HE SENT ME A MESSAGE. HE SENT A MESSAGE TO ME.	assign, award, cause, deal, give, grant, hand, lend, mean, offer, owe, pass, play, promise, post, quote, read, recommend, sell, send, serve, show, take, teach, tell, throw
2	HE BOUGHT ME A MAC. HE BOUGHT A MAC FOR ME	book, build, buy, call, cash, catch, change, choose, cut, find, fix, keep, make, order, prepare, reach, save, reserve, spare
3	HE BROUGHT ME A MAC. HE BROUGHT A MAC FOR ME. HE BROUGHT A MAC TO ME.	bring, do, fetch, get, leave, sing
4	WE ENVIED HER HER LUCK.	accord, advance, afford, allow, bet, bid, charge, cost, forgive, guarantee, refuse, save, strike
5	HE SAID NOTHING TO US.	explain, introduce, remember, report, say, speak
6	REPEAT THE STORY FOR US	cash, close, confirm, fix, keep, open, pronounce, prescribe, repeat, sign, translate
7	HE ASKED ME A QUESTION. HE ASKED A QUESTION OF ME.	ask

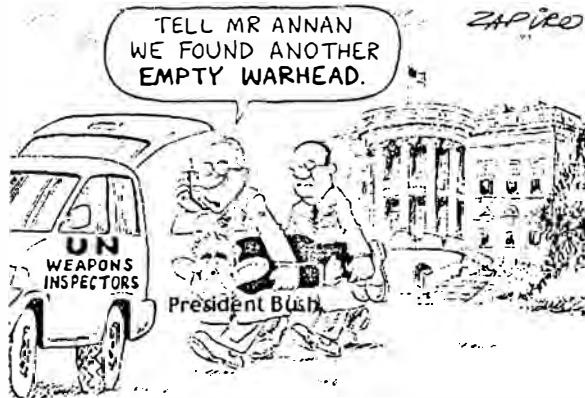
EXERCISE 20

Tümcelerin kaliplarını yanlarına 5, 6, 7 ya da 8 yazarak belirleyiniz.

1.. They washed their car in the garden. 6

~~IN THE GARDEN~~ öbegi bu tümcenin kurulması için gerekmıyor. Bu öbek ~~kalıbin bir~~ parçası değil. O halde kalıp NP(They) TrV (washed) NP (their car)=6.

2. Poverty taught me the true value of the gifts useful to life. – *A. France* ____
3. The child put his head in her mother's lap. ____
4. She chose herself a black dress. ____
5. Suzy is crying in her room. ____ (*in her room* tümce kalibinin bir parçası değil.)
6. A six-month-old baby can't walk. ____
7. The new government has promised workers higher wages. ____
8. His books brought him neither fame nor fortune. ____
9. A watched pot never boils. ____
10. His quick temper has won him many an enemy. ____
11. She handed each person in the chorus a rose. ____
12. God helps those who help themselves. ____
13. Continued research into the nature, cause, and treatment of headaches offers hope to many sufferers. ____
14. A bad temper puts its owner into serious difficulty. ____
15. They gave us a brand new car. ____
16. We bought apricots for them. ____
17. She dealt me a bad hand. ____
18. They assigned me the most difficult task. ____
19. The company made me a fine offer. ____
20. The man bought whoever came in a beer. ____
21. You can't teach an old dog new tricks. ____
22. Books of all types can give us useful information. ____
23. No child can keep a secret. ____
24. She taught us how to make fruit leather. ____
25. Science has promised us truth. It has never promised us either peace or happiness. – *Gustave Le Bon* ____



Tell Mr. Annan we found another empty warhead tümcesi hangi kalıpta kurulmuş?

(Empty Warhead nedir? Birleşmiş Milletler silah denetçileri Başkan Bush'u neden taşıyorlar?)

Chapter 9

SENTENCE PATTERNS 9-10

iki çekirdekli tümceler



*"They call these shows TALK shows,
but they are really SHOUT shows."*

*Mastering English Grammar*da sunulan tümce kalıplarının bir kısmı KERNEL SENTENCE değildir. Bir başka deyişle, yüzey yapıda tek bir tümce gibi görünen bu kalıplar, derin yapıdaki iki tümcenin birleşmesinden oluşmaktadır. Bir örnekle açıklayalım.

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	NP ³	(8)
I	found	my friend	a talented painter.	

Bu tümceyi **PATTERN 8** olarak değerlendirebiliriz. Bu durumda tümce "arkadaşımı yetenekli bir ressam buldum" anlamına gelecektir. Diğer taraftan, biz bu tümcenin **I FOUND THAT MY FRIEND WAS A TALENTED PAINTER** olarak algılanabileceğini, yani, bu tümcenin "arkadaşımın yetenekli bir ressam olduğunu gördüm/anladım" anlamına geldiğini de biliyoruz. Tümcenin nasıl kısaltıldığını söyle gösterebiliriz.

I FOUND	THAT	MY FRIEND	WAS	A TALENTED PAINTER.
I FOUND		MY FRIEND		A TALENTED PAINTER.

Şimdi **MY FRIEND** ile **A TALENTED PAINTER** ad öbeklerinin aynı kimse olduğunu **örtmek** üzere ikisini de **NP²** olarak göstererek tümce kalibini aşağıdaki gibi gösterebiliriz.

NP¹	TrV	NP²	NP²	(9)
I	found	my friend	a talented painter.	

Bir başka örnek:



LUCY	FOUND	FRED	A PIG.	LUCY	FOUND	FRED	A PIG.
NP ¹	VERB	NP ²	NP ³	NP ¹	VERB	NP ²	NP ²

Bir başka örnek: **CALL ME A TAXI.**

Tom: *Bob, please call me a taxi.*

Bob: *Okay, I will. You are a taxi.*

Bob'un yaptığı şakayı açıklayabilir misiniz?

Bölüm başında yer alan karikatürde Dennis, "KONUŞMA show"u, diye adlandırılan kimi "show"ların aslında, konuşanlar sürekli olarak birbirlerine bağırıklarından "BAĞIRMA show"u olduğunu söylüyor.

NP¹	TrV	NP²	NP²
They	call	these shows	talk shows

CALL, FIND, MAKE, LEAVE eylemleri hem **NP¹ TrV NP² NP³** hem de **NP¹ TrV NP² NP²** tümce kalıplarında kullanılabildiklerinden anlam bulanıklığına yol açabilmektedir.

NP¹	TrV	NP²	NP^{2/3}
They	left found made	Mrs. Wilson	a ruin.
They	called	Mrs. Wilson	a witch.

9. NP¹ TrV NP² NP²

Gutenberg made everybody a reader, and photocopying machines have made everybody a publisher. – McLuhan (1911-80)



NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	NP ²
The cunning wife	makes	her husband	her apron.
The team	chose	Jack	captain.
We	consider	yours	a generous offer.
We	have found	her	a great helper.
Everybody	thought	the proposal	a mistake.
We	find	Ankara	a beautiful city.
The jury	declared	Tom	the winner.

NP²lerin aynı kimse ya da şeyi gösterdiklerine dikkat ediniz.

Bu kalıpta belli sayıda eylem kullanılır.

appoint	baptize	believe	call	choose
christen	consider	crown	declare	designate
elect	entitle	find	imagine	label
leave	make	name	nickname	nominate
prove	render	suppose	think	vote

Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

They eventually appointed her the chief operating officer.

Doctors call high blood pressure hypertension.

She christened her new dog Karabaş.

We consider John the best man that can do this job properly.

The Archbishop crowned the young prince king.

They declared Jack the winner of the contest.

They elected Tom president.

I find all this money a considerable burden.

☞ Big business found in President Bush a man who would do anything to please them.

Smith made the firm what it is today.

They named the baby John.

Bu kalıpta kimi eylemler ikinci NP²'den önce AS zarfını gerektirirler. Aşağıdaki örneklerde **take** ve **count** eylemlerinin kullanımına dikkat ediniz.

accept	acknowledge	claim	condemn	consider
count	describe	identify	look on	recognize
regard	see	take	treat	

We **regard** him as a good coach.

Don't take me for a fool.

The police **identified** the victim as the son of the mayor.

Mecca is **regarded as** a sanctum in the Islamic religion.

Don't take this as an insult.

We do not **count** him among our friends.

Harnessing the tides has been **considered as** a possible source of electrical energy.

EXERCISE 21

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde hangi iki ad öbeğinin aynı kimseyi ya da şeyi gösterdiğini belirtiniz.

1. The witness called the accused a murderer. *accused = murderer*
2. The authorities identified the cunning spy as the representative of the European Union.
3. They christened their baby George.
4. We consider John the best man that can do this job properly.
5. Some serious critics regard Orhan Pamuk's *Yeni Hayat* a tragic failure.
6. Hard practice has made him a good boxer.
7. Doctors call high blood pressure hypertension.
8. Some people consider Bill Gates a genius. I consider him the greatest crook of the twentieth century.
9. His contemporaries did not consider Hemingway a great writer.
10. For its sudden destruction of crops, farmers call hail the "white plague".
11. Members of the Green Peace are trying to make Europe a nuclear-free zone.
12. He finds his job a great burden.

EXERCISE 22

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin hangilerinin 8. kalıpta hangilerinin 9. kalıpta kullanıldığını yanlarına (8) ve (9) yazarak belirtiniz.

1. Advances in technology have rendered war a threat to the continued existence of the human race.
2. The wealthy family gave a large donation to the college.
3. Despair gives a coward courage.
4. The store offers its customers many special services.
5. We may regard a hungry man's stealing as a venial crime.
6. No one considers gambling as an honest way for the pursuit of wealth.
7. The Archbishop crowned the young prince king.

8. If you call a tail a leg, how many legs has a dog? Five? No, four. Calling a tail a leg doesn't make it a leg. —A. Lincoln
9. Surprisingly, they elected John chairman.
10. He considers chess a waste of human intelligence.

10. NP¹ TrV NP² ADJ

Bu tümce kalibi, 9. Tümce Kalibine önemli bir açıdan benzemektedir. NP² kendi disinden gelen ADJ tarafından nitelenmektedir. Yine bu kalının temelinde iki tümce bulunmaktadır.

WE	FIND	THAT	U.S WARS FOR OIL	ARE	ILLEGAL AND IMMORAL.
WE	FIND		U.S WARS FOR OIL		ILLEGAL AND IMMORAL.

**We like our coffee when it is black.
We like our coffee black.**

10

NP	TR. VERB	NP	ADJ
A borrowed cloak	does not keep	one	warm.
Everybody	finds	her	intelligent.
The cold weather	turned	the leaves	yellow.
The pain in my eye	is driving	me	mad
She	broke	the safe	open.
They	painted	their room	black.
Inflation	is making	the poor	even poorer.
Eating too much	makes	everybody	fat.
We	consider	her	brilliant.
The hungry boy	licked	the plate	clean.
The thief	pushed	the door	open.
We	believed	him	honest.
She	wished	herself	dead.

Bu kalıpta kullanılan belli sayıda eylem bulunmaktadır.

bake	beat	boil	believe	break	burn	call
carve	colour	consider	cut	drive	fill	find
fling	get	hammer	have	hold	keep	lay
leave	lick	like	make	open	paint	prove
push	render	suppose	set	think	turn	wash
wipe	wish					

Bu kalıpta kullanılan eylemlerin çoğu DÜŞÜNME ile ilgili eylemlerdir.

They	considered found pronounced believed called judged rated held	the man	insane.
------	--	---------	---------

New circumstances **rendered** the plans useless.

We **find** this solution quite unacceptable.

The experiment **proved** the professor wrong.

We **consider** this plan impossible, unrealistic and foolish.

A heavy purse **makes** a heart light.

Keep your mouth and purse closed.

A good husband **keeps** his eyes closed and his purse open.

I **found** the box that they had given me empty.

Some people **consider** bilingualism advantageous.

Everyone in the office **found** the last meeting highly informative.

We **find** an early vacation necessary.

Jenny **proved** herself capable of quick action.

Several people on the team have **proved** themselves dedicated to hard work.

Great people **consider** flattery of all kinds worthless.

Meggy **finds** lying in the sun preferable to jogging.

Kimi eylemlerde bir işin sonucu ifade edilmiş olur. Yapılan bir işin sonucu sıfatla ifade edilebiliyorsa, işi gösteren eylem bu tümce kalıbında kullanılabilir.

We **washed** the plates *clean*.

The cat **licked** the plate *clean*.

He **broke** the trunk *open*. (Bavulu kırarak açtı.)

She **flung** all the doors *open*.

He **hammered** the metal *flat*.

She **boiled** the eggs *hard*.

The pain **drove** him *mad*. (Ağrı onu delirtdi.)

EXERCISE 23

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin kalıplarını yanlarına 8, 9 ya da 10 yazarak belirleyiniz.

1. We didn't tell him anything. ____
2. The hungry travellers found the meal indescribably delicious. ____
3. Hunger makes hard beans sweet. ____
4. Her father chose her a beautiful dress. ____
5. A borrowed cloak does not keep one warm. ____
6. Some students find computers fascinating. ____
7. Mrs. Taylor finds her husband a good helper. ____

8. Getting up early makes people healthy. ____
9. We find constructive criticism essential. ____
10. Most students find regular studying preferable to cramming for tests. ____
11. A man who studies revenge keeps his own wounds green.
12. My mother made me a glass of lemonade. ____
13. The pain in my chest is driving me mad. ____
14. We found our teacher a cheap house. ____
15. He set the prisoners free. ____
16. We consider this plan impossible, unrealistic and foolish. ____
17. After the party, they left the whole place a mess. ____
18. Inflation is making everybody poor. ____
19. Everyone in the office found the last meeting highly informative. ____
20. A good writer finds a good dictionary indispensable. ____
21. What does not destroy me makes me strong. ____
22. Early to bed and early to rise makes a man healthy, wealthy and wise. – *Benjamin Franklin* ____
23. We find most of the TV shows an insult to our intelligence. ____
24. New technology has made many forms of manual labor unnecessary. ____
25. Butter will make us only fat. On the other hand, the new weapons will make our army invincible. – *W. Churchill* ____

EXERCISE 24

Aşağıda <http://free.freespeech.org/americanstateterrorism/> adresinden alınmış tümcelerin kalıplarını saptayınız.

1. Not a single Israeli died in the World Trade Center on September 11.
2. The U.S. sells itself to the world as a “democracy”.
3. We consider Mossad a state terrorist organization.
4. The U.S. military-government has committed several brutal genocides around the world since 1899.
5. The U.S. government has broken international law and the Geneva Convention many times.
6. America’s rulers are inhuman.
7. There are no important media outlets in the U.S. that are not owned or controlled by Jews.
8. The U.S. military and government are the greatest terrorists in the world.
9. History proves conclusively that the USA places no value whatsoever on human life.
10. The Zionist-Jewish plutocracy is in complete control of the United States government.

Chapter 10

SENTENCE PATTERNS WITH VERBALS

Patterns 11-14

Bu tümce kalıpları da gerçekte çekirdek tümce kalıpları değildir. Kalıplar derin yapısındaki iki tümcenin birleşmesiyle meydana gelmektedir. Aşağıda BARE INFINITIVE ve GERUND öbeklerinin nasıl olduğunu örnekliyoruz.



*Jack ran into a tree. The policeman saw it.
The policeman saw that Jack ran into a tree.*

The policeman saw that Jack ran into a tree 6. tümce kalıbidir.

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²
The policeman	saw	that Jack ran into a tree.

Kutudaki tümce aşağıdaki şeke dönüştürülür:

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	BARE INFINITIVE
The policeman	saw	Jack	run into a tree.



*Jack saw the thief. He was stealing his bicycle.
Jack saw the thief stealing his bicycle..*

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²
Jack	saw	that the thief was stealing his bicycle.

Kutudaki tümce aşağıdaki şeke dönüştürülür:

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	GERUND PHRASE
Jack	saw	the thief	stealing his bicycle.

Yukarıdaki örneklerde *SAW* eylemi *<that Jack ran into a tree>* ve *<that the thief was stealing his bicycle>* ad öbeklerine "hükmetmektedir". Bu olgu, şu iki değişikliği doğurmaktadır.

1. *THAT* silinmektedir.
2. Ad öbegindeki eylem, zaman gösterme özelliğini yitirmektedir. Yani bir verbal'a (eylemci) dönüşmektedir.

Bu dönüşümler öylesine yaygın olarak kullanılmaktadır ki eylemsilerin kullandığı tümceleri de temel tümce kalıpları arasında ele alıyoruz. Eylemsilerin dört kullanımıyla gerçekleşen 4 tümce kalıbı belirliyoruz.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. BARE INFINITIVE
(TO'suz eylemlik) | The dog watched someone steal my car. |
| 2. TO-INFINITIVE
(TO'lu eylemlik) | The IMF wants Turkey to reduce the wages of Turkish workers. |
| 3. GERUND (V-ING) | Jack saw the thief stealing his car. |
| 4. PAST PARTICIPLE (V3) | Turkey has found herself surrounded by the worst enemies. |



11. NP¹ TrV NP² BARE INF

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	BARE INF
You	can't make	water	run uphill.
We	watched	her	draw the picture.
The detective	noticed	the man	steal the purse.
We	have seen	her	lose her temper.
We	will have	someone	repair the car.
Advertising	makes	people	act like fools.

Bu kalıpta belirli sayıda eylem kullanılmaktadır. Bu eylemlerin çoğunluğunu duyu eylemleri (**see**, **watch**, **observe**, **notice**, vb.) oluşturmaktadır. Üç etirgen eylem **make**, **have** ve **let** de bu kalıpta kullanılmaktadır.

BU KALIPTA KULLANILAN EYLEMLER

A. Duyu eylemleri

feel	I felt the lift go up suddenly.
hear	She heard her mother cry all night .
listen to	We listened to him play the mandolin.
look at	They looked at the men play chess.
notice	The nurse noticed the patient walk out of the room .
observe	We observed the magician disappear.
perceive	They perceived the dog chase a rabbit.
see	A neighbour saw two men jump over the fence and run away.
watch	She is watching her sons play football.



Duyu eylemleri 13. Kalıpta da kullanılırlar.

B. Etirgen Eylemler

let	Let us not brood over past mistakes since they are irrevocable. A computer lets you make more mistakes faster than any invention in human history.
make	Inflation makes us live unhappily.
have	You should soon have someone check your engine.



*"He let me marry him
for his money when he
didn't have any!"*

C. Diğerleri:

know	We have never known the USA care for human rights.
bid	I bid you look into the lives of great men and take an example for yourself. The king bade the knights depart.
help	England helped the USA rob Iraq of its petroleum. The CIA always helps American companies abroad abuse human rights.

HELP Eylemiyle Özel Bir Durum

Help eylemini izleyen NP, belli bir kişiyi ya da kişileri göstermiyorsa kullanılmayabilir. Aşağıdaki birinci örnek tümcede ikinci NP, genel olarak insanları kastettiğinden kullanılmayabilir.

Protecting their habitat will help (US) save these rare and endangered species.

Examining the ingredients of processed foods before buying can help (us) protect consumers and their families.

Careful spending will help (you) balance your budget.

EXERCISE 25

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin öğelerini altlarını çizerek gösteriniz.

<u>Sue</u>	<u>felt</u>	<u>the sweat</u>	<u>trickle down her spine.</u>
NP¹	Verb	NP²	BARE INF

1. You cannot make water flow uphill.
2. Blowing out the other fellow's candle won't make yours shine any brighter.
3. One drop of ink may make a million people think. – Proverb

4. We saw the Israeli tanks crush many Palestinians to death.
5. We have never known George do such foolish things before.
6. The pungent aroma of the smoke made everybody cough.
7. Vigorous exercise will make the blood circulate faster through your body.
8. We watched the skaters glide smoothly across the ice.
9. Extreme shyness may make a person seem distant and aloof.
10. The company is having its workers undergo physical examination every six months.
11. She watched the seagulls fly over the gigantic waves.
12. Brushing your teeth will help prevent dental cavities.

12. NP¹ TrV NP² TO-INF

The Bush regime wants the rich to plunder the poor.

Derin yapıda

1. *Esperanto may become the universal language.*
2. *Many people have expected it.*

olarak görülen iki tümce yüzey yapıda

Many people have expected Esperanto to become the universal language.

olarak görülür. Belli eylemlerle gerçekleşen bu yapı da, yaygınlığı nedeniyle bir tümce kalıbı olarak değerlendirilmektedir.



"I wanted you to fetch the stick."

12

NP ¹	TR. VERB	NP ²	TO INFINITIVE
They	urged	us	to stay for dinner.
A pessimist	always expects	bad things	to happen.
I	want	you	to be here soon.
The doctor	advised	me	to stop smoking.
The teacher	got	all the students	to read the story.
They	will get	a mechanic	to repair the car.
The jury	believed	the old man	to be guilty of arson.

Bu kalıbın gerçekte iki tümceden oluştuğunu söylemişтик.

I told him that he should stay.	I told him to stay.
I implore (him) that he help me.	I implore him to help me.
I ordered him that he be on time.	I ordered him to be on time.
We forbid him that they watch it.	We forbid him to watch it.
I required of her to help me.	I required for her to help me. I required her to help me.

Bu kalıpta kullanılan eylemler:

advise	allow	appoint	ask	assist
beg	beseach	bribe	calculate	can't bear
cause	challenge	charge	choose	coerce
command	compel	condemn	convince	dare
direct	determine	encourage	entreat	expect
forbid	force	get	induce	instruct
intend	invite	lead	mean	motivate
oblige	order	permit	persuade	prefer
press	presume	promise	recommend	remind
request	sentence	teach	tell	tempt
trust	urge	want	warn	wish



(Başkan Bush'un İkinci Körfez Savaşı için Amerikan ordusuna verdiği emir de 12. Tümce Kalibi ile kurulmuş.)



Bu kalıpta kimi eylemler bir ilgecin yardımına gereksinme duyabilirler.

She has arranged **for** a taxi to meet us here.

Everyone was longing **for** the term to end.

Everybody was waiting **for** you to make a speech.

I have always wished **for** everyone to be happy.



Rely upon ve count on gibi eylemler birlikte kullanıldıkları ilgelerle birlikte bu kalıpta yer alırlar.

We **rely upon** you to help us with the project.

You should not **count on** us to help you whenever you ask for it.



BELIEVE, **CONSIDER**, **FIND** ve **THINK** gibi zihinsel etkinlik eylemleri aynı anlama gelmek üzere iki ayrı tümce kalıbında görülürler.

We	considered	her	a friend of ours.
We	considered	her	to be a friend of ours.



EXPECT ve **PROMISE** eylemleri bu kalıpta kullanıldığından eylemin gösterdiği işi yapan kişinin farklı olduğuna dikkat ediniz.

Carla **expected** Martha to leave early. (*Martha will leave.*)

Carla **promised** Martha to leave early, (*Carla will leave.*)

EXERCISE 26

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin öğelerini altlarını çizerek gösteriniz.

The jury	believed	the youth	to be guilty of arson.
NP ¹	Verb	NP ²	TO INF

1. They forced the prisoner to make a full confession.
2. Many people have expected Esperanto to become the universal language.
3. Good food and exercise will help you to be robust.
4. The coach taught the team to be humble in victory.
5. The economic crisis compelled many businessmen to close their factories.
6. The surgeon's adroit hands enabled him to perform the operation successfully.
7. He would hate his daughter to marry a foreigner.
8. Successful joint replacement has allowed many people to return to more normal lives.
9. Television allows too many people to laugh at the same silly jokes.
10. Many nations have allowed television to transform youth into idiots.
11. Our ability to arrange words into different orders allows us to produce an infinity of grammatical sentences.
12. I understand this to have been a mistake.

13. NP¹ TrV NP² V-ING

Bu kalıp da derin yapındaki iki tümcenin yüzey yapıda tek tümce olarak görülmeye olanak sağlamaktadır. Kalıpta sıkılıkla duyu eylemleri kullanılmaktadır.

We watched her. She was dancing.

We watched her ——— dancing.

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	V-ING
Everybody	watched	her	dancing.
We	heard	the officer	giving orders.
She	could feel	her heart	beating wildly.
You	shouldn't keep	me	waiting here.
We	will soon get	things	going.

11. ve 13. TÜMCE KALIPLARINDA DUYU EYLEMLERİ



Duyu eylemleri hem 11. Tümce kalıbında da hem de 13. Tümce kalıbında kullanılmaktadır. Kalıplar arasında anlam farkı bulunmaktadır.

I saw Jack REPAIR the radio.

Jack'in radyoyu tamir ettiğini gördüm. Radyo tamir edildi.

I saw Jack REPAIRING the radio.

Jack'i radyoyu tamir etmeye çalışırken gördüm, Tamir işi bitti mi bitmedi mi bilmiyorum.

13. KALIPTA KULLANILAN DUYU EYLEMLERİ

feel	She felt his hand trembling.
hear	She heard the baby crying.
listen to	Listen to him speaking.
look at	Look at him playing cards.
notice	She noticed him whispering.
observe	We observed him working.
perceive	She's perceived it working.
see	Did you see them running?
smell	She smelled it burning.
watch	I watched her crying.

13. KALIPTA KULLANILAN DİĞER EYLEMLER

catch	We caught him sleeping.
find	I found him working in his office.
get	Get the discussion going.
imagine	I can't imagine her singing.
keep	She kept us waiting.
leave	She left me working here.
set	The project set me thinking.
start	Start the machine going.



13. TÜMCE KALIBINDA **HAVE** EYLEMİ

Bu kalıpta **HAVE** değişik anlamlar ifade etmektedir.

1. I can't have you wasting our sources. (*I can't allow you to waste our sources.*)
2. We will soon have everybody leaving the office. (*Soon everybody will be leaving the office.*)
3. She had us all laughing. (*She made us laugh.*)
4. I will have you all swimming within a week. (*I will teach you how to swim within a week.*)
5. We can't have this sort of thing happening in this firm.

EXERCISE 27

Aşağıdaki tümceleri 11. ya da 13. kalıbı kullanarak birleştiriniz.

The children were painting the wall. We saw them.

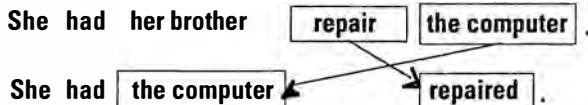
We saw the children painting the wall.

1. The thief hid the money in a box. The detective noticed it.
2. Somebody shouted angrily. I heard him.
3. The secret agent took several photographs. Nobody saw him.
4. I found our dog. He was trying to hide a bone.
5. The child was reading in the library. Her mother left him there.
6. Were Goethe or Beethoven good at billiards or golf? I can't imagine that.
7. The police caught the mayor's son. He was driving the stolen car.
8. The thief saw the old man. The man hid a pot of gold underneath a huge stone.
9. Two American soldiers burned his father's beard and then drove nails into his head. The Iraqi child saw it.

14. NP¹ TrV NP² V-EN


"Do you want the bat's eyes ground, diced or pureed?"

Bu tümce kalıbı temelde 11. ve 12. tümce kalıplarının edilgen şekilleridir. Etken eylemler **HAVE** ve **GET** bu kalıbın en yaygın kullanımı olan eylemleridir.



*I must get/have my house checked for termites.
They will have/get you sent on an errand.*

NP ¹	TR. VERB	NP ²	V-EN
You	had better have	that tooth	pulled out
I	haven't heard	this opera	sung before.
The officer	wants	this work	done at once.
The old man	couldn't make	his voice	heard.
Everybody	saw	the old man	beaten up.
We	found	ourselves	surrounded by dogs.
We	've never seen	her house	cleaned before.

GET ve **HAVE** dışında bu kalıpta kullanılabilen sayılı eylem vardır.

feel He felt himself lifted up.

make He couldn't make his influence felt.

hear I heard my name called.

see Have you ever seen a man hanged?

want I want this job done immediately.

prefer I prefer my steak cooked on the stove.

like I like my steak overcooked.

find We found the house deserted.



Bu kalıpta **HAVE** eylemi "başına gelmek" anlamında kullanılabilmektedir.

I had my antique pistol stolen. (Antika tabancam çalındı.)

Many Iraqi children had their arms and legs blown off.

EXERCISE 28

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin kalıplarını yanlarına 11, 12, 13 ya da 14 yazarak belirleyiniz.

1. We haven't heard this story told before. ____
2. In the alley they found themselves surrounded by a gang. ____
3. She could feel her heart beating wildly. ____

4. The manager got her secretary to type the letter again. __
5. We are about to get things going. __
6. I had all of my baggage sent ahead of me to London. __
7. We can't make an old dog learn new tricks. __
8. A pessimist always expects bad things to happen. __
9. Have you noticed the man break the vase? __
10. You shouldn't have kept us waiting here. __
11. People who procrastinate too much never get the job done. __
12. Absence makes the heart grow fonder. __
13. Let sleeping dogs lie. __
14. My VCR is defective; I must have it repaired. __
15. You can make people work, but you cannot make them think. __
16. We consider him to be a weak leader. __
17. They have judged her to be guilty. __
18. We saw them walking in the street. __
19. I felt a bug bite me. __
20. We left them laughing. __
21. Some people imagine the world to be flat. __
22. He challenged me to drive fast. __
23. Reading good books motivated him to be a writer. __
24. They provoked the students to start a riot. __
25. I want this photograph printed on glossy paper. __

U.S. Secretary of Foreign Affairs said that looting in Iraq was an expression of freedom and democracy.



Chapter 11

SENTENCE PATTERNS WITH LINKING VERBS

PATTERNS 15-16



The closer you look, the better we look.



*"I don't know what it is, but it makes
a very cute pet."*

Linking Verbs

Linking Verbs (İlgî Eylemleri), genelde *TO BE* eylemi gibi kullanılan eylemlerdir. *İlgî* eylemleri, *TO BE* eyleminden farklı olarak bir devinim de içerirler. Kimi eylemler, eylem kullanımları yanısıra, ilgi eylemi kullanımı da üstlenebilirler. Türkçe'deki *sararmak* ve *güzelleşmek* eylemlerindeki {-Er} ve {-lEş} eklerinin görevlerini bu eylemlerin linking verb kullanımı üstlenebilir.

Leaves turn yellow in fall. = Yapraklar sonbaharda sararır.
She has grown beautiful. = Güzelleşmiş.

BE	LINKING VERB
He will be a fine detective.	He will make a fine detective.
He is intelligent.	He looks intelligent.

Temelde ilgi eylemi olmayan eylemlerin ilgi eylemi olarak kullanılabilmesi özelliğinden, yaratıcı dil kullanımında sıkılıkla yararlanılmaktadır. Yukarıdaki *The closer you look, the better we look* tümcesi bu tür kullanıma iyi bir örnektir. Bu tümce, Chevrolet reklamında kullanılmıştır. Tümçenin ilginçliği

ile dikkat çekmesi, aynı tümce içinde LOOK eyleminin hem bir devinim eylemi hem de bir ilgi eylemi olarak kullanılmasından kaynaklanmaktadır.

the closer you look = ne kadar yakından bakarsanız

Burada LOOK devinim eylemi, CLOSER zarfiyla kullanılıyor.

the better we look = o kadar iyi görünürüz

Burada LOOK bir ilgi eylem ve sıfat olan BETTER ile kullanılıyor.

Bir başka örnek:

A farmer is a man who grows wheat, corn and desperate.

Bu tümcede yazar, GROW eyleminin ilgi eylemi kullanımına dayanarak ilginç bir tümce yapıyor.

to grow wheat and corn= buğday ve mısır yetiştirmek

to grow desperate= ümitsizliğe kapılmak

Türkçe'nin ilgi eylemi kullanımı gibi bir kullanımına gereksinmesi olmadığından bu tür yaratıcı kullanımlar da gerçekleşmez. Yukarıdaki tümceyi Türkçe'de, İngilizce'de olduğu gibi vurucu bir şekilde söylemek mümkün değildir= *Çiftçi buğday ve mısır yetiştiren VE ümitsizliğe düşen insandır.*

İngilizce'de çok az sayıda ilgi eylemi bulunmakla birlikte, aslında ilgi eylemi olmayan eylemlerin de ilgi eylemi olarak kullanılabilmeleri, 15. ve 16. tümce kalıplarının yaygın kullanıma sahip olmasına yol açmaktadır. Örneğin, GO eylemi "istenmedik bir şey olmak" anlamıyla ilgi eylemi olarak kullanılabilmektedir. ABD'de, komünizm korkusunun işlendiği günlerde *They went communists* tümcesi sık sık ABD medyasında görüldü. Aşağıdaki örneklerde de GO eyleminin çoğunlukla "istenmedik" bir oluşumu ifade ettiği görülmüyör.

He went bald.

The machine went dead.

The milk went sour.

GET eylemi de ilgi eylemi olarak çok yaygın bir kullanımına sahiptir.

Teachers complain that classes are getting too crowded.

He who would catch fish must not mind getting wet.

İlgî eylemleri iki kalıpta kullanılırlar.

15.	NP ^I	LV	NP ^I	She has become a famous author.
16.	NP	LV	ADJ	She looks happy.

15. NP¹ TrV NP¹

A person angry with the world makes a poor neighbour.

NP¹ ... NP¹ ad öbeklerinin aynı kimse ya da şeyi işaret ettiğini göstermektedir. Aşağıdaki tümcede MAKE ilgi eylemi olarak OLMAK anlamında kullanılmaktadır.

Teachers make the worst learners.

Öğretmenler en kötü öğrencilerdir.

Do doctors make the worst patients?

5		
NP ¹	LINKING VERB	NP ¹
My friend	became	a skillful tennis player.
The people here	have stayed	good neighbours.
The famous politician	remained	a bachelor all his life.
The new manager	turned out	a drunkard.
A diamond	always makes	a fine gift.
The village	seemed	a lively spot.

15. Tümce Kalıbında Kullanılabilen Eylemler

Yaygın İlgi Eylemleri		İlgili Eylemi Olarak Kullanılabilen Eylemler	
appear	remain	go	prove
become	seem	grow	stay
look	sound	make	turn (into)

ÖRNEKLER

1. We stayed good friends.
2. They appeared good friends.
3. J. F. Kennedy's death will remain a mystery.
4. This proposal seems a good solution.
5. She will make a great writer. = *She will be a great writer.*
6. She turned traitor. = She became a traitor.
7. When his wife got seriously ill, the old man turned cook.
8. The new director seemed a good man.
9. A book always makes a fine gift.
10. After years of faithful service, he became a manager.
11. London seemed a city of tramps a hundred years ago.
12. Atatürk proved a source of inspiration for independence-seeking nations.

EXERCISE 29

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin kalıplarını, yanlarına tümce kalıplarını belirten sayılar koyarak belirtiniz.

1. He became the class representative. 15
2. The new manager seemed an easy-going man. _____
3. My mother makes a delicious fruitcake. _____
4. They appeared friends to everybody. _____
5. Having the exact fare will make the bus go faster. _____
6. He remained a bachelor for reasons known to none of us. _____
7. The minister turned his attention to foreign affairs. _____
8. A fruitcake makes a fine gift. _____
9. It was because he was sick that Jack had to stay home. _____
10. The sergeant became a captain. _____
11. We have stayed good friends all our lives. _____
12. They are staying at a nice hotel in Bodrum. _____
13. A lie told often enough becomes the truth. -*Lenin* _____
14. As his millions increased, Ron's boredom also grew. _____

16. NP LV ADJ


Come and see these guys, Sir
Walter - they look ridiculous!

(Who do you think looks
ridiculous?)

1. She was looking **carefully** at the paintings.
2. She looked **careful**.

~~Zarf~~lar, eylemleri niteliyebilen sözcüklerdir. Birinci tümcede **carefully** zarfı, **look** eylemini niteliyor; bakma işinin **nasıl** yapıldığını belirtiyor. İkinci

tümcede **look** eylemini, bir sıfat olan **careful** izliyor. Bu durumda ikinci **look** 'un ilgi eylemi (linking verb) olarak kullanıldığını söylüyoruz.

She is looking carefully. (Dikkatli bir şekilde bakıyor.)

She looks careful. (Dikkatli görünüyor.)

16

NOUN PHRASE	LINKING VERB	ADJECTIVE
The leaves	are turning	yellow.
Cheap houses	are getting	scarcer.
The well	ran	dry.
Your dreams	may come	true.
His face	went	pale.
Fruit	quickly goes	rotten.
The children	fell	asleep.
A detective in charge of a team	should keep	fit.
Everything	may go	wrong.

Geçişli ya da geçisiz kimi eylemlerin "linking verb" olarak kullanılabildiğini anımsamak gereklidir.



This soup tastes delicious. (Linking verb)

She tasted the soup and found it too salty. (Transitive Verb)

Yayın İlgisi Eylemleri		İlgisi Eylemi Olarak Kullanılabilen Eylemler	
appear	remain	break	grow
become	seem	come	lie
feel	smell	continue	prove
get	sound	drop	run
keep	taste	fall	stay
look	turn	go	wear

"Linking Verb" kullanım sıklığı fazla olan eylemler:

appear	The rich Western countries appear intolerably selfish.
become	Computer have become affordable. Conserving energy in the home has become essential.
feel	Silk feels soft and smooth.
get	Some people get more tired when they have nothing to do.
keep	She can't keep quiet at all.
look	A man is as old as he feels; a woman is as old as she looks.
remain	We should remain faithful to our friends.

seem	Making a million dollars honestly seems impossible.
smell	Flowers smell sweet in season.
sound	Music of all kinds except hard rock sounds good.
taste	The coffee in this restaurant always tastes delicious.
turn	Her face turned white when she heard of the news.

Kimi zaman "linking verbs" olarak kullanılan eylemlere örnekler:

break	The ties broke loose.
come	Her dreams have come true. His prophecy did not come true. The handle of the knife came loose.
continue	The weather continued fine all day long.
drop	Be careful. The dog will drop dead any minute.
fall	Our supplies are falling short. The old man fell asleep. The last payment falls due this week.
go	The engine went dead. The computer has gone dead. Perhaps America will one day go fascist democratically, by popular vote. — <i>William L. Shirer</i> Cheese go bad quickly. I am going bald fast.
lie	The crocodile lay motionless. Her books lie unread.
prove	Her theory proved impractical in practise.
run	Our river is running dry. Our supply of energy is running low.
wear	This brand of carpet wears thin fast.



EXERCISE 30

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş olan eylemlerin linking verb (LV) olup olmadıklarını belirleyiniz.

1. She likes to **taste** exotic dishes.
2. Don't be so finicky about your clothes; the gray sweater **looks** fine.
3. He is **growing** prize-winning roses.
4. Her cakes always **taste** delicious.
5. Upon hearing all those compliments, her face **turned** red.
6. Our dog **smelled** the new brand and decided he didn't like it.
7. Life is a theater where the worst people sometimes **get** the best seats.
8. All kinds of vegetables and fruits **grow** well in Mersin.
9. She **turned** the pages quickly and found the picture.
10. After the luncheon buffet, I **grew** drowsy and decided to take a nap.
11. The lawyer **looked** very pleased with his success.
12. My father insisted that I get a haircut because I **looked** so scraggly.
13. Turkish cheese **tastes** much better than French cheese.
14. The chemist **smelled** the new compound.
15. After a storm passes, the sea **grows** calm.
16. Mr. Taylor **grows** many varieties of black orchids.
17. Her singing voice **sounds** squeaky despite long hours of practise.
18. Upon the approach of the expected team, he **sounded** his horn.
19. We all **feel** happy after a good match.
20. The detective carefully **felt** the fabric of the tablecloth.

EXERCISE 31

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin kalıplarını yanlarına kalıp numaralarını yazarak belirtiniz.

1. His hair is growing thin. ____
2. A smooth sea never made a skillful mariner. ____
3. A hungry man is an angry man. ____
4. His coat felt wet and soggy. ____
5. They grew very rich. ____
6. To know this country is to like it. ____
7. His death remained a mystery. ____
8. One man's meat is another man's poison. ____
9. Beggars cannot be choosers. ____
10. A cheerful wife is the joy of life. ____
11. The neighbour's lawn looks greener. ____
12. Your garden has always been beautiful. ____
13. True genius seldom appears in this world. ____
14. The showman will appear before a nasty audience. ____
15. Laziness may appear attractive to some people. ____

16. Habit, if not resisted, soon becomes necessity. – *Saint Augustine* ____
 17. Her style of clothing has long become outdated. ____
 18. Only our individual faith in freedom can keep us free. – *Eisenhower* ____
 19. They tasted a bitter defeat. ____
 20. Karen Fogg has become a blood-sucking enemy of Turks. ____
 21. The march didn't turn into a riot. ____
 22. You must break the habit of lying. ____
 23. Little strokes fell great oaks. – *Benjamin Franklin* ____
 24. Without death, life cannot go on. ____
 25. This material wears long. ____
 26. Two young artists are running the show. ____
 27. You can't run a government solely on a business basis. – *Lehman* ____
 28. This machine runs well. ____
 29. The world runs on money. – *Ray Stingray* ____
 30. We have to hurry up; time is running out. ____
 31. They named the baby Charles. ____
 32. Pollution can poison the air we breathe and the water we drink. ____
 33. I found their attitude very embarrassing. ____
 34. We painted the walls green. ____
 35. The noise kept me awake. ____
 36. They made my uncle manager. ____
 37. We thought her rather stupid. ____
 38. His terror of spiders kept him out of the dark basement. ____
 39. She considered him an excellent doctor. ____
 40. We found the boy quite nervous. ____

EXERCISE 32

Aşağıda 16 tümce kalibinin her biri için örnekler bulunmaktadır. Kalıpların numaralarını yazınız.

1	NP	BE	ADJ	
2	NP ¹	BE	NP ¹	
3	NP	BE	ADV	
4	THERE	BE	NP	(ADV)
5	NP	IntV		
6	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	
7	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	ADV
8	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	NP ³

9	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	NP ²
10	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	ADJ
11	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	B INF
12	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	TO INF
13	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	V-ING
14	NP ¹	TrV	NP ²	V3
15	NP ¹	LV	NP ¹	
16	NP	LV	ADJ	

1. We consider Atatürk the greatest statesman of all times. ____
2. He regarded the black cloud as a portent of evil. ____
3. Debbie hoards her jewels in a secret hiding place. ____
4. Chess is a game that involves strategy. ____
5. She made her hobby a career. ____
6. The meeting is downstairs. ____
7. Many materials used to clean homes are toxic. ____
8. Training a puppy to go out at regular intervals takes patience and vigilance. ____
9. Refined sugar is a well-known cause of tooth decay. ____
10. Among the trees was a white house. ____
11. The USA has more weapons of mass destruction than anywhere else in the world. ____
12. A creaking door hangs long. ____
13. Three Armenian terrorists assassinated the Turkish Ambassador Daniş Tunalıgil in his study on October 22, 1975. ____
14. The trainer gently put the apple in the horse's mouth. ____
15. The United States of America is a pioneer in the use of chemical and biological weapons against human beings. ____
16. The best way to appreciate your job is to imagine yourself without it. ____
17. Sue felt the sweat trickle down her spine. ____
18. The French government set all the Armenian terrorists free. ____
19. We found the children playing in mud. ____
20. There was originally no hierarchical clerical authority in Islam. ____
21. In the alley they found themselves surrounded by a gang. ____
22. American businesses have been active in Nicaragua since the 1850s. ____
23. How he became rich remained a mystery. ____
24. Lotteries have remained an important feature of life for most of us. ____
25. A bomb exploded in front of the Turkish Consulate General on December 6, 1978 in Geneva. ____
26. The purpose of a garage is to provide shelter for a car. ____
27. The American and British soldiers have blown off the limbs of Iraqi women and the scalps of Iraqi children. ____
28. Very few jobs have fallen vacant recently. ____
29. The meeting will be in an hour. ____
30. The surgeon's adroit hands enabled him to perform the operation successfully. ____
31. I cannot stand him making such silly remarks. ____
32. Her style of clothing has long become outdated. ____
33. The report found soft drinks like Coca-Cola extremely hazardous. ____
34. President Bush has never told Americans the truth about Iraq. ____
35. We have found that happiness depends on hard work. ____

EXERCISE 33

Aşağıda 16 tümce kalıbinin her biri için örnekler bulunmaktadır. Kalıplarını numaralarını yazınız.

1. Mustafa Kemal Atatürk is the founder of the Republic of Turkey. ____
2. We could not stop him getting into mischief. ____
3. The cross-country driver kept an atlas in the glove compartment. ____
4. We believed the letter a hoax. ____
5. Music gives most people enjoyment. ____
6. Our puny efforts to stop the flood were futile. ____
7. The Republic of Turkey is a democratic, secular and social state. ____
8. Books of all types can give us useful information. ____
9. You left the water running. ____
10. Public Education in America has largely been a failure because of many factors. ____
11. The number of people in rural areas has declined in this decade. ____
12. The wealthy family gave a large donation to the college. ____
13. The Industrial Revolution and its consequences have been a disaster for the human race. ____
14. The whites in Australia considered the Aborigines animals. ____
15. Riding a motorcycle without wearing a helmet is unsafe. ____
16. There is no surviving record as to when, how or by whom the Great Pyramid was constructed. ____
17. Birds of a feather flock together. ____
18. A shapeless object was in the middle of the garden. ____
19. The earliest victims of European imperialism were other Europeans. ____
20. John can insert a news item in the school paper. ____
21. Vigorous exercise makes the blood circulate faster through the body. ____
22. They forced the prisoner to make a full confession. ____
23. A thick fog can make safe driving almost impossible. ____
24. George will make a good father. ____
25. Chopping wood is heavy manual labor. ____
26. The coach designated Tom the new manager of the team. ____
27. The meal tasted delicious after our long hike. ____
28. The ability to get along with people is an asset in business. ____
29. Some idiot has painted my front door red. ____
30. Science has never promised us either peace or happiness. ____
31. The store offers its customers many special services. ____
32. The British Empire almost wiped out the whole indigenous population in Australia. ____
33. American politicians believe that the earth belongs to the strongest and the fittest. ____
34. That the book is old does not necessarily mean that is valuable. ____
35. He that goes barefoot must not plant thorns. ____

Aşağıda Amerikan *MAD* mizah dergisinden alınmış, politikacıların yetişirilmesiyle ilgili hazırlık çalışmalarını anlatan espirili tümceler veriliyor.



36. *See the publicity men.*
37. *They are very hard-working men.*
38. *They will give the candidate a new image.*
39. *They will teach him to pronounce words correctly.*
40. *They will teach him how to smile.*
41. *They will make him popular.*
42. *If people don't elect the candidate congressman, they might elect him happy idiot of the year.*

BİRDEN FAZLA TÜMCE KALIBINDA KULLANILAN EYLEMLER

Kimi eylemler birden fazla tümce kalıbında kullanılırlar. Kimi zaman bu durum bir tümcenin farklı anımlara gelmesinin (anlam bulanıklığının) nedeni olur. Aşağıdaki örneği anımsayınız.

Lucy found Fred a pig. (Kalıp 8)	Lucy, Fred'e bir domuz buldu.
Lucy found Fred a pig. (Kalıp 9)	Lucy, Fred'i domuz gibi görüyordu.

FIND					
6	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²		We found a good apartment.
7	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADV	We found them in the garden.
8	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ³	We found him a good secretary.
9	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ²	We found him a good secretary.
10	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADJ	We found him highly intelligent.
13	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-ING	We found them working in the garden.
14	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-EN	We found ourselves surrounded by cats.

GET

6	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²		He got a new car.
7	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADV	Not telling the truth got him into trouble.
8	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ³	Your answer will not get you a good grade.
12	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	TO INF	I got a mechanic to repair the car.
13	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-ING	Get them talking.
14	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-EN	I got the car repaired.
16	NP ¹	TrvV	ADJ		Some people get angry quickly.

HAVE

6	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²		She had a big lunch.
10	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADJ	I will have my coffee black.
11	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	B INF	She had a mechanic repair the car.
13	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-ING	We will not have you doing that.
14	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-EN	She had the car repaired.

MAKE

6	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²		Don't make a rash decision.
7	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADV	He made his way into the cabin.
8	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ³	She made me a good bookcase.
9	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ²	She made her hobby a career.
10	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADJ	A heavy purse makes a heart light.
11	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	B INF	You cannot make water flow uphill.
15	NP ¹	LV	NP ¹		Those roses will make a dainty bouquet.

LEAVE

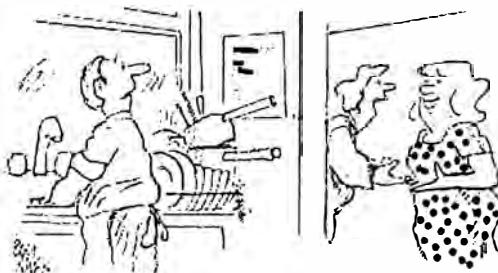
6	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²		His wife left him.
7	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADV	I must have left my keys at home.
8	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ³	He left him a watch.
9	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ²	They left the city a ruin.
10	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADJ	Please leave the kitchen window open.
13	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-ING	You left the water running.
14	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	V-EN	He left nothing undone.



RUN eylemi farklı tümce kalıplarında kullanılmasının yanısıra pek çok değişik anlam da üstlenebilen eylemlerdendir. Aşağıda **RUN** eyleminin kimi anlamlarına örnekler veriyoruz.

RUN					
5	NP	IntV			Colorfast garments will not run. She can run fast. He ran for president. The text runs as follows. The ferry runs every hour. The lease runs for 10 years. The heater runs on electricity. Our bill at the restaurant ran to more than \$200
6	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²		She runs the business well. The paper ran her story on page one. The party ran him for senator.
7	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	ADV	Stinginess runs in their family. She ran her fingers along the keyboard.
16	NP	LV	ADJ		The river has run dry. They have run wild.

TURN					
6	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²		She turned her head to see who was there.
9	NP ¹	TrvV	NP ²	NP ²	Rain turns dust to mud.
15	NP ¹	LV	NP ¹		Their friend turned a traitor.
16	NP	LV	ADJ		In fall, all leaves turn yellow or brown.



"How can you keep your hands so beautiful and soft, Sally?"

Chapter 12

PATTERN 17

The Slot-filling IT



"Are you married?"
No, it is not that. I've been run over by a car."

PATTERN 17其实是一个槽位填充模式，而不是一个真正的模式。PATTERN 17 在土耳其语中没有对应的模式，但我们可以将其视为一种特殊的用法。在这种情况下，tümce（整体）指的是“被车撞倒”这个整体动作，而不是“结婚”这个动作。所以，我们称这种用法为“slot-filling IT”（槽位填充IT），或者更准确地说是“pseudo-subject”（伪主语）。

İNGİLİZCE'DE SLOT-FILLING IT İKİ DURUMDA KULLANILIR.

- I. Özne olarak ya da ilk AD ÖBEĞİ olarak kullanılabilen bir öğe yoksa;

İNGİLİZCEDE KAR VE YAĞMUR YAĞMIYOR MU?

İngilizce'de kar ve yağmur yağışını belirtmek için doğrudan SNOW ve RAIN adları eylem olarak kullanılıyor. Kar anlamındaki snow, eylem olarak kullanıldığından doğal olarak, "yağmak" anlamını da içeriyor, "kar" anlamını da. Bu nedenle "The snow is snowing" gibi bir tümce kurulmuyor. Tümce ister istemez,IS SNOWING şeklinde düşünülüyor. Ne var ki öznesi olmayan bu tümçenin de kurulması mümkün değil. Özneye ait boşluğu doldurmak üzere İngilizce IT zamirini kullanıyor: IT IS SNOWING.

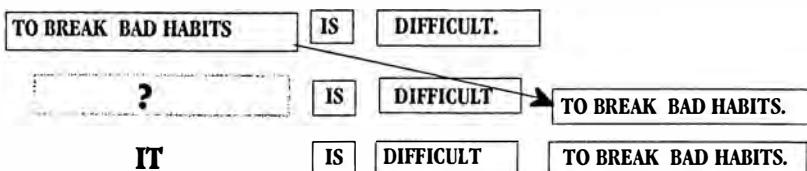
Biz tümce kalıplarını, özne/nesne betimlemesine değil, yapısal betimlemeye dayandırırıktır. Bu betimlemede tümce kalıplarının belli sayıda SLOT'lardan oluştuğunu düşündük. Örneğin, *Fred loves Lucy* tümcesi 3 "slot", *Fred bought Lucy a watch* tümcesi 4 "slot"tan oluşuyor. *IS SNOWING* yapısında ilk NP "slot"ını doldurduğu için biz *ITe*, *slot-filling IT* diyoruz.

II. Özne ya da nesne olan NP'ler uzun öbeklerse, yani gerund phrase, infinitive phrase ya da bir noun clause ise;

Şu tümcelye bakalım:

NP	BE	ADJ
TO BREAK BAD HABITS	IS	DIFFICULT.

Bu tümcede ilk NP uzun bir *infinitive phrase*dir. Bu uzun özneden kurtulmak için gerçekleştirilen işlemi gösterelim.



BASAMAK 1: Uzun NP tümcenin arkasına itiliyor.
..... is difficult to break bad habits.

BASAMAK 2: Boşalmış olan SLOT'a, IT konuyor.
IT is difficult to break bad habits.

Göründüğü gibi, *slot-filling* yaklaşımı açısından işlem其实上是basittir.



USES OF THE SLOT-FILLING IT

Şimdi slot-filling *IT*'in belirttiğimiz iki durumda kullanıldığı örneklerle bakalım.

I. ÖZNE OLARAK KULLANILABİLEN BİR NP YOKSA

1. İklim ve hava ile ilgili kullanımlarda
 - a. It is snowing.
 - b. It is raining.
 - c. It is very cold today.
 - d. It is 40° Centigrade above zero.
2. Zaman ve mesafe ifadelerinde
 - a. It is 8 o'clock.
 - b. It is about fifty kilometers from here to the picnic area.
 - c. It is summer.
3. Yer betimlemelerinde
It is dark and stuffy here.

4. Bir ad içtümceciğinin bağlanabileceği bir yapının bulunmadığı durumlarda

I don't eat meat. It is not that I don't like meat. It is just that my doctor says I shouldn't eat meat.

We can't be friends. It is not that I don't like you. It is just that we have different hobbies.

I can't go to the movies with you today. It is not that I don't want to, but I have some important work to do.



II. Özne ya da nesne olan NP'ler GERUND, INFINITIVE PHRASE ya da NOUN CLAUSE ise

THAT GLOBALISM IS IMPERIALISM

IS OBVIOUS.

?

IS OBVIOUS

THAT GLOBALISM IS IMPERIALISM.

IT

IS OBVIOUS THAT GLOBALISM IS IMPERIALISM.

1. THAT'lı NP yerine özne olarak

- a. That smoking is harmful is obvious.
It is obvious that smoking is harmful.
- b. That governments do not ban smoking is surprising.
It is surprising that governments do not ban smoking.
- c. It is self-evident that inflation may harm Turkish economy beyond repair.
- d. It struck me that she spoke with a foreign accent.
- e. It is a pity that she has had all her money stolen.
- f. It is considered a mistake that the company has opened 3 shops in the same part of the town.
- g. It drives me crazy that some students cheat on the exams.
- h. He has made it obvious that inflation may harm Turkish economy beyond repair.
- i. It does not worry him a bit that his wife has deserted him.
- j. It seems unlikely that we will stop inflation this year.

2. INFINITIVE PHRASE'lerin yerine özne olarak

- a. To learn English is enjoyable.
It is enjoyable to learn English.
- b. To make such a statement in public is a bit risky.
It is a bit risky to make such a statement in public.
- c. It will be our principal purpose to seek to reduce international tension.
- d. It shocked Paul to hear that his father had died unexpectedly.
- e. It offended me to be told that I had done all the wrong things.
- f. It is hard to pay for bread that has been eaten. – *Danish proverb*
- g. It is easier to catch flies with honey than with vinegar. – *Proverb*
- h. It is the most natural thing in the world for people to seek comfort.
- i. It is regarded as indecent for officials to take bribes.
- j. It is deemed impossible to put an end to the war in the world.

3. INFINITIVE PHRASE'lerin yerine nesne olarak

- a. I find it hard to do all this work.
- b. They have found it impossible to catch up with us.
- c. I think it unlikely for my son to do a thing like that.
- d. Owing to the pollution of the seas, many countries find it necessary to develop new strategies.

4. GERUND PHRASE'lerin yerine özne olarak

- a. Crying over spilt milk is no use.
It is no use crying over spilt milk.
- b. Playing with them was nice.
It was nice playing with them.
- c. It is a drag having to make new friends again.
- d. It is silly talking about going on a holiday when you are penniless.

5. QW-Noun Clause yerine özne olarak

- a. It might be asked why pollution cannot be prevented.
- b. It remains problematic whether governments will be able to ban smoking in public places.
- c. It is not known what triggers arthritis.

6. Ayrık (CLEFT) tümcelerde özne olarak

- a. She was chosen beauty queen twenty years ago.
It was twenty years ago that she was chosen beauty queen.
- b. I am not threatening to break his spirit. =(For example, I am threatening to break his legs.)
It is not his spirit that I am threatening to break.
- c. It is in fact a rare science-fiction movie that fails to make use of some sort of laser guns.

7. SEEM / APPEAR ile

- a. It seems that we have no money left.
- b. It appears that she is capable of doing the job.
- c. It appears that she has managed to persuade her husband.
- d. It seems that she is beginning to feel better.

8. ANNOUNCE, BELIEVE, DECLARE, FEEL, KNOW, RUMOUR, SAY, SUGGEST, DENY, ESTIMATE gibi eylemleri olan tümcelerin edilgen bir şeklärini kurmakta

- a. Doctors believe that smoking is harmful.
It is believed that smoking is harmful.
- b. People know that most roses have thorns.
It is known that most roses have thorns.
- c. What doctors can do these days is unbelievable.
It is unbelievable what doctors can do these days.
- d. Smoking, it is widely believed, causes cancer.
Smoking is widely believed to cause cancer.
- e. It is often pointed out how frequently we should have a check-up.
- f. It is denied by the government that unemployment is as bad as it used to be.
- g. It is estimated that health-life-style factors contribute to 54 percent of all deaths due to heart disease.

9. LOOK, SOUND, HAPPEN, FOLLOW eylemleriyle özel kullanımlar

- a. It looks as though a new rise in salaries this year is out.
- b. It does not sound as if you needed any encouragement. It sounds that everything is okay.
- c. It so happens that all the countries that the US invades have rich natural resources.
- d. From what is said, it follows that population explosion is the greatest danger of our age.

10. (HIGH) TIME yapısı da sadece Slot-filling It ile kullanılır.

- a. It is high time they banned hunting these birds.
- b. It is high time you stopped smoking.

11. İvedilik gösteren sıfatlarla

- a. It is important that you should leave immediately.
- b. It is mandatory that smoking be banned in public places.

EXERCISE 34

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Slot-filling IT kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

1. To quit smoking is difficult.
It is difficult to quit smoking.
2. For people in developing countries to depend on only one or two plants for their food is common.
3. For a couple to marry at a very young age is wrong.
4. For children to drink Coca-Cola every day is dangerous.
5. To keep quiet is not always a good idea.
6. Why he doesn't like his job is obvious.
7. Why you did this might be asked of you.
8. What he is doing to earn his living does not matter.
9. That inflation can cause immeasurable harm has been repeatedly stated.
10. For people to seek security is a natural thing.
11. Whether he has anything to say is not known.
12. That eating too much is the cause of many serious diseases has been demonstrated.
13. That the meeting started on time surprised everybody.
14. To be told that he is not wanted will offend anybody.
15. To lose a few pounds too quickly on a "crash" diet may be dangerous.
16. To speak of our present day as the Information Age is common.
17. To get a chocolate out of a box requires a considerable amount of unpacking.
18. That President Bush has been lying about Iraq for a long time is obvious.
19. That the students lacked the strength to continue was obvious.
19. To believe that there is life of any sort on the Moon is not possible.
20. That children learn to choose their TV programs instead of just watching whatever happens to be on is important.

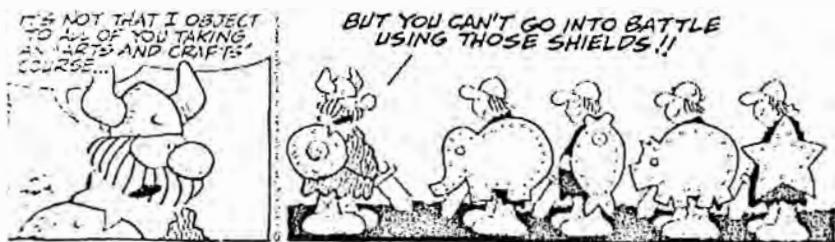
EXERCISE 35

Aşağıdaki Slot-filling IT ile yapılmış tümcelerin özgün şekillerini yazınız.

1. It was a pleasure meeting you.

Meeting you was a pleasure.

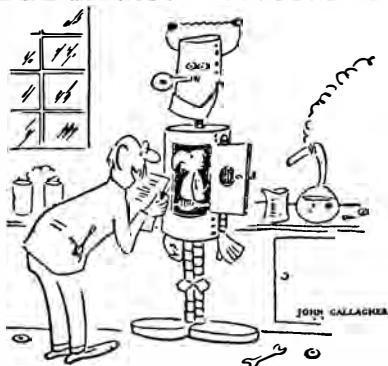
2. It is just like Ali to spend the whole weekend watching TV. (Bütün hasta sonunu televizyon seyrederek geçirmek tam Ali'ye göre.)
3. It is of great importance that we should export more and import less.
4. It is to the credit of the new president that he kept the business moving.
5. It is known all over the world that smoking kills millions of people.
6. It is not in line with your promise that you have left the work unfinished.
7. It shocked her to hear that her husband was arrested.
8. It would be nice to have a picnic in Yedigöller.
9. It is sad to reflect that the history of mankind has been a perpetual series of wars.
10. It is not known if his last book will be filmed.
11. When sailing in light winds, it pays to move about very gently.
12. It is not merely desirable but essential for a teacher to have a genuine capacity for sympathy.
13. It is fascinating to observe the development of a business.
14. When animals (including man) eat, it is normal for the mouth to water. This is called salivation.
15. It is generally accepted that nobody should be excluded from the wealth of the nation, either by the laws of nature or by those of society.
16. It is possible to reduce robot prices by 90 percent by using standard components.
17. It is possible to abuse alcohol for a short or contained period of time without developing alcoholism.
18. It is clear that a vast expansion of educational opportunity is required
19. It was astonishing that Ronald Reagan and Mikhail Gorbachev could get together in an atmosphere of mutual respect and cordiality.
20. It is evident that more research is needed into the recovery and re-use of various materials.



Chapter 13

KINDS OF SENTENCES

tümce türleri



Now repeat after me: 'Fellow scientists, we are gathered here today ... '

Tümcelerin sınıflandırılmasında iki temel ölçüt kullanılmaktadır.

- 1. Tümcenin işlevi
- 2. Tümcenin yapısı

Repeat after me tümcesinin işlevi buyruk bildirmektir. Bu nedenle, bu tümcenin bir *buyruk* (command) tümcesi olduğunu söyleyebiliriz.

Diğer taraftan, *Repeat after me* tümcesi tek bir eylem taşımaktadır. Bu nedenle de, yapısal açıdan *yalın* (simple) bir tümcedir.

İngilizce tümcelerin yukarıdaki iki ölçüte göre sınıflandırmasını sunmadan önce, bütün tümce türlerini örneklerle gösterelim.

1. *George Seldes is a premier journalist.*
2. *Is the entire press corrupt?*
3. *Stop corruption!*
4. *Can we trust the press?*
5. *No.*
6. *Why can't we trust the press?*
7. *Because it has become big business.*
8. *What makes the public opinion?*

9. *The main force is the press.*
10. *When it comes to news which will affect you, you cannot trust about 98 percent (or perhaps 99 1/2 percent) of the big newspaper and big magazine press of America.*
11. *Advertising means money from big business, and the big press cannot exist a day without advertising.*
12. *I still believe that the press is the greatest force in the world.*
13. *I have written several books on the press and I am publishing a weekly newsletter devoted largely to criticizing the big city newspapers.*
14. *How corrupted the entire press is!*
15. *What a big business the press has become!*

Örnek tümceler asagidaki alıntıdan derlenmiştir.

Is the Entire Press Corrupt?

By George Seldes

George Seldes is one of the premier journalists and press critics of the 20th Century. In his reporting on World War I, the Russian Revolution, the rise of Fascism and the Spanish Civil War, he always displayed a commitment to telling the whole truth, which often got him into trouble. From 1940 to 1950, he published *In Fact*, the first American magazine of media criticism, which inspired *I.F. Stone's Weekly*. A member of FAIR's advisory board, Seldes at 103 years of age is still raising hell. A collection of his writings, *The George Seldes Reader*, has just been published by Barricade Books (edited by Randolph T. Holhut). The following excerpt from that book originally appeared in Seldes' self-published 1942 book, *The Facts Are...*

Question: *What is the most powerful force in America today?*

Answer: Public opinion.

Question: *What makes public opinion?*

Answer: The main force is the press.

Question: *Can you trust the press?*

Answer: The baseball scores are always correct (except for a typographical error now and then). The stock market tables are correct (within the same limitation). But when it comes to news which will affect you, your daily life, your job, your relation to other peoples, your thinking on economic and social problems, and, more important today, your going to war and risking your life for a great ideal, then you cannot trust about 98 percent (or perhaps 99½ percent) of the big newspaper and big magazine press of America.

Question: *But why can't you trust the press?*

Answer: Because it has become big business. The big city press and the big magazines have become commercialized, or big business organizations, run with no other motive than profit for owner or stockholder (although hypocritically still maintaining the old American tradition of guiding and enlightening the people). The big press cannot exist a day without advertising. Advertising means money from big business.

I have written several books on the press and I am publishing a weekly newsletter devoted largely to criticizing the big city newspapers (the public opinion-making newspapers) and exposing their corruption, because I still believe that the press is the greatest force in the world and can be used for good or evil.

E. İŞLEVİNE GORE TÜMCE TÜRLERİ

STATEMENTS Düz Tümceler	The entire press is corrupt. We can't trust the press.
QUESTIONS Soru Tümceleri A. Yardımcı Eylemle B. Soru Sözcüğüyle	Is the entire press corrupt? Can we truss the press? Why can't we trust the press? Why is the entire press corrupt?
COMMANDS Buyruk tümceleri	Stop corruption of the press. Make the press trustable. Don't trust the press.
EXCLAMATIONS Ünlem Tümceleri	How corrupted the entire press is! What a corrupted business the press has become!

A. STATEMENTS (Declarative Sentences) / DÜZ TÜMCELER

Düz tümceler, olumlu ya da olumsuz yargı bildiren tümcelerdir.

A small leak will sink a great ship. –Proverb

Lack of money is the root of all evil. –G. Bernard Shaw

You can't say civilization isn't advancing; in every war they kill you in a new way. –Will Rogers

B. QUESTIONS (Interrogative Sentences) / SORULAR

Sorular, olumlu ya da olumsuz olabilir. Sorular, ya sadece bir yardımcı eylemle yapılır ya da bir soru sözcüğü de kullanılabilir.

Do you believe in UFOs?

Is it progress when a cannibal uses knife and fork? –S.J. Lec

What good can it do to an ass to be called a lion? – Proverb

What is a man if he is not a thief who openly charges as much as he can for the goods he sells? –Mahatma Gandhi



**C. COMMANDS (Imperative Sentences)/
BUYRUK TÜMCELERİ**

1. Buyruk tümceleri, olumlu ya da olumsuz olabilir.

Stop corruption.

Put your trust in God, and keep your powder dry.

Don't put all your eggs in one basket.

Be patient, for patience has its rewards.

Don't be afraid your life will end; be afraid that it will never begin. – Grace Hansen

2. Resmi ve edebi metinlerde, buyruk tümcelerin olumsuzu eylemden sonra NOT getirilerek yapılır.

Ask not what your country can do for you; ask what you can do for your country. – J. F. Kennedy

3. Buyruk tümcelerde, vurgulama gereğinde eylemin önünde DO kullanılır.

Do be careful of your thoughts, for they may become words at any moment. -Gassen

Do keep to the right.

4. Eylemlerden önce sıklık zarfları kullanılabilir.

Never put off until tomorrow what you can do today,

Don't ever drive when you are drunk.

Always be polite to elderly people.



Let's not ask that question again. People get furious.

5. Let's (haydi) yapısı da buyruk tümcelerin bir türü sayılabilir.

Let's remind ourselves that last year's fresh idea is today's cliché. –Austen Briggs

Let us never negotiate out of fear. But let us never fear to negotiate. –John Fitzgerald Kennedy

6. Buyruk tümceleri, yaygın olarak talimat, yasaklama ve tavsiye ifade etmekte kullanılır.

ADVICE TO CYCLISTS

- 1 *Don't carry two people on a bike.*
- 2 *Do give hand signals - especially when turning right.*
- 3 *Don't weave in and out of traffic.*
- 4 *Don't ride 'no hands'.*
- 5 *Don't wear loose flapping clothes.*
- 6 *Don't hang onto other cyclists or vehicles.*
- 7 *Do use cycle paths where provided.*
- 8 *Do tell someone where you're going.*
- 9 *Do maintain your bike regularly.*



"I give up. YOU change him!"

7. Vurgulama amacıyla buyruk tümcesinde gizli özne olan **YOU** da kullanılabilir.

Yandaki karikatürde bayan, evlilik danışmanına, "Ben vazgeçtim, kocamı sen değiştir," derken gizli özne **YOU** kullanılıyor. Gizli özne **YOU** olumsuz tümcelerde de kullanılır.

Don't you listen to him.

 *Don't you listen to him?* yapısının aslında olumsuz soru yapısı olduğunu anımsayınız.

EXERCISE 36

Bisiklet sürücüsünün uyması gereken kuralları **MUSTN'T** veya **SHOULD** kullanarak ifade ediniz. Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

1. *Don't carry two people on a bike.*
A cyclist mustn't carry two people on a bike.
2. *Do give hand signals - especially when turning right.*
A cyclist should give hand signals - especially when turning right.

8. **Yemek tariflerinde de en yaygın olarak kullanılan tümce türü buyruk tümceleridir.**

CREAM OF VEGETABLE SOUP

(Number served 4)

Assemble these utensils:

2 saucepans
knife
cutting board
measuring cups
measuring spoons
double boiler
wooden spoon
soup ladle

Assemble these supplies:

2 tablespoons butter or margarine
2 tablespoons of minced onion
(optional)
3 tablespoons of flour
2½ cups of milk, hot
1½ cups of vegetable pulp and juice
½ teaspoon of salt

Steps in preparation:

1. Cook raw chopped vegetables until tender; save the juice. Use about 12 cups vegetables to 1/3 cup of water and cook until tender. Use canned vegetables without cooking. Follow directions on package for frozen vegetables.
2. Melt butter in top of double boiler; do not brown. Add minced onion and simmer, stir in flour and blend. Gradually add the hot milk, stirring constantly; continue to cook until smooth.
3. Add the vegetable pulp and juice slowly to the thickened sauce. Stir to blend and add salt.
4. Cover and allow to stand over hot water for 10 minutes.
5. Ladle into preheated bowls. Serve with crackers.

EXERCISE 37

Yukarıdaki yemek tarifinde kullanılan eylemleri saptayınız.



9. Buyruk tümceleri, ***PLEASE*** sözcüğü ile birlikte rica gösterirler. **CAN** ve **WILL** ile "daha kibar rica" yapısı kurulur.

Please tell us the way to the nearest bus-stop.

Can /Will you (please) tell us the way to the nearest bus-stop.

Would	you	tell us the way to the bus-stop?
Could		
I wonder if you	would	tell us the way to the bus-stop.
Would you mind	telling us the way to the park?	
Would you be so kind	as to tell us the way to the park?	

D. EXCLAMATIONS (Exclamatory Sentences) ÜNLEM TÜMCELERİ

1. Ünlem tümceleri, şaşkınlık, büyük sevinç, üzüntü gibi güçlü duyguları ifade eden tümcelerdir. WHAT ve HOW ile yapılan iki türü vardır.

WHAT + NP
HOW + ADJECTIVE / ADVERB

How big I am!

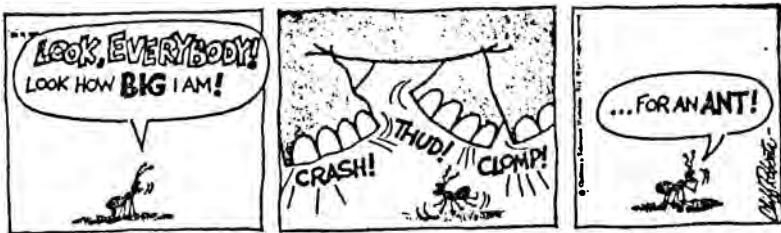
What a big ant I am!

A fly sat upon the axle-tree of the chariot-wheel and said, "What a dust I raise!" – Aesop

What an expensive house this is!

How gracefully she walks!

How despicable and ignoble war is! – A. Einstein



2. Ünlem tümceleri kısalabilir:

What a town! (What a terrible town this is!)

What a fool! (What a great fool President Bush is!)

How awful! (How awful this story is!)

How animal-like British hooligans are!

3. Olumsuz soru şekilleri de kimi zaman ünlem tümcesi görevi üstlenebilir:

Isn't she clever!

Doesn't he speak well!

Aren't I lucky!

EXERCISE 38

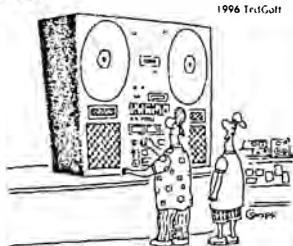
Aşağıdaki tümceleri ünlem tümcelerine çeviriniz.

1. This is a very fast computer.
2. This dog has got a nice colour.
3. This computer will be a great help to our business.
4. It works very fast.
5. There are a lot of things we can do without. –Socrates
6. Computers will make the office more modern and efficient.
7. The USA government is very greedy.
8. A diet consisting of hamburgers and french fries is extremely dangerous.

EXERCISE 39

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

1. The press is a corrupt medium.
How corrupt the press is!
What a corrupt medium the press is!
2. They live in a poverty-stricken slum area.
What a poverty-stricken area they live in!
How poverty-stricken the slum area is!
3. Agatha Christie writes superbly.
4. The family has a large income.
5. He is driving recklessly.
6. You have said a terrible thing.
7. She tells terrible lies.
8. Cervantes wrote a great novel.
9. Atatürk accomplished a great success.
10. The British are a cunning people.



"Wow! What a great birthday
present this will make for Mom!"

İFADELƏRƏ GÖRE TÜMCƏ TİRLƏRİ

Aşağıdakı tabloda tümcelerin yapılarına göre olduğu belirtlen geleneksel sınıflandırımı sunuyoruz. Sınıflandırmanın temel ögesi tümcede bulunan TENSE ve KİŞİ eki almış eylemlerdir.

SIMPLE SENTENCES Yalın Tümceler	The entire press is corrupt. The press can be used for good or evil. Confidence is a plant of slow growth. Everybody wants peace.
COMPOUND SENTENCES Sıralı Tümceler	I have written several books on the press, and I am publishing a weekly newsletter. History reports itself; historians repeat each other.— <i>Guedalla</i>
COMPLEX SENTENCES Birleşik Tümceler	Although the press can be used for good, today it is mainly used for evil.
COMPOUND-COMPLEX SENTENCES Karmaşık Tümceler	Some people have great faith in the press, but I still think that it is corrupt.

A. YALIN TÜMCELER (SIMPLE SENTENCES)

Geleneksel sınıflandırmaya göre yalın tümcelerde TENSE ve KİŞİ gösteren tek bir eylem olmalıdır. Aşağıdaki tümceler TENSE ve KİŞİ gösteren birer eyleme sahiptir: **IS** ve **WANTS**.

NP ¹	BE	NP ¹
<i>Confidence</i>	<i>is</i>	<i>a slow-growing plant</i>
<i>Confidence</i>	<i>is</i>	<i>a plant of slow growth.</i>

NP ¹	TrV	NP ²
<i>Everybody</i>	<i>wants</i>	<i>peace</i>

Bir tümcede, eylemine uygun olarak aşağıdaki zarf öğeleri de yer alabilir.

MANNER=tarz	quickly, greedily, fast, foolishly, hard
INSTRUMENT=araç	with the knife, by caution
PLACE=yer	at home, in the restaurant
TIME=zaman	yesterday, two days ago

KALIP 6	TARZ	ARAÇ	YER	ZAMAN
<i>I ATE three toasts</i>	<i>greedily</i>		<i>at home</i>	<i>an hour ago.</i>

Bir tümcede zaman gösterebilen tek eylem (ATE) bulunmaktadır, o halde bu tümce de **yalın** (simple) bir tümcedir.

B. SIRALI TÜMCELER (COMPOUND SENTENCES)

İki ya da daha fazla yalın tümce, **and**, **but**, **or**, **so**, **nor**, **for**, **yet** bağlaçlarıyla ya da **however**, **therefore**, **nevertheless**, **consequently**, gibi tümce bağlaçlarıyla bağlanırsa, sıralı tümceler oluşur.

Tümce 1 ,	—	tümce 2 .
Harry tried sky-diving,	and	he loved it.
She is quite lazy,	but	she manages to get good grades.
Do the job carefully,	or	don't do it at all.
He is a habitual liar,	so	I don't trust him.
Be patient,	for	patience has its rewards.
He can't use a computer,	nor	can he operate a fax machine.
She's been saving for years,	yet	she can't afford to buy a car.

Tümce 1 ;	— ,	tümce 2 .
Harry is clever;	moreover,	he is hardworking.
TV can be used for good;	however,	it is generally used for evil.
Watch your diet;	otherwise,	you might have a heart attack.
He is a terrible liar;	therefore,	nobody can trust him.

C. BİRLEŞİK TÜMCELER (COMPLEX SENTENCES)

Geleneksel tümce sınıflandırmamasına göre

Confidence IS a plant of slow growth.

Confidence IS a plant.

This plant GROWS slowly.

tümceleri SIMPLE'dır çünkü tümcelerde TENSE ve KİŞİ gösteren tek bir eylem bulunmaktadır: **IS** ve **GROWS**.

Diğer taraftan geleneksel tümce sınıflandırmamasına göre

Confidence IS a plant which GROWS slowly.

tümcesi "simple" değildir çünkü tümcede TENSE ve KİŞİ eki taşıyan iki eylem vardır: **IS** ve **GROWS**. **Grows** eylemi *which GROWS slowly* sıfat içtümceciğinin (*adjective clause/relative clause*) eylemidir. Bu nedenle geleneksel sınıflandırmaya göre *Confidence IS a plant which GROWS slowly* tümcesi, *complex* bir tümcedir.

Şimdi geleneksel açıdan *Confidence IS a plant which GROWS slowly* tümcesi nasıl görülmeye bakalım:

<i>Confidence IS a plant</i>	<i>which GROWS slowly</i>
<i>Main Clause</i>	<i>Subordinating Clause</i>
Temel Tümcecik	Yardımcı Tümcecik

Ö halde COMPLEX tümcelerin geleneksel kuralını şöyle yazabiliriz:

Main Clause + Subordinating Clause

Bu kuralı sıralı tümcelerle karşılaştıralım:

Main Clause 1 + CONJUNCTION + Main Clause 2

Sıralı tümcelerde tümcelerin kendi bağımsızlıklarını bozulmadan, aralarına getirilen bir bağlaçla, birleştirilmeleri söz konusudur. Oysa birleşik tümcelerde,

bir tümce, diğer bir tümcenin ögesi olmakta ve kendi bağımsızlığını yitirmektedir.

COMPLEX SENTENCES üç tür "subordinating clause" bulundurabilir.

- | |
|-----------------------------|
| 1. <i>Noun Clauses</i> |
| 2. <i>Adjective Clauses</i> |
| 3. <i>Adverb Clauses</i> |

I. NOUN CLAUSES

NP ¹	Tr V	NP ²	
We	cannot trust	the press.	1
Mr. Seldes	says	that we can't trust the press.	2

Göründüğü gibi, Tümce 1, Tümce 2'nin bir ögesi (NP) haline getirilmiştir. Tümce 2 birelşik bir tümce olmuştur.

II. ADJECTIVE CLAUSES

NP ¹	Tr V	NP ²	
We	should protect	confidence.	
We	should protect	confidence which grows slowly.	

Göründüğü gibi *IT GROWS SLOWLY* tümcesi, *CONFIDENCE* adını niteleyen bir tümcecik (clause) haline getirilip *WE SHOULD PROTECT CONFIDENCE* tümcesi içine yerleştirilmiştir.

Adjective clause yapımında kullanılan bağlaçlar şunlardır: **who, whom, whose, which, that, when, why, where**.

III. ADVERB CLAUSES

1. *Confidence is a plant of slow growth.*
2. *We should handle it with care.*

Bu iki tümceyi SO ile bireştirelim. Elde edeceğimiz tümce SIRALI bir tümce olacaktır.

Confidence is a plant of slow growth,	so	we should handle it with care.
---------------------------------------	----	--------------------------------

Şimdi şu birleştirme şeklärine bakalım:

We should handle confidence with care	because	it is a plant of slow growth.
---------------------------------------	---------	-------------------------------

Bu tümcede asıl önemli olan tümcecik *We should handle confidence with care* tümcesidir. BECAUSE ile başlayan tümcecik, sadece bu eylemin nedenini işaret

etmektedir, yani bir adverbial clause'dur. Tümçenin tamamı da birleşik bir tümcedir.

Adverbial Clause yapımında kullanılan bağlaçların en yaygınları şunlardır

after	because	if	so that	whenever
although	before	in order that	though	whereas
as	even if	now that	unless	while
as if	even though	since	when	

D. KARMAŞIK TÜMCELER (COMPOUND-COMPLEX SENTENCES)

1	The entire press is corrupt.
2	George Seldes says that the entire press is corrupt.
3	George Seldes is a prominent journalist.
4	He doesn't trust the press.

Şimdi Tümce 3 ve Tümce 4'ü birleştirelim:

George Seldes is a prominent journalist, but he doesn't trust the press.

Birleştirilen bu iki tümce de sadece tek TENSE ve KİŞİ gösteren eylem tespitleri için yalnız tümcelerdir; onları BUT bağlacıyla birleştirerek SIRALI bir tümce yapmış olduk.

Şimdi Tümce 2 ve Tümce 3'ü birleştirelim:

Tümce 1		Tümce 2
George Seldes is a prominent journalist,	and	he says that the entire press is corrupt.

Tümce 2, tense gösteren iki eylem taşımaktadır: *SAYS* ve *IS*. Bu tümçenin noun clause taşıyan birleşik bir tümce olduğunu görüyoruz. Tümce 1 ise yalnız bir tümcedir. O halde *George Seldes is a prominent journalist, and he says that the entire press is corrupt* tümcesi YALIN TÜMCE + BİRLEŞİK TÜMCE yapısındadır. Bu tür tümcelere KARMAŞIK TÜMCE adı verilmektedir.

Şu tümcelere bakalım:

Complex + Birleşik)	<i>George Seldes, who is a prominent journalist, says that he does not trust the press.</i>
Complex + Birleşik)	<i>George Seldes, who is a prominent journalist, does not trust the press because it is corrupt.</i>

**Compound-
Complex
(Karmaşık)**

George Seldes, who is a prominent journalist, says that the entire press is corrupt, and he says that he does not trust it.

Karmaşık tümceler en az iki MAIN CLAUSE'den ve en az bir subordinating clause'dan oluşmaktadır.

GÖRÜNÜŞE ALDANMAK ÜSTÜNE

Yukarıda geleneksel dilbilgisi yaklaşımıyla tümcelerin yapısal bir sınıflandırmasını sunduk. Bu sınıflandırma dil öğrencileri için oldukça yararlı bir sınıflandırma olmakla birlikte önemli bir dil gerçeğinin gözden kaçmasına neden olabilir. Bu sınıflandırmaya göre

Confidence IS a plant of slow growth.

yalın bir tümce olarak görülrürken

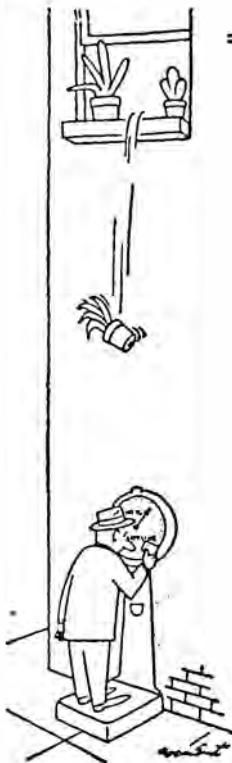
Confidence IS a plant which GROWS slowly

birleşik bir tümce olarak görülmekte ve iki tümce arasındaki ilişkinin niteliği vurgulanamamaktadır.

Bu sakıncayı gidermek üzere elinizdeki kitapta ayrıntılı bir REDUCTION bölümü (Chapter 83) yer almaktadır.



EXERCISE 40



"Watch out!"

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin yapısal açıdan türlerini belirleyiniz. Tümcelerin yanına (**Y**)alın/*Simple*, (**B**)ıraklı/*Complex*, (**S**)ıralı/*Compound* veya (**K**)armaşık/*Compound-complex* yazınız.

1. New vitamins are being discovered and studied currently.
 2. At the present time we know that there are six vitamins essential to human nutrition.
 3. With the exception of one (vitamin D), we get our supply of them from food sources.
 4. Each vitamin is a definite chemical substance with special characteristics and functions.
 5. One vitamin cannot replace another, but the function of one vitamin may overlap the functions of another.
 6. Good health depends on the presence in the body of all essential vitamins.
 7. The efficiency with which a vitamin fulfills its function depends on the interrelationship of all the vitamins.
 8. Vitamins have no caloric value and cannot be used by the body for energy.
 9. They help the body to utilize the calories eaten.
 10. Nature has chosen to distribute vitamins in food in a seemingly haphazard manner.
 11. A few foods, such as white sugar and cooking oils, contain no vitamins.
 12. On the other hand, milk possesses considerable amounts of a number of essential vitamins.
 13. Only by eating a wide variety of foods can you be certain of getting sufficient amounts of all the important vitamins.
 14. Without the right amount of vitamins, one can never be healthy.
 15. Science and art make life satisfying.
 16. Relying on drugs to solve our problems is as common as social drinking.
 17. An allergy is an adverse reaction to a foreign substance, called an allergen.
 18. The effort to achieve a certain weight through diet, exercise, or both is known as weight control.
 19. Knowledge is a double-edged tool, and it can be used for good or evil.
 20. Mankind must put an end to war, or war will put an end to mankind.
- John F. Kennedy*

Chapter 14

AGREEMENT • UYUM

"We are just another humble typical software company," Gates said.



Bir tümcenin öznesi ile, tümcenin eylemi değişik dillerde farklı uyumlar gösterebilir. Örneğin, Türkçe'de özne ile eylem, kişi açısından uyumlu olmalıdır.

Ben İngilizce biliyorum.

Biz İngilizce biliyoruz.

Sen İngilizce biliyorsun.

Siz İngilizce biliyorsunuz.

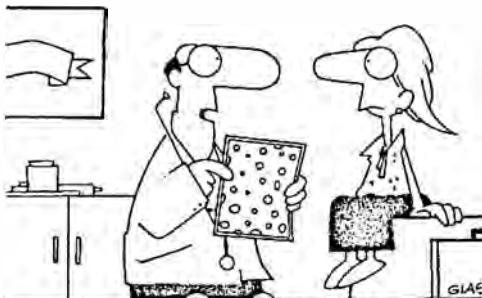
İngilizce'de özne-eylem uyumu temelde 3. tekil kişi ve diğerleri ayrimına dayanmaktadır. Buna ek olarak sadece geniş zamanda TO BE eylemi, birinci tekil kişi için farklı bir biçim göstermektedir.

I	am was have been	ready.
We You They	are were have been	
He She It	is was has been	

I		spring.
We You They	like	
He She It	likes	

Subject-Verb Agreement

ÖZNENİN EYLEMLE UYUŞMASI



“The red blobs are your red blood cells. The white blobs are your white blood cells. The brown blobs are coffee. We need to talk.”

İngilizce'de özne-eylem uyumu için söylenebilecek ilk kural şudur: *tekil özneler tekil eylemler, çoğul özneler çoğul eylemlerle kullanılır*. Aşağıdaki örneklerde, *everything, smoking, the early bird* özneleri tekil, *looks, the brown blobs, rolling stones* özneleri çoğuldur.

Everything	is	possible.
Looks	aren't	everything.
The brown blobs	are	coffee.
Smoking	kills	millions of people.
Rolling stones	gather	no moss.
The early bird	catches	the worm.

Özne-eylem uyumunda ikinci temel kural da şudur: Eylem, öznedeki temel adla uyum gösterir.

A long **list** of chores, tasks, and duties often **annoys** me.

Şimdi özne-eylem uyumu için genel ve özel durumları gösterelim.

1. Bir tek varlığı işaret eden sözcükler tekil, birden fazla kişi ya da şeyi gösteren sözcükler çoğuldur.

A computer is a marvelous thing.

People everywhere want peace and comfort.



Kitap, dergi, oyun ve şirket adları çoğul eki de taşısalar tek bir varlık olduklarından tekildirler.

Great Expectations was written by Charles Dickens.

Sports Illustrated is published weekly.

Dominoes is a very old game.

- 2. İnsanoğlu anlamında kullanılan MAN, anlamı çoğul olmasına rağmen, biçimi gereği tekil eylem gerektirir.**

Man is a thinking animal.

Man is natural.

- 3. TO BE eyleminin Öznesi olan NP ile complement durumundaki NP sayısından farklısa eylem özne ile uyum gösterir.**

The brown **blobs** **are** coffee.

His main **interest** **is** computers.

The real attraction in the zoo is the lions.

The lions are the real attraction in the zoo.

The nineteenth and early twentieth centuries were the years of mass immigration.

The Hittites were a people who lived in central Anatolia.

Toy guns are the country's leading export.

The country's leading export is toy guns.

- 4. Bir ad öbeği AND bağlacı ile bağlanmış iki ya da daha fazla ad öbeğinden oluşuyorsa çoğuldur.**

A fool and his money are soon parted. —*English Proverb*

Guided missiles and the atom bomb are among the most fearful instruments of warfare.



BOTH ... AND ile birleştirilmiş ad öbekleri çoğuldur. BOTH ve BOTH OF nitelendiren adlar niteler.

Both wine and beer are cheap in Turkey.

Both of her sons are software developers.

- 5. Kimi zaman AND bağlacı ile birleşen öğeler bir tek öge olarak değerlendirilir. Bu durumda bu ad öbekleri tekil olarak algılanır.**

Apple pie and ice cream is a delicious dessert.

Ham and eggs is a good breakfast.

Bread and butter is his favorite food.

Her son and heir is a man aged nearly sixty. (Oğlu ve mirasçısı aynı adam.)

EXERCISE 41

Doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. Ankara and Istanbul (*is*) (*are*) the two most important cities in Turkey.
2. Both mathematics and linguistics (*is*) (*are*) interesting.
3. Macaroni and cheese (*is*) (*are*) a quick and tasty dinner.
4. *Techniques of Fiction* (*contain*) (*contains*) valuable information for students.
5. *Robert Kennedy and His Times* (*is*) (*are*) a biography of this famous political personality.
6. A silver ring and chain (*was*) (*were*) Henry's birthday present.
7. My favorite vacation spot (*is*) (*are*) the Niagara Falls..
8. Tulips (*was*) (*were*) a huge craze in seventeenth-century Holland.
9. Both the scouts and the scoutmaster (*has*) (*have*) forgotten how to light a fire without matches.
10. Lack of sanitation in restaurants (*is*) (*are*) a major cause of disease in some areas of the country.
11. The computational speed of computers (*has*) (*have*) doubled in the last decade.
12. Huge, ferocious rats (*is*) (*are*) one problem you may have in this house.
13. Her best feature (*was*) (*were*) her long, elegant hands.
14. World crises (*was*) (*were*) the principal topic of conversation.
15. Money and power (*remain*) (*remains*) the industrialist's goal.
16. The best part of their performance (*was*) (*were*) the dances.
17. Julia and her twin sister naturally (*look*) (*looks*) a lot alike.
18. Some famous sports stars (*has*) (*have*) made television commercials.
19. Both of the candidates (*has*) (*have*) promised to reduce taxes.
20. Greed and cruelty (*was*) (*were*) Christopher Columbus's two major sins.

EXERCISE 42

Doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. Accurate pronunciation (*doesn't*) (*don't*) come easily to anybody.
2. *The New York Times* (*are*) (*is*) read in many foreign countries.
3. Mice (*is*) (*are*) a great enemy of every household.
4. Patience and fortitude (*be fit*) (*befits*) every man.
5. Gasoline and lubricating oils (*is*) (*are*) very expensive.
6. Bread and butter (*make*) (*makes*) a good bedtime snack.

7. Sports (*occupies*) (*occupy*) the full time of the so-called amateurs.
8. Of all creatures on earth, human beings alone (*has*) (*have*) a fully developed language.
9. *The Naked and the Dead* (*were*) (*was*) one of the most popular novels coming out of World War II.
10. Both his glasses and his hearing aid (*were*) (*was*) broken.
11. Mineral waters (*is*) (*are*) not a panacea for stomach problems.
12. A horse and buggy (*seems*) (*seem*) an unusual method of travel today.
13. A roll and coffee (*is*) (*are*) his usual breakfast.
14. The opossum and the kangaroo (*is*) (*are*) members of the same family of mammals.
15. Poverty, ignorance and disease (*is*) (*are*) what the white man has given to American Indians so far.
16. Slavery and discrimination (*is*) (*are*) as American as apple pie.
17. The Middle Ages (*was*) (*were*) a period of religious oppression.
18. Today many farmers and county agents (*show*) (*shows*) great interest in increased use of commercial fertilizer.
19. Rattlesnakes, copperheads, coral snakes, and cottonmouths (*is*) (*are*) four kinds of poisonous snakes found in the United States.
20. The newspaper (*is*) (*are*) full of stories about the USA government indirectly supporting terrorism.

-
- 6. Anlamları aşağı yukarı AND gibi olmakla birlikte *together with*, *as well as*, *in addition to*, *along with* ve *accompanied by* öbekleri ve like kullanıldıkları ad öbeklerini çoğul yapmazlar.**
-

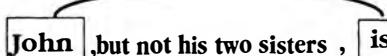
Fast food	together with as well as in addition to accompanied by along with	smoking is an invitation to death.
-----------	--	---

Her father, as well as her mother, was against her marrying Joe.
 The heartbeat, as well as other factors, causes blood to flow throughout
 the body.

A porpoise, like sharks and whales, swims near the surface.
 The sky, as well as the wind and the sea, looks promising.



BUT NOT ile özneye eklenen öbekler özneyi çoğul yapmaz.

 John ,but not his two sisters , is a good chess player.

7. **-ONE , -BODY ve -THING** parçaları taşıyan belirsiz zamirlerle, *either* ve *neither* tekil olarak algılanır.

everyone	someone	anyone	no one	either
everybody	somebody	anybody	nobody	neither
everything	something	anything	nothing	

Everybody living in Beş Tepeler goes to Atatürk Lisesi.

Everybody in those classes *wants* to learn a foreign language.

Anybody with a mobile telephone *feels* rather important.

Anything free *is* worth what you pay for it.

I have got two computers, but neither *is* working properly.

There are two tragedies in life. One *is* not to get your heart's desire. The other is to get it. —George Bernard Shaw

8. **Several, both, a few, few, many** zamirleri çoğuldur.

Both (of the eggs) *were* bad.

Several in the group *doubt* the existence of intelligent life on other planets.

Many *find* television a necessary evil.



MANY A + Singular Noun, anlam açısından çoğul olmakla birlikte tekil eylemle kullanılır.

Many a child *has* dreamed of space travel.

Many a person in these circumstances *has* hoped for a lucky break.

9. Miktar gösteren (*all of ...*, *some of ...*, *most of ...*, *half of ...*, *two-thirds of ...*, *ninety percent of ...*) gibi yapılarla kullanılan adların kendileri eylem ile uyum içindedir.

All of	the banana	was	rotten.
	the bananas	were	

Only half of our land *is* cultivated.

Half the truth *is* often a great lie.

Even half an hour of manual work *tires* her.

Half of the books *have been* sold.

None of the passengers in the car *was/were* injured in the accident.

Most of the country *was* hit by the earthquake.

Most of the countries in Africa *suffer* from hunger.

Some of the money *was* found.

In 1970, 12.4 percent of all immigrants to the United States *were* highly trained professionals.

All of the apple *looks* rotten.

Has any of this evidence been presented?

Have any of my friends called me?

None of the evidence points to his guilt.

None of our people were involved in the accident.

*Some of the rare books in Konya Museum *have been* stolen.*

*All of her money *has been* spent on foolish things.*

*Two-thirds of our computers *are* now useless.*

*One-third of the black population in Congo *has been killed* by the Belgian army.*

EXERCISE 43

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. The principal, as well as the ministry and the parents, (*was*) (*were*) enthusiastic about the new project.
2. Some of the crops (*has*) (*have*) been ruined by frost.
3. Neither of the stories (*was*) (*were*) good enough to publish.
4. Few of the boxers (*has*) (*have*) decided to quit boxing.
5. Tony, along with Fred and Lucy, (*is*) (*are*) trying to be a computer programmer.
6. Algeria, as well as Tunisia and Libya, (*has*) (*have*) sent students to the United States.
7. Several of our best agents (*has*) (*have*) retired.
8. Half of the furniture (*is*) (*are*) still in the truck.
9. Every one of the offices (*has*) (*have*) been equipped with computers.
10. Bertrand Russell, together with several famous figures, (*has*) (*have*) advocated stronger gun control legislation.
11. Three-fourths of the load (*was*) (*were*) already damaged.
12. All of the boys (*feign*) (*feigns*) sickness on Monday mornings.
13. All the wine (*has*) (*have*) gone bad.
14. The mayor, together with several politicians, (*is*) (*are*) strongly opposed to turning the children's park into a parking lot.
15. Neither of the plans (*seem*) (*seems*) promising.
16. A pocket knife, along with a box of canned food, (*was*) (*were*) sent to the campers.
17. Neither of the candidates (*has*) (*have*) promised to reduce taxes.
18. Either of the solutions (*has*) (*have*) some drawbacks.
19. The candidate, along with his advisers, (*was*) (*were*) unwilling to comment on inflation.
20. At least two-thirds of the book (*is*) (*are*) about the crimes committed by the CIA.

EXERCISE 44

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. Of all the natural wonders of the world, few (*is*) (*are*) as spectacular as Niagara Falls.

2. All of our money (*has*) (*have*) been used up.
3. No one in this group of contenders (*stand*) (*stands*) a chance of beating the current speed record.
4. Many of the critics of America (*claim*) (*claims*) that Americans are too selfish to do anything for the good of the world.
5. Each of us (*knows*) (*know*) that many traffic accidents are caused by carelessness.
6. Exploration of the seas, in addition to space travel, (*is*) (*are*) opening up new and fascinating scientific possibilities.
7. Many a nation that has tried to destroy the Turkish Republic (*has*) (*have*) tasted the sour taste of defeat.
8. The peach tree, as well the two apple trees, (*is*) (*are*) badly in need of pruning.
9. Two-thirds of the estate (*was*) (*were*) left to the children.
10. Anyone on the tennis courts today (*is*) (*are*) liable to get a sunburn.
11. Everybody who behaves as they do (*is*) (*are*) asking for trouble.
12. The doctor claims that neither of the children (*has*) (*have*) any congenital deformity.
13. All the food (*was*) (*were*) contaminated by flood water.
14. Many a TV owner (*find*) (*finds*) that a small antenna receives local stations better than a large one.
15. Someone among the local distributors (*supplies*) (*supply*) us with tapes.
16. Everyone (*want*) (*wants*) to live in peace, and nobody (*like*) (*likes*) wars.
17. Several in the group (*doubts*) (*doubt*) the existence of intelligent life on other planets.
18. Half of her friends (*are*) (*is*) unable to come to the wedding.
19. A lot of the rubber grown here (*is*) (*are*) exported to Japan, American or Europe.
20. Turkey, together with six other countries, (*is*) (*are*) attending the conference.
21. All the other teachers, along with Mr. Taylor, (*blame*) (*blames*) the principal for the failure of the program.
22. Nowadays peace and quiet (*is*) (*are*) what we all need.

-
10. ***NONE OF + PLURAL NOUN*** dikkatli dil kullanımında tekil olarak kullanılır. Günümüzde bu yapıyla çoğul olarak kullanma eğilimi güçlenmektedir.

None of the people in the theater audience *was/were* pleased with the film.

None of the sounds in Turkish *is/are* quite like the sounds of some of the English vowels.

11. ***EVERY* ve *EACH*** sözcükleriyle nitelenen adlar tekil olarak kabul edilir. *EACH* zamir olarak kullanıldığında da tekildir.
-

Every one			
Each	of the computers	was	infected with the new virus.

Each of the pictures was in a silver frame.

Every one of the new buildings was damaged in the earthquake.

Every man, woman, and child was asked to contribute.

Each of us has his own business to mind.

Each of the students is guilty of bad conduct.

Each morning puts a man on trial, and each evening passes judgement.

—Roy L. Smith

12 Bir topluluğu gösteren *topluluk adları* hem tekil hem de çoğul olarak kullanılabilir.

Konuşmacı topluluğu oluşturan bireyleri teker teker düşünüyorsa ad çoğul olarak alınır. Topluluk bir bütün olarak düşünülyorsa ad tekil olarak kullanılır.

army	crowd	herd	series
audience	faculty	jury	staff
class	family	mob	team
committee	flock	police	troop
couple	government	public	
crew	group	regiment	

The crowd is quiet.

The team plays like a well-oiled machine.

The crowd were fighting for their lives.

The crowd was an orderly one. [The speaker is thinking of the crowd as a single thing, a unit.]

The team were talking over some new plays.

The team was ranked first in the nation.

The family have agreed among themselves to share one car.

The family is the basic unit of our society.

Our football team practices every day.

The herd of deer is in the meadow.

The herd of deer disperse at the slightest noise.

13. SHEEP, DEER gibi tekil ve çoğul şekilleri aynı olan adlar özne oldukları, tümcenin eylemi, adın tekil ya da çoğul oluşuna göre davranışır.

A *deer* is a graceful animal.

Deer are highly valued in some countries.

Kimi Latince ve Yunanca sözcüklerin tekil ve çoğul şekilleri söyledir:

<i>alga</i>	<i>algae</i>	<i>datum</i>	<i>data</i>
<i>alumnus</i>	<i>alumni</i>	<i>index</i>	<i>indices</i>
<i>appendix</i>	<i>appendices</i>	<i>medium</i>	<i>media</i>
<i>basis</i>	<i>bases</i>	<i>phenomenon</i>	<i>phenomena</i>
<i>crisis</i>	<i>crises</i>	<i>radius</i>	<i>radii</i>
<i>criterion</i>	<i>criteria</i>	<i>vita</i>	<i>vitae</i>

The *algae* in the pool **are** a source of attraction for the biology department.

The **radius** of the circle **is** four inches.

14. -ICS eki ile yapılmış çalışma alanları ve bilim adları tekildirler: *mathematics, linguistics, statistics, politics, economics, vb.*

Physics is an exact science.

Mathematics is a must for all computer students.

Some people believe that *statistics* is a way of lying.

World *economics* bears directly on world peace.

Linguistics is the study of language.

EXERCISE 45

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçenekü bulunuz.

1. Politics usually (*attract*) (*attracts*) ambitious individuals.
2. An army, we are told, (*march*) (*marches*) on its stomach.
3. Statistics (*is*) (*are*) a clever way of telling lies.
4. The jury (*was*) (*were*) hopelessly divided on this case.
5. The young couple (*has*) (*have*) saved enough money for their summer holiday.
6. Our family (*is*) (*are*) heading for the mountains tomorrow.
7. When a young deer (*stand*) (*stands*) motionless, its coloring will hide it well.
8. Agricultural economics (*has*) (*have*) been a popular subject.
9. Many citizens believe that politics (*is*) (*are*) corrupt.
10. Athletics, according to some experts, (*is*) (*are*) not the same as athleticism.
11. The team (*break*) (*breaks*) up and (*go*, *goes*) their separate ways after the game.
12. Bacteria (*cause*) (*causes*) several of our common and important diseases.
13. Economics (*is*) (*are*) a complex but fascinating subject.
14. Each of the specialists (*has*) (*have*) diagnosed a different disease.
15. Every boy, girl, man and woman (*wants*) (*want*) good health.
16. Every friend of hers (*consider*) (*considers*) her a genius.
17. Every player on the team (*is*) (*are*) training diligently.
18. The new government (*has*) (*have*) promised workers higher wages.

19. Genetics (*is*) (*are*) one of the newest sciences which (*has*) (*have*) led to many ethical controversies.
 20. The town band (*practice*) (*practices*) each Saturday morning.
 21. Where (*are*) (*is*) the athletics meeting held ?
 22. Here (*are*) (*is*) the statistics she will use to support her report.
-
-

EXERCISE 46

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. A herd of cattle (*was*) (*were*) grazing on the hill.
2. Mathematics (*is*) (*are*) a difficult subject for some students, and so (*is/are*) physics.
3. Every father (*expects*) (*expects*) his son to do things he himself didn't do.
4. The Committee (*have*) (*has*) given its final decision, so we must abide by.
5. Along with the viruses, bacteria (*is*) (*are*) are classified as the lowest forms of plant life.
6. The appendices (*is*) (*are*) usually found at the back of a book.
7. A jury (*is*) (*are*) a group of twelve people of average ignorance. — *Spencer*
8. The criteria for grading the compositions (*is*) (*are*) clearly stated.
9. Politics (*is*) (*are*) the art of obtaining money from the rich and votes from the poor.
10. Every one of the rivers in the area (*has*) (*have*) dried up.
11. Each of the other witnesses (*has*) (*have*) said the same thing.
12. All sheep (*is*) (*are*) dipped in the spring to kill the parasites.
13. Many a college student (*wish*) (*wishes*) to return to the easy days of high school.
14. These bacteria (*is*) (*are*) being studied by university scientists.
15. Every generation (*laugh*) (*laughs*) at the old fashions.
16. Many a man never (*fail*) (*fails*) because he never tries. — *N. MacEwan*
17. Soil-dwelling bacteria (*break*) (*breaks*) down dead organic matter into molecules
18. The new government (*has*) (*have*) already brought about significant improvements in the lives of ordinary people.
19. A happy family (*is*) (*are*) but an earlier heaven. — *John Bowring*
20. Supernatural phenomena (*is*) (*are*) of great interest to many people.
21. The bacterium he is talking about (*live*) (*lives*) in dead plants.
22. Politics (*is*) (*are*) war without bloodshed; war (*is*) (*are*) politics with blood. — *Mao Tse-Tung*

Teacher: Ellen, give me a sentence starting with "I".

Student: I is...

Teacher: No, Ellen. Always say "I am."

Student: All right. I am the ninth letter of the alphabet.

-
15. DATA hem anlam hem yapı açısından çoğul olmasına karşın tekil eylemle de kullanılabilir.

The data they have collected *has / have* no relevance to our project.

-
16. Zaman, para, ağırlık ve mesafe ifadeleri bir bütün olarak gördüklerinde tekil eylem alırlar.

Three years in a strange land *seems* like a long time.

Ten dollars *is* not enough.

Three fourths of the money *has been* recovered.

Two hundred kilometers *is* a long drive in the desert.

Seven years *is* a harsh sentence for a minor offense.

For a poor black working in diamond mines, *thirty years* is considered a long life span.

-
17. *Either ... or, neither ... nor, not only ... but also* yapılarında eyleme yakın olan ad, eylemi etkiler. OR bağlacı da *either ... or* gibi kullanılabilir.

As long as art is the beauty parlor of civilization, neither art nor civilization *is* secure. —J. Dewey

Neither great poverty nor great riches *hear* reason.

Neither Mr. Brown nor his wife *is* a university graduate.

Either bad luck or bad weather *follows* me wherever I go.

Either the boxers or their manager *is* going to give an interview to the press.

Neither wind nor rain *prevents* us from enjoying ourselves.

-
18. Devrik (inverted) tümcelerde, eylemden sonra gelen ad, eylemi etkiler.

In the wonderful world of books *are* all the adventures you may wish for.

Out of the remnants of the city *are* now growing two small towns.

Under the rock *was* a strange animal.

EXERCISE 47

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. An hour of pain (*is*) (*are*) as long as a day of pleasure.
2. According to the champion, one hundred pounds (*is*) (*are*) easy to lift.
3. More than two-thirds of the team (*show*) (*shows*) great enthusiasm.
4. Beyond the horizon (*lie*) (*lies*) the enchanted city.
5. Neither England nor France (*is*) (*are*) trustworthy.
6. Neither the car thief nor his companions (*was*) (*were*) able to stop the horn from blowing.

7. Fifty dollars (*is*) (*are*) all we have been able to save this month.
8. Either the lawyer or the eyewitnesses (*is*) (*are*) lying.
9. Today two-thirds of the population of the world (*go*) (*goes*) to bed hungry.
10. Two thousand dollars (*is*) (*are*) a lot for him to pay for tuition.
11. Five hundred dollars (*is*) (*are*) required as a down payment.
12. There, in a pile of old clothes (*was*) (*were*) both of the missing tickets.
13. Neither the jewels nor the money (*belongs*) (*belong*) to us.
14. Half of my salary (*disappear*) (*disappears*) quickly when I go shopping.
15. Neither orange juice nor tomato juice (*agrees*) (*agree*) with him.
16. Melon or peaches (*is*) (*are*) for dessert.
17. Neither he nor they (*was*) (*were*) prepared for the news.
18. Enclosed (*is*) (*are*) five application forms.
19. Two-thirds of the class (*was*) (*were*) absent.
20. Neither the President nor the FBI (*was*) (*were*) willing to release any information.

EXERCISE 48

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. Two days in the library (*is*) (*are*) all the time I need to finish my research.
2. Not only the teacher but also the students (*is*) (*are*) going to the conference.
3. Either Clarence or you (*is*) (*are*) going to have to finish this poster.
4. Standing in the doorway (*was*) (*were*) two policemen.
5. Five dollars (*is*) (*are*) not enough for a good restaurant meal these days.
6. Two hours of jogging (*is*) (*are*) no piece of cake. (=not easy at all)
7. Either Hemingway or Jack London (*was*) (*were*) in İstanbul for some time, but I don't remember which one.
8. Hard maple or some kind of plastic (*is*) (*are*) used in the construction.
9. In the middle of every difficulty (*lie*) (*lies*) opportunity.
10. Neither the meat nor the vegetables (*is*) (*are*) ready.
11. Either beans or spinach (*go*) (*goes*) well with the rest of the dinner.
12. Behind every successful man (*stand*) (*stands*) a good wife.
13. Twenty dollars (*seem*) (*seems*) a lot of money to pay for that book.
14. Neither our car nor the cars of the others (*was*) (*were*) able to plow through the drifts.
15. Life (*is*) (*are*) either a daring adventure or nothing. —Helen Keller
16. Neither of the rivals (*has*) (*have*) survived the duel.
17. Riches either (*serve*) (*serves*) or (*govern*) (*governs*) the possessor. —Horace
18. Two months (*is*) (*are*) not enough time to plan a wedding in.
19. Neither light nor anything else (*was*) (*were*) seen. —James Harrington
20. Every man, either to his terror or consolation, (*has*) (*have*) some sense of religion. —James Harrington

19. THERE 'li yapılarda eylemi gerçek özne etkiler.

There are times in one's life when he has to make important decisions.

In that old buildings there are many small apartments.

The golden rule is that there are no golden rules.

20. Sıralı öznelerde resmi kullanım çoğul eylem tercih eder.

There are a book and a pencil in the box.

 Sıralı öznede ilk adın tekil olduğu durumlarda günlük konuşmada tekil eylem kullanma eğilimi güçlenmektedir.

There is a book and a pencil in the box.

21. *News, baggage, luggage, information* adları her zaman tekil, *police, people, majority, minority* gibi kimi topluluk adları da çoğuldur.

No news has been released yet.

They say my baggage was sent to New York by mistake.

 Minority, grup anlamında kullanıldığından tekil olarak kullanılabilir.
Most of the nation wants peace, but a certain minority wants war at all costs.

22. THE+ADJECTIVE yapısı çoğuldur çünkü bu yapı (THE+ADJECTIVE+PEOPLE) ifadesinin kısaltılmış şeklidir.

The forces of a capitalist society, if left unchecked, tend to make the rich richer and the poor poorer. —Jawaharlal Nehru

I shall make electricity so cheap that only the rich can afford to burn candles. —Thomas Alva Edison

What the poor need is less advise and more helping hands.

23. *Riches , goods ve groceries* adları her zaman çoğuldur.

What is a man if he is not a thief who openly charges as much as he can for the goods he sells?— Mahatma Gandhi

Riches have made more covetous men than covetousness has made rich men. —Thomas Fuller

24. Kimi araç gereç adlarıyla giyim eşyaları her zaman çoğuldur. A pair of ... yapısı ise tekildir.

<i>clothes</i>	<i>pants</i>	<i>scissors</i>
<i>eyeglasses</i>	<i>pliers</i>	<i>trousers</i>
<i>jeans</i>	<i>slacks</i>	<i>tweezers</i>

This pair of socks is too small for me.

These socks are the right size.

Scissors are dangerous for small children.

A pair of scissors is dangerous for small children.

- 25.** Kimi adlar hem tekil hem de çoğul olarak kullanılır: *series*, *means*, *species*.

That species is rare in tropical climates.
Those species are common in this region.

- 26.** Ulusları işaret eden sözcükler çoğuldur.

The Japanese are very hardworking.
The British are famous for their international intrigues.

- 27.** Devlet adları tekildir bu nedenle yapı olarak çoğul görünen "the United States" da tekildir.

The United States is the only country that has used nuclear weapons.

- 28.** Çoğul gibi görünen *measles*, *mumps*, *diabetes* gibi hastalık adları tekildir.

Measles is a disease to take seriously.
Diabetes is an extremely serious illness, and it is increasing among the general population worldwide.

- 29.** *The number of ...* tekil ad öbekleri yapar; *A number of ..* ise çoğul ad öbekleri yapar.

The number of beats of the heart per minute usually declines with age, from as much as 140 at birth to 50 in an adult male.
The number of people in rural areas has declined in this decade.
The number of calories necessary to maintain current weight depends on how physically active a person is.
A number of improvement in the plant have been carried out.

- 30.** Kalıp tamamlayıcı **IT** (Slot-filling **IT**) her zaman tekildir.

It has been years since he wrote anything worth reading.

- 31.** Aynı kimseyi ya da şeyi gösteren öbekler tek birim olarak görev yaparlar.

The *sum* and *substance* of his argument is that compulsory attendance is not desirable.
One of the biggest medal-winners and the greatest weight-lifters of all times has been Naim Süleymanoğlu.
My guide and companion for the tour was an old shepherd.

EXERCISE 49

Doğru seçenekin bulunuz.

1. It (*take*) (*takes*) a lot of flowers to make a beautiful garden.
2. The homeless (*find*) (*finds*) life very difficult in USA.
3. Unlike Americans who seem to prefer coffee, the English (*drinks*) (*drink*) a great deal of tea.
4. It (*is*) (*are*) people who live on a fixed income that inflation hurts the most.
5. There (*go*) (*goes*) my two best friends.
6. Riches (*serves*) (*serve*) a wise man but (*commands*) (*command*) a fool.
7. After the terrible bombing by American planes, the living (*was*) (*were*) removed at once but the dead (*was*) (*were*) left behind.
8. The news about the two accidents (*has*) (*have*) finally reached us.
9. Every day there (*is*) (*are*) more than a dozen traffic accidents on our highways.
10. The United States (*has*) (*have*) been a world power since the Second World War.
11. Despite the development of a vaccine, measles (*is*) (*are*) still a serious danger to adult victims.
12. The number of people who cannot afford to pay for housing (*is*) (*are*) rising.
13. According to the police, a number of crimes (*is*) (*are*) committed under influence of drink or drugs.
14. There (*is*) (*are*) a pair of sunglasses lying on the floor.
15. For most folks, no news (*is*) (*are*) good news; for the press, good news (*is*) (*are*) not news. —Gloria Borger
16. German measles (*cause*) (*causes*) red spots on the chest and arms.
17. A number of books written around 1975 (*was*) (*were*) about strange occurrences in the Bermuda Triangle.
18. There (*seems*) (*seem*) to be many arguments on both sides.
19. The old in my country (*is*) (*are*) usually cared for by their children.
20. The number of hungry and malnourished people today (*is*) (*are*) larger than at any time in history.
21. There (*remain*) (*remains*) nothing more to be said about this subject.
22. (*Are*) (*Is*) there something wrong with her?
23. Can you tell me how much lemonade there (*is*) (*are*) and how many guests there (*is*) (*are*) waiting for a drink?
24. There (*wasn't*) (*weren't*) much to eat for dinner last night and there (*seems*) (*seem*) to be less tonight.

EXERCISE 50

Doğru seçenek bulunuz.

1. The elderly (*is*) (*are*) given little care in some countries.
2. Mumps (*cause*) (*causes*) inflammation and swelling of the glands.
3. The number of hotels (*is*) (*are*) increasing every year.
4. The news (*was*) (*were*) bad, so Mr. Smith looked worried.
5. There (*come*) (*comes*) the morning train.
6. The rich (*does*) (*do*) not help the poor.
7. The number of people who understand Darwin's theory of evolution (*is*) (*are*) very small.
8. The Dutch (*is*) (*are*) fortunate to have such a beautiful coastline.
9. If you are poor today you will always be poor. Only the rich now (acquire) (acquires) riches. —*Martial* (?AD 40–?104)
10. There (*has*) (*have*) never been so many joggers in the race.
11. The wicked always (*seem*) (*seems*) to prosper whereas the good (*seem*) (*seems*) to suffer.
12. There (*is*) (*are*) multiple causes for soaring medical costs.
13. The number of earthquakes (*is*) (*are*) alarming.
14. The British (*is*) (*are*) a nation of shopkeepers.
15. It is still the women who (*bears*) (*bear*) the burden of household chores.
16. Here (*is*) (*are*) the magazines you asked.
17. In World War II it (*was*) (*were*) the men who served in combat roles.
18. There (*is*) (*are*) little hope that peace will prevail in this region.
19. The number of people in rural areas (*has*) (*have*) declined in this decade.
20. It (*is*) (*are*) not the politicians but the big businesses that determine the nation's policies.
21. It (*was*) (*were*) the boys who broke the window.
22. It (*isn't*) (*aren't*) my sister that (*make*) (*makes*) all the noise.
23. (*Is*) (*are*) it always me who (*am*) (*is*) in the wrong?
24. Everybody believes that it was you who (*were*) (*was*) seen with Helen.

EXERCISE 51

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçenek bulunuz.

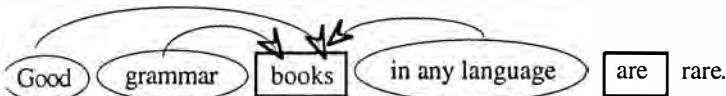
1. Neither the parents nor the police officer (*knows*) (*knows*) what happened in the school yard.
2. My best friend and bridge partner (*is*) (*are*) a workaholic.
3. My favorite games which include bridge and chess (*has*) (*have*) always brought me comfort and joy.
4. President Bush never listens to the counselors who (*advise*) (*advises*) him.
5. Every car and truck (*has*) (*have*) its own parking place.

6. Anyone who grows vegetables (*is*) (*are*) welcome to enter the contest.
7. Each of the boy scouts (*is*) (*are*) bringing his own camping equipment.
8. All of the tourists (*is*) (*are*) bringing their own fishing equipment.
9. Everyone in our team (*have*) (*has*) his own way of doing things.
10. Either of the women (*is*) (*are*) willing to lend you (*her*) (*their*) vacuum cleaner.
11. Each employee (*is*) (*are*) being asked to contribute as much as (*he or she*) (*they*) can.
12. Everybody in the office (*seem*) (*seems*) pleased with the raise (*he or she has*) (*they have*) received.
13. Neither of the computers in the office (*is*) (*are*) suitable for this task.
14. Either you or I (*am*) (*are*) mistaken.
15. Every apartment in the building (*need*) (*needs*) some repairs.
16. Some of the machines (*need*) (*needs*) to be repaired.
17. Some of the machinery (*need*) (*needs*) to be repaired.
18. All of her jewelry (*was*) (*were*) put in a safety vault.
19. All of her diamond necklaces (*was*) (*were*) put in a safety vault.
20. All of the information on the report (*is*) (*are*) correct.
21. All of the statistics on the report (*is*) (*are*) fabricated.
22. Most of his luggage (*was*) (*were*) lost on his last trip.
23. Most of the merchandise (*have*) (*has*) been sold.
24. Most of the goods at the fair (*have*) (*has*) been sold.

AD ÖBEKLERİNİN 2 GENEL TÜRÜ

Aşağıdaki tümcenin öznesi *good grammar books in any language*'dır. Öznede asılı konu olan ad, yani temel ad BOOKS adıdır. *Good* ve *grammar* sözcükleriyle *in any language* öbeği BOOKS adını nitirmektedir.

Eylemler, özne içindeki temel adla uyum gösterirler. Bu nedenle tümcenin eylemi ARE'dır.



Aşağıdaki örnekte de temel adın BOY olduğu görülmüyor.

The tall **boy** with the dark sunglasses **is** my brother.

İngilizce'de bir de temel adı olmayan ad öbeği türü bulunmaktadır. Aşağıdaki tümcede *finding good grammar books in any language*, özne olan ad öbeğidir. Fakat bu öbekte bir temel ad yoktur. Temel adı olmayan ad öbekleri, tekil eylemle uyuşurlar.

Finding good grammar books in any language	is	difficult.
--	----	------------

Genel olarak temel adsız ad öbeklerinin 3 çeşidi vardır:

1. Gerund phrases	Finding good grammar books is difficult.
2. Infinitive phrases	To find good grammar books is difficult.
3. Noun Clauses	That good grammar books are rare is obvious.

Aşağıdaki kutuda yeni örnekler veriyoruz.

1	Asking her to do all the housework on her own	is not fair.
2	To work on a good and fast computer	is enjoyable.
3	That Isaac Asimov has written so many books	surprises me.
4	What he has done so far	remains a secret.



"All you have done so far is cure his arthritis."

EXERCISE 52

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde özne olan ad öbeklerini bulunuz.

1. Taking too many vitamins is dangerous.
2. To know what is right and not to do it is the worst cowardice.—Confucius

3. Having a big dog for a pet causes problems.
4. To conserve energy in the home has become essential.
5. Winning a debate depends on good preparation and strong delivery.
6. To prevent crimes is better than to punish them.
7. Reading mystery stories is his favorite entertainment.
8. That this book is popular does not surprise me.
9. That highway accidents may paralyze traffic for hours is known to all.
10. That men do not learn very much from the lessons of history is a sad fact.

SİFAT İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ İLE İKİ ÖZEL DURUM

1. **ALL** bir sıfat içtümceciğinin temel adı olarak kullanılabilir ve her zaman tekil olarak kabul edilir.

All I know is that there is no success without hard work.

As for me, all I know is that I know nothing. –Socrates

All we are saying is give peace a chance. –John Lennon

All that is gold does not glitter.

All he does from morning till midnight is watch television.

2. Sıfat içtümcecikleri, **NP + OF + NP** yapısındaki bir NP'yi izliyorsa her iki NP'yi de niteleyebilirler.

She is **one** of my friends who **lives** on fast food.

She is one of **my friends** who **live** on fast food.

She is **one** of our friends who **knows** what she is talking about.

She is one of our **friends** who **know** what they are talking about.

EXERCISE 53

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçenekleri bulunuz.

1. The migration to the suburbs in the USA (*is*) (*are*) continuing.
2. There (*is*) (*are*) thousands of shopping centers in the USA.
3. Both of her sons (*has*) (*have*) brought the same gift for her.
4. The future of the European Union (*look*) (*looks*) unpromising.
5. Each of the bedrooms in these flats (*has*) (*have*) windows facing the sea, so there (*is*) (*are*) an excellent view.
6. Knowledge of grammar (*is*) (*are*) an aid to better communication.
7. The cause of heartbeats (*has*) (*have*) been a subject of continuous inquiry.

- 8 The science pages of the newspapers (*tell*) (*tells*) us strange stories.
- 9 The computer program that the girl designed (*work*) (*works*) perfectly.
- 10 The function of these computer keys (*remain*) (*remains*) a mystery to me.
- 11 The performance of the first three clowns (*was*) (*were*) very funny.
- 12 A solution to problems of overcrowding in some cities (*has*) (*have*) not yet been found.
- 13 All strips of muscle in the heart (*is*) (*are*) capable of rhythmic action.
- 14 One of my friends (*play*) (*plays*) the guitar superbly.
- 15 The lack of funds (*is*) (*are*) our most pressing problem.
- 16 Our staff (*handle*) (*handles*) discipline problems effectively.
- 17 This broadcast of the Olympic games (*is*) (*are*) being transmitted by satellite.
- 18 Changing schools (*is*) (*are*) easy if you are an adaptable person.
- 19 Complaining about faulty goods or bad service (*is*) (*are*) never easy.
- 20 The plant shut down (*has*) (*have*) left the entire area an economic disaster.

EXERCISE 54

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçenekleri bulunuz.

- 1 Everybody in our neighbourhood (*is*) (*are*) against the energy plant.
- 2 Fishing and hunting (*is*) (*are*) his only interest.
- 3 Two-fifths of the vineyard (*was*) (*were*) destroyed by fire.
- 4 Everyone among the European politicians visiting Turkey (*seem*) (*seems*) to hate Turks.
- 5 The desire for property and great riches (*ruin*) (*ruins*) many lives.
- 6 The cause of the flood (*was*) (*were*) erosion and inadequate dams.
- 7 The 2000 Olympics (*was*) (*were*) held in Sydney.
- 8 Everyone (*thinks*) (*thinks*) of changing the world, but no one (*thinks*) (*thinks*) of changing himself. –Leo Tolstoi
- 9 Every planet, including the earth, (*revolves*) (*revolve*) around the sun.
- 10 Digitalis (*is*) (*are*) a drug which is prepared from the seeds and leafs of a plant.
- 11 To a do-it-yourself handyman, a pair of pliers (*is*) (*are*) very useful.
- 12 Beyond the city walls (*lie*) (*lies*) the desert with no life on it.
- 13 Cigarette smoking (*is*) (*are*) so common and so dangerous that it can be called an epidemic.
- 14 There (*is*) (*are*) considerable evidence that noise can have serious consequences.
- 15 Good wine (*ruin*) (*ruins*) the purse, and bad wine (*ruin*) (*ruins*) the stomach.
- 16 Continued research into the nature of headaches (*offer*) (*offers*) hope to many sufferers.
- 17 Drinking too many alcoholic beverages (*is*) (*are*) injurious to health.

-
18. Neither the defendant nor the chief witness for the prosecution (*is*) (*are*) willing to take a lie-detector test.
 19. The Middle Ages (*was*) (*were*) a period of religious oppression.
 20. There (*is*) (*are*) not a lot of holes in this road but there (*is*) (*are*) too much mud.
-

EXERCISE 55

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçenekleri bulunuz.

1. Every success and failure (*contributes*) (*contribute*) to an individual's growth and maturity.
2. Everything, including the clothes in the closets, (*was*) (*were*) stolen from the apartment.
3. The ocean, as well as the gulf and the bay, (*provide*) (*provides*) good fishing.
4. In America the ultra-rich (*own*) (*owns*) the media, and it (*is*) (*are*) nonsensical to think that the media can be unbiased.
5. A dozen eggs (*cost*) (*costs*) only twenty-eight cents.
6. Polio, often called infantile paralysis, (*is*) (*are*) caused by a virus.
7. One of the advantages of learning a foreign language (*is*) (*are*) the ability to read the literature of that language.
8. Knowledge of foreign languages (*is*) (*are*) important for scientists.
9. There (*is*) (*are*) a number of reasons why the Belgian government supports international terrorism.
10. Of all the changes introduced by man to nature, large-scale nuclear fission (*is*) (*are*) undoubtedly the most dangerous.
11. The driver, with his passengers, (*escape*) (*escapes*) injury, but the car is ruined.
12. Advice (*is*) (*are*) usually free, but information usually (*costs*) (*cost*) money.
13. Each book, notebook, and pencil (*was*) (*were*) carefully counted by the teacher.
14. Each member in this American organization (*hate*) (*hates*) Turks.
15. What everyone (*wants*) (*want*) (*is*) (*are*) to work less but to earn more.
16. Behavior (*is*) (*are*) a mirror in which every one (*displays*) (*display*s) his image.—J. Wolfgang von Goethe
17. The world will not live in harmony as long as two-thirds of its inhabitants (*find*) (*finds*) difficulty in living at all. —U Thant
18. Despite the development of a vaccine, measles (*is*) (*are*) still a serious danger to adult victims.
19. Mrs. Holmes, not her children, (*is*) (*are*) painting the house and garage.
20. The fish in the aquarium (*is*) (*are*) waiting for their daily feeding.

EXERCISE 56

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçenekleri bulunuz.

1. One of the oldest foods in the world (*is*) (*are*) cheese.
2. Cheese (*is*) (*are*) what Turks enjoy eating for breakfast.
3. The art of making various cheeses (*is*) (*are*) older than record history.
4. The French (*claim*) (*claims*) that they have 246 different kinds of cheese.
5. Turks claim that Turkish cheese (*taste*) (*tastes*) best of all.
6. The appearance and the nutritional value of different kinds of cheese (*vary*) (*varies*) widely.
7. The extent of its uses (*has*) (*have*) yet to be exhausted.
8. Not one of the familiar cheeses (*occur*) (*occurs*) naturally without human intervention.
9. Each of the many different varieties of cheese (*has*) (*have*) a unique history.
10. Special equipment, as well as careful planning, (*is*) (*are*) necessary to make any kind of cheese.
11. Few of the familiar cookbooks (*show*) (*shows*) how to make even the simplest cheese.
12. Several of the most delicious kinds of cheese (*has*) (*have*) always been expensive.
13. Curds of whole milk without the whey (*is*) (*are*) the essence of cheese.
(~~CURDS~~ CURDS **tekil olarak düşünülmelidir.**)
14. The processing of the curds by various methods (*is*) (*are*) the latest development in the manufacture of cheese.
15. Cottage cheese and cream cheese (*rank*) (*ranks*) high among healthful kinds of cheese.
16. The cheese called American cheese and known by many other names (*is*) (*are*) cheddar cheese.
17. The milk of goats, sheep, reindeer, zebras and yaks, as well as the milk of cows, (*is*) (*are*) used in cheese making.
18. Cheese with crackers or cheese with a few slices of good bread (*make*) (*makes*) a nourishing meal.
19. One of the more striking types (*is*) (*are*) Roquefort cheese.
20. The milk of sheep (*is*) (*are*) used for Roquefort cheese.



Başkan Bush, İngilizce konuşurken hem telaffuz hataları hem de dilbilgisi hataları yapmaktadır. Yanda Bush'un yaptığı yanlışları sergileyen bir kitabın kapağı görülmektedir. Bush, kitabı kapağında yer alan sorusunda hangi uyum yanlışını yapmaktadır?

PRONOUN AGREEMENT

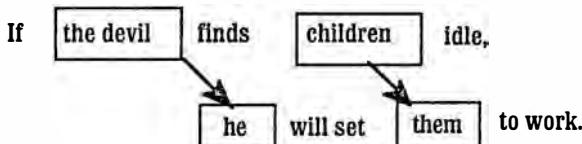
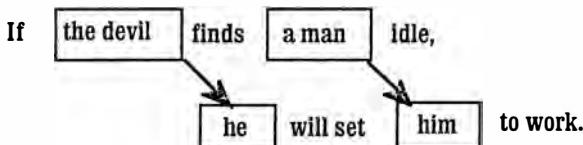
ZAMİR UYUMU

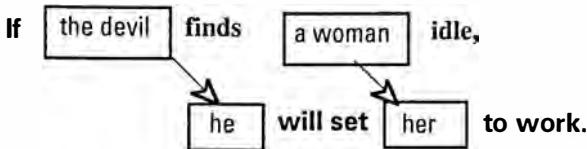
(Sayı ve Kişi Uyumu)



*"No, Daddy is driving us. My feet
can't reach the pedals."*

Zamirlerin adların yerine kullanılan sözcükler olduğunu biliyoruz. Bir zamir ile yerine geçtiği ad arasında iki türlü uyum söz konusudur. Örneğin, aşağıdaki ilk tümcede, hem devil hem de **a man** 3. tekil kişidir. Her ikisi de "erkek" olarak düşünülmektedir. Uygun olan zamirler de devil özne olduğu için **he**, **a man** (*he will set a man to work*) tümcesinde nesne durumunda olduğu için **him** olmuştur. İkinci tümcede ise, zamir çoğul ad olan *children* yerine kullanıldığından **them** olmuştur.





Şimdi zamir uyumu ile ilgili bilinmesi gereken özelliklerini gösterelim.

1. Kişi zamirlerinde uyum

İngilizcedeki kişi zamirleri aşağıdaki tabloda görülmektedir. Bu tabloda zamir olmamalarına karşın (iyelik sıfatları=possessive adjectives) de yer almaktadır.

	Subject	Object	Possessive Adjective	Possessive Pronoun	Reflexive Pronoun
1. tekil kişi	I	me	my	mine	myself
2. tekil kişi	you	you	your	yours	yourself
3. tekil kişi	he	him	his	his	himself
3. tekil kişi	she	her	her	hers	herself
3. tekil kişi	it	it	its	X	itself
1. çoğul kişi	we	us	our	ours	ourselves
2. çoğul kişi	you	you	your	yours	yourselves
3. çoğul kişi	they	them	their	theirs	themselves

Kişi zamları PRONOUNS bölümünde ayrıntılı olarak açıklanmaktadır. Burada kişi zamiri uyumunu örnekleyen tümceler sunuyoruz.

I paid very little money for my car.

Its low price is an indication of how poorly it runs.

My friends compare my car to theirs and laugh.

|
Their ridicule does not bother me.
(My friends')

My brother enjoys driving his car.

My car will not even go up hills.

|
Mine

EXERCISE 57

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş olan zamirlerin ve iyelik sıfatlarının hangi adları işaret ettiğini saptayınız.

- A. My friends devote far more attention to (1) **their** cars than I do to (2) **mine**. I do not share (3) **their** priorities.
- B. My mother despises (4) **her** car. (5) She would rather drive any other car but (6) **hers**. Yesterday (7) its muffler fell off. (8) She asked my brother to fix it. (9) He ignored (10) **her** request.
- C. In a recent national poll, 55% of American adults said (11) **they** no longer believed that (12) **you** could build a better life for yourself and your family by working hard and playing by the rules. Of (13) **those** without college degrees, 68% said (14) **they** no longer believe it.
- E. A "rogue state" is threatening the world. (15) **It** possesses weapons of mass destruction, and has used them. (16) **It** has attacked, bombed and invaded more countries than any other state.

The regime is run by a gang of ruthless killers. (17) **They** are bent on world domination and prepared to commit mass murder to achieve (18) **it**. The state is the US. (19) **Its** leader is George W. Bush.

[\(<http://www.mediareviewnet.com>\)](http://www.mediareviewnet.com)

1. Belgisiz zamirlerle uyum

either	no one	everybody	nothing	some
neither	anyone	somebody	everything	all
each	everyone	anybody	anything	none
	someone	nobody	something	

Belgisiz zamirlerin çoğu, tekil ve erkek olarak algılanırlar. *One, everyone, someone, anyone, no one, everybody, somebody, anybody, nobody* zamirlerine gönderme yapan zamirler *he, him himself, his* ve iyelik zamiri olarak da *his'* dir.

Nobody can be perfect enough to save **himself** from criticism.

Everybody shouted **his** approval.

Everybody in the neighborhood is advised to keep **his** doors locked.

Nobody has completed **his** education who has not learned to live with an insoluble problem.

With every right there is a responsibility. Just once I wish **someone** would demand **his** responsibility. —Paul Sweeney

Someone has left **his** wallet on my table.

One sometimes wonder what the point **his** life is.

If **anyone** thinks he can repair the computer, **he** must be permitted to try.

ALL, NONE ve SOME çoğul olarak da kullanılabilir.

All are not thieves that dogs bark at.

All I ask is a chance to prove that money can't make me happy.

None preaches better than the ant, and she says nothing. --*Benjamin Franklin*

Of the events which followed, **none** are worth recording.

Some of this new technology consists of specialized equipment,

Some like work better than rest; they are workaholics.

 Günümüzde feminism bu kullanımın yerine **he or she, him or her** yapısını yerleştirmeye başlamıştır.

Everyone should take care of his or her baggage.

 Belgisiz zamirler gerçekle çoğul anlam taşımaktadır. Bu nedenle kimi durumlarda, onlara çoğul bir zamirin gönderme yapması gerekebilir.

Nobody in the team left the project because they were determined to be succeed.

 Dilbilgisi kitapları cansız varlıklarla hayvanlar için IT zamiri kullanıldığı belirtmekle birlikte günümüzdeki hayvan sevgisi evdeki hayvanlar için "he" ve "she" zamirlerini kullanma eğilimi doğmuştur.

A. Belgisiz zamirlerin tekil ve erkek olarak algılandıklarını belirtmiştir. Bu tür kullanımın uygun düşmediği durumlar da olabilmektedir.

Did everybody leave the dance early because ____ not enjoying ____?

Bu tümcede **everybody** için **he** ve **himself** kullanılması uygun düşmeyecektir.

Did everybody leave the dance early because they weren't enjoying themselves?

Kurala bağlı kalınmak isteniyorsa bir çözüm yolu söyle olabilir.

Did the guests leave the dance early because they weren't enjoying themselves?

B. Günlük kullanımda, dilbilgisi kitaplarında verilen kuralların belli durumlarda değiştirildikleri görülmüyor.

FORMAL	Neither of the girls had brought her skis with her .
INFORMAL	Neither of the girls had brought their skis with them .
FORMAL	Every one of the campers had been advised to put his name on everything belonging to him .
INFORMAL	Every one of the campers had been advised to put their names on everything belonging to them .

2. Birleşik adöbeği çoğul olarak algılanır.

Jack and Tom went home early because **they** were tired.

Lynn and Bess sat with **their** coats on.

You and I are great friends.

3. Cinsiyeti belli olmayan adlarla genellikle erkekler için kullanılan zamirler seçilir.

 Günümüzde feminism bu kullanımın yerine he or she, him or her yapısını yerleştirmeye başlamıştır.

A teacher should understand his or her students.

4. Topluluk adları, kastedilen anlamda göre tekil ya da çoğul zamir gereklidir.

My family is helpful. **They** are always ready to help me.

His family is exceptionally large. **It** is composed of 20 members.

The faculty have signed **their** contracts.

The committee voted to disband **itself**.

The committee will present **its** report today.

5. Gemiler, trenler, ülkeler genellikle dışıl zamirlerle kullanılır.

Turkey must increase **her** export.

Belgium seems to give **her** unconditional support to terrorism.

6. Either ...or , Neither ... nor iki tekil adı birleştirirse eylem tekil olur.

Neither Jack nor Tom has learned how to operate the machine.

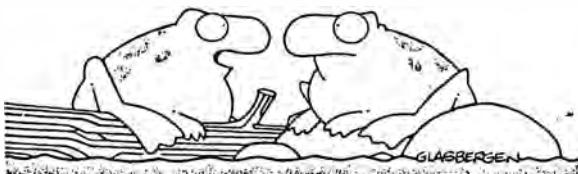
Either Lucy or Helen is bringing her sister along.

Either the President or the prime minister is going to change his mind.

Neither Lynn nor Bess has her keys with her.

Neither Belgium nor Italy is likely to do anything about terrorism.

Neither the IMF nor the World Bank has no other objective than setting debt traps for developing countries.



"Looks aren't everything. It's what's inside you that really matters. A biology teacher told me that."

USING PRONOUNS CLEARLY

Zamirlerin kullanımıyla ilgili iki temel kusur vardır.

1. Zamirin yerine geçmesi gereken ad tümcede kullanılmamıştır.

My son writes whenever he has a free moment, but I cannot make any sense of it. (IT zamiri, "yazılan şey" yerine kullanılmak isteniyor fakat tümcede bununla ilgili bir sözcük yok.)

We do not tear your clothing with machinery. We do it carefully by hand. (Bu temizleme mağazasının reklamında gerçekte IT zamiri "washing" yerine kullanılmak istenmektedir fakat tümcede "washing" kullanılmamıştır. Bu durumda reklam "We do not tear your clothing with machinery; we tear your clothing carefully by hand" anlamına gelmektedir.)

2. Tümce içinde zamirin yerine gelebileceği birden çok ad bulunmaktadır.

Although the motorcycle hit the tree, it was not damaged.

(What was damaged?)

When the expert began examining Mr. Taylor's books, he became very excited.

(Who became excited?)

The father told his son that he did not think he could use a computer.

(Who could use a computer?)

EXERCISE 58

Doğru seçenek bulunuz.

1. Tom and Bill did (*his*) (*their*) best.
2. George is devoted to (*his*) (*him*) aged mother.
3. One of the boys injured (*his*) (*him*) ankle.
4. Neither of the girls achieved (*her*) (*herself*) purpose.
5. The principal accused Charley and (*I*) (*me*) of setting an alarm clock to go off in the library.
6. The city is proud of (*its*) (*itself*) parks.
7. I recognized one of the girls, but I didn't speak to (*hers*) (*her*).
8. Each of the women had removed (*their*) (*her*) shoes.
9. For Alice and (*she*) (*her*), the most difficult geometry problems seem simple.
10. If anyone calls, tell (*his*) (*him*) I'll be back later.
11. When an employer is interviewing you, one of the first things (*they ask*) (*he asks*) about is experience.
12. After a person retires, (*he*) (*they*) usually prefer(s) to live in the city.
13. Each of these suggestions must be taken only for what (*it is*) (*they are*) worth.
14. Everyone needs a few spare moments to do as (*he wishes*) (*they wish*).

-
15. People who enter politics know that (*he*) (*they*) will have to take criticism.
 16. Anyone who does not get (*his*) (*their*) parents' permission will not be permitted to make the trip.
 17. Everyone who plans to attend the concert should have (*his*) (*their*) ticket money in before March 1.
 18. Each member of the class is expected to give a three-minute sales talk on a product of (*his*) (*their*) own choice.
 19. There is little resemblance between my sister and (*I*) (*me*), but people are always mistaking one of us for the other.
 20. Neither my mother nor my sister has (*her*) (*their*) hair done regularly.
-

EXERCISE 59

Doğru seçenek bulunuz.

1. Neither of the candidates has stated (*his*) (*their*) position on gun control.
2. It is up to (*us*) (*we*) athletes to repair the bad image the newspapers have given our coach.
3. Mr. Ross is very rich, and (*this*) (*it*) makes him very popular with girls.
4. (*Our*) (*Ours*) is an age of fast foods and slow minds.
5. After the judges have reached a decision, nothing can change (*their*) (*theirs*) minds.
6. Every car and truck has (*its*) (*their*) own parking place.
7. If a student parks a car on campus, (*he has*) (*they have*) to buy a parking sticker.
8. Just between you and (*I*) (*me*), I don't believe for a minute that Orville and Wilbur will get that contraption to fly.
9. Our need to express (*us*) (*ourselves*) can take many forms.
10. Everybody has (*his*) (*heir*) own reason for objecting to the new dress code at our school.
11. Many Europeans think of (*us*) (*we*) Americans as an excessively violent nation.
12. Everyone should do (*his or her*) (*their*) best.
13. They will award a prize to (*whoever*) (*whomever*) makes the most intriguing architectural design.
14. You and (*we*) (*us*) should have dinner together after the game.
15. There are some pills which the doctor gave Peter a month ago. We must keep (*it*) (*them*) away from the children.
16. It must have been (*them*) (*they*) who left the message.
17. No one likes that waitress because it takes (*her*) (*she*) so long to bring the food.
18. Their house is larger than (*us*) (*ours*).
19. The little boy dropped his ice-cream, so his mother gave him (*her*) (*hers*).
20. The antique weapon had belonged to our family for years, but the police refused to believe it was (*us*) (*ours*).

EXERCISE 60

Doğru seçenekleri bulunuz.

1. Their country has plenty of oil, while (*we*) (*ours*) has none.
2. Some fish camouflage themselves on the ocean floor so that predators can't spot (*theirs*) (*them*).
3. Everyone loved to drink (*his or her*) (*its*) cokes with the funny straws.
4. The couple from Ankara found (*its*) (*their*) airline tickets at the very last minute.
5. Each member did (*his or her*) (*their*) share of the chores.
6. A person should not try to impose (*his or her*) (*their*) ideas on others.
7. If a person agrees to do something, he should not go back on (*his or her*) (*their*) word.
8. One cannot blame fate on the stars; everyone is the master of (*his or her*) (*their*) own life.
9. Anyone can learn to swim if (*he or she*) (*they*) (*try*) (*tries*).
10. An individual should always fulfill (*his or her*) (*their*) responsibility.
11. Someone left (*their*) (*his or her*) fingerprints on the windshield.
12. A person should take good care of (*his*) (*their*) health.
13. Everyone must take (*his or her*) (*their*) seat at exactly 8:30 A.M.
14. Jack always makes sure that his tie matches (*his or her*) (*his*) socks.
15. No one was able to convince (*his or her*) (*their*) spouse to attend the company picnic.
16. Many people are returning to school in order to better (*his or her*) (*their*) careers.
17. Everybody is welcome to try (*his or her*) (*their*) hand at repairing the computer.
18. Each tool has (*its*) (*their*) particular use.
19. Does anybody want (*his or her*) (*their*) picture taken?
20. The government has to trim (*its*) (*their*) budget.
21. Many people feel that the American society is not doing all (*it*) (*they*) can to help the elderly and the homeless.
22. The group has changed (*its*) (*their*) name again.
23. The jury has reached (*its*) (*their*) verdict.
24. The members of the jury retired to consider (*its*) (*their*) verdict..
25. The committee will announce (*its*) (*their*) plan today.
26. The university wants to double (*its*) (*their*) enrollment by 2005.
27. My family values (*its*) (*their*) traditions.
28. No one wanted to devote (*his or her*) (*their*) time to the neighborhood protection project.
29. The company gave (*its*) (*their*) employees free lunch tickets.
30. Our boxing team is at (*its*) (*their*) best.

Chapter 15

CLEFT SENTENCES

AYRIK TÜMCELER

*It is defeat that turns bone to flint;
it is defeat that turns gristle to muscle.
it is defeat that makes men invincible.*

—Henry Ward Beecher



Tümcede kimi zaman bir ögenin vurgulanması gerekmektedir. Örneğin, *Bu ağaç kestiniz mi?* sorusunu Türkçe'de belli öğeleri vurgulamak üzere çeşitli şekillerde kullanabiliriz.

- 1.a Siz bu ağaç mı kestiniz? (Başka bir ağaç değil)
- 2.a Siz mi bu ağaç kestiniz? (Başka birisi değil)

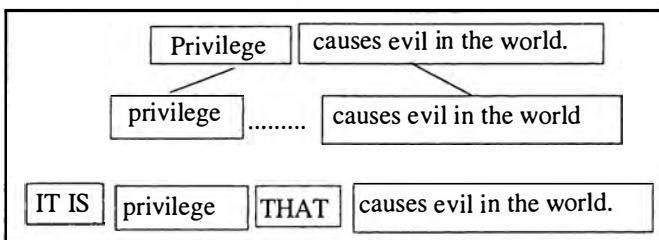
Tümce 1'de ağaç, Tümce 2'de siz vurgulanmaktadır. İngilizce'de aynı vurgu —the —yle yapılabilir:

- 1.b Is it this tree that you cut?
- 2.b Is it you that cut this tree?

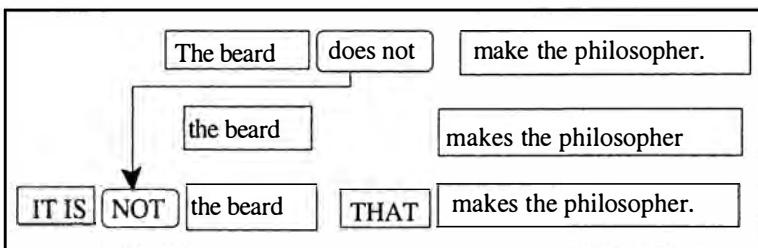
Bu tür tümcelere *ayırık tümceler (cleft sentences)* denmektedir. Bunun nedeni, ayrık tümceler kurulurken, özgün tümcenin öğelerinin birbirlerinden ayrılmalarıdır. Lincoln Steffens, dünyadaki kötülüklerin nedeninin ayrıcalık olduğunu vurgulamak istiyor. Ayrıcalığın dünyadaki kötülüklerle neden olduğu şöyle söylenebilir.

Privilege causes evil in the world.

Lincoln Steffens, herkesin dünyadaki kötüluğun nedeni olarak "insanların kötülüğünü ya da insanları gördüğünü" biliyor, ama onun vurgulamak istediği, dünyadaki kötülüklerin asıl nedeninin "ayricalık" olduğu budur.



Filozofu, filozof yapan şeyin sakal olmadığını da şöyle vurgulayabiliriz.



AYRIK TÜMCELERİN İKİ TÜRÜ

Gold greases the wheel of love.

Ayırık tümcelerin iki türü vardır.

1. **IT-Cleft**
2. **WHAT-Cleft**

IT-Cleft tümceleri, tümcede eylemin dışındaki öğeleri vurgulamakta kullanılır. **WHAT-Cleft** tümceleri, tümcenin öznesini, nesnesini ya da eylemini vurgulamak için kullanılır.

IT-Cleft tümcelerinde **IT IS ... THAT** özgün tümceye yerleştirilmektedir. Tümcenin vurgulanan öğesi **IT IS ... THAT** arasında yer almalıdır.

IT-CLEFT**A. Tümcenin öznesi vurgulanıyor.**

	Gold		greases	the wheel of love.
IT IS	gold	THAT	greases	the wheel of love.

B. Tümcenin nesnesi vurgulanıyor.

IT IS	the wheel of love	THAT	gold greases.
-------	-------------------	------	---------------

IT-Cleft tümceleri, özgün tümcenin eylemi dışında bütün öğelerini vurgulayabilir. Vurgulanacak öğe *IT IS THAT* arasında yer alır.

The British hooligans	littered	the streets	with empty beer bottles	in İstanbul	yesterday.
A		B	C	D	E.

- A. It was *the British hooligans* that littered the streets with empty beer bottles in İstanbul yesterday.
- B. It was *the streets* that the British hooligans littered with empty beer bottles in İstanbul yesterday.
- C. It was *with empty beer bottles* that the British hooligans littered the streets in İstanbul yesterday.
- D. It was *in İstanbul* that the British hooligans littered the streets with empty beer bottles yesterday.
- E. It was *yesterday* that the British hooligans littered the streets with empty beer bottles in İstanbul.



Kişi olan özne vurgulandığında *THAT* yerine *WHO* da kullanılabilir.

It was the British hooligans *WHO* littered the streets with empty beer bottles in İstanbul yesterday.

It is the corrupt French politicians *WHO* have supported ASALA.

WHAT-CLEFT

WHAT-Cleft tümcelerde de özgün tümcelerin ö eleri "ayrılmaktadır".

A. Tümcenin eylemi vurgulanıyor.

	Gold		greases	the wheel of love.
WHAT	gold	DOES IS	(to) grease	the wheel of love.

B. Tümcenin nesnesi vurgulanıyor.

	Gold	greases		the wheel of love.
WHAT	gold	greases	IS	the wheel of love.

C. Tümcenin öznesi vurgulanıyor.

	Gold	greases	the wheel of love.		
WHAT		greases	the wheel of love	IS	gold

☞ **WHAT-Cleft** tümceleri tümcenin bütün öğelerini değil, sadece nesneyi ve eylem öbegini vurgulayabilirler.

The mayor bought a necklace for his wife at Casey's yesterday.

*WHAT the mayor bought for his wife at Casey's yesterday
WAS a necklace. (nesne)*

*WHAT the mayor did yesterday WAS (to) buy a necklace for
his wife at Casey's. (eylem öbegi)*

**EXERCISE 61**

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden ayrıcık içindeki öğeyi vurgulayan IT-Cleft tümceleri kuruñuz. Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

1. Pride changed angels into devils. Humility makes men angels. (pride)
(humility)

*It was pride that changed angels into devils; it is humility
that makes men angels.* —Saint Augustine

2. Men first began to philosophize through the feeling of wonder. —

Aristotle (through the feeling of wonder)

*It was through the feeling of wonder that men first began to
philosophize.* — Aristotle

3. Capital as such is not evil; its wrong use is evil. —Gandhi (its wrong use) —

4. The quality rather than the quantity matters. — Seneca (the quality)

5. The neglect of timely repair makes rebuilding necessary. —Richard Whately
(the neglect of timely repair)

6. In this world, not we take up but what we give up makes us rich. —Henry Ward
Beecher (what we give up)

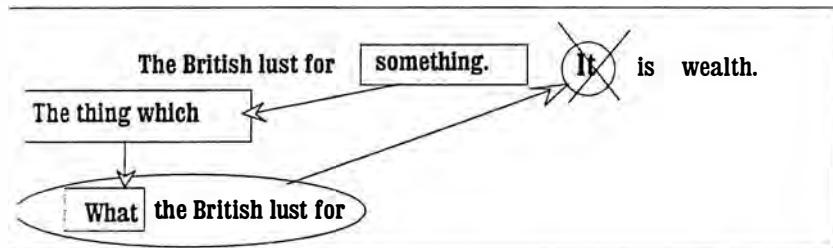
7. Man makes truth great. Truth does not make man great. (man) (truth)
—Confucius

8. Our wants are chiefly derived from education and habits, not from nature.
—Henry Fielding (Not from nature)

9. We conquer ourselves, not the mountain. —Sir Edmund Hillary (not the mountain)
10. The worst work is always done with the best intentions. —Oscar Wilde (with the best intentions)
11. Preoccupation with possession, more than anything else, prevents men from living freely and nobly. --Bertrand Russell (preoccupation with possession)
12. Although coal has been in use since prehistoric times, coal mining has only become a major industry since the 18th century. (since the 18th century)
13. Defeat turns bone to flint; defeat turns gristle to muscle; defeat makes man invincible. — Henry Ward Beecher (defeat)
14. The last drop overflows the glass. (the last drop)

WHAT-Cleft TÜMCELERİNİN KAYNAĞI NEDİR?

Genel olarak, WHAT-Cleft tümceleri *semi-cleft* "yarı ayrık" olarak da adlandırılmaktadır. Bunun nedeni WHAT-Cleft tümcelerinin其实 bir başka yapının, sıfat içtümceciklerinin kısaltılmış şekilleri olarak değerlendirilmesidir.



The thing which he ate	is	wealth.
W'IAIT the British lust for	is	wealth.

Wealth	is	the thing which the British lust for.
Wealth	is	WHAT the British lust for.

The British did something. It was to suck the lifeblood of Asia and Africa.

The thing which the British did	was	to suck the lifeblood of Asia and Africa.
WHAT the British did	was	to suck the lifeblood of Asia and Africa.

EXERCISE 62

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden çıkarılan **WHAT-Cleft** tümceleri kurunuz.

1. Many people are exercising to lose weight.
2. This restaurant specializes in fresh seafood.

3. He taught me to trust my instincts.
4. Many economists want to arrive at new ways to control inflation.
5. The old man appreciated having such a son.



What the European Union really wants to do is ...

6. The West and the USA have distributed the seeds of terrorism all over the world.
7. The USA built up the biggest military machine in history.
8. British Prime Minister Tony Blair, along with the German and Italian governments, supported the PKK.
9. Hitler and Bush launched wars against most of the world.
10. We see in Iraq today American-brought terror, death and wickedness.

EXERCISE 63

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. What the thief did was abominable.
2. What the brothers stole was the diamond.
3. What I like about detective novels is the element of suspense.
4. What fascinates me about detective novels is the intricacy of the plot.
5. What I find irritating about detective novels is that I cannot ever anticipate the ending.
6. Education is what survives when what has been learnt has been forgotten.
— *B. F. Skinner*
7. Love doesn't make the world go 'round. Love is what makes the ride worthwhile. — *Franklin P. Jones*
8. People who talk of outlawing the atomic bomb are mistaken—what needs to be outlawed is war. — *Leslie Richard Groves*
9. The quality, not the longevity, of one's life is what is important. — *Dr. Martin Luther King Jr.*
10. It is the last drop that overflows the glass.

EXERCISE 64

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizili öğeleri vurgulayan IT-Cleft tümceleri kurunuz.

He wrote his best book last year.

It was last year that he wrote his best book.

1. Jack repaired his computer with his father last Sunday.
2. Helen played the flute with the school band last year.
3. The detective sent the stolen document to a secret agent.
4. We were on the beach in Antalya just yesterday.
5. They spent the winter in Bodrum in 2000.
6. He learned Spanish to be a diplomat.
7. She is preparing the document for the diplomat.
8. Researchers are trying to discover how to beat critical tension and achieve healthful relaxation.

EXERCISE 65

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizili öğeleri vurgulayan ayrik tümceler kurunuz.

Pollution is perhaps the greatest threat to the existence of the salmon.

It is pollution that is perhaps the greatest threat to the existence of the salmon.

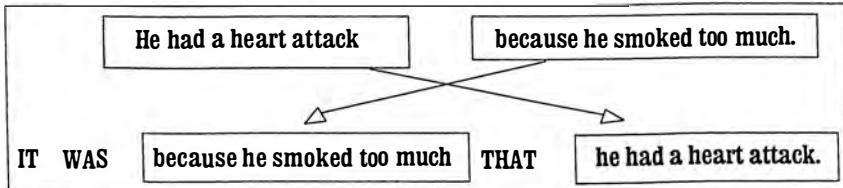
It is to the existence of the salmon that pollution perhaps the greatest threat.

1. Charles Stuart tried to rid America of slavery.
2. The abolitionists struggled to free the slaves in the United States.
3. Aluminum is found in great abundance in the earth's crust.
4. Learning to read and write Chinese is far more difficult than learning to read and write any Western language.
5. The Morning Star sailed from the Port of London at dawn.
6. Good manners are everywhere a passport to friendship and respect.
7. Bats possess a special kind of hearing capacity.
8. Man has developed all sorts of protections against nature.
9. Bacteria in water can be killed by boiling.
10. New York has the largest population of all cities in the United States.
11. The water buffalo is the most useful animal to the farmers of India and China.
12. The natives of the jungle region of India consider the elephant their greatest treasure.
13. In approximately 260 A.D., a massive volcanic eruption buried some Highlands of Central America in ash.

14. The condition of your heart is directly related to the amount of stress you regularly experience.
15. The oil embargoes of 1973-1975 caused vast chagrin among the manufacturers of automobiles around the world.
16. William Caxton introduced the art of printing into England in a remarkably short span of time.
17. Inflation hurts most the people who live on a fixed income.
18. The critics ignored his works during his lifetime. They recognized his great talent only after the posthumous publication of his last novel.
19. The sports page that enables a lot of evening papers to sell well.
20. Many people saw the futility of war during the Second World War.

ZARF TÜMCEKİLERİNİ VURGULAYAN AYRIK YAPILAR

Bir tümcede yer alan bir zarf tümceciği de diğer öğeler gibi IT-Cleft yapısı ile vurgulanabilir. Tümcenin kuruluşunda *IT IS ... THAT* yapısı herhangi bir ögenin vurgulanışındaki gibi kullanılır.



The Turkish government resorted to warfare in Cyprus only after all attempts at peaceful settlement had failed.

IT WAS only after all attempts at peaceful settlement had failed
THAT the Turkish government resorted to warfare in Cyprus.

He wrote his first science fiction novel while he was doing his military service.

IT WAS while he was doing his military service THAT he wrote his first science fiction novel .

EXERCISE 66

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde bulunan zarf tümceciklerini vurgulayan IT-Cleft tümceleri kurunuz.

Traveling by bus has become popular because it is very comfortable and enjoyable.

It is because travelling by bus is very comfortable and enjoyable that it has become very popular.

1. Because we want to help you to come to a decision, we are sending you samples by separate post.
2. When money transactions are on a large scale, cheques are more convenient than cash.
3. Banking assists trade since it provides a safe and easy means of making payments.
4. Because the factory is very busy, we cannot guarantee delivery before Saturday.
5. It usually takes many years for a cancer to develop after a person is exposed to one or more carcinogenic chemicals.
6. William McKinley was assassinated at a reception while he was shaking hands with some of the guests.
7. They didn't realize he was a gifted leader until after he had been elected.

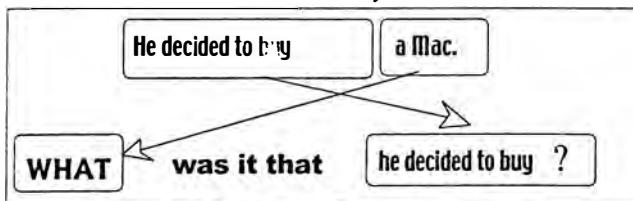
AYRIK TÜMCELERDEN YAPILAN SORULAR

IT-Cleft tümceleri, soru sözcükleriyle yapılan sorularda da kullanılabilir.

He decided to buy a Mac.

It was a Mac that he decided to buy.

What he decided to buy was a Mac.



It was a year ago that we last heard of them. (*when*)

When did we last hear of them?

When was it that we last saw them?

It is our future that we are worried about. (*what*)

What are you worried about?

What is it that you are worried about?

EXERCISE 67

Verilen soru sözcükleriyle başlayan ayrık yapılı sorular oluşturunuz.

1. It was during the Second World War that many people saw the futility of war. (**when**)
When was it that many people saw the futility of war?
2. It is not the politicians but the big businesses that determine the nation's policies. (**what**)
3. The fluctuation in the money market is what worries the economists. (**what**)
4. It is the neglect of timely repair that makes rebuilding necessary. (**what**)
5. It is because we fail to try that we become failures. (**why**)
6. It wasn't until after he had been elected that they realized he was a gifted leader. (**when**)
7. It was not until 1963 that Black people were allowed to eat in the same restaurants with white people. (**when**)
8. It is because we put up with bad things that hotel-keepers continue to give them to us. —*Anthony Trollope* (**why**)

EXERCISE 68

Verilen soru sözcükleriyle başlayan ayrık yapılı sorular oluşturunuz.

1. Acid rain has killed about 14,000 Canadian lakes. (**what**)
2. Acids formed by pollution from smokestacks and automotive exhaust pipes are devastating the food chain from plankton to waterfowl. (**what**)
3. In the United States some 10 to 12 percent of all teenage students fall into the category of exceptional children. (**where**)
4. People expect tact, sympathy, and understanding of the physician. (**what**)
5. Detective fiction was introduced into England by Wilkie Collins in 1868 with the publication of *The Moonstone*. (**when**)
6. The practice of medicine combines both science and art. (**what**)
7. In 1965-1966 mankind suffered a shocking defeat in what is now popularly called the "war on hunger." (**when**)
8. A few years ago a shortage of natural gas drove prices sky high. (**how long**)
9. It is a decade since we last had a good harvest. (**how long**)
10. After inventing dynamite, Swedish-born Alfred Nobel became a very rich man. (**when**)
11. In the United States alone, conservationists have estimated that over a hundred kinds of animals, fish and birds will disappear before the end of the century. (**when**)
12. Rare animals useful to the fashion industry are still hunted, even though we can now imitate their skins and furs with other products. (**why**)

Chapter 16

INVERSION DEVRİK TÜMCELER



Not only does your mother turn up uninvited, but she steals our broom every time she visits us.

DEVRİK TÜMCE NEDİR?

DEVRİK TÜMCELER NEDEN KURULUR?

Devrik tümce, öğelerinin "normal" dizilişi değiştirilmiş tümce olarak tanımlanmaktadır. Bu tanıma göre aşağıdakiler, koyu dizilmiş olan öğeler "normal" yerlerinde olmadığı için devrik tümcelerdir.

1. **Yesterday** Jack bought a computer.
2. **Because** he was short of money, he decided not to go abroad.
3. **Have** you heard about his latest guff?

Tümce 1 ve Tümce 2'de öğelerin yerlerinin değiştirilmesi konuşucunun tercihine gelmiştir ama Tümce 3'de devrik yapı soru tümcesi kurmak için zorunlu olarak kullanılmıştır.

İngilizce ile Türkçe sözdizimi karşılaştırıldığında göze çarpan ilk önemli farklardan biri, sözdizimi oynaklılığı arasındaki faktır.

England and France attacked China.

Bu tümce Türkçe'de 6 değişik şekilde kurulabilir.

1.	İngiltere ve Fransa	Çin'e	saldırdı.
2.	İngiltere ve Fransa	saldırdı	Çin'e.
3.	Saldırdı	Çin'e	İngiltere ve Fransa.
4.	Saldırdı	İngiltere ve Fransa	Çin'e.
5.	Çin'e	saldırdı	İngiltere ve Fransa.
6.	Çin'e	İngiltere ve Fransa	saldırdı.

England and France attacked China in 1856.

In 1856 England and France attacked China.

İngilizce'de **in 1856** tümcenin başına gelerek ikinci bir diziliş oluşturur. Türkçe'de ise **İngiltere ve Fransa 1856'da Çin'e saldırdı** tümcesi tam 24 değişik diziliş oluşturabilir.

İngilizce'de **England and France attacked China in 1856** tümcesi başka diziliş gösteremez mi? Türkçe'nin 24 dizilişine karşı İngilizce aşağıdakileri sunabilir.

It was England and France that attacked China.

It was China that England and France attacked in 1856.

It was in 1856 that England and France attacked China.

What England and France did in 1856 was to attack China.

What England and France did was to attack China in 1856.

Türk atasözü **YUVA YI DİŞİ KUŞ YAPAR** devrik bir tümcedir. Her Türk konuşurun anlayabileceği gibi **DİŞİ KUŞ YUVAYI YAPAR** tümcesi aynı anlamla gelmeyecektir.

Gerek İngilizce gerek Türkçe örneklerde tümce başına getirilen ögenin vurgulanmak istenen öğe olduğu görülmektedir.



Devrik tümceler, genellikle bir ögenin tümce başına taşınmasıyla yapılmaktadır. İngilizce'de soru yapımı, devrik tümce kuruluşi ile gerçekleştirilmektedir. Ayrıca devrik tümceler, bir ögenin vurgulanması için kullanılmaktadır.



INVERSION bölümünde sadece yardımcı eylemlerin ve zarflar dışındaki öğelerin tümce başına geldiği örnekleri inceleyeceğiz. **Yesterday he bought a computer** gibi tümceler inceleme dışı kalacaktır.

Aşağıda İngilizce temel devrik tümce türlerini toplu halde görüyoruz.

1. **Özellikle kısa tümcelerde yön gösteren zarflar tümce başına gelir. Yer zarfları özellikle de *COME, GO, SIT, STAND, LIE, WALK* gibi eylemlerle devrik tümce kurarlar.**



Away flew the birds.
 Down the street ran the thieves.
 From the room upstairs came sounds of a fight.
 Out the window flew the bird.
 Around the castle swarmed the enemy soldiers.
 Into the tunnel raced the train.
 Out of the airplane stepped the rock star.
 Here comes Jack.
 From the room upstairs came sounds of a fight.

2. Yansıma sözcükler (onomatopoeic words) devrik yapılarda kullanılır.

Crash went the tray of plates.

Bang went the door.

Bang went the starter's gun and off went the runners at a good pace.



3 . BE eyleminin tamamlayıcı öğeleri ile eylemlerin nesneleri vurgulanmak amacıyla tümce başına getirilir.



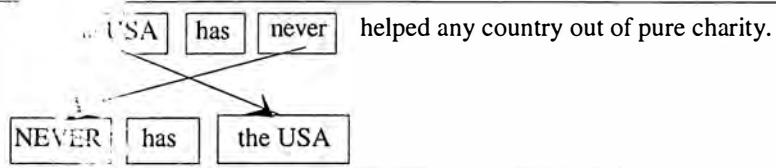
"No, thanks. Anything I need to know,
 my grandpa tells me."

She was rather good-hearted. ***Beautiful*** she was not.
 Americans are a wealthy nation. ***Civilized*** they are not!
 I don't mind English vanity; ***their hypocrisy*** I can't stand.

Happy is the man who is too busy to worry in the daytime and too sleepy to worry at night.

She keeps coming late to office. *That* I do not like.
The steak was nice, but *this salad* I don't like at all.

4. Oluşumlu anlamı içeren sıklık zarfları devrik tümce kurar..



Bu şekilde kullanılabilen sıklık zarfları şunlardır:

never
seldom

rarely
barely

hardly ever
scarcely

Never does a mirror tell a woman that she is ugly.

Never does he abandon his friends in trouble.

Seldom did the British Empire do anything good for humanity.

Rarely does a European country care about hunger in the world.

Hardly ever does a poor African family eat a good meal.

Scarcely had he left the office when the bomb exploded.

5. *LITTLE* ve *WELL* zarfları vurgulama için devrik yapılar kurar.

Well do I remember that night when the earthquake hit.

Little did he dream that his shop would turn into a giant market.

Little had our forefathers imagined that one could fly across the Atlantic Ocean in less than five hours.

Little did she imagine that she would be a movie star.

6. *NO* ile yapılan zarf öbekleri tümce başına getirildiğinde devrik tümce kurulur. *NOWHERE* de tümce başına gelip devrik tümce kurar. *FEW* de aynı şekilde kullanılabilir.

on no account	On no account must you divulge this information to anyone.
under no circumstances	Under no circumstances may you drive on the public highway without a valid driving license.
in no case	In no case shall they alter the original plan.
no longer	No longer do Americans feel so restricted by such code of morals as that practiced by the Puritans.

At no point in my speech did I say anything against the project.

For no other cause would I do such a thing.

Under no circumstances should you touch these wires.

In few European countries do you find tolerance for foreigners.

Nowhere in the United States are American Indians allowed to live happily.

7. NOT bir bağlaçla birlikte tümce başına geldiğinde devrik tümce kurulur.
Yine NOT bir adla birlikte tümce başına geldiğinde devrik tümce kurulur.

Not until	Not until the last decade did the computer become affordable.
Not before	Not before he apologizes, will I forgive him.
Not once	Not once did the British Empire respect human values.

Not until the potato was introduced into Ireland was it recognized for its great food value rather than as a curiosity.

Not a word did he utter.

Not a trace of the stolen money could they find.

Not until the last decade did the computer become affordable.

8. ONLY, bir zarfı niteleyerek tümce başında bulunduğu zaman devrik tümce kurulur.

Only when	Only when it is allowed to accumulate in large amounts is creosote <u>dangerous</u> .
Only in certain cases	Only in certain cases do we invert the word order.
Only today	Only today have some people seen through European double standards.
Only then	When white and black and brown and every other color decide they're going to live together as Christians, then and only then are we going to see an end to these troubles. — Barry M. Goldwater
Only before/after	Only after the posthumous publication of his last novel did they <u>recognize</u> his <u>great</u> talent.
Only by	Only by avoiding greed, can one find happiness in this world.
Only through	Only through hard work can one be truly happy.
Only with	Only with some music playing, can she study.
Only by chance/luck	Only by chance have they beaten us at chess.
Only with difficulty	Only with difficulty can one be a great inventor.
Only on rare occasions	Only on rare occasions have we done such a thing.

Only in the country can one find peace.

Only when it rains in spring, do farmers get a good harvest.

Only in certain cases do we invert the word order.

Only through curiosity can we discover opportunities.

9. *No sooner ... than / Hardly ...when/ Not only ... but also* bağlaçları tümce başına geldiğinde devrik tümce kurulur.

No sooner had the shop opened than hundreds of bargain hunters poured in.

Hardly had we hidden ourselves among the bushes when it began to rain.

Hardly had he recovered from influenza when he developed measles.

No sooner had we started to fish than it began to rain.

As a judge, not only must I be unbiased, but I must also avoid any evidence of partiality when I award the prize.

10. *NOR* bağlacı ile devrik tümce kurulur.

People on the kibbutz own nothing privately, nor do they earn money with which to buy things.

The gem cannot be polished without friction, nor can man be perfected without trials. – Chinese proverb

11. Sonuç zarf içtümceciklerinde *SO* ve *SUCH* bağlaçları tümce başına geldiğinde devrik tümce kurulur.

I was so terrified that I couldn't move a finger.

So terrified was I that I couldn't move a finger.

My terror was such that I couldn't move a finger.

Such was my terror that I couldn't move a finger.

So capable is she as a teacher that you can't find a better one.

12. Koşul tümcelerinde devrik tümce kurulabilir.

Type 1	<i>Should you run into any problems, give me a call.</i>
Type 2	<i>Had we not faults of our own, we should take less pleasure in complaining of others.</i> – Fénelon <i>There is a remedy for everything, could men find it.</i> <i>Were he to find a vacant house, he would be happy.</i> <i>Weep not that the world changes—did it keep a stable, changeless state, it were a cause indeed to weep.</i> –William Cullen Bryant
Type 3	<i>Had Cleopatra's nose been shorter, the whole history of world would have been different.</i> –Pascal <i>The sun, the moon and the stars would have disappeared long ago, had they happened to be within reach of predatory human hands.</i> <i>– Havelock Ellis</i>

If someone had not invented the elevator, people would never have built skyscrapers.

Had someone not invented the elevator, people would never have built skyscrapers.

Had James Watt not invented the steam engine in the 1700s, the Industrial Revolution would not have started.

13. NEITHER/NOR, SO ile yapılan tümce kısaltmalarında devrik tümce kurulur.

George Seldes does not trust the media, and

nor
neither

do I.

TOM: George Seldes thinks that the entire press is corrupt.

BOB: And so do most sensible people.

14. AS bağlacı ile devrik tümce kurulur.

The young businessman was exceptionally honest, as was his father.
Strangely, some black people believe, as do Europeans, that the white man should rule the world.

As is the mother, so is the daughter. Like mother, like daughter.

15. Karşılaştırma yapılarında kimi zaman THAMı devrik yapı izleyebilir.

Zebras and asses have shorter hair than do horses.

In assembling a staff, the conservative leader faces a greater problem than does the liberal. —R. Nixon

He attaches more attention to marketing strategies than did his father.

16. DOLAYSIZ ANLATIM aktarımında devrik yapı kullanılır.

"There is a unicorn in the garden" shouted the man.

"Don't be silly," said his wife.

17 Ünlem tümceleri devrik yapıyla kurulabilir.

Isn't it awful!

Am I fed up!

18. Zıtlık zarf içtümceciklerinin kimilerinde devrik tümce kullanılır.

Although he tried hard, the marathon runner never made up the distance he had lost.

However hard he tried, the marathon runner never made up the distance he had lost.

Try as he did, the marathon runner never made up the distance he had lost.

19. Yer gösteren ilgeç öbekleri tümce başında yer alabilir.

Next to each exhibit was a short paragraph explaining its purpose.

At the end of the street is a big vacant lot.

20. Eylem tümce başına alınabilir.

Succeed we must, at all cost - even if it means being a dead millionaire at fifty. —*Louis Kronenberger*

21. OF-öbeği tümce başına gelebilir.

Of paramount importance to today's car owner is the cost of gasoline.
Of great interest to the public is the transplanting of natural organs.

EXERCISE 69

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları kutudan uygun öğelerle doldurunuz.

account	after	so	never	until
no sooner	only		under	neither

- _____ had the United States invaded Iraq than people attacked American soldiers.
- _____ should you drive on the public highway without a valid driving license.
- _____ no circumstances did she let husband drink anything stronger than beer.
- Not _____ she put the phone down did she realize she had said the wrong thing.
- Only _____ he changed the spark plug, was he able to start the car.
- On no _____ must you touch these files.
- Not _____ did he take a rifle, he also took his hunting knife just in case.
- _____ by advertising nor by reducing the price will we succeed in selling this product.
- _____ thick was the fog that we couldn't even see the other side of the street.
- _____ again am I going to eat in that awful restaurant.

EXERCISE 70

Verilen öğelerle tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

- You are not to leave the building on any account.
On no account are you to leave the building.
- He didn't realize that he was going in the wrong direction.
Little _____
- You must not attempt to change the details in your passport under any circumstances.
Under no circumstances _____
- As soon as the rain started, the lights went out.
No sooner _____
- You will not find a better site for your house anywhere.
Nowhere _____

6. If you should make a mistake, don't worry.
Should _____
7. If ever he were to bring comfort to his folks, he would have to quit gambling.
Were _____
8. Americans no longer feel so restricted by such code of morals as that practiced by the Puritans.
No Longer _____
9. Our forefathers did not imagine that one could fly across the Atlantic Ocean in less than five hours.
Little _____
10. The baggage may not exceed thirty kilos in any case.
In no case _____

EXERCISE 71

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **SHOULD** ve **WERE** kullanarak devrik yapıya çeviriniz.

1. If you insult her, her husband will probably start a fight.
2. If you need some more medicine, come back again next week.
3. If you are found guilty, you will be mercilessly punished.
4. If someone stopped this noise, we would all be grateful.
5. If your father saw you here, he wouldn't recognize you..
6. If the USA attacked Iran today, we wouldn't be at all surprised.
7. If we moved to a larger villa, we could invite more people.
8. If you need a sophisticated computer, you'll have to go to a bigger shop.
9. If you made sensible suggestions, I wouldn't disagree with you.
10. If he leaves her all his money, she will be a considerable heiress.
11. If Freddy breaks off the engagement, will it cost him a lot of money?
12. If anything happened to Johnny, his parents would never survive the blow.

EXERCISE 72

Kutu içinde verilen öğeleri kullanarak devrik tümceler kurunuz.

at no time	no longer	no sooner ...than
not only ... but	not since	no sooner ...than
not until	on no account	

1. We will not send the merchandise until you send the check
2. I did not see the thief until I heard the noise.
3. She didn't know that her boss was there until she looked up from her computer.
4. Harry does not have to get pocket money from his father any longer.

5. The cigarette addict will not readily stop smoking until he is treated as a danger to nonsmokers.
6. There has, at no time, been a greater need for honest politicians in Turkey than right now.
7. I haven't eaten a dinner as good as this since my last birthday.
8. A disorderly and disrespectful man mustn't be allowed to make a speech on any account!
9. As soon as I come home in the evening, I switch on the television.
10. Mrs. Wilson watches TV all evening, and she has it on for breakfast as well.
11. As soon as they made the announcement, share prices began to rise.
12. Share prices rose, and the dollar recovered as well.
13. Just after we left, it started to come down in buckets.
14. Immediately we got to the hotel we collapsed, dead tired, into our beds.
15. His father owns half the land in the town and has bought three supermarkets.

EXERCISE 73

Kutu içinde verilen öğeleri kullanarak devrik tümceler kurunuz.

RARELY	SELDOM	LITTLE	NEVER
---------------	---------------	---------------	--------------

1. He has never been angry like this before.
2. Miss Smith rarely makes a spelling mistake.
3. The world has never known a greater statesman than Mustafa Kemal Atatürk.
4. The rich little realize how hard life is for the poor.
5. Children and men little appreciate the hard work of a housewife and a mother.
6. Miss Wilson hardly ever types a letter without any mistakes.
7. We little suspected when we started our holiday that the weather would be like this!
8. She'd no idea he was a man on the run from the police. (little/know)
9. We have seldom seen a man cry like that.
10. We had no idea we were going to make a fortune. (little/know)

EXERCISE 74

ONLY kullanarak aşağıdaki tümceleri devrik yapınız.

1. We could only save money by spending very carefully.
2. We saw the castle in the distance when a cold grey dawn had begun to break in the east.
3. A man begins truly to appreciate the qualities of a wife like mine only after thirty years of marriage.
4. One can have peace in this life only by avoiding greed altogether.

5. When a man has pity on all living creatures, he is noble. —*Budha*
 6. Man can reach the dawn of eternal peace only by justice, fairness, consideration and cooperation.
 7. The wastes of capitalism be tolerated only in time of peace. —*R. F. Scott*
 8. We can only change the world only by changing men. —*Charles Wells*
-
-

EXERCISE 75

Aşağıdaki tümceleri devrik yapınız.

1. The social pressures to make one drink are so strong that few can resist them.
 2. She was so terrified that she couldn't help shaking.
 3. The old woman was so overcome with emotion that two large tears rolled down her cheeks.
 4. She was so amazed by what she had heard that she stood there speechless.
 5. Television has recently become so harmful that some scholars have come to regard it as number one public enemy.
 6. The poor have so few chances to get an education that most get discouraged.
 7. There are so many corrupted politicians in the parliament that it is often impossible for honest people make their voices heard.
 8. The businessman became so desperate that he considered suicide as an alternative.
 9. The economic prospects are so discouraging that some businessmen have decided to stop production.
 10. Computers have become so necessary that no business can do without them.
 11. Television has made some semi-educated people so powerful that it is impossible to prevent them from harming the society.
 12. The British Empire was so cruel that she did not hesitate to kill thousands of Indians to stop Gandhi from reaching the ocean.
 13. The winter was so severe that only a few of the Indians were able to survive.
 14. The hate wave directed at Turks from Europe and USA is so intense that I am afraid it will eventually destroy all human love.
-
-

EXERCISE 76

Aşağıdaki tümceleri devrik yapınız.

1. If they hadn't told us, we could never have found out about it.
2. If they had not destroyed the evidence, the murderer would have been convicted.
3. If you had seen her do it, would you have stopped him?
4. I could have avoided this predicament, if I had been a bit more careful.

5. If the government had been prepared, could they have prevented the disaster?
6. If I had listened to the teacher and taken some notes, I could easily have done these exercises.
7. If you had explained how to operate the printer, I would have finished this work much earlier.
8. If we had not been so impatient, we could have sold the house at a higher price, couldn't we?
9. How much time would the scientist have saved if he had known about his contemporaries' research?
10. If you had not informed me in time, I would have been embarrassed.
11. If it had not been for that little boy, I wouldn't have found your house.
12. Her parents would have been disappointed if the boy had not graduated.
13. If they had not interfered with my plans, I would have found a job by now.
14. We would have been in trouble if the headmaster had seen us there.
15. If it had not been for the mild climate, the earthquake survivors could have died.

EXERCISE 77

Aşağıdaki parçada bulunan devrik yapıdaki tümcelerin altlarını çiziniz.

Paul Lane, the ecologist, is being interviewed by a TV reporter.

Reporter: Mr. Lane, do you really think man is destroying his environment?

Paul Lane: Yes, I do. And I think that this fact is only just becoming apparent to everyone, even though the process has been going on for decades. For example, not until now has it become popularly recognized that large-scale deforestation will eventually affect the earth's supply of oxygen.

Reporter: In what other way do you see our environment threatened?

Paul Lane: Well, never before has so much waste, particularly radioactive waste from nuclear power stations, been dumped in the sea. There must come a point when the earth's seas will become dangerously polluted if this process continues.

Reporter: Mr. Lane, is there any way we can avoid the ecological disaster you foresee?

Paul Lane: Of course. We must collectively consider the future and make sacrifices in the present. We must consume less of everything, seek alternative sources of energy and new sources of food. But only by forcing our politicians to take steps to ensure these things happen will we succeed in saving our environment from disaster. And, unfortunately, politicians are always very reluctant to take steps like these. Let's hope they take heed before it's too late.

EXERCISE 78

Aşağıda Karen Fogg hakkında söylenenleri devrik yapıya çeviriniz.

1. Karen Fogg, ambassador to the EU, has never done her work properly.
2. We did not realize that Karen Fogg was a true enemy of Turkey until her e-mail messages were discovered.
3. Karen Fogg's words about Turkey were so insulting that we were all shocked.
4. Karen Fogg seldom appeared in pro-Turkish meetings.
5. Karen Fogg did not visit pro-Turkish associations even once.
6. Karen Fogg not only spoke favourably of terrorism but actually supported terrorism against Turkey.
7. We have found Karen Fogg tolerable only in few cases.
8. We understand well that Karen Fogg was determined to do anything in her power to harm Turkey.
9. Karen Fogg not only sowed Turkish enmity but continued to cultivate it.
10. Turkish citizens have never been insulted like this in the history of Turkish Republic.

EXERCISE 79

Aşağıdaki parçayı devrik tümceler kurarak yeniden yazınız.

The thieves had hardly got round the corner when the engine of their car stalled. They jumped out and ran off up the street. Just at that moment a couple of police cars drove up. Windows flew open all along the street and a lot of heads popped out to watch the chase. A church stands at the top of the street; one of the fugitives darted into it. Nothing like this had ever happened in our street before. If I hadn't seen it with my own eyes I wouldn't have believed it.



Aşağıda devrik tümcelerin vurgulama ifade etmek için nasıl kullanıldığını örnekleyen bir alıntı sunuyoruz: Yazar, Bush'un dünya lideri olduğunu düşünenleri kastederek "Aman Tanrıım, bazı insanların ne kadar düşük standartları olabiliyor," diyor.

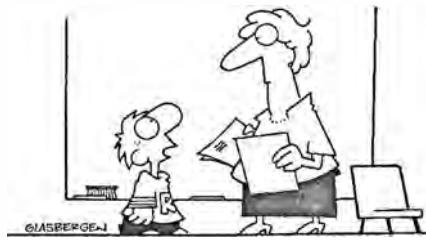
11 September was the best thing that ever happened to George War Bush, politically speaking, and we're not the only ones to say this. In some people's minds this Bush became legitimate on that day and became a "world leader." Man, do some people have the lowest of standards!

Chapter 17

SHORTENED RESPONSES AND STATEMENTS

KISA YANITLAR VE TÜMCELER

too, either, so, neither, nor, but



"I couldn't do my homework because my computer has a virus, and so do all my pencils and pens."

Aşağıda dünyada karşılaşımiş iki Marsının konuşmalarında SO, NEITHER, EITHER ve TOO'nun ortak öğelerin atılmasını nasıl sağladıklarını görüyoruz.



- | | |
|------|-------------------------------------|
| HE: | Hello, I am from Mars. |
| SHE: | What a coincidence! So am I! |
| HE: | I have come to Earth to find a job. |
| SHE: | So have I. |
| HE: | But I can't speak Earthish! |
| SHE: | Neither can I. |
| HE: | Fortunately, I like the food here. |
| SHE: | I do, too. |
| HE: | I don't like the traffic, though. |
| SHE: | I don't, either. |

Aşağıdaki fıkradı hakimin SO kısaltmasını kullandığını görüyoruz.

"You're a danger to pedestrians," the judge said to the defendant. "I must revoke your license."

"But, your Honor," protested the reckless driver, "my living depends on my driving my car."

"So does the pedestrian's," replied the judge.

İki tümcenin eylem öbekleri aynı ise, bir kez ifade edilen eylem öbeğinin ikinci kez tekrarını önlemek için kısaltmaya başvurulur. Olumlu tümcelerde **too/so**, olumsuz tümcelerde **either/nor, neither** kullanılır.

Ali likes computers, { and his father does too.
and so does his father.

Ali doesn't like horror films, { and his mother doesn't, either.
and neither does his mother.



TOO ve EITHER, Türkçedeki *dahi* sözcüğüyle {de} ekinin karşılığı olarak kullanılmaktadır. Bu sözcükler, kısaltılmamış tümcelerle de kullanılabilirler. Nitekim katırdeki iki mahkum Dr. Smith hakkında konuşuyor olmalıdır.

First Prisoner: *My plastic surgeon was Dr. Smith.*

Second Prisoner: *Hey, he was my plastic surgeon, too.*

First Prisoner: *I like Dr. Smith.*

Second Prisoner: *I do, too.*

Bundan sonra mahkum birinci tümcesinde TOO'yu kısaltılmamış bir tümcede kullanırken, ikinci tümcesinde kısaltılmış yapıda kullanmıştır. Aşağıdaki konuşmada da birinci mahkumun ikinci tümcesinde EITHER kısaltılmış tümcede kullanılmıştır.

First Prisoner: *Dr. Smith didn't charge me too much.*

Second Prisoner: *He didn't charge me too much, either.*

First Prisoner: *I haven't heard from him for a long time.*

Second Prisoner: *I haven't, either.*



TOO olumlu tümcelerle, EITHER olumsuz tümcelerle kullanılmalıdır.

Yukarıdaki konuşmalar aşağıdaki gibi de geçebilirdi.

First Prisoner: *I like Dr. Smith.*

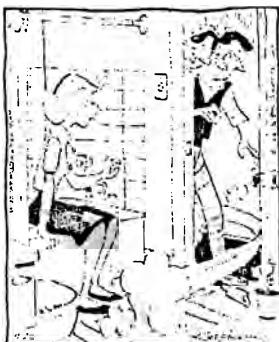
Second Prisoner: *So do I.*

First Prisoner: *I haven't heard from him for a long time.*

Second Prisoner: *Neither have I. / Nor have I.*



1. **SO** olumlu tümcelerle kullanılır.
2. **NEITHER / NOR** olumsuz tümcelerle kullanılır.
3. Bu sözcükler devrik yapılar kurarlar.



*"When the water starts running,
so does he!"*

TOO/EITHER, SO/NEITHER, NOR sözcüklerinin kullanımı aşağıdaki tabloda gösteriyoruz.

	Olumlu Tümce	Olumsuz Tümce
TOO	Bob: I am very tired. Tom: <i>I am, too.</i>	
EITHER		Bob: I don't trust politicians. Tom: <i>I don't, either.</i>
SO	Bob: I am very tired. Tom: <i>So am I.</i>	
NEITHER		Bob: I don't trust politicians. Tom: <i>Neither do I. / Nor do I.</i>



İngilizce'de iki tense'te olumlu düz tümcelerde yardımcı eylem gizlidir. Kısaltılmış tümcelerde yardımcı eylemler kullanılacaktır.

Ali: I like swimming.

Bill: *So do I.*

Ali: I went to the library yesterday.

Bill: *So did I.*



SO ve **NEITHER** devrik yapılar kurmaktadır.



NEITHER olumsuzluk göstermesine rağmen, tümce olumlu görünüşündedir.

Ali: I didn't like the movie.

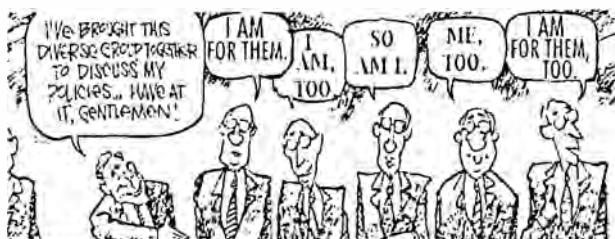
Bill: *Neither did I.*

OLUMLU TÜMCELERDE TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEMLER



I	am was do did have had	,	TOO .
We You They	are were do did have had	,	TOO .
He She It	is was does did has had	,	TOO .

SO	am was do did have had	I.	
SO	are were do did have had	we. you. they.	
SO	is was does did has had	he. she. it.	



☞ Karikatürist, Başkan Bush'un hangi özelliğini eleştiriyor?

KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ

you	will would	,	too.
he	can		
she	could		
it	must		
we	should		
they			

So	will would can could must should	I. you. he. she. it. we. they.
-----------	---	--



OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I	am not wasn't don't didn't haven't hadn't	,	EITHER .	NEITHER	am was do did have had	I.
We You They	aren't weren't don't didn't haven't hadn't	,	EITHER .	NEITHER	are were do did have had	we. you. they.
He She It	isn't wasn't doesn't didn't hasn't hadn't	,	EITHER .	NEITHER	is was does did has had	he. she. it.

KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ

I	won't wouldn't can't couldn't mustn't shouldn't	,	either.	Neither	will would can could must should	I. you. he. she. it. we. they.
---	--	---	----------------	----------------	---	--

YARDIMCI EYLEMLER VE KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ İLE KISALTMALAR

God cannot change the past, but historians **can**.

Yukarıdaki sözün sahibi, tarihçilerin, geçmiş olayları aşırı derecede çarptıklarına inanıyor olmalı. Tanrıının bile tarihi değiştiremediğini söylemek tarihçilerin gerçekleri ne kadar çarptıklarını vurgulamak istiyor. Aşağıdaki tümcelerin biri olumlu diğeri olumsuzdur. İki tümcede **change the past** öbeği ortaktır.

God	cannot	change the past.
Historians	can	change the past.

İki tümce zıtlık gösterdiğiinden BUT ile birleştirilmiş ve ortak öğe atılmıştır.
Good cannot change the past, but historians can change the past.

Fruit juice *is* beneficial, but Coke *isn't*.

I *can't* cook, but my brother *can*.

I *bought* a new computer, but Jack *didn't*.

Jack *didn't* buy a new computer, but I *did*.

Some families *teach* children right from wrong, but some families *don't*.

Ali likes computers, BUT his mother doesn't.

Ali doesn't like horror films, BUT his brother does.

Aşağıdaki karikatürde Hagar, “fought through mud, smoke and grime to final victory” öbeğini yinelememek için DID yardımcı eylemini kullanıyor: **Most of us did**. Burada DID yardımcı eyleminin bütün eylem öbeği “fought through mud, smoke and grime to final victory” yerine geçtiğini görüyoruz.



EXERCISE 80

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerdeki gibi birleştiriniz.

We *go* swimming every day. They don't *go* swimming every day.

... go swimming every day, but they don't.

She is a not hardworking student. Her brother is a hardworking student.
She is not a hardworking student, but her brother is.

1. These books belong to you. Those notebooks do not belong to you.
2. I haven't made any mistakes. You have made some mistakes.
3. The whites live in comfort. The blacks do not live in comfort.
4. Aspirin can help you. This painkiller can't help you.
5. Speed is desirable. Haste is not desirable.
6. She didn't come on time. I came on time.
7. Eating well will make you live longer. Overeating won't make you live longer.
8. You can't help her. I can help her.
9. I have been to England. My wife hasn't been there.
10. The USA has biological weapons. Turkey does not have biological weapons.



Eylem öbeklerinde farklı yardımcı eylemler olan tümceler de birleştirilebilir.

Restaurants *should be* clean at all times, but most *aren't*.

You *must be* ready for action any time, but you *aren't*.

1st boy: "My father can beat up your father."

2nd boy: "Big deal !!! So can my mother."



EXERCISE 81

Aşağıdaki örneklerdekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Bob: Jack's in love with Ann. (Ted)

Tom: *So is Ted!*

Bob: I can't stand European hypocrisy. (I)

Tom: *Neither can I.*

1. I'd like a glass of beer. (I)
2. I can't stand television. (my parents)
3. Mr. Miller weighs at least 200 pounds! (my brother)
4. I hadn't noticed her. (they)
5. I've got a good job. (Helen)
6. I've never met his wife. (I)
7. Fred made out all right. (we)
8. I don't believe in miracles. (I)
9. Alice couldn't wait any longer. (her parents)
10. I'll never tell anybody about it. (I)
11. He wants a little peace. (his wife)
12. You shouldn't swear so much! (you)
13. Joe hasn't finished his chores yet. (anybody else)
14. Ruth refuses to face the truth. (you)
15. I demand an explanation. (our boss)

EXERCISE 82

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerdekine benzer şekilde tamamlayınız.

I loved the show, and my son *did, too*.

Jack didn't help me, and Tom *didn't, either*.

1. The staging was wonderful, and the costumes _____.
2. He'd seen the show three times, and his wife _____.
3. That woman should keep quiet, and her husband _____.
4. Larry was highbrow, and his friends _____.
5. Mother likes mystery stories, and I _____.
6. I know I'm dumb, but those guys at the garage _____.
7. You can't arrange these things, and I _____.
8. She hasn't been around for years and you _____.
9. You won't find a clue, and the detectives _____.
10. The boy hadn't had supper, and Mrs. Jones _____.
11. Mrs. Jones was angry, and the boy _____.
12. She wouldn't forget, and Roger _____.
13. Alan couldn't believe it, and Diana _____.
14. This mixture isn't expensive, and the love potion _____.
15. She doesn't care about it, and I _____.

"Your wife isn't the only one. I don't understand you, either."

**EXERCISE 83**

Aşağıdaki örneklerdekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

I can't stand beer. (I)

And neither can I.

Jack likes to travel. (his wife)

And so does his wife.

You shouldn't smoke so much. (your wife)

I'm getting chillier by the minute. (the children)

We didn't eat any candies. (you)

I keep wondering why he did it. (his father)

He's always complaining about something. (his wife)

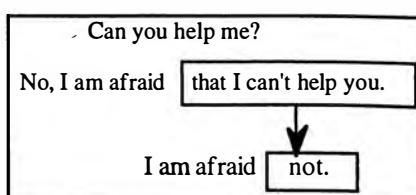
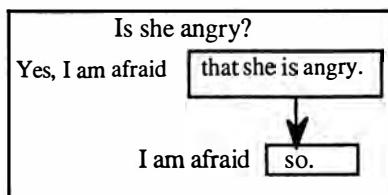
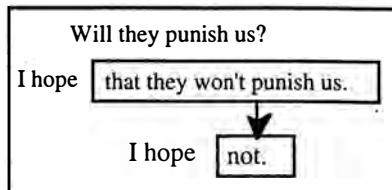
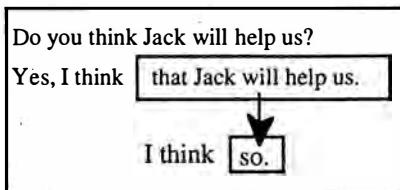
This lighter won't work. (mine)

7. I haven't seen her for days. (her family)
8. I'd like to cash a check. (my friend)
9. He'll never face the truth. (his son)
10. She hadn't made up her mind. (her husband)
11. Italy supports terrorism. (Belgium)
12. Jane's difficult to please. (her mother)
13. I don't like war movies. (my son)
14. She couldn't answer the questions. (her mother)
15. We will be on vacation next week. (Our neighbours)
16. She is not a very good chess player. (I)
17. We have never traveled overseas. (the Browns)
18. Smoking endangers your health. (overeating)
19. The Russians suffered heavy losses in World War II. (the Germans)
20. Christopher Columbus had no respect for human life. (the other Spanish explorers)

DÜŞÜNCE VE SÖZ EYLEMLERİYLE SO ve NOT KISALTMASI



Belli düşünce ve söz eylemlerinin aldığı THAT-tümceciği nesnelerin yerine SO ve NOT kullanılarak kısaltma yapılmaktadır. AFRAID sıfatından sonra kullanılan THAT-tümcecikleri de aynı şekilde kısaltmaktadır.





The normal response is "I do".
Not "I suppose so".

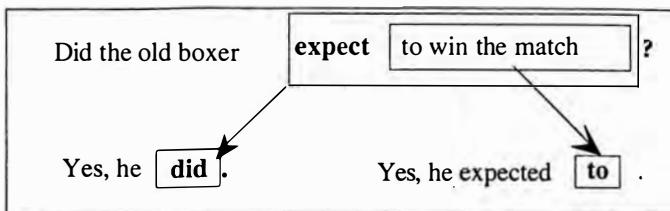
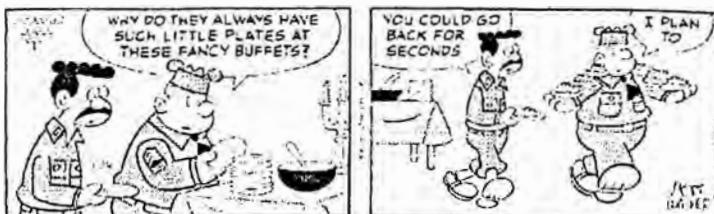
believe expect	guess hope	say suppose	tell think	trust
Is she coming to the party?		I believe so.		
Is he going to London tomorrow?		I think so.		
Are they at the theatre this evening?		I think so.		
Has David gone home?		Yes, I think so.		
Will it rain today?		Yes, I think not.		
Have the Browns sold their house yet?		Yes, I suppose so.		
Do the Brooks live in Sunnyville?		Yes, I think so.		
Is that your coat?		No, I don't think so.		
Are you going to the theatre this evening?		No, I don't think so.		
Has David finished his work yet?		Yes, I believe so.		
Did Tom buy a new car?		No, I believe not.		
Can Susan swim very well?		No, I don't think so.		
Will the USA attack Iran?		I hope not.		
Are you going to the seaside tomorrow?		Yes, I hope so.		
Have they any eggs at the farm?		I hope so.		
Is Tom going to take you to the theatre?		Yes, I hope so.		
Has David found his pen?		I hope so.		
Does Mr. Cobb want these letters before lunch?		Yes, he said so.		
Did Tom and Susan enjoy the play?		Yes, they said so.		
Is Mr. Brown going to London tomorrow?		He didn't say so.		
Did he meet Tom in London?		He didn't say so.		

EXERCISE 84

- Aşağıdaki sorulara SO ya da NOT kullanarak yanıt veriniz.
 1. Will the scientists find a cure for AIDS in the near future?
 I am afraid not.

2. Will you be happy?
I expect so.
3. Will Galatasaray beat Real Madrid?
4. Will all the politicians ever be honest?
5. Do you think man will ever put an end to war?
6. Will some countries continue to support terrorism?
7. Are you planning to buy a new car?
8. You are sneezing. Have you caught a cold?
9. Has your father got an increase in his salary?
10. Did your mother buy you a present for your birthday?
11. Can you quit smoking soon?
12. Is it true that your friend inherited a fortune?
13. Is it true she inherited a lot of money?
14. It was an accident, wasn't it?
15. The British Empire has always been just, hasn't it?

INFINITIVE ÖBEKLERİNİN KISALTILMASI



Infinitive öbeklerini nesne olarak belli eylemlerle, ortak infinitive öbeğin yerine sadece TO kullanılarak kısaltma yapılabilir.

agree	forget	mean	plan	try
ask	hope	offer	refuse	want
expect	intend	persuade	tell	would like
fail	manage			

EXERCISE 85

Aşağıdaki sorulara örneklerdeki gibi yanıt veriniz.

1. Do you expect to beat him at chess? (expect-YES)
Yes, I expect to.
2. Did he tell Judy to wash the dishes? (tell-NO)
No, he didn't tell her to.
3. Would she like to have something to eat? (would like-YES)
4. Did she ask Jake to get her a hot dog? (ask-NO)
5. Did you mail the letters? (NO-forget)
No, I forgot to.
6. Were they planning to have dinner together? (plan-NO)
7. Did your brother wash the dishes? (NO-refuse)
8. Did Jake try to find a cheaper apartment? (try-YES)
9. Was his wife planning to give him a divorce? (NO)
10. Did she finally see a doctor? (agree-YES)
11. Had he intended to sell his business? (NO)
12. Have you expected him to finish the project on time? (YES)



*"I took the car, dear-
unfortunately so did the police."*

EXERCISE 86

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda **TO**, **SO** veya **NOT** kullanınız.

1. Will they be back in time for the game?
— I don't think **SO**. (yani *I don't think that they'll be back in time.*)
2. Will you see them before they leave?
— I expect **TO**. (yani *I expect to see them.*)
3. I'll get us some sandwiches if you'd like me _____.
— What's the matter? Isn't she feeling well?
— I'm afraid _____.
— Do you think we'll be able to get tickets?
— I certainly hope _____.

6. They kept right on smoking even though I asked them not ____.
7. Helen says he insulted her, but he insists he didn't mean ____.
8. —Tom's going to invite Alice to go to the game.
—What makes you think ____?
9. They may have to leave next week, but I hope ____.
10. Of course you can put them off, if you want ____.
11. —Do you think he'll stop by this evening?
—I don't suppose ____.
12. He looked bored to death though he tried hard not ____!
13. —Will your parents move to New York?
—They want ____, but they can't afford it.
14. —Is it true she inherited a lot of money?
—I believe ____.
15. They said it was an accident, but I don't think ____.



Yukarıdaki karikatürde vergi mükellefi ile vergi memuru arasında geçen konuşmada vergi memurunun kısa tümceleri söyle değerlendirilmelidir.

VERGİ MÜKELLEFİ	VERGİ MEMURU
<i>As God is my judge,</i>	He is not!! (God is not your judge.)
<i>I don't owe these taxes.</i>	I am!! (I am your judge.)
	You do!! (You owe these taxes.)

Zenci şair Langston Hughes kendi halkını överken kısaltılmış yapıları kullanıyor.

My People
Langston Hughes

*The night is beautiful,
So (are) the faces of my people.*

*The stars are beautiful,
So (are) the eyes of my people.*

Beautiful, also, is the sun.

PART TWO

QUESTIONS

CHAPTER 18
CHAPTER 19

Questions
Tag Questions

191
220

Chapter 18

QUESTIONS

SORULAR



*"Is this baggy sweatshirt in style,
or is it just too big for me?"*

İngilizce soru tümceleri, temel olarak yardımcı eylemin tümce başına getirilmesi ile kurulan devrik yapılardır.

1. Soru yapımında, tümcede bir yardımcı eylem yoksa, TO BE eylemi yardımcı eylem gibi davranışır ve tümce başına gelir.

This baggy sweatshirt <i>is</i> in style.	Is this baggy sweatshirt in style?
The trip <i>was</i> very expensive.	Was the trip very expensive?

2. Soru sözcükleriyle yapılan sorularda, soru sözcüğü tümcenin öznesini söylerse, tümcenin sözdiziminde herhangi bir değişiklik olmaz.

Jack	made the coffee.
Who	made the coffee?

3. Simple past düz tümcelerde eylemin PAST şekli kullanılırken sorularda yalnız şekli kullanılır.

He <i>opened</i> the safe.	Did he open the safe?
----------------------------	------------------------------

4. Simple present tense için yardımcı eylemler DO ve DOES'dır. Üçüncü tekil işçiler oznelerle eylemin sonunda kullanılan {-s} takısı sorularda kalkar.

She <i>knows</i> Turkish.	Does she know Turkish?
---------------------------	-------------------------------

Soruları genel olarak ikiye ayıralım:

- 1. Yardımcı Eylemlerle Başlayan Sorular (YES/NO Questions)**
- 2. Soru Sözcükleriyle Başlayan Sorular (QW-Questions)**

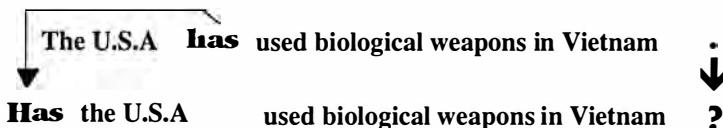


Dennis, *Curiosity killed the cat* deyimini bilmiyor. Babasına bu deyimle ilgili olarak şu soruları soruyor:

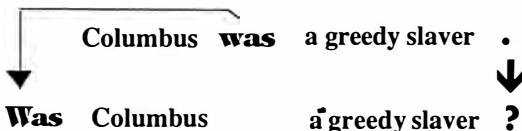
*How did curiosity kill the cat?
Which cat was it?
Whose cat was it?
Why did curiosity kill the cat?
When did curiosity kill the cat?
Where did curiosity kill the cat?
And who is curiosity?*

Yardımcı Eylemlerle Başlayan Sorular

Bir tümceyi soru şecline sokmak için yardımcı eylemi tümce başına getirmek gereklidir.



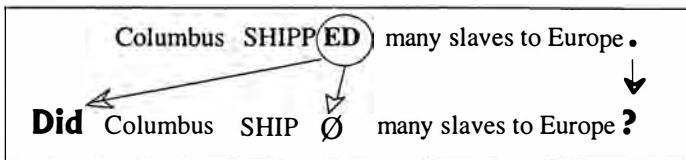
Tümcenin eylemi *TO BE* ise, yardımcı eylem gibi başa getirilir.



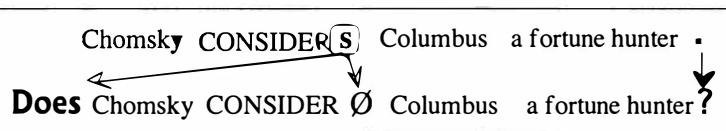
İngilizce tümcelerde iki "tense" düz tümcelerde yardımcı eylemlerini gizlemektedir.

Past tense Yard. Eylem: DID	Columbus shipped about 5,000 Native American slaves to Europe.
Present Tense Yardımcı Eylemler: DO ve DOES	Some Americans still think Columbus was a hero. Noam Chomsky considers Columbus a merciless fortune hunter.

Past tense'te bir tümce soru yapılarken eylemin yalnız şekline döndürülmesi gereklidir.



Present tense'te düz tümcelerde özne 3. tekil kişiyse, eylem {-s} takısı almalıdır. Soru yapılarken bu takı düşer.



HAVE eylemi Amerikan İngilizcesinde diğer eylemler gibi işlem görür. İngiliz İngilizcesindeyse BE eylemi gibi kullanılır.

<i>HAVE you a screwdriver?</i>	<i>Do you have a screwdriver?</i>
<i>HAS she any matches?</i>	<i>Does she have any matches?</i>

Düzen tenselerde yardımcı eylemler düz tümcelerde de görülmektedir.



"Hold on. I will ask her."

OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Olumsuz sorularda yardımcı eylemle **NOT**'ın birleştirilmiş şekli (contraction) tümce başında yer alır.

am not

aren't

is not

isn't

was

wasn't

were

weren't

do not

don't

did not

didn't

has not

hasn't

have not

haven't

had not

hadn't

may not

mayn't (RARE)

might not

mightn't

cannot

can't

could not

couldn't

will not

won't

would

wouldn't

shall not

shan't (RARE)

should

shouldn't

must not

mustn't

ought not to

oughtn't to

need not

needn't

dare not

daren't



Olumsuz sorularda genel olarak **ISN'T**, **HASN'T** gibi birleştirilmiş şekiller başa getirilir. Resmi dilde ya da vurgulama amacıyla **NOT** eski yerinde kalabilir.

Has he not been our supporter?

Is he not a loyal club member?

Olumsuz sorular, vurgulama açısından olumlu sorulardan farklı olabilirler.

Can you repair this machine? (Bu makinayı tamir edebilir misin?)

Can't you repair this machine? (Bu makinayı tamir edebileceğini düşünüyorum.)



*"Don't you have
any credit references
other than God?"*



*"Didn't I tell you this was a topless
restaurant?"*

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR TABLOSU

Soru yapılrken başa getirilecek olan yardımcı eylemler koyu dizilmiştir.

Simple Present with BE	Are whales intelligent?	Aren't whales intelligent ?
Simple Present with verbs other than BE	Do you like Ankara? Does he know Esperanto?	Don't you like Ankara? Doesn't he know Esperanto?
Present Cont.	Is she cleaning the house? Am I a careless speaker?	Isn't she cleaning the house? Am I not a good driver? Aren't I a good driver?
Simple Past with BE	Was Columbus a greedy man? Were they your guests?	Wasn't Columbus a greedy man? Weren't they your guests?
Simple Past verbs other than BE	Did Churchill drink too much?	Didn't Churchill drink too much?
Past Cont.	Were they playing well?	Weren't they playing well?
Present Perfect	Have rich countries exploited poor countries? Has he written a novel?	Haven't rich countries exploited poor countries? Hasn't he written a novel?
Pres. Perf. Cont.	Have American companies been exploiting poor countries?	Haven't American companies been exploiting poor countries?
Past Perfect	Had the earthquake devastated the whole city?	Hadn't the earthquake devastated the whole city?
Past Perf. Cont.	Had she been jogging?	Hadn't she been jogging?
Future	Will we have better housing in the future?	Won't we have better housing in the future?
Future Cont.	Will you be living here next year?	Won't you be living here next year?
Future Perfect	Will the poor countries have been even poorer?	Won't the poor countries have been even poorer?
Fut. Perf. Cont.	Will we have been cleaning our lakes?	Won't we have been cleaning our lakes?

KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ SORULARI

CAN	Can antibiotics overcome diseases <u>very quickly</u> ?	Can't antibiotics overcome diseases <u>very quickly</u> ?
SHOULD	Should we stop pollution as soon as possible?	Shouldn't we send men to the moon?
MUST	Must he go on a diet?	Mustn't he go on a diet?
NEED	Need she have well-balanced meals?	Needn't she have well-balanced meals?
BE GOING TO	Are you going to come with us?	Aren't you going to come with us?
WOULD	Would you prefer a <u>peaceful</u> life?	Wouldn't you prefer a <u>peaceful</u> life?
COULD	Could we go for a sail on the lake?	Couldn't we go for a sail on the lake?
SHOULD HAVE	Should they have started earlier?	Shouldn't they have started earlier?
COULD HAVE	Could she have bought a house?	Couldn't she have bought a house?
MUST HAVE	Must he have entered the <u>building at night</u> ?	Mustn't he have entered the <u>building at night</u> ?
HAVE TO	Do I have to quit smoking?	Don't I have to quit smoking?
HAD TO	Did she have to stay here?	Didn't she have to stay here?
USED TO	Did she use to be a wealthy woman?	Didn't she use to be a wealthy woman?
OUGHT TO	Ought he to eat less?	Oughtn't he to eat less?
MIGHT	She might help us, mightn't she?	She might not be what she says she is, might she?
DARE (rarely used)	Dare he speak to his boss?	Doesn't he dare to speak his boss?

TERCİH SORULARI



"Neither. It is a squirrel."

Yardımcı eylemlerle başlayan sorular, YES/NO Questions diye bilinmektedir. Bunun nedeni bu soruların yanıtlarının YES ya da NO ile verilebilmesidir. Yardımcı eylemlerle başlayan sorular OR sözcüğü içeriyoara, bir tercih yapılması istediği için, yanıt da YES ya da NO ile verilememektedir.

Is he an engineer or a doctor?	He is a doctor.
Would you prefer tea or coffee?	Tea, please.



OR ile yapılan ikram sorularında iki ayrı ezgileme iki ayrı anlamla kullanılır.

Would you like tea or coffee

**Çay mı kahve mi
istiyorsun?**

Would you like tea or coffee?

**Çay ya da kahve
ister misin?**

EXERCISE 87

İşte daki tümceleri soru şecline sokunuz.

- Food is the first necessity of life.
- Carbohydrates occur in the form of starches and sugar.
- Vegetables were known to the Romans.
- We can enjoy crisp, colorful vegetables served, either raw or cooked, to suit our taste regardless of the season of the year.
- Food must tempt the palate as well as the eye.

6. Centuries before the development of mechanical refrigeration, spices were used as a food preservative.
7. Herbs are the leaves of plants. They may be used fresh, dried, or powdered.
8. We should buy bulk food rather than packaged when available.
9. The appearance of the table will add to or detract from the enjoyment of any meal.
10. Table manners have an interesting history.
11. The spoon was suggested by shells that primitive man used when eating food.
12. Stainless steel flatware has won a respected place on our tables.
13. Today plastic dishes are widely accepted.
14. All dishes used for the serving of a meal need not match.
15. Such fruits as apples, pears, peaches, and bananas darken quickly when cut.
16. Some people are under the impression that anyone can prepare toast.
17. Toast made from whole-grain bread has a good nut-like flavor.
18. Cooking lowers the nutritive value of most vegetables.
19. The kitchen can be a dangerous place unless the rules of safety are observed.
20. A good system helps speed dishwashing.

Aşağıdaki şarkıkda Bob Dylan bütün insanlığa seslenerek önemli sorular soruyor.

BLOWING IN THE WIND

Bob Dylan

*How many roads must a man walk down
before you can call him a man?*

*Yes'n how many seas must a white dove sail
before she sleeps in the sand?*

*Yes'n how many times must the cannonballs fly
before they're forever banned*

*The answer my friend, is blowin' in the wind
the answer is blowin' in the wind*

*How many times must a man look up
before he can see the sky?*

*How many ears must one man have
before he can hear people cry?*

*How many deaths will it take till he knows
that too many people have died*

*The answer my friend, is blowin' in the wind
the answer is blowin' in the wind*

SORU SÖZCÜKLERİYLE BAŞLAYAN SORULAR



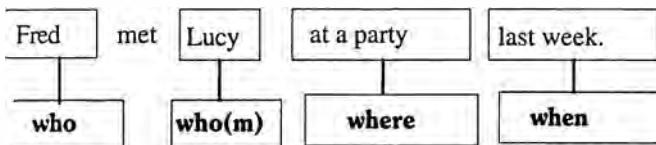
"I give up, Junior. What has four legs and flies?"

Soru sözcükleriyle yapılan sorular, yardımcı eylemlerle yapılan sorulara göre daha çeşitlidir. Yine de soru oluşturmanın yöntemi oldukça basittir.

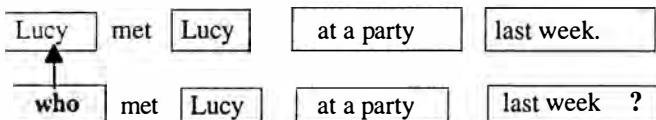
İngilizce'deki yaygın soru sözcükleri şunlardır:

who	which	where
whom	whose	when
what	how	why

Soru sözcükleri tümcede belli öğeleri sorarlar.



İkinci dikkat edilecek şey, soru sözcüğünün tümcenin öznesini sorup sormadığıdır. Eğer soru sözcüğü özneyi soruyorsa, soru işleminde yapılacak tek şey, öznenin yerine soru sözcüğünün yazılmasıdır.



Eğer soru sözcüğü tümcenin öznenin dışında bir öğesini soruyorsa, soru işlemi - gibi uygulanır. Örnek olarak, soru sözcüğünün zaman öğesini düşünelim. Bu durumda soru sözcüğümüz **WHEN** olacaktır.

İŞLEM 1: Soru sözcüğünü sorduğu ögenin yerine koy.

Fred met Lucy at a party ~~last week~~
when

İŞLEM 2: Tümceyi yardımcı eylemiyle soru yap.

Fred met Lucy at a party ~~last week~~
when

did Fred meet Lucy at a party when

İŞLEM 3: Soru sözcüğünü tümcenin başına getir.



When did Fred meet Lucy at a party ?

Soru sözcüklerinin kullanımını bir örnekle daha gösterelim.

WHO		WHERE	WHEN	BY WHOM
King	was killed	in Memphis	in 1968	by J. E. Ray
WHO	— was killed	in Memphis	in 1968	by J. E. Ray
WHERE	was King killed	—	in 1968	by J. E. Ray
WHEN	was King killed	in Memphis	—	by J. E. Ray
BY WHOM	was King killed	in Memphis	in 1968	—
HOW	was King killed	in Memphis	in 1968	by J. E. Ray
WHY	was King killed	in Memphis	in 1968	by J. E. Ray

EXERCISE 88

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizili öğeleri soran soru tümceleri yapınız.

1. Mark Twain wrote a great satire of American imperialism.

Who wrote a great satire of American imperialism?

What did Mark Twain write?

2. The little girl ate too many green apples yesterday.

Who ate too many green apples yesterday?

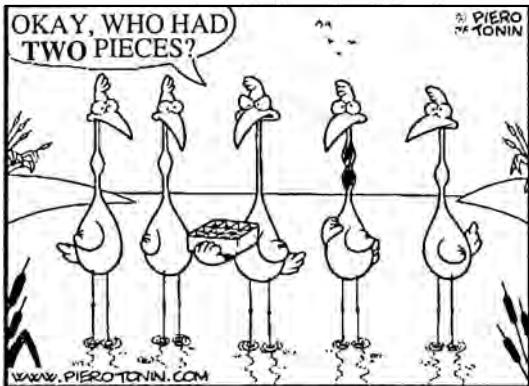
What did the little girl eat yesterday?

When did the little girl eat too many apples?

3. The Alps have about seventy peaks.
4. The little boy has watched the ants carefully.
5. R. F. Kennedy was assassinated in Texas, in 1968.
6. A single match can destroy acres of valuable trees.
7. A haunted house stood on the hill. (on the hill = where)
8. Many birds protect their eggs in clever ways. (in clever ways = how)
9. Fallen stars are often seen in November.
10. The electric motor has greatly eased housekeeping.

Şimdi soru sözcüklerini birer birer inceleyelim:

who



1. *Tümcede insan olan özneyi sorar.*
Who sold the chemical weapons to Iraq?
Who bombed Iraq because she had nuclear weapons?
Who lives in this luxurious house?
Who is your favourite author?
Who has cured the racehorse?
Who invented the telephone?
2. *Genellikle tekildir.*
Who is doing the cleaning?
3. *WHOM yerine de kullanılabilir. Bir ilgeçle yanyana gelemez.*
Who is responsible for this chaos?
Who is the first president of the United States?
Who was Martin Luther King, Jr. killed by?



*“Mrs. Wilson says you are
not quite yourself today.
Who are you?”*

☞ Dennis, Mrs. Wilson'un
söylediğini neden yanlış anlıyor?

whom

1. Tümcede insan olan dolaylı nesneyi, dolaysız nesneyi ve ilgeç nesnesini sorar.

Whom did James Earl Ray assassinate in Memphis?

Whom did they call when they saw the fire?

Whom did she finally marry?

Whom did he fight against?

Whom did he throw the boomerang at?

2. İlgeçlerle yanıtına kullanılabilir.

By whom was Martin Luther King, Jr. assassinated?

Whom was Martin Luther King, Jr. assassinated by?

By whom were the pyramids built?

Whom were the pyramids built by?

With whom did you go on a picnic?

Whom did you go on a picnic with?

EXERCISE 89

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde doğru seçenek bulunuz. (Üç soruda her iki seçenek de doğrudur.)

1. (Who, Whom) gave you the bracelet?
2. (Who, Whom) will John take to the musical?
3. (Who, Whom) is the captain of the league?
4. By (who, whom) was the chorus led?
5. For (who, whom) did she make the pie?
6. (Who, Whom) completed his work?
7. (Who, Whom) hasn't finished yet?
8. About (who, whom) were you talking?

9. (Who, Whom) came to visit last night?
10. (Who, Whom) is on the phone?
11. To (who, whom) does this suit belong?
12. (Who, Whom) is first?
13. (Who, Whom) can tell what we're serving for dinner?
14. From (who, whom) did you get the answers?
15. (Who, Whom) are you asking to help?
16. (Who, Whom) taught you how to repair furniture?
17. (Who, Whom) drove to the meeting with you?
18. (Who, Whom) do you consider your best friend?
19. With (who, whom) would you like to have dinner?
20. To (who, whom) was the song dedicated?



*"What do we do after I give five of
these things to everybody?"*

what

1. İnsan olmayan özneyi ve nesneyi soran soru zamiridir.

- What poisoned the travellers?
- What is the most important thing in life?
- What did she buy yesterday?
- What is the reason for you to think that I am lying?
- What causes forest fires?
- What can careless driving cause?

2. DO ile birlikte eylemi sorar.

- What is she doing now?
- What did Karen Fogg do?
- What have German foundations done?

3. İş/meslek sorar.

- What is she?
- What does she do? (Ne iş yapar?)
- What does she do for a living? (Hayatını nasıl kazanır?)

4. Soru sıfatı olarak kullanılır. Bu kullanımı çok yaygındır. *TIME, SHAPE, COLOUR, AGE, KIND, SORT, TYPE* gibi adlarla kullanılıp yaygın kullanımı olan sorular oluşturur.

What *time* is it? (Saat kaç?)

What *time* did they arrive? (Ne zaman geldiler?)

What books are you studying for the exam?

What *organization* helps blind people?

What	colour	is it?		What	is	the	colour	of	the thing?
	age						age		
	size						size		
	shape						shape		



"What *time* did you finally
get rid of her?"

What is your name?

What *nationality* are you?

What *size* shoes are you wearing?

What *make* is your car?

kind, type, sort

What *kind* of music do you listen to?

What kind of clothes does she wear?

What *sort* of book is this?

What sort of a country is the USA?

What *type* of cheese do you like?

look like

What does he look like? (Nasıl birisi? Görünüşü nasıl? Neye benziyor?)

5. Ünlüm tümcelerde kullanılır.

What a (terrible) noise (this is)!

What a night!



"Now that you are in the mood,
what about the mouse in the kitchen?"



"Hey! What about my fee?"

6. **WHAT ABOUT** bir öneride bulunulurken ya da istenirken kullanılır.

We need one more helper. What about Tom?
(Tom olabilir mi?)

What time should we meet? What about 9 o'clock?

Aynı durum ve anlamda **HOW ABOUT** da kullanılabılır. Bu iki ifadeden sonra **V-ING** de kullanılabılır.

- I am really bored. What can we do?
- What about *going to the park*?

7. **WHAT ... LIKE?** bir şeyin ya da kimsenin nasıl olduğunu sorar.

- | | |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| What is your new flat like? | —It is small but comfortable. |
| What is the weather like today? | —Rather cold. |
| What is his second wife like? | —Rather friendly. |

8. **WHAT ... FOR?** neden sorar. = **WHY**

What did you give up your job for? (İşinizi niçin bıraktınız?)

HOW

1. **Tarz zarfını sorar.**

- | | |
|---------------------|-------------|
| How does she cook? | —Superbly. |
| How does she speak? | —Carefully. |

2. **Yöntem sorar.**

- | | |
|--|-------------------------|
| How do you make Turkish coffee? | |
| How do you stay so slim? | —By eating very little. |
| How can we combat the car thief? | |
| How did Americans spread disease among Indian tribes? | |
| —By giving them free —of course, contaminated— blankets. | |



3. Hal hatur sorar.

How are you?

Very well, thank you.

How is she after her illness?

She is much better.

WHAT vs. HOW

WHAT ile HOW nesnelerin özellikleri konusunda aynı anlamda gelen sorular sorar. WHAT'ı adlar, HOW'ı sıfatlar izler.

How	wide	
What	width	is the book?

ÖZELLİK	HOW	WHAT
size	How big is it? How small is it?	What size is it? What is the size of the thing?
height	How high is it? How tall is it?	What height is it? What is the height of the thing?
age	How old is it?	What age is it? What is the age of the thing?
weight	How heavy is it?	What weight is it? What is the weight of the thing?
width	How wide is it?	What width is it? What is the width of the thing?
thickness	How thick is it?	What thickness is it? What is the thickness of the thing?
depth	How deep is it?	What depth is it? What is the depth of the thing?
price	How much is it?	What is the price? What is the price of the thing?



*"Does anybody have a clue how I can get
a frozen waffle out of the VCR?"*

HOW: çeşitli kullanımılar

HOW soru sözcüğü, üstlenebildiği görevlerin çeşitliliği nedeniyle yaygın bir kullanıma sahiptir. Aşağıdaki tabloda örnekler sunuluyor.

1. Hal hatırlama; genel durumu sorma

How are you?	Fine.
How is everything?	Fine. (İşler nasıl?)
How is it going?	Fine. (İşler nasıl gidiyor?)
How is everything going?	Fine. (İşler nasıl gidiyor?)
How do you feel?	Not so well.
How are you feeling?	Fine.

2. Üçüncü kişi tarafından tanıtırlanların "mennun oldum" anlamındaki kalıp: How do you do?

Tom: Jack, this is Robert. Robert, this is Jack.

Robert: (to Jack) How do you do?

Jack: (to Robert) How do you do?

3. How long /tall/wide/ expensive, etc. ?

How long is the shelf?	It is two meters (long).
How long is the story?	It is two pages.
How tall are you?	I am six feet (tall).
How old are you?	I am 33 (years old).
How big is your apartment?	It has four rooms.
How hot is this room?	It is about 20 degrees in here.
How expensive is the flat?	The rent is 40 thousand a month.



*"Mommy, on a scale of one to ten,
how good a boy am I?"*

4. How long? How much time ? (Zaman, süre)

How long will you be here?	I'll be here for a week.
How long does it take to cook mantı?	It takes almost an hour .
How much time does it take to cook this?	It takes an hour to cook that.

5. How far ? (Mesafe)

How far is it from here to Bolu?	It is about 240 kilometers from here.
How far do we have to walk?	We have to walk two blocks.

6. How often ? (Sıklık)

How often do you go to the cinema?	I go to the cinema once a month.
------------------------------------	----------------------------------

7. How much ? (Fiyat) (Miktar)

How much is this?	It is three thousand liras.
How much does it cost?	It costs three thousand liras.
How much are apples a kilo?	Apples are 70 liras a kilo.
How much money do you need?	We need \$10,000.

8. How many ? (Sayı)

How many (books) did you buy?	I bought ten (books).
How many people are here now?	Ten all together.

9. How .. ? (... nasıl yaparsınız/yaptınız?)

How do you spell "apartheid"?	A-P-A-R-T-H-E-I-D
How do you pronounce the word debt?	/det/
How do you say "inşallah" in English?	"I hope that ..."
How does the story end?	Everyone gets killed.

How did the argument start?	She called me a liar, and I got mad.
How did you learn that?	Someone told me.
How do you know that?	I asked them, and they told me that.



"Hey, Dad —how are you doing with your anger management classes?"

10. How like? (.... nasıl seversiniz? / sevdiniz mi?)

How do you like your coffee?	I like my coffee black.
How would you like your egg?	I'd like it fried.
How did you like the book?	I found it rather interesting.

11. How do? Nasıl ... dınız?

How did you sleep last night?	I slept very well.
How did you do on the test?	I got a C.
How did your team do?	It won easily.



"How come they call it common sense when it is SO uncommon?"

12. How come ? Nasıl oldu da /oluyor da ...?

How come she is eating caviar ?
How come she is home tonight? She is not feeling well.
How come advertising can still deceive people?
How come we rejoice at a birth and grieve at a funeral? It is because we are not the person involved. —Mark Twain



HOW COME ile yapılan sorularda devrik yapı (inverted order) kullanılmadığına dikkat ediniz.

13. How about you? What about you?

I don't like cabbage. How about you? What about you?	I don't like it, either.
---	--------------------------

14. How about? e ne dersiniz? (Teklif)

How about going on a picnic?	It sounds a great idea.
------------------------------	-------------------------



EXERCISE 90

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda **WHAT** ya da **HOW** kullanınız.

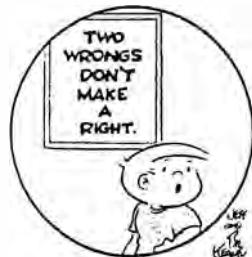
1. _____ color are roses?
2. _____ high is the Empire State Building?
3. _____ size shoes do they want?
4. _____ long is this movie?
5. _____ long is a day in the South Pole in winter?
6. _____ do you know that Jack is not coming?
7. _____ wide is that bridge?
8. _____ does Jack do now for a living?
9. _____ number is the library?
10. _____ much money has he lost in the stock market??
11. _____ wide is this lake?
12. _____ do you like your coffee?
13. _____ long ago Columbus set foot on America?
14. _____ come everybody is on time?
15. _____ does her new boyfriend look like?

EXERCISE 91

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizili ifadeleri sormak üzere **WHAT** ya da **HOW** ile başlayan sorular yapınız.

- I am taking only three courses.

How many courses are you taking?



"Well, then, how many wrongs make a right?"

- His wife is friendly, generous and kindhearted.
- She likes her steak well-done.
- She was driving sixty-nine miles per hour when the policeman stopped her.
- The weather is hot and humid in July.
- I like rock music.
- She did very well on the test.
- He runs a grocery store for a living.
- I like hot and spicy food best.
- She is 1 meter 56 centimeters tall.
- Our dining room table is rectangular.
- My winter coat is size 40.

which

Which one of these is soap?

1. Soru sıfatıdır.

Which ring did you like? (*Yüzüklerden hangisini beğenin?*)

Which apartment did they buy? (*Hangi daireyi aldilar?*)

—Could you pass me that book?—Which one do you mean?

Can you remember which horse won the Derby last year?

2. Soru zamiri olarak da kullanılabilir.

There are four computers here. Which is yours?

Which of these computers is yours?

Which of these records would you like to hear?

whose**1. İyelik gösteren soru sıfatıdır.**

Whose car was stolen?

Whose project has been selected?

Whose son has won the race?

Whose son did Lucy marry?

2. İyelik zamiri olarak da kullanılır.

This thing here on my table is not mine. Whose is it?



"It came with my head."

where

işin nerede yapıldığını soran soru belirtecidir.



"Hey! Where are all
the animals?"

Where is that old man now?
Where have all our friends gone?
Where did they first manufacture
paper?
Where did she start working?
Where is everybody going this summer?
Where was Martin Luther King
assassinated?

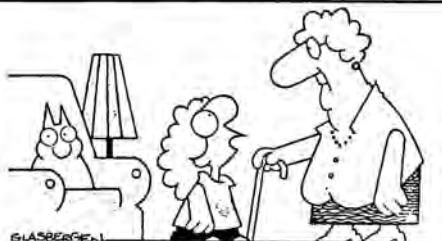


"Where does it hurt?"

when

işin ne zaman yapıldığını soran soru belirtecidir.

When is our wedding anniversary?
When will they find a cure for AIDS?
When was Martin Luther King assassinated?

why

*My teacher says people can grow up to be anything they choose?
Why did you choose to be an old lady?*

1. İşin niçin yapıldığını ya da bir olgunun nedenini sorar.

Why do we see only one side of the moon?
Why do you find mathematics so difficult?

2. WHY DON'T YOU ..? önerisi bildirebilir.

This is an awful computer. Why don't you buy a Mac?

If you can't make up your mind which to have, why not buy them both?



-EVER SORU SÖZCÜKLERİ

**whoever whenever
whatever whichever**

-EVER soru sözcükleri, bağlaç olarak daha yaygın bir kullanıma sahiptirler. Soru sözcükleri olarak VURGULAMA ifade etmek amacıyla kullanılırlar. Genellikle şaşkınlık, öfke gibi duyguları da aktarırlar. Soru sözcükleriyle kullanıldığında EVER çoğu zaman ayrı bir sözcük olarak yazılır.

whoever	I don't believe a word of it ! Whoever told you that?
who ever	Who ever do you mean?
whatever	What a mess ! Whatever has happened ? Paint the door whatever colour you like.
what ever	What ever are you trying to do?
wherever	Wherever have you been? (Seni merak ettik.) Wherever do you meet such people? (<i>Bu berbat kişileri de nereden buluyorsun?</i>)
whenever	Whenever are you planning to clean your room?
whichever	Whichever road we take, I'm sure it will be the wrong one.

whoever

Whoever gossips to you will gossip of you.
Whoever you are, you can't have any privileges.
Whoever steals his neighbour's shirt usually dies without his own.
He certainly looks important, whoever he is.

whatever

Do whatever your enemies don't want you to do. -Gary Novak

Whatever is popular deserves attention. –James Mackintosh
She reads whatever she can find.

Whatever it was, we decided to go and see it.
Don't forget to post that letter, whatever you do.

whenever

Whenever I see you, you're eating.
Whenever I work with my computer, I lose track of time.
Whenever are you planning to pay your debt to us?

wherever

His face seems to haunt me wherever I go.
Wherever did you get that hat?
Go wherever you like as long as you don't get lost.

whichever

Whichever way you look at it, the problem looks serious.
We'll tune to whichever program is best.
These two bags are of poor quality. Whichever would you like to read?



EVER vurgulama göstermek üzere HOW ile de kullanılır.

How ever did you get in without a key?

How ever did you finish the work in such a short time?

HOWEVER +ADJ/ADV bağlaç olarak kullanılmaktadır.

You can't be a good writer however hard you try.

I am determined to buy the car however expensive it is.

EXERCISE 92

Aşağıdaki boşlukları uygun olan -EVER soru sözcükleriyle doldurunuz.

1. ____ is worth doing at all, is worth doing well.
2. They went ____ they could find work.
3. ____ kindles the flames of hatred is committing a crime against humanity.
4. He reads ____ he finds.
5. She made friends easily ____ she went.
6. ____ is saying that is a liar.
7. Computer users of ____ age, or ____ sex, are lucky if they own a Mac.
8. ____ the climate remains cold nearly all year, a portion of the snow remains unmelted.
9. We could not please them ____ we did.
10. We shall defend our Turkey, ____ the cost may be.
11. ____ did he say to convince you that he is innocent?
12. ____ has told you I have taken your keys? I haven't even touched them.

EXERCISE 93

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden verilen soru sözcükleriyle soru yapınız.

1. President Bush had to stay in bed, because he was sick. (WHY)
Why did President Bush have to stay in bed?
2. They must leave for the airport in half an hour. (HOW SOON)
How soon must they leave for the airport?
3. You've got to be more careful or you'll slip on the ice. (WHY)
4. We have to buy the tickets at the theater. (WHERE)
5. Jack had to take the dog for a walk. (WHAT - general question)
6. They'll have to study harder, or they'll fail the exam. (WHY)
7. She must answer these letters in the morning. (WHEN)
8. The children usually have to go to bed at eight-thirty. (WHAT TIME)
9. She's got to be back here in a quarter of an hour. (HOW SOON)
10. We've got to pick them up at the restaurant. (WHERE)
11. My mother has to go shopping this afternoon. (WHEN)
12. I have had to speak to her about it twice. (HOW OFTEN)
13. The students must hand in their reports on Monday. (WHEN)
14. It's too far to walk. They'll have to take the bus. (WHY)
15. Al's got to buy a new suit tomorrow. (WHAT)
16. My parents had to wait at the airport for two hours. (HOW LONG)
17. You must call her up tonight. (WHEN)
18. Mrs. Allen has to leave for Washington on Friday. (WHEN)
19. He has had to lend his brother a hundred dollars. (HOW MUCH MONEY)
20. We have to review ten lessons for the test. (HOW MANY LESSONS)

EXERCISE 94

Aşağıdaki parçayı okuyunuz ve verilen soruları yanıtlayınız.

One may think that the castles of the Middle Ages were beautiful buildings furnished with luxurious splendor. That impression is utterly erroneous. Actually the lords and ladies of those days endured a great many discomforts in those homes. After all, the castles were built to serve as forts, not as beautiful homes. Every lord or baron lived under the constant threat of attack by the lords of other castles. Wars between neighboring lords were frequent. That is why a castle had to be fortified with a high wall all around its land and with soldiers on constant guard. That is why the building was constructed of stone with thick walls and very narrow openings that served as windows. Consequently the house was always dark and drafty. The large fires in the open fireplaces did not provide much heat. Since there were no chimneys, the house was often quite smoky. The rooms were rather bare and poorly furnished. At night the occupants tried to protect themselves from the cold drafts by thick drapes hung around

each bed. Even the common man in a poor country today lives in far greater comfort than did the nobility of the Middle Ages.

1. Why did every baron or lord live under constant threat?
2. Why did castles have to be fortified?
3. Why was the castle constructed of stone?
4. Why was the castle always dark and drafty?
5. Why couldn't the occupant feel warm?
6. Why was the house often smoky?

SORU SÖZCÜKLERİYLE YAPILAN SORULARA KISA YANITLAR

Who started intercontinental slavery?	Columbus.
Who can find a solution to population explosion?	Nobody can.
Who(m) did she work for?	The CIA.
Who(m) should we complain to?	The manager.
What made him unhappy	His greed.
What do they sell?	Software.
What countries did the British rob?	Almost every country in Asia.
What programs does she watch on TV?	Whatever happens to be on.
How old is your son?	Only two.
How soon will they produce electric cars?	Next year.
How fast can we drive here?	90 kilometers an hour.
How often do you visit your family?	Twice a month.
How fast is London from here?	About a hundred kilometers.
How many bestsellers has Barbara Cartland written?	More than ten.
Which one have you designed?	The blue one.
Which (computer) do you want?	The faster one.
Which team are you in?	Swimming.
Where is the terrorist now?	In Belgium.
Where do the Italian keep the terrorist?	In a luxurious house.
When will USA and the EU countries see that supporting terrorists may someday hurt themselves?	Only when they are hurt.
When did China agree to the provisions of the treaty?	In 1891.
Why isn't she in office today?	Having an operation.

Why did the British attack China in 1893?	To force them to buy opium from British sellers.
How come the British brought themselves so low as being drug pushers?	Money is big enough an excuse for them.
How can a country like the United Kingdom, which attacked China to sell opium to the people there pose as a protector of human rights?	That I don't understand.
Should the United Kingdom and France officially apologize to China for the Opium Wars?	Obviously.

EXERCISE 95

Aşağıdaki parçayı okuyunuz ve altı çizili öğelerle ilgili sorular yapınız.

Opium Wars

The Opium Wars (1839-42, 1856-60), the first major military clashes between China and the West, ended the long Chinese isolation from other civilizations. For China, defeated in both conflicts, these wars represented the beginning of a century of humiliation by foreign powers through the imposition of unequal treaties that extracted commercial privileges, territory, and other benefits from the Chinese government.

The First Opium War stemmed from China's efforts to bar the illegal importation of opium by British merchants. Britain scored an easy military victory. By the treaties of Nanjing (Nanking) in 1842 and the Bogue in 1843, China opened the ports of Guangzhou (Canton), Xiamen (Amoy), Fuzhou (Foochow), Ningbo (Ning-po), and Shanghai to British trade and residence, ceded Hong Kong to Britain, and granted Britain extraterritoriality, that is, the right to try British citizens in China in British courts. The other Western powers soon received similar privileges.

The Second Opium War, or Anglo-French War, in China also resulted from China's objections to the opium trade. A joint offensive by Britain and France secured another victory. The Treaty of Tianjin (Tientsin) was signed in 1858, but the Chinese refused to ratify it. Hostilities resumed, and Beijing (Peking) was captured by the Western allies.

In 1860, China agreed to the provisions of the treaty, which opened 11 more ports, allowed foreign envoys to reside in Beijing, admitted missionaries to China, permitted foreigners to travel in the Chinese interior, and legalized the importation of opium.

EXERCISE 96

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin yanıt olabileceği sorular sorunuz.

There were two Opium Wars.

How many opium wars were there?

1. The Opium Wars did great harm to China.
2. The China wanted to prevent illegal opium trade.
3. China had to open five ports to British opium trade and residence.
4. *Extraterritoriality* is the right to try British citizens in China in British courts.
5. The Second Opium War is also called Anglo-French War.
6. The Second Opium War is also called Anglo-French War because the French were as greedy as the British and joined forces with them.
7. The Treaty of Tianjin (Tientsin) was signed in 1858.
8. The Chinese had to ratify the Treaty of Tianjin in 1860.
9. The Treaty of Tianjin made China open to limitless exploitation of the Western countries.
10. The Opium Wars were fought because the Western countries were no better than plundering forces.

EXERCISE 97

Aşağıdaki soru ve yanıtları eşleştiriniz.

1. Where did they go?	a. <i>My uncle.</i>
2. When are they arriving?	b. <i>Did window-shopping.</i>
3. Who is that woman?	c. <i>At the theater.</i>
4. What did they do in the city?	d. <i>By studying regularly.</i>
5. Who went with her?	e. <i>Yesterday.</i>
6. Where can we see the play?	f. <i>In the morning.</i>
7. How can we learn a language?	g. <i>To the game.</i>
8. When did she bake this cake?	h. <i>In space.</i>
9. What's in the box?	i. <i>A friend from here.</i>
10. Where will the satellite travel?	j. <i>A surprise.</i>

EXERCISE 98

Aşağıdaki parçada altları çizili öğeleri soran soru tümceleri kurunuz.

(1) In almost every region of the world people depend on the power of animals to relieve men of some of their burden. (2) The animals so used, however, vary widely from region to region, and from country to country. (3) Sometimes the choice of animal is determined by nature, for a beast that is normally found in one area may not be found or even known in another. (4) Sometimes the choice

depends on the animal's adaptation to the environment or to the kind of work being performed.

EXERCISE 99

Aşağıdaki parçada altları çizili öğeleri soran soru tümceleri kurunuz.

- (1) In America, the horse used to be man's best helper. (2) On the farm it pulled the plow and the wagons stacked high with bundles of hay or other farm produce. (3) In the cities, everything that had to be moved was placed in trucks that were drawn by horses. The doctor went on his rounds in a small horse-drawn carriage. (4) Even streetcars were once pulled by teams of horses. (5) In this country the horse has now been almost entirely replaced by the gasoline engine, the power that drives automobiles, trucks, plows, and tractors. (6) Many other areas of the world, however, still depend on the muscle power of animals for transporting heavy loads.

ELSE İLE SORU SÖZCÜKLERİ



"Where else would you keep
a water snake?"



ELSE, what, who, where, why ve how soru sözcükleriyle kullanılmaktadır.

Who else did you see there apart from teacher ?

Where else did you go besides stanbul?

What else is there to do?

Why else would he be so willing to help us?

We must believe in luck. For how else can we explain the success of those we don't like? — Jean Cocteau

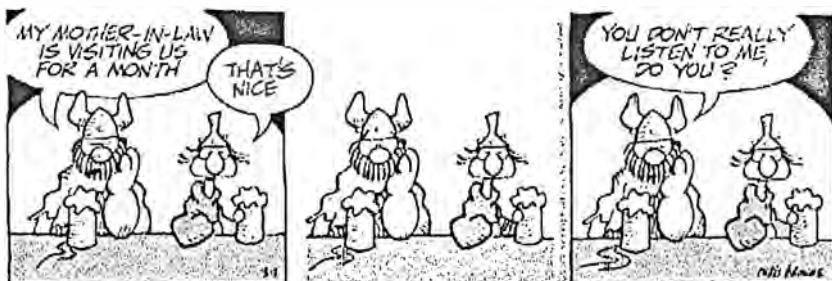
Chapter 19

TAG QUESTIONS

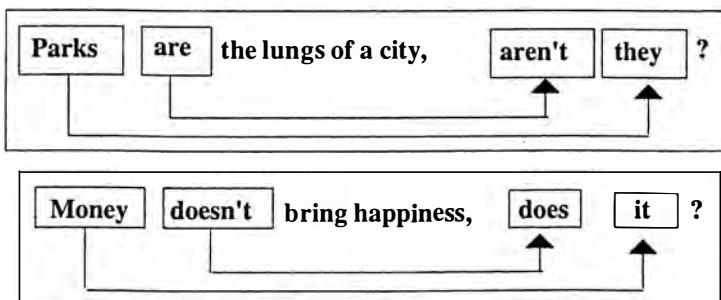
EKLENTİ SORULARI

Greed is a sin, isn't it?

Politicians never tell the truth, do they?



Eklenti soruları, eklendikleri düz tümceleri soruya dönüştüren, Türkçe "değil mi" karşılığı olan sorulardır. Eklenti soruları, bir yardımcı eylem ya da BE eylemi ile bir zaminden oluşur. Belli durumlar dışında, genel kural olarak olumlu tümcelere eklenen eklenti soruları olumsuz, olumsuz tümcelere eklenen eklenti soruları olumlu olur.



EKLENTİ SORULARININ YAPILIŞ NEDENLERİ



You didn't think I could do it, did you?

Günlük konuşmada yaygın olarak kullanılan eklenti sorularının üç işlevi bulunmaktadır.

1. Bilgi alma

Soruyu yönelten, soruyu bilgi almak için sormaktadır ya da en azından yanıtın evet mi hayır mı olduğunu bilmemektedir. Bu kullanımda, evet/hayır sorularında olduğu gibi, tümce sonunda ses yükselecektir.

Is honesty the best policy?

Honesty is the best policy, isn't it ?

2. Onay beklemeye

Soruyu yönelten kişi, yanıtın ne olduğunu bilmektedir. Soruyu sormaktaki amacı karşısındakine bir durumu onaylatmaktadır. Günlük dil kullanımında, eklenti sorularının en yaygın türü budur. Tümcenin, ezgilemesi, düz tümce ezgilemesiyle yapılır.

Honesty is the best policy.

Honesty is the best policy, isn't it ?

3. Konuşma zemini hazırlamak

Soruyu yönelten, birisiyle konuşmaya başlamak istediginde, eklenti sorusuna başvurabilir.

TENSE'LERLE EKLENTİ SORUSU TABLOSU

Simple Present	Whales are intelligent aren't they?	Whales are not fish, are they?
with BE	Mount Everest is the highest mountain in the world, isn't it?	A monkey is not as clever as a child, is it?
Simple Present	You like diamonds, don't you?	They don't like us, do they?
with verbs other than BE	Hollywood movies lie about life in the US, don't they?	The media does not really care about the truth, does it?
Present Cont.	I am working fast enough, aren't I?	I am not bothering you, am I?
	She is worrying about her grades, isn't she?	She is not eating enough, is she?
Simple Past	Columbus was a greedy man, wasn't he?	Columbus did not respect Indians, did he?
with BE	Churchill was a hater of Turks, wasn't he?	She didn't win the race, did she?
Simple Past	Churchill drank too much, didn't he?	You didn't drive carelessly, did you?
with verbs other than BE	He finished the book, didn't he?	Susan didn't cook anything, did she?
Past Cont.	They were driving carefully, weren't they?	She wasn't listening to you secretly, was she?
Present Perfect	Rich countries have polluted all the seas, haven't they?	Churchill hasn't liked Gandhi at all, has he?
Pres. Perf. Cont.	American companies have been exploiting poor countries, haven't they?	TV channels haven't been producing anything good for a long time, have they?
Past Perfect	The earthquake had devastated the whole city, hadn't it?	George Orwell had not written anything when he was a policeman, had he?
Past Perf Cont.	Lucy had been jogging, hadn't she?	We hadn't been receiving fair treatment, had we?
Future	We will have better housing in the future, won't we?	Space travel will not be cheap, will it?
Future Cont.	You will be living here next year, won't you?	You won't be living here next year, will you?
Future Perfect	The poor countries will have been even poorer, won't they?	They won't have found a cure for AIDS by then, will they?
Fut. Perf. Cont.	We will have been cleaning our lakes, won't we?	We won't have been polluting our environment, will we?

KİP BELİRTEÇLERİYLE EKLENTİ SORULARI

CAN	Antibiotics can cure some diseases very quickly, can't they?	People can't recognize their own voices, can they?
SHOULD	We should stop pollution, shouldn't we?	We shouldn't send men to the moon, should we?
MUST	We must be careful, mustn't we?	We mustn't make any noise, must we?
NEED	(NOT USED)	She needn't do all that work by herself, need she?
BE GOING TO	You are going to visit your hometown, aren't you?	She is going to marry again, isn't she?
WOULD	You would prefer a peaceful life, wouldn't you?	You wouldn't say such a thing, would you?
COULD	We could go for a sail on the lake, couldn't we?	They couldn't keep the beaches clean, could they?
SHOULD HAVE	They should have studied harder, shouldn't they?	They shouldn't have gone there, should they?
COULD HAVE	She could have bought a house, couldn't she?	Shakespeare could not have written this lousy poem, could he?
MUST HAVE	The thief must have got into the building during the night, mustn't he?	You mustn't have spent all your money, must you?
HAVE TO	You have to quit smoking, don't you?	You don't have to learn all this stuff, do you?
HAD TO	She had to do all the work by herself, didn't she?	She didn't have to say anything, did she?
USED TO (rarely used)	She used to be a fortune teller, didn't she?	She didn't use to be a fortune teller, did she?
OUGHT TO (rarely used)	You ought to eat less, oughtn't you?	She oughtn't to eat so much junk food, ought she?
MIIGHT	She might help us mightn't she?	She might not be what she says she is, might she?
DARE	(NOT USED)	She daren't touch the computer, dare she?

Eklenti sorularıyla ilgili olarak aşağıdaki özelliklerin bilinmesi gereklidir.

1. Bir tümcede, **hardly**, **scarcely**, **barely**, **rarely**, **seldom**, **never** zarflarından biri varsa tümce olumsuz olarak değerlendirilir.
These stamps are hardly worth collecting, are they?
They seldom watch TV, do they?
2. **Nothing** ve **nobody** zamirleri özne olarak kullanıldığında tümce olumsuzdur.
Nothing can persuade you to stay here, can it?
3. **Will you?**, **won't you?**, **would you?**, **can you?**, **can't you?**, **could you?** emir tümcelerini izleyerek rica ifade edebilir.
Quit complaining about everything, will you?
4. Olumsuz buyruk tümcelerde sadece **will you?** kullanılır.
Don't touch that computer, will you?
5. Bir tümcede birden fazla yardımcı eylem varsa, eklenti sorusunda ilk yardımcı eylem kullanılır.
You have been working on the project, haven't you?
6. **THERE**, eklenti sorularında zamir olarak kullanılır.
There is something suspicious, isn't there?
There won't be any more delays, will there?
7. **Somebody**, **someone**, **everybody**, **everyone**, **anybody**, **anyone** için eklenti sorularında genellikle **they** zamiri kullanılır.
Somebody accidentally erased all the files, didn't they?
8. **This**, **that**, **these**, **those** tümcede işaret zamiri olarak özne görevindeyse eklenti sorularında zamir olarak **it/they** kullanılır.
This is your computer, isn't it?
That isn't your computer, is it?
Those are your computers, aren't they?
9. **DARE** ve **NEED** diğer kip belirteçleri gibi davranışırlar.
This meeting needn't go on forever, need it?
She daren't lie to her father, dare she?
10. Memnunluk, kızgınlık, şaşkınlık gibi güçlü duyguların ifade edildiği kimi yapılarda hem tümce hem de eklenti sorusu olumlu olabilir.
So you have bought your dream house, HAVE you? How nice!
He thinks he can fool me, DOES he? (şşaşkınlık)
You think you can outwit me, DO you? (kızgınlık)
11. Resmi dilde eklenti sorularında yardımcı eylem, **NOT** ile birleşmez.
I am considered a candidate, am I not?
She commands trust of all kinds, does she not?
12. Birleşik tümcelerde, eklenti sorusu, temel tümceciğin eylemiyle uyum gösterir.
You know that industrial pollution is a serious threat, don't you ?
He didn't tell me that you wanted the job, did he?

A man with nothing to do can't be happy, can he?

That Karen Fogg is lying about her e-mail messages is obvious, isn't it?

(Tümçenin öznesinin bir noun clause olduğuna ve tümçenin eyleminin IS olduğuna dikkat ediniz; *That Karen Fogg is lying about her e-mail messages=IT olarak değerlendirilmektedir.*)

13. **Let us** ile yapılan olumlu ve olumsuz tümcelerde, eklenti sorusu ***SHALL*** ile yapılır.

Let us now resolve our conflicts, shall we?

Let us not argue again, shall we?

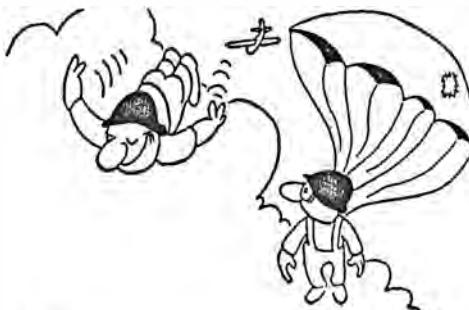
Let's go fo a picnic, shall we?



Düşünce ve duygular gösteren eylemlerin nesneleri noun clause olduğunda eklenti soruları noun clause ile ilgili olarak kurulabilir.

I believe *Karen Fogg* is lying, isn't *she*?

I am afraid *Karen Fogg* will go to any extreme to insult Turks, won't *she*?



—Hey, you are not wearing your parachute!

—That's okay. We are only practising, aren't we?

EXERCISE 100

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenti soruları ekleyiniz.

- Turkey has beautiful beaches, ____ ?
- The over-used beaches of İstanbul are now too dirty, ____ ?
- Beaches don't have to be dirty, ____ ?
- The litter visitors to the beach leave makes it resemble a garbage dump, ____ ?
- People should not leave the beach dirty, ____ ?
- Beach-polluters don't have any civic sense, ____ ?
- It is saddening to know that beaches in other countries are clean, ____ ?
- Beaches must be kept clean, ____ ?

9. Some volunteers spend seven hours a day cleaning up the beach, ____ ?
10. A clean garden may give you tremendous joy, ____ ?
11. There's hardly any space to walk in the dirty beach, ____ ?
12. The team of volunteers collects 15 tons of garbage daily, ____ ?
13. Most beach users complain about dirt but keep on leaving dirt behind them, ____ ?
14. Unless beach users stop polluting and help clean beaches, there won't be any clean beaches, ____ ?
15. Having clean beaches is a sign of good management, ____ ?

EXERCISE 101

Aşağıdaki tümcelerle eklenti sorularını eşleştiriniz.

- | | |
|--|-------------------|
| 1. He's waiting for you, | a. weren't they? |
| 2. There are seven days in a week, | b. is it? |
| 3. I'm not late, | c. am I? |
| 4. These colors are pretty, | d. weren't there? |
| 5. Her reasons weren't very good, | e. isn't he? |
| 6. The doctor wasn't in his office, | f. were they? |
| 7. The lights were very bright, | g. isn't it? |
| 8. The idea is interesting, | h. aren't there? |
| 9. There were a lot of books on the table, | i. aren't they? |
| 10. The hole isn't deep, | j. was he? |



EXERCISE 102

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenti soruları ekleyiniz.

1. Penguins can't fly, ____ ?
2. Animals can communicate, ____ ?
3. They should be punctual, ____ ?
4. She doesn't speak Turkish, ____ ?
5. She hasn't read the book, ____ ?
6. You won't be teaching English next year, ____ ?
7. She knows shorthand very well, ____ ?
8. This isn't your hat, ____ ?
9. Your uncle will be travelling around the world, ____ ?
10. They spoiled the performance, ____ ?
11. People shouldn't talk in the library, ____ ?

12. The British can't cook, ____ ?
13. Charles wants to become a chef, ____ ?
14. They are planning to prepare a huge dinner, ____ ?
15. This container is for small tools, ____ ?
16. You shouldn't argue with your parents, ____ ?
17. He wasn't playing in the cold, ____ ?
18. Mark Twain had an unusual talent, ____ ?
19. Our team lost the game, ____ ?
20. America has become the banker of the world, ____ ?
21. I am afraid she won't be able to do this ____ ?
22. We suppose he has found a job ____ ?
23. I think that girl needs help, ____ ?
24. I don't think you should go there, ____ ?

EXERCISE 103

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenen soruları ekleyiniz.

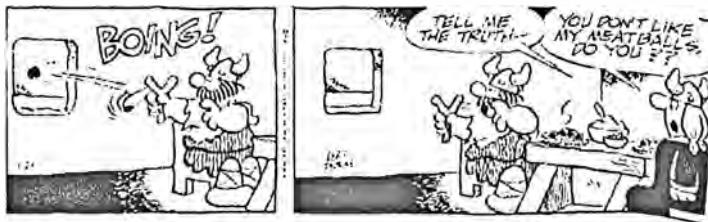
1. These plants can't be eaten, ____ ?
2. Mrs. Taylor is a terrible gossip, ____ ?
3. There was plenty of room on the beach, ____ ?
4. One of the legs of the table is broken, ____ ?
5. The mechanics will be working late tonight, ____ ?
6. Type the report, ____ ?
7. He doesn't eat starchy food, ____ ?
8. Everybody on the team was excited about the game, ____ ?
9. There's been an air crash in California, ____ ?
10. He's broken another record, ____ ?
11. Plants can't grow on the sidewalk, ____ ?
12. He might arrive before Wednesday, ____ ?
13. There're have been a lot of crashes this year, ____ ?
14. There is a very interesting show on TV tonight, ____ ?
15. This car has been repaired twice, ____ ?
16. The dogs had barked all night, ____ ?
17. You mustn't arrive late every day, ____ ?
18. Be careful, ____ ?
19. It gets very hot here in the summer, ____ ?
20. She had examined all of the paintings, ____ ?
21. That was Ali's father, ____ ?
22. She daren't come home late, ____ ?
23. One cannot learn a foreign language in a year, ____ ?
24. There'll be trouble if you make another mistake, ____ ?
25. Don't speak to me while I am watching TV, ____ ?
26. We have to defend our country at all costs, ____ ?
27. The poor countries are going to be even poorer, ____ ?
28. Nobody can be that strong, ____ ?

29. President Clinton used to be a drug user, ____?
 30. Stop complaining and keep driving, ____?

EXERCISE 104

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenti soruları ekleyiniz.

1. He hadn't said anything about his trip, ____?
2. Don't turn on the radio, ____?
3. Bilingual people can speak two languages, ____?
4. They were rather tired last night, ____?
5. You haven't finished the report yet, ____?
6. He'd be sorry if he stayed home, ____?
7. This building has been remodeled twice, ____?
8. There weren't many people at the concert, ____?
9. We can't change our fate, ____?
10. It is possible to prevent air pollution, ____?
11. This computer made our job easier, ____?
12. There are too many problems in this world, ____?
13. There isn't very much water left in the river, ____?
14. The shop assistant couldn't understand you, ____?
15. The money in a savings account is safe, ____?
16. The managers didn't discuss the problem among themselves, ____?
17. You can't make a sandwich without bread, ____?
18. Doctors must follow a code of ethics, ____?
19. We have to solve the problem by ourselves, ____?
20. Almost all European countries are imperialistic, ____?
21. Thomas Edison almost never studied at school, ____?
22. During the rush hour, the subway is very crowded, ____?
23. I'd tell you the answer if I knew it, ____?
24. The director and I make all the important decisions, ____?
25. Your brother can't have written this by himself, ____?
26. She must find a job soon, ____?
27. Many innocent black people were hanged by American mobs, ____?
28. You and your brother could have easily prepared the meal, ____?
29. She rarely cooks when her husband is on a business trip, ____?
30. Food is getting too expensive for most people to buy, ____?



EXERCISE 105

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenti soruları ekleyiniz.

1. She was planning to retire, ____ ?
2. She didn't kill her husband, ____ ?
3. I told you she had stolen our money, ____ ?
4. They hadn't received any help, ____ ?
5. It is possible to prevent air pollution, ____ ?
6. Government workers have been given a big pay raise, ____ ?
7. You aren't going to wear that dress, ____ ?
8. The astronauts were in the spaceship, ____ ?
9. His last book became a best-seller, ____ ?
10. Poverty is the root of all evil, ____ ?
11. The doctor has had a lot of famous patients, ____ ?
12. There are always many things to do, ____ ?
13. Her room always looks neat and tidy, ____ ?
14. He listens to the news every evening, ____ ?
15. You won't forget to bring the report, ____ ?
16. Playing the piano isn't easy, ____ ?
17. Don't underestimate your new responsibilities, ____ ?
18. She didn't say anything about her plans, ____ ?
19. Let's start now, ____ ?
20. It's been a dreadful day, ____ ?
21. You don't think I could be right, ____ ?
22. You'd take the job if the salary were high, ____ ?
23. Our team didn't lose the game, ____ ?
24. She seldom cooks, ____ ?
25. Please forgive me for keeping you busy, ____ ?
26. You thought I'd made a mistake, ____ ?
27. They should have finished the work yesterday, ____ ?
28. This house has never looked so beautiful before, ____ ?
29. The players are expected to celebrate their victory, ____ ?
30. She needn't do all the work by herself, ____ ?



EXERCISE 106

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenti soruları ekleyiniz.

1. Everyone wants a good job, ____ ?
2. Teaching at a college has been his life-long dream, ____ ?
3. You didn't understand what I told you, ____ ?
4. Understanding international commerce demands detailed information, ____ ?
5. I wouldn't have to work if we were rich, ____ ?
6. Everyone has arrived on time, ____ ?
7. They quarrel almost every night, ____ ?
8. Tim and his mother never eat out, ____ ?
9. You used to be a heavy smoker, ____ ?
10. I don't need to wait here any longer, ____ ?
11. Poor people rarely travel for pleasure, ____ ?
12. The United States will be bombing Iraq again, ____ ?
13. Philip Morris is going to be selling more cigarettes, ____ ?
14. Belgium is going to be supporting terrorism again, ____ ?
15. Tom and Bob haven't touched their food, ____ ?
16. The farmers have already planted their seeds, ____ ?
17. The decision had already been made, ____ ?
18. Americans believe that money is God, ____ ?
19. Somebody has stolen the documents, ____ ?
20. I am always ready to help you, ____ ?



We aren't giving you too much work, are we?

EXERCISE 107

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenti soruları ekleyiniz.

1. They wouldn't go to the park if it were raining, ____ ?
2. Too many people in our world have too little to eat, ____ ?
3. It oughtn't to take you very long to type the report, ____ ?

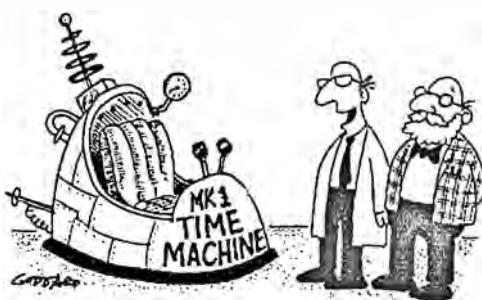
4. I have to repair this. Lend me your tool box, ____?
5. We don't have to read the whole book to understand that it is a bad book, ____?
6. Don't use up all the paint, ____?
7. Let us for once forget about our past grievances and be friends, ____?
8. Helen asked her guests what they would like to drink, ____?
9. The Parkers live in a small house opposite the post office, ____?
10. John's completely unaware how much damage he did to the company, ____?
11. Economists believe that they should reduce welfare payments, ____?
12. He hadn't got any time to talk, ____?
13. The address printed on the envelope was nearly illegible, ____?
14. Preparing a huge dinner, she got exhausted, ____?
15. A liter is one of the metric measurements, ____?
16. Rising oil prices are affecting the entire world, ____?
17. There is no way to stop imperialism, ____?
18. You and I are good friends, ____?
19. You aren't too tired, ____?
20. To repeat the whole story will take too much time, ____?
21. The United States entered the arena of capitalism after the Spanish-American War in 1898, ____?
22. The seriously ill do not want to know the truth, ____?
23. The movie in which the two pop singers starred received several Oscars, ____?
24. The view from Çamlıca Hill in Istanbul is magnificent, ____?
25. American Indians strongly resent the fact that Columbus is considered a hero, ____?
26. A new drug is going to be provided for the cure of AIDS soon, ____?
27. Lung cancer has increased not only in humans but also in dogs, ____?
28. A thick fog can make safe driving almost impossible, ____?
29. The exact number of bones in the skeleton differs with each person, ____?
30. It is unnatural for human beings to treat their pets like humans, ____?

EXERCISE 108

Aşağıdaki tümcelere eklenti soruları ekleyiniz.

1. After working so hard, he didn't deserve to be dismissed, ____?
2. There can't be so many accidents on a single day, ____?
3. There isn't anything we can do to save our beaches, ____?
4. Jack is reading a cookbook. He is looking for a special recipe, ____?
5. I would have finished my work on time if you had not asked so many questions, ____?
6. It offended Mr. Brown to be told that he was badly educated, ____?
7. Gold is known to be the most malleable metal of all, ____?

8. The whites in America had showed no mercy to the blacks or to the Indians, ____ ?
9. You've seen some of the new X-ray instruments in his laboratory, ____ ?
10. I sent an e-mail to *Washington Post* condemning their lies about Turkey, ____ ?
11. Your mother is quite fat. She ought to watch her diet, ____ ?
12. You would enjoy swimming if the water weren't so cold, ____ ?
13. The price of gasoline used to be a great deal lower than now, ____ ?
14. Mr. Taylor and his wife don't like coffee very much, ____ ?
15. More money will have to be found for urban renewal and poverty programs, ____ ?
16. The musicians are going to be playing for the dance, ____ ?
17. We can exchange this broken machine at the department store, ____ ?
18. No one has ever managed to find a cure for the common cold, ____ ?
19. A look at its history shows that the U.S.A. is the most violent and interventionist nation ever known, ____ ?
20. President Clinton was claimed to be a liar by some, ____ ?



"It takes you back, doesn't it?"

PART THREE

AUXILIARIES

CHAPTER 20	Primary Auxiliaries	235
CHAPTER 21	Modal Auxiliaries	241
CHAPTER 22	Perfect Modal Auxiliaries	304



Chapter 20

PRIMARY AUXILIARIES TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEMLER



1. The American Army **butchered** thousands of Indians.
2. Did the American Army **butcher** thousands of Indians?
3. The British Empire **didn't help** her colonies at all.
4. **Didn't** the German people **kill** millions of Jewish people?

Tümce 1, geçmiş zamanda (simple past tense) kurulmuştur. Bu, **butcher** eyleminin sonuna eklenmiş olan {-ed} eki ile işaret ediliyor. Tümce 2, Tümce 1'nin soru şeklidir. Bu tümcede **butcher** eylemi herhangi bir ek almamıştır. Soru **DID** sözcüğünün tümcenin başında kullanılmasıyla yapılmıştır. **DID**'in iki işlevi olduğunu söyleyebiliriz. Bir, tümcenin soru olduğunu göstermektedir. İki, tümcenin geçmiş zamanda (simple past tense) kurulduğunu işaret etmektedir. Tümce 3'de, **DIDN'T** tümcenin olumsuz olduğunu ve geçmiş zamanda (simple past tense) kurulduğunu göstermektedir.

Tümcelerin, olumsuz tümce ya da soru tümcesi şeklinde dönüştürülmesini sağlayan ve aynı zamanda zaman (*tense*) gösteren sözcükler temel yardımcı eylemler (*primary auxiliaries*) adı verilmektedir.

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde **do**, **does**, **have**, **has** ve **had** sözcüklerinin temel yardımcı eylemler olduklarını söyleyebiliriz.

Western powers still control African nations.

Do Western powers still control African nations?

Does the United Kingdom still control her ex-colonies?

*The growth of the army and navy of the United States during the past twenty years **has been** phenomenal.*

Have you been reading those comic books again?

Had the federal Bureau of Indian Affairs tried to wipe out Indian languages before it was realized it was wrong to do that?

TO BE eylemi, ilginç bir durum sergiler:

Cultural imperialism is what the United States prefers today.

Small firms are the backbone of the Nigerian economy.

Yukarıdaki tümcelerde IS ve ARE tümcelerin eylemidir.

Is cultural imperialism what the United States prefers today?

Are small firms the backbone of the Nigerian economy?

Göründüğü gibi, tümcelerin soru şekli doğrudan doğruya TO BE eyleminin bir yardımcı eylem gibi kullanılmasıyla yapılıyor.

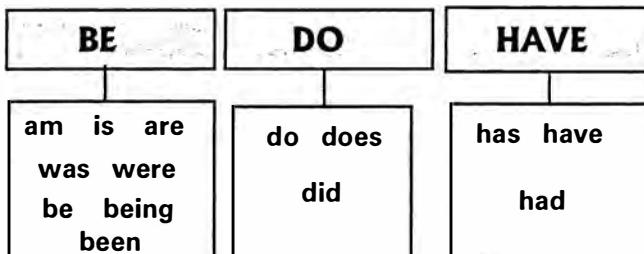
EYLEM Mİ, TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEM Mİ?

1. *The computer now is a very popular tool. The computer is being used more and more in education and medicine.*
2. *Glass and paper are good for packaging, but they are both being threatened by the growing use of plastic.*
3. *She is a very aggressive person. She is being a nuisance.*
4. *She does the ironing in the morning, doesn't she?*
5. *We do not do our work carelessly.*
6. *She did her homework, didn't she?*
7. *She has nothing to do. She has finished all her work.*
8. *They have a new machine. They have discarded the old one.*
9. *She had no time to discuss the matter with us. Fortunately, she had already talked about her intentions.*
10. *The nineteenth and early twentieth centuries were the years of mass immigration, weren't they?*
11. *Before the recent developments in agriculture, medicine and industry, life was difficult, wasn't it?*
12. *Man was always interested in finding an easier way to do calculations. In the seventeenth century an adding machine was invented.*

Yukarıdaki örnek tümcelerde, **IS, ARE, WAS, WERE, DO, DOES, DID, HAVE, HAS** ve **HAD** sözcüklerinin hem eylem hem de yardımcı eylem olarak kullanıldığını görüyoruz. Gerçekte, örneğin, **HAVE** eylemiyle, temel yardımcı eylem olan **HAVE** iki ayrı sözcüktür. *They have a new machine* tümcesindeki **HAVE**, sahip olmak anlamında bir eylemdir. *They have discarded the old one* tümcesindeki **HAVE** ise, present perfect tense'in kurulmasını sağlayan temel yardımcı eylemdir.

TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEMLER

Temel yardımcı eylemlerin görevleri, "tense" yapılarını, olumsuz düz tümce yapılarını, olumlu ve olumsuz soru tümceleri yapılarını oluşturmaktır. Temel yardımcı eylem olan BE aynı zamanda edilgen (passive) tümcelerin kurulmasını da sağlar. Temel yardımcı eylemleri üç bölükte toplayabiliriz.



I. BE TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEMİ

BE temel yardımcı eyleminin 8 değişik şekli ve başlıca üç işlevi vardır.

- Continuous tense'lerin kurulmasını sağlamak,
- Passive Voice (edilgen çatı) yapısında kullanılmak.
- Eklenti sorularının ve tümcelerinin kurulmasını sağlamak. **BE**, **BEING** ve **BEEN** bu işlevde kullanılamazlar.

A&B. Continuous Tense ve Passive Voice Kullanımı

<i>am</i>	I am cleaning my room. I am often asked to help people.
<i>is</i>	Ankara is growing fast. Our house is painted every four years.
<i>are</i>	We are selling our house. We are given new assignments every week.
<i>was</i>	The man driving the car was wearing dark glasses. The soldier was chosen to be an aide to General Grant.
<i>were</i>	They were fighting against slavery. It was not until 1963 that black people in the United States were allowed to eat in the same restaurants with white people .
<i>be</i>	She will not be working as a waitress all her life. She will be given a diamond ring.
<i>being</i>	They are being questioned by the police.
<i>been</i>	I have been listening to lectures all afternoon. She has been working in the garden since 10. He had been collecting stamps ever since he came here. Poor countries have never been given a fair deal.

C. Eklenti tümceleri ve soruları oluşturmak

Smoking is dangerous, and so **is** drinking.

Jack was a talented artist, and so **was** I.

Harry is working now, and so **are** the others.

Harry was terrified. I **was**, too.

Harry wasn't terrified. I **wasn't**, either.

He wasn't listening to the lecturer, and neither **was** I.

Life is difficult, **isn't** it?

II. DO TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEMİ

DO temel yardımcı eyleminin 3 değişik şekli (*do*, *does*, *did*) ve 4 temel işlevi vardır. Bu yardımcı eylemler düz tümcelerde görünmezler.

- A. DO ve DOES, simple present tense, DID ise simple past tense yapısında kullanılır.**

Some people don't enjoy watching horror movies.

Why did World War II break out?

How do whales communicate?

Does smoking really cause cancer of the lung?

- B. DO, DOES ve DID vurgulama ifade edebilir.**

Smoking does cause cancer of the lung.

I did take his advice, but it proved useless.

She does know how to cook.

- C. DO, buyruk tümcelerinde "ısrar" eklemek için kullanılır.**

Do be quiet, will you?

- D. Eklenti tümcelerinde ve sorularında kullanılır.**

Jack kept making mistakes, and so did I.

Mary hates computers, and Helen does, too.

I don't watch TV much, and neither does my wife.

Belgium harbours quite a few terrorists, doesn't she?

- E. DON'T uyarı bildiren tümceler kurabilir.**

Don't you touch the computer. (Sakın bilgisayara dokunma.)

III. HAVE TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEMİ

HAVE temel yardımcı eyleminin 3 şekli (*has*, *have*, *had*) vardır. **HAS** ve **HAVE**, present perfect tense, **HAD** ise past perfect tense kuruluşunda kullanılır. Eklenti soru ve tümcelerde de kullanılır.

- A. Perfect Tenses**

Oil prices have skyrocketed.

The critics thought that the song had been composed by a lunatic.

History has seen wars that used less ammunition than a ceasefire does today.

- B. Eklenti Tümceleri**

The British Empire has turned a ruthless power, and so has the United States.

*African countries have always been exploited by imperialistic countries, and Asian countries **have**, too.*

*The USA has never helped any country out of pure charity, and neither **has** any other developed country.*

*You have been abroad before, **haven't** you?*

EXERCISE 109

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş sözcüklerin eylem mi, temel yardımcı eylem mi olduğunu belirleyiniz.

1. Her uncle **was** a spy.
2. He is often consulted by married people on the verge of divorce.
3. He **has** composed a vast amount of music.
4. No human being, however great, or powerful, **was** ever so free as a fish.
5. Nothing great **was** ever achieved without enthusiasm.
6. Man **has** been polluting the Earth from the time he lit his first fire.
7. Clothing **that** is made of synthetic fibers **is** easy to wash and dry.
8. Mr. Simpson **was** shocked to learn of his son's dismissal from school.
9. We will always **be** indebted to you.
10. Every advance in civilization **has** been denounced as unnatural while it **was** recent. — *Bertrand Russell*
11. Science **is** organized common sense.
12. Food **is** the first necessity of life.
13. I **do** know that noise **has** been a serious health hazard.
14. That his computer **had** bugs caused great anxiety for the squeamish programmer.
15. The driver, who **was** unable to stop the vehicle, leaped to safety.
16. There **have been** three great inventions in communication throughout the entire history of man.
17. The lecturer asserted that flying saucers **are** a reality.
18. The driver of the compact car claimed that the other driver **had** signaled a wrong turn.
19. A noted scientist thinks we **have** already learned how to solve all the problems of space flight.
20. According to the report in the school newspaper, the student's production of the play **was** the best in the school's history.

EXERCISE 110

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş sözcüklerin eylem mi, temel yardımcı eylem mi olduğunu belirleyiniz.

Rembrandt, a great Dutch painter, (1) **was** a very versatile artist. He (2) **was** both an excellent portrait painter and draftsman, and he (3) is famous for his portraits and etchings. His landscape etchings (4) **are**

especially beautiful, one of the most famous being *The Three Trees*. His pen-and-ink drawings of everyday scenes (5) **are** also outstanding; in fact, many of them (6) **are** little masterpieces.

Rembrandt's paintings (7) **have** increased in value over the years, and today very few people can afford to purchase a Rembrandt painting. One of his paintings would now sell for over a million dollars. For example, in 1966, his painting *Titus* (8) **was** sold for over \$2,000,000. This painting, which (9) **is** a portrait of Rembrandt's son, (10) **was** purchased as a gift for the Los Angeles County Museum. Since then, *Titus* (11) **has** occasionally appeared in exhibits at other museums featuring a collection of Rembrandt's works.

Rembrandt lived in the seventeenth century. He studied art for several years in Amsterdam, and then he returned to Leiden, his hometown, where he quickly established himself as a painter. Later he returned to Amsterdam where he eventually (12) **became** famous and wealthy. However, his popularity declined in later years, and he died in poverty in 1669. Today his paintings (13) **are** again in demand, but only very few wealthy individuals or large museums (14) **have** the means to purchase a famous work by Rembrandt.

Millions of people (15) **have** visited his house in Amsterdam, now a museum. Young artists who (16) **have** seen his sketches (17) **are** trying to discover his secret to success. Experienced artists who (18) **are** imitating his style know Rembrandt's secret to success: talent with a lot of hard work.



*"There is only one little drawback to
the new chemical process we have
developed."*

Chapter 21

MODAL AUXILIARIES

KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ



"Can't you and your friends meet somewhere else?"

Kip belirteçleri (Modal Auxiliaries), birlikte kullandıkları eylemlere *yetenek, zorunluluk, yasak, olasılık, kararlılık, izin isteme/verme, akıl yürütme, öneride bulunma* gibi değişik anlamlar yüklerler.

<i>zorunluluk</i>	Dried vegetables must be cooked to be edible.
<i>olasılık</i>	A little neglect may breed great mischief. – <i>Benjamin Franklin</i> Any man can make mistakes, but only an idiot persists in his error. – <i>Marcus Tullius Cicero</i>
<i>akıl yürütme</i>	He should be easy to spot. He is a very tall man.
<i>yetenek</i>	God cannot alter the past, but historians can . – <i>Samuel Butler</i>

Yukarıdaki tümcelerde kip belirteçleri koyu dizilmiştir. Örneklerden anlaşılacağı üzere, örneğin, **CAN**, olasılık ya da yetenek ifade edebilen bir kip belirtecidir. Kip belirteçleri (modal auxiliaries), üstlenebildikleri değişik anlamlar nedeniyle oldukça karmaşık bir öbek oluşturmaktadırlar.

Hangi sözcüklerin kip belirteci olduğu konusunda bir görüş birliği olduğu söylenemezse de aşağıdaki tabloda yer alan sözcüklerin yaygın olarak kip belirteci (modal auxiliary) olarak değerlendirildiğini söyleyebiliriz.

13 Kip Belirteci (Modal Auxiliaries)

1	can	8	must
2	could	9	should
3	will	10	ought to
4	would	11	used to
5	shall	12	dare
6	may	13	need
7	might		

Yukarıdaki tabloda yer alan 13 kip belirtecinin dışında kip belirteci olarak değerlendirilen sözcükler ve öbekler de bulunmaktadır. Aşağıdaki tabloda, kip belirteci olarak görülebilen bütün sözcük ve öbekleri gösteriyoruz.

will shall would	must should ought to have to have got to had to had better	BE going to BE able to BE TO BE used to BE supposed to BE accustomed to	would rather would sooner
can could	may might	used to get used to	dare need

EXERCISE 111

Aşağıdaki parçada kullanılan kip belirteçlerini bulunuz ve hangi anlamda kullandıklarını saptamaya çalışınız.

Aluminum is an attractive metal, but pure aluminum is altogether too soft for most uses. Pots made of the pure metal would bend out of shape and wear away in a short time. When aluminum is mixed with copper or silicon, it becomes extremely sturdy and durable. It can then last for years, even with daily use. A knife made of pure iron would become dull after being used only once. It has to be hardened with carbon and several other metals. Then it can keep its shape and sharpness for a long time. Steel is really iron that has been mixed, or alloyed, with various metals. It is of great hardness, as compared with iron, and has many qualities, depending on the kind of mixtures that go into it. Like aluminum, iron is rarely used in its pure state. Gold, too, must have a mixture added to keep it from rubbing off too easily.

CAN**1. Bir işi yapabilme, bir işe gücü yetme ifade eder.**

A computer can solve complicated problems at incredibly high speeds.

On this shrunken globe, men can no longer live as strangers.

The laser beam can remove bones.

You can prolong your life, if you exercise, eat wisely, and avoid smoking.
Snowflakes are one of nature's most fragile things, but just look at what they can do when they stick together.

The only thing you can get without working is hunger.

Nobody can be as agreeable as an invited guest.

Anyone can hold the helm when the sea is calm. —*Publius Syrus*

2. Bir işin nasıl yapıldığının bilindiğini ifade eder.

The new manager can speak several languages fluently.

My mother can cook all the Mexican dishes.

Can you use a computer?

3. Olasılık ifade eder.

Both jogging and dieting, carried to extremes, can be hazardous.

Books of all types can give us useful information.

A lighted-cigarette end can be enough to cause a forest fire.

This kind of analysis can yield interesting results.

Prolonged exposure to loud noise can impair a person's hearing, sometimes permanently.

A fool can ask a question which forty wise men cannot answer.

Knowledge can be acquired from different sources.

4. Rica ifade eder.

Can you turn off the radio, please!

Can you hold this for me?

5. Izin istemekte ve izin vermede kullanılır.

Can we wait here? Burada bekleyebilir miyiz?

Yes, you can.

6. Soru tümceleriyle olumsuz tümcelerde tahmin bildirebilir.

Who can that be at the wheel? Can it be the new driver?

He can't be a Turk. He doesn't know a word of Turkish.

(Türk olamaz. Tek kelime Türkçe bilmiyor.)

This can't be done by anyone but your naughty son.

(Bunu sizin yaramaz oğlunuzzdan başka kimse yapmış olamaz.)

7. Olumsuz tümcelerde imkânsızlık ifade edebilir.

You can't teach an old dog new tricks.

One cannot lose what he never had.

You cannot eat the cake and have it.

You cannot make water flow uphill.

The gem cannot be polished without friction.

8. Remember, understand, see, hear, feel, smell, taste duyu eylemleriyle kullanılır.

CAN, duyu eylemleriyle kullanıldığından sadece işin yapılabildiğini gösterir. *I see the plane in the sky* tümcesi ile *I can see the plane in the sky* tümcesi aynı anlamda kullanılır.

9. Edilgen tümcelerde olasılık ifade eder.

CAN hem yetenek hem de olasılık ifade edebilmektedir. Edilgen tümcelerde ise, öznenin işi yapan değil, işten etkilenen olması nedeniyle sadece olasılık ifade edebilir.

We can bend gold into many different shapes. (*yetenek*)

Gold can be bent into many different shapes. (*olasılık*)

Properly canned food can be saved for as long as three years.

Of the three leading contributors to heart disease, only high blood cholesterol can be controlled by change in diet.

Metal and glass containers can be recycled.

EXERCISE 112

Aşağıdaki parçada kip belirteci CAN'in hangi anımlarda kullanıldığını saptamaya çalışınız.

When a diver is attacked by an octopus, he becomes badly frightened. He struggles to pull away or he hacks at the tentacles with knife or ax. But those eight tentacles are long and powerful. They (1) *can* crush a man's chest, and the suckers (2) *can* strip the skin off his flesh in a few minutes. Therefore, a man under water (3) *can* rarely succeed in a fight with an octopus. He is no match for the terrible advantage possessed by that monster of the deep. In fact, his struggle only makes matters worse. The octopus is excited by the struggling movements and so attacks with greater ferocity.

If the diver (4) **can** remain absolutely still in the presence of this sea creature, he (5) **can** feel reasonably safe. The octopus may touch him with a tentacle, out of curiosity. At such a time a man (6) **can** rarely remain calm. But if he (7) **can** remain still, no matter how terrified he may be, the octopus will go away. The safest move is to make no move at all.

EXERCISE 113

CAN, "tavsiye, öneri" ifade edebilir. Aşağıdaki durumlara uygun önerilerde bulununuz. Örneği inceleyiniz.

Jack has got nothing to do tonight. (visit his aunt)
He can visit his aunt.

- I have got too much work to do. (ask for help)
- My son says he is bored. (give him something to read)
- My car has broken down again. I must go downtown. (take the tube)
- I have no time to type this report. (ask the secretary to type it)
- Our house is too big for me to take care of. (hire someone to help you)



WILL, İngilizce öğrenenlerin, daha çok gelecek zaman (future tense) kullanımı ile özdeşirdikleri bir kip belirticidir. Gerçekte, WILL, gelecek zaman ifadesini dolaylı olarak üstlenebilmektedir. *We will go on a picnic tomorrow* tümcesinin gelecek zaman ifade etmesi WILL'in niyet gösterme niteliğinde yatkınlıdır. Aşağıda WILL kip belirticinin üstlendiği anlamları sergiliyoruz.

1. Gelecek zaman ifade eder.

The Prime Minister will make a speech on television tonight.

As it is so foggy, our flight will probably be delayed.

By the end of this century the computer will touch the lives of everyone, even people in distant villages.

Demographers estimate that by the end of the present century, the Earth's population will be over 8.1 billion.

2. Kararlılık ifade eder.

We will defend our position at all costs.

I will not keep a dog and bark myself. (Köpek beslersem kendim havlamam.)

3. Geleceğe ilişkin tahminler ya da eurensel varsayımlar ifade eder.

Someday computers will be so advanced that they will control people, instead of people controlling them.

Don't talk about yourself; it will be done when you leave.—*Wilson Mizner*
He that falls in love with himself will have no rivals. —*Benjamin Franklin*
Mankind must put an end to war or war will put an end to mankind. —
J.F.Kennedy

He who lies down with dogs will rise with fleas.—*Proverb*

Believe it or not, opportunity will find you if you are worth looking for.

If money is not your servant, it will be your master. (1660)

A drowning man will clutch at a straw.

Beware of little expenses; a small leak will sink a great ship.

Oil will float on water. = (Oil floats on water.)

A lion will attack a man only when it is hungry.

If you don't help yourself, nobody will.

**4. Söz verme, vaat gösterebilir.**

We will be having fish for dinner.

Students clever enough to solve this problem will be rewarded.

I will pay my debt to you as soon as possible.

5. Kaçınılmazlık ifade eder.

Accidents will happen.

What will be, will be.

Riding a mule down the Grand Canyon is frightening; one slip, and you will fall into the abyss.

An ox with long horns, even if he does not butt, will be accused of butting.—*Proverb*

If you are poor today you will always be poor. Only the rich now acquire riches.—*Martial* (?AD 40-?104)

6. Olumsuz tümcelerde bir iş yapmama konusunda kararlılık ifade edebilir.

She will not talk to me.

I will not discuss the problem with you.

7. imkânsızlık ifade eder.

Wood may remain ten years in the water, but it will never become a crocodile.

The potato, an important food in Europe and North America, will not grow in a hot climate.

8. Alışkanlık ifade eder.

He'll play with his toys if he is left alone.

She will go the seaside and watch the sea for hours.

9. isteklilik, niyet ifade eder.

I will work with you.

We'll paint our house.

If the bank will loan us the money, we can start a new business.

10. Rica ifade eder.

Will you lend me your pen for a moment?

Lend me your pen for a moment, will you?

11. Emir ifade edebilir.

Everybody will stay here until further notice.

All participants will bring something to eat.

WILL, emir ifadesiyle soru tümcesi olarak kurulduğunda düz tümce ezgilemesi kullanılır. Emir ifadesi, tag question (eklenti sorusu) ile ifade edildiğinde, soru ezgilemesi kullanılmaktadır.

Will you put out that fire!

Put out that fire , will you?

12. İkram ifadelerinde kullanılır.

Will/won't you have a glass of sherry?

Have a cup of coffee, will you?

Sit right there , won't you?



1. Kibarca izin isteme, izin verme ya da vermemeye ifade edebilir.

May we go to the zoo today? Yes, you may. No, you may not.

You may leave at 12 if you can finish the work.

May I come with you?

2. Olasılık ifade eder.

A pretty face may hide an empty head.

They may come any moment.

Smoking may hasten a heart attack by as much as 10 years.

A little neglect may breed great mischief. —*Benjamin Franklin*

One drop of ink may make a million people think. —Proverb

A fool may make money, but it requires a wise man to spend it.

If you shirk your responsibilities, you may end up losing your job.

The danger of the past was that men became slaves. The danger of the future is that men may become robots. —*Erich Fromm* (1900-80)

That highway accidents may paralyze traffic for hours is known to all.

Even when the experts all agree, they may well be mistaken. —*Bertrand Russell*

3. Zıtlık ifade edilmesinde kullanılır.

He may be strong and handsome, but he has the intelligence of a child of two.

She may not be pretty, but at least she knows her job.

A man may have a thousand eyes, yet if his mind is blank, he cannot see a thing.

Though familiarity may not breed contempt, it takes off the edge of admiration. —*William Hazlitt*

Americans may be undereducated, lazy, and disorganized, but they do one thing better than any people on the face of the earth, and this is watch television. — *Stephen Bury*

4. Dua ve beddua ifadelerinde kullanılır.

May Turkish Republic live long!

May he rest in peace!

May God be with you!

May he drop dead!

May the New Year bring happiness to you.

I pray each day that I may be made strong enough not to hurt anybody.
—American Indian prayer

May you live as long as you love and love as long as you live. —*Robert A. Heinlein*

5. Edebi ve bilimsel metinlerde kullanılır.

It may be noted that Shakespeare was an artist of great talent.

Hard as it may appear in individual cases, dependent poverty ought to be held disgraceful. —*Thomas Robert Malthus*

Useful as it may be, not many people learn a foreign language.

Faith may be defined briefly as an illogical belief in the occurrence of the improbable. —*H. L. Mencken* (1880-1956)

6. *May/might as well* bir iş yerine başka bir iş yapılabileceğini de ifade eder.

Özellikle konuşma dilinde, başka seçenek olmadığından yapılması söz konusu olan işler anlatılır. MAY ile MIGHT arasında anlam farkı yoktur.

We might as well go to the pictures. There's nothing else to do.

Have you lent Ali \$2400? You may as well consider your money lost. Ali never pays his debts.

I think I might as well have spoken to the wall. He never responded.
—*Heidi Toffler* (President Reagan hakkında)



Aşağıda bir lise öğrencisi tarafından yazılmış bir şiir sunuyoruz. Şiirde MIGHT hangi anlamda kullanılıyor?

DO or DON'T

<i>Don't look ;</i>	<i>You might see.</i>
<i>Don't think ;</i>	<i>You might learn.</i>
<i>Don't walk ;</i>	<i>You might stumble.</i>

<i>Don't run ;</i>	<i>You might fall.</i>
<i>Don't try ;</i>	<i>You might fail.</i>
<i>Don't live ;</i>	<i>You might die.</i>

1. MAY'e göre daha zayıf olasılık ifadesinde kullanılır.

Genetic mistakes might be disastrous and irreversible.

There might be life on the moon.

Thinking she might be hurt, I felt very anxious.

The way to love anything is to realize that it might be lost.

Many might go to heaven with half the labor they go to hell.

I would never die for my beliefs because I might be wrong. —*Bertrand Russell*

I don't know where he is. He might be at work.

What he says might be true. Who knows?

If I won a fortune, I might give up work.

If you hurry, you might just get there in time.

2. İzin istemek ve rica etmek için kullanılabilir.

Might I be given a second chance?

Might I leave early today?

Excuse me, do you think I might have something to drink?

3. Dolaylı anlatımda (indirect speech), *MAY* yerine kullanılır.

He says that a pang in your abdomen may signal the beginning of appendicitis.

He said that a pang in your abdomen might signal the beginning of appendicitis.

Helen asked her boss if she might have an afternoon off to do her Christmas shopping.

4. Tavsiye ifade edebilir.

You might want to consult your teacher about how to begin your paper.

-Can you help me? I'm looking for a birthday present for my son.

-Certainly, madam. Might I suggest one of these new computer games?

6. Devrilik tümcelerde kullanılabilir.

Try as he might, he couldn't solve the problem.

7. Resmi dilde kullanılabilir.

It might be asked why pollution cannot be prevented.

It might be claimed that most developed European countries are actually supporting terrorism by selling all kinds of weapons to terrorists.

EXERCISE 114

Aşağıdaki tümceleri yakın anlamla *may/might as well* kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

- I'm tired and it doesn't look as if anything very interesting is likely to happen. I won't miss anything if I go to bed.
I might as well go to bed.
- Sooner or later you've got to talk to him about his rude behaviour. Why don't you do it right now?
- It doesn't do us any good to worry. We'd better stop thinking about it and start the new project.
- He doesn't care whether we do the work properly or not. Since there's no way we can please her, I think we should simply enjoy ourselves.
- You're going to have to have his own way sooner or later. Why don't you let him go now?
- I'm bored. There's nothing very exciting to do around here. I can't think of anything better to do than to go for a swim.

7. Worrying won't make things any better. Why don't you just relax and take it easy?
8. The Belgian government goes out of its way to protect terrorists that have killed Turks. They do everything possible to help those terrorists. Maybe they should simply declare those terrorists their heroes.
9. She isn't really in love with the businessman, but her parents want her to marry him, and there's no one else she likes any better!
10. There's no use getting all worked up about it. The doctor's on his way. We'd better wait and see what he thinks about it.
11. I know you're feeling better now, but I think it would be better to wait another day until your temperature is normal. Besides there's no particular reason for your getting up today.
12. My son is so fond of computers, and he's set his heart on becoming a software developer. There's nothing I can do to change his mind but let him go his own way.

EXERCISE 115

Aşağıdaki tümceleri, olasılık gösterecek şekilde *MAY* ya da *MIGHT* kullanarak yeniden yazınız. Bu tümcelerde "geniş" ya da "gelecek zaman" ifade edilmektedir. *MIGHT*, *MAY*e göre daha zayıf olasılık ifade etmekte kullanılır. *MAY* ve *MIGHT*, *have to*, *be able to* ve *be going to* ile birlikte kullanılabilir. Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

She will be jealous of the pretty girls that her husband will possibly meet.

She will be jealous of the pretty girls her husband MAY meet.

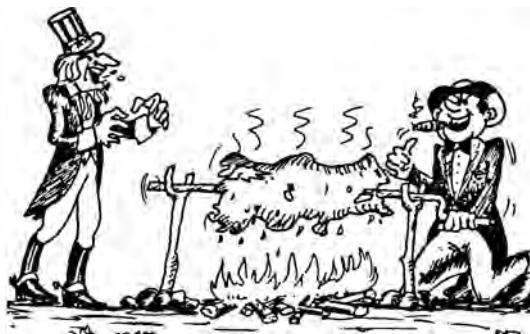
It's possible to call this potion a life-cleaner.

One MIGHT call it a life-cleaner.

1. There's a possibility that he'll find a better job.
He _____.
2. There's a faint possibility (but it's pretty unlikely!) that his wife will give him a divorce.
His wife _____.
3. It's possible that he will finish his book next week.
He _____.
4. It's quite possible that the detectives will find a clue.
The detectives _____.
5. There's a slight possibility that we'll be moving to another apartment next month (but it's unlikely).
We _____.

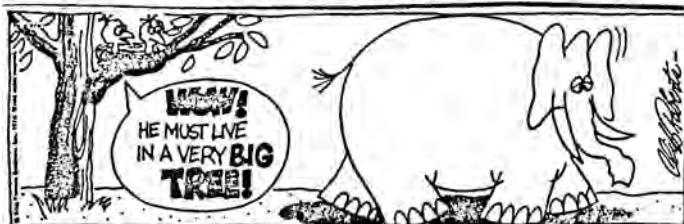
- The detectives _____.
5. There's a slight possibility that we'll be moving to another apartment next month (but it's unlikely).
We _____.
6. It's possible that they will prefer to stay at the Hilton (but I doubt it!).
They _____.
7. There's a strong possibility that Mr. James will have to leave on Monday.
Mr. James _____.
8. There's a slight change that I'll be able to take a few days off next week.
I _____.
9. It's quite likely that the doctor will have to cut off his leg.
The doctor _____.
10. It is highly possible that an old car well used will outlast a new car badly used.
An old car well used _____.
11. It is highly possible heavy users of calcium supplements will inadvertently poison themselves with trace metals.
Heavy users of calcium supplements _____.
12. It is quite likely that obese persons will be more likely than others to have health problems.
Obese persons _____.

This will be the fate of Turkey



if you cannot and will not do anything to prevent it.

MUST



1. Gereklilik ve zorunluluk gösterir.

Konuşmacı kendisi hakkında konuşuyorsa, gerekliliğe inanması söz konusudur.

I am putting on too much weight. I must go on a diet.

We must find ways of avoiding ecological side effects.

Drivers must obey the traffic laws.

We must eat to live.

If you want to pass, you must study harder.

To condemn Serbs's atrocities is not enough; we must insure against any future practice of genocide.

I must respect the opinions of others even if I disagree with them.

—Herbert Henry Lehman

If we desire respect for the law, we must first make the law respectable.

—Louis D. Brandeis

Urgent measures must be taken immediately to prevent an epidemic in the earthquake area.

2. Gözleme ve gerçeklere dayalı tahmin ifadesinde kullanılır.



He spends a lot of money. He must be rich.

You must be hating staying home, for I meet you wherever I go.

He looks terrible. He must have a headache.

I must be dreaming; what I am seeing cannot be real.

Wherever there is a secret, there must be something wrong.

One must be an idiot to believe that developed countries care for the well-being of poor countries.



- 3.** İfadeye alaycı bir ton katmakta ve kızgınlık ifade etmekte kullanılır.



Edward, must you do that every time I spend more than two hours on the phone?

Must you make that dreadful noise? (Şu berbat gürültüyü kes!)
If you must smoke, use an ashtray. (Madem ki sigara içecksin, kültablası kullan.)

Be careless in your dress if you must, but keep a tidy soul. – *Mark Twain*



"EDgar, must you stare at every woman who passes by?"

- 4.** Kaçınılmazlık ifade edebilir.

Good men must die, but death cannot kill their names. –*Proverb*

There is nothing certain in a man's life but that he must lose it. –*Owen Meredith*

What can't be cured must be endured. –*Proverb*

If you can't feed the cats, you must feed the rats.

5. Tausiye ifade edebilir.

He that goes barefoot must not plant thorns.

A good lawyer must be a great liar.

If you want to stay thin, you must eschew rich foods.

When buying a house, you must be sure to have it checked for termites.

One must keep the ends in mind when determining the means of education.

A man without a smiling face must not open a shop.—*Chinese maxim*

6. insani sorumluluk ifade edebilir.

1. We must feed the hungry and clothe the naked.

2. The police must combat crime in the cities.

3. To condemn American atrocities against the Indians is not enough; we must insure against any future practice of abuse against them.

7. *MUST NOT*, yasak ifade eder.

A pregnant woman mustn't drink or smoke.

He who would catch fish must not mind getting wet.

Children must not sit up late watching TV.

You mustn't leave a fire unattended in a forest.



"If you got me a pony, you wouldn't have to fix anything."

DON'T HAVE TO / NEEDN'T

Must, gereklilik gösteriyor. Gerekliliğin olmadığını göstermek için *don't have to* ve *needn't* kullanılmaktadır.

You must repair the machine today. (Makinayı bugün tamir etmen gerekiyor.)

You don't have to repair the machine today = You needn't repair the machine today (Makinayı bugün tamir etmeniz gerekmıyor.)

EXERCISE 116

MUSTN'T kullanarak aşağıdaki durumlara uygun tümceler kurunuz. Örneği inceleyiniz.

These mushrooms are poisonous. Do not eat them.

You mustn't eat those mushrooms.

1. Fish in this river are poisonous. Don't fish in this river.
2. It is obvious that smoking causes cancer. Don't smoke.
3. Never drive without fastening your seat-belt.
4. You are overweight. Don't eat too much.
5. This river is polluted. Don't swim in it.
6. This shopkeeper is not honest. Do not trust him.
7. The weather is too hot outside. Don't let the children go out.
8. The brakes on this car are bad. Don't drive it.
9. It is dangerous to drive when drunk. Don't do it.
10. Your son is seriously ill. Don't let him go out.



"Hi! I'm Ed Duncan—you must be the old man."



"No, it must be somebody else"

EXERCISE 117

MUST ve CAN'T tahmin gösterebilir. MUST ve/veya CAN'T kullanarak durumlara uygun tahminler yapınız. Örnekleri inceleyiniz.

She has ordered three hamburgers for herself. (hungry)

She must be very hungry.

The house is large and luxurious. (not cheap)

It can't be cheap.

1. She hasn't eaten a thing since breakfast. (hungry)
2. Her son has just been promoted. (happy)
3. His books are selling well. (a good writer)
4. He is very short. (a basketball player)
5. He lives in an extremely shabby house. (rich)
6. The people entering the building are carrying wet umbrellas. (rain)
7. We hear the sound of fire engines. (a fire nearby)
8. He doesn't know how to read and write. (a university graduate)
9. The British Empire has exploited many nations for centuries. (rich)
10. European countries have been plundering the Third World nations for centuries. (very greedy)

SHALL

Günümüz İngilizcesinde *shall* daha çok resmi dilde kullanılan bir kip belirteci olmuştur. Gelecek zaman ifadesi için birinci tekil ve çoğul kişilerle kullanımı kaybolmak üzeredir.

1. Birinci tekil ve çoğul kişilerle gelecek zaman ifade eder.

Bu kullanım daha çok İngiliz İngilizce'sinde görülüyor Amerikan İngilizce'sinde bütün kişilerle **WILL** tercih edilmektedir.

Mrs. Braddock:	Mr. Churchill, you are drunk.
Churchill:	And you, madam, are ugly. But I shall be sober tomorrow.

If we open a quarrel between the past and the present, we shall find that we have lost the future. — *Winston Churchill*

Tomorrow we shall discuss when the next meeting is to take place.

We shall never find out why Kennedy was assassinated.

I shall be forever grateful to my first teacher.

Men know where they were born, not where they shall die.

SHALL, bu kullanımıyla, resmi yazı ve konuşmalarda yer alabilir.

2. Kararlılık ya da kesinlik ifade edebilir. Bu kullanımda **SHALL tümce vurgusunu alır.**

I was born an American; I live an American; I shall die an American.

— *Daniel Webster*

I shall tell the truth.

However weak we may be, we shall never surrender.

I shall never permit myself to stoop so low as to hate any man. — *T. Washington Booker*

We must all hang together, or most assuredly we shall all hang separately.

— *Benjamin Franklin*

3. Yardım önerisinde bulunmak, bir şey yapmayı önermek için kullanılır.

Shall we: birlikte bir iş yapmayı önermek; **SHALL**' in en yaygın kullanımı budur.

It is very hot. Shall I open a window? (Bir pencere açayım mı?)

Shall I give you a ride home? Yes, please. No, thank you.

Shall we start? Yes, let's. / No, let's not.

What shall we do to be saved?

4. Söz, vaat ifade edebilir.

We shall seek the truth and endure the consequences. — *Charles Seymour*

We shall not flag or fail. We shall die if necessary.

We shall strive to win victories in such fields as culture, scholarship, science, and economics.

5. Tehdit ifade edebilir.

If you do anything to harm us, you shall pay for it.

Those European governments that support terrorism shall have to face the consequences.

They have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind. –*Hosea: 8:7*

6. Kamu duyurularındaki kurallarda *must* yerine kullanılır.

These rooms shall be kept ready at all times.

7. Kamu duyurularında *have the right to* anlamında kullanılır.

The restaurant shall reserve the right to refuse to serve those who are unproperly dressed.

8. Hukuk dilinde, yazın dili ve dini metinlerde kullanılır.

You shall not steal.

He that digs a pit shall fall into it. –*The Holy Bible*

He who lies down with dogs shall rise with fleas. – *Proverb*

He who says what he likes shall hear what he does not like. – *Proverb*

As you sow, so shall you reap. – *English proverb*

The tenant shall be responsible for maintenance of the apartment.

Men know where they were born, not where they shall die.

You shall judge of a man by his foes as well as by his friends. – *J. Conrad*

In all matters relating to the conduct of the competition and the awarding of prizes, the editor's decision shall be final.

EXERCISE 118

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde **SHALL** kip belirtecinin hangi anlamlarda kullanıldığıni saptayınız.

1. I shall never lie again.
2. It seems that it will get colder. Shall I turn on the heat?
3. He who is greedy shall never find happiness.
4. Shall we play bridge?
5. If they keep attacking us, they shall regret it.
6. The company has declared that all the employees shall benefit from the new organization.
7. If the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. – *Matthew 15:14*
8. A society grows great when old men plant trees whose shade they know they shall never sit in. – *Proverb*
9. We shall never be slaves.
10. It might rain soon. Shall I lend you my umbrella?

SHOULD

SHOULD, kip belirteçleri içinde, en fazla farklı kullanıma sahip olmalıdır.

1. Görev, gereklilik ve təusiye ifade edebilir.

You should quit smoking immediately.

Common sense should be the keystone for any dieting and exercise scheme.

If we encounter a man of rare intellect, we should ask him what books he reads. –*Ralph Waldo Emerson*

Some doctors believe that a doctor should conceal the truth from a patient with a terminal disease.

The brownies should be baked in a shallow pan for 30 minutes.

A good plan should precede, not follow, the growth of a large city.

The aim of education should be to teach the child to think, not what to think. –*John Dewey*

A fox should not be of the jury at a goose's trial. –*Thomas Fuller*

Old people should avoid jogging, skiing, weight-lifting, or strenuous sports unless they have a specific go-ahead from their doctors.

2. Beklenti, akıl yürütme, tahmin ifade edebilir.

The film should be good with all those stars in it !

You've worked hard, and you're intelligent enough, so you should pass your exam.

A baby is God's opinion that life should go on. –*Carl Sandburg*

The abundance of the wheat crop should result in lower prices for the consumer.

We should be finishing the work in an hour.

3. Koşul tümceciklerinde kullanıldığındá bir olasılığın zayıflığını vurgular.

Should you fail to operate the machine, just give me a call.

If Europe should ever be ruined, it will be by its warriors. –*Montesquieu*

4. Duygu ve vurgulama ifade eden eylem ve sıfatları izleyen (verbs and adjectives of urgency), ad tümceciklerinde kullanılır.

It's strange that men should take up crime when there are so many legal ways to be dishonest.

He proposes that the Government should hold an inquiry.

It's natural that people should like their comfort.

It is natural that you should feel annoyed.

His suggestion that we should include everyone in the game is a very good idea.

It is for the general good of all that the wicked should be punished.
—*Euripides*.

VERBS	ADJECTIVES	NOUNS
demand	essential	a pity
propose	fair	good
suggest	mandatory	suggestion
Maintain	natural	
urge	strange	
	vital	

It is essential that every Turk should realize the threat posed by the United States.

We suggest that Turkey should save herself from the bond of IMF.

It is vital that Turkey should protect her rights at all costs.

It is a pity that President Bush should do such a foolish thing.

5. Sadece 1. tekil kişi ile, koşul tümcecığında, ögüt vermek için kullanılır.

Economy seems to be improving. I should invest in the stock market if I were you.

6. Resmi ortamda, koşul tümcecığında / ve we ile, would yerine kullanılır.

The greatest of all faults, I should say, is to be conscious of none.

-- Thomas Carlyle

7. Geçici bir öneri bildirmekte kullanılır.

Should we perhaps stop working now? It is too dark to do anything anyway.

8. Devrik koşul tümcekçileri yapımında kullanılır.

Should ministers decide to instigate an inquiry, we would welcome it.

Should he call (=if he calls), tell him to meet me at the station.

Should predictions of a quake within the next ten years be accurate, many Californians may be able to save both their lives and their property.

9. Eurensel değerlerin ifade edilmesinde kullanılır.

Crimes should be punished.

It is for the general good of all that the wicked should be punished.

—Euripides

A spirit of courtesy should exist among nations.

A school should not be a preparation for life. A school should be life.

—Elbert Hubbard

A university should be a place of light, of liberty, and of learning.

—Benjamin Disraeli

Above all, common sense should be the keystone for any dieting and exercise scheme.

Laws should be like clothes. They should be made to fit the people they are meant to serve. —Clarence Darrow

10. dilekler wishes & requests

I shouldn't like you to see more of him than is absolutely unavoidable.

If we encounter a man of rare intellect, we should ask him what books he reads. —*Ralph Waldo Emerson*

11. For fear that, lest, in case that tümceciklerinde kullanılır.

He locked his door lest his brother should find his secret diary.

The villagers dared not go near the murdered man lest the officers of justice should catch them there and charge them with murder.

She did not utter a word for fear that she should say something wrong.

12. Belli eylemlerin nesnesi olarak kullanılan ad içtümceciklerinde kullanılır.

I wonder why she should buy a thing like that.

These cars were returned to the factory in order that their drive-shafts should be replaced.

13. BUT ile birlikte, geçmiş zamanda bir olayı vurgulamakta kullanılır.

Who should turn out to be the murderer but the sweet old day, whom people thought to be a symbol of human love.

EXERCISE 119

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda **should** ya da **shouldn't** kullanınız.

1. We _____ drink or eat too much.
2. One _____ put off what he can do today.
3. Before you use a new word, you _____ understand its meaning.
4. If you don't want to put on weight, you _____ have starchy food and sugary refreshments.
5. When it's snowing, you _____ wear warm clothing.
6. If you don't know what to do with yourself in your spare time, you _____ find yourself a hobby.
7. If you want to lose weight, you _____ eat a lot of candy.
8. To prevent tooth decay, we _____ brush our teeth regularly.
9. Under no conditions _____ you drive when drunk.
10. You _____ help your father because he has got too much to do.
11. If you want to be successful, you _____ work harder.
12. If you want to make new friends, you _____ be selfish.
13. Your room is such a mess. You _____ clean it.
14. If a country is to remain independent, she _____ have a strong economy.
15. It is for the general good of all of us that imperialism in all forms _____ be prevented as soon as possible.
16. He that will keep a monkey _____ pay for the glasses he breaks. —*John Seldes*

17. The practice of eating well-balanced meals _____ be strengthened through the last years.
 18. Fresh fruits _____ eaten before they are washed.
 19. You _____ quite overweight. You _____ eat starchy food.
 20. You _____ seriously ill. You _____ postpone seeing a doctor.
-
-

EXERCISE 120

Mrs. White'la, Mr. White'a örnekteki gibi tavsiyelerde bulununuz.

MR. WHITE: I've got a terrible headache. (take a couple of aspirins)

MRS. WHITE: You should take a couple of aspirins

1. I am putting on too much weight. (go on a diet)
 2. I'm getting a smoker's cough. (give up smoking)
 3. My sight is getting worse. (see an optician)
 4. I always feel tired out. (take a holiday)
 5. I'm having trouble with my hearing. (consult an ear specialist)
 6. I've got an awful pain in my chest. (see a doctor)
 7. I cannot get up early, I am usually late for work. (go to bed earlier)
 8. I feel sleepy at work. (get more sleep at night)
 9. My eyes get watery and red. (blink your eyes while using the computer)
 10. I get hungry while working. (eat some biscuits or crackers)
-

EXERCISE 121

Aşağıda ilk yardımla ilgili kurallar verilmektedir. Buyruk tümcelerini **must**, **mustn't**, **should**, **shouldn't** kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

- I. If someone faints:
 1. > Lay the person down on his back.
 2. > Keep him lying down until he recovers completely.
 3. > Don't let him stand up quickly.
- II. If someone gets cut seriously:
 4. > Try to stop the bleeding at once.
 5. > Use a clean bandage to cover the wound.
 6. > Do not remove the bandage when the bleeding stops.
- III. If someone gets burned (first- or second-degree burns):
 7. > Apply cold water until the pain goes away.
 8. > Dry the burned area very gently.
 9. > Cover the burn with a bandage to protect it, if necessary.
 10. > Do not remove any skin.

WOULD

*"How would you like an early
Mothers' Day gift, Mom?"*

What is Dennis planning to give his mother as a Mothers' Day gift?

1. Koşul tümceciklerinde (Type II) kullanılır.

Life on Earth would not be possible without water.

If I were taller, I would join the basketball team.

If Christ were here there is one thing he would not be: a Christian. – *Mark Twain*

If death did not exist: it would be necessary to invent it. –*J. B. Milhaud*

If we all did the things we are capable of doing, we would literally astound ourselves. –*Thomas Alva Edison*

Mountains of gold would not seduce some men, yet flattery would break them down. –*Henry Ward Beecher*

Lady Astor ile Winston Churchill'in konuşmasında WOULD'un kullanımına dikkat ediniz.

Lady Astor: If you were my husband, I would feed you poison.

Churchill: If you were my wife, madam, I would gladly take it!

WOULD, ifli tümcecığın görünmesine gerek duyulmadan varsayımsal durumlar ifade eder. WOULD'un bu kullanımının en çarpıcı örneklerinden birini aşağıdaki gazeteci-Gandhi konuşmasında görüyoruz. Gandhi'nin gazetecinin sorusuna yanıtının "Batı uygarlığı diye bir şey yoktur, Batı, uygarlaşmaya başlasa iyi olurdu ama bu da hiç mümkün görünmüyör," anlamına gelmesi WOULD'un "gerçeğe aykırı geniş zaman" ifade etmesi sayesinde mümkün olmuştur.

Gazeteci: *What do you think of Western civilization?*

Gandhi: *It would be a good idea.*

(There is no such thing as Western civilization, but if they started to create it, it would be a good move.)

By resignation he would lose his pension rights.

A three-legged chicken would be an oddity of nature.

The consequences of a nuclear war would be dire.

- 2. Rica ifade eder. Bu kullanımda çoğunlukla *Would you mind U-ing* yapısında görünür. *Would you like ...* da yardım önerisi yapmakta kullanılır.**

Would you mind fetching my eyeglasses for me? I've left them downstairs.
Would you do me a favour?

Would you loan me \$100 till next week? Certainly. / I'm afraid I can't.

Would you like help with that heavy burden?

Would you like me to give you a lift home?



- 3. İsteklilik ifade eder.**

He who would catch fish must not mind getting wet.

If you would have a good servant, take neither a kinsman nor a friend.

Those who would have nothing to do with thorns must never attempt to gather flowers.

If-tümceciğinde genelde kip belirteçleri kullanılmaz. İsteklilik vurgulandığında **IF YOU *WOULD*** yapısı kullanılmaktadır.

If you would be pungent, be brief; for it is with words as with sunbeams—
the more they are condensed, the deeper they burn. – *Robert Southey*

If you would abolish avarice, you must abolish its mother, luxury.
– *Marcus Tullius Cicero*

- 4. Dolaylı anlatımda *WILL* yerine kullanılır.**

"I will be home all day long," said she to her husband.

She told her husband that she would be home all day long.

- 5. Geçmiş zaman anlatımında *WILL* yerine *WOULD* kullanılır.**

After I fell off a ladder, I realized what it would feel like to be old and decrepit.

The bill was altered so that the President would not veto it again.

- 6. Geçmişte alışkanlık ifade eden *USED TO* yerine kullanılabilir.**

Michelangelo had a remarkable ability to concentrate his thoughts and energy on the task in hand. Often while working he would eat only a little bread, would sleep on the floor or on a cot beside his unfinished painting or statue.

When we were children, we would go to the cinema every week.
My father would take us to the park every Sunday.

5. Geçmişte, ısrarlara rağmen yapılmamış işleri belirtmekte kullanılır.

I tried hard, but the car wouldn't start.

Despite our requests, she wouldn't sing again.

Edward's father would not give him a car; his pleas were futile.

I begged him to come with me, but he wouldn't .

US President James A. Garfield was shot during his first year in office
(1881) by a man to whom he wouldn't give a job.

Every father expects his boy to do the things he wouldn't do when he was
young.— *Kin Hubbard*

6. Şimdiki zamana ait istekleri bildirmek üzere *wish*, *if only*, ve *what*'tan sonra kullanılır.

I wish so many idiots would not appear in TV shows.

If only Turks could see the hypocrisy of European states.

What wouldn't we give for wealth and peace in our country!

If only there weren't so many pollutants in the atmosphere, the ozone layer
wouldn't be in danger of being depleted.

7. İnanamazlık ifade eden sorularda kullanılır.

Who would ever believe that this old man was once a business tycoon?

(Bu yaşlı adamın bir zamanlar büyük bir işadamlı olduğuna kim inanır?)

Only a lunatic would drink water mixed with turpentine.

Who would be foolish enough to believe such nonsense?



"It's him all right. I'd recognize that eye anywhere."

EXERCISE 122

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda uygun şekilde **should** ya da **would** kullanınız.

1. _____ you please let us have your decision soon?
 2. We set our early so that we _____ arrive in good time.
 3. They _____ not listen to our advice, and they had to suffer the consequences.
 4. They _____ listen to our advice since we know what we are talking about.
 5. Although we tried hard to persuade him, he _____ not come with us.
 6. _____ you be so kind as to lend me your pen?
 7. Advanced students of English _____ spend several hours a week reading.
 8. He _____ go out without his raincoat even though we told him it was going to rain.
 9. In former times tribal chiefs _____ settle disputes of all kinds.
 10. We _____ pay our school fees by next Monday.
-

EXERCISE 123

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **Would you mind ya da Do you mind ...** ile başlayan sorulara çeviriniz.

Please don't smoke in the bedroom.

Would you mind not smoking in the bedroom?

May I close that window?

Do you mind my closing that window?

1. May I leave early this morning?
2. May I pay you by cheque?
3. Please try not to arrive late for your class in future.
4. Please pass the sugar.
5. May I use your dictionary for a few minutes?
6. Please don't talk to me while I'm reading.
7. Will you give me change for a £ I note?
8. Please take your feet off the seat.



"Uncle Charlie could have a gread ball field
if he would just get rid of all the corn."



1. Geçmişe ilişkin fiziksel ve zihinsel yetenek ifade eder.

He could run faster than anybody else.

Poor American boys who could not afford college found themselves going to Vietnam to kill or die .

Primitive hunters used bows and arrows to kill game that could not be outrun.

She was such a good swimmer that she could glide through the water like a fish.

In ancient times a philosopher could learn all there was to be known within his own culture.

2. Geçmişte başarılı işleri ifade edebilir.

The treasurer was caught before he could abscond with the money.

I could understand all he said to me.

Her wish to be buried in her village could not be fulfilled.

I could find only one ticket to the theater, so I stayed home with my wife and gave the ticket to a friend.

In 1798, the Frenchmen Louis Robert invented a method of paper-making by which sheets up to 3 meters wide and 16 meters long could be made.

According to some archeologists, the cities died because they could not live in peace.

Bir işin zorla başarılacağını belirtmek için, *could* ile *scarcely*, *hardly* gibi zarflar kullanılır.

He was so drunk that he could barely stand.

His trunk was so heavy that he could scarcely carry it.

3. Geçmişte başarılılamamış işleri ifade edebilir.

Because his clothes were caught in the barbed wire, he could not escape.

His words were so explicit that I could not pretend as if I did not get his meaning.

Try as he might, he couldn't solve the problem.

Both groups stopped and stayed on the islands, for they could not travel farther.

German bombers attacked London again and again but could not break the resistance of the English.

Her wish to be buried in her village could not be fulfilled.

Amaç ve sonuç ifade eden tümceler geçmiş zamanda kurulmuşsa **can** yerine **could** kullanılabilir.

He was so angry that he could not keep silent.

He sold all his property so that he could move abroad.

He locked his room to make certain that nobody could enter it.

4. Rica ifade eder.



Could you come to dinner to us next week?
Could you speak more carefully?

5. İzin isteme, izin verme yapılarında kullanılır.

Could I use your computer? Yes, of course, you can.

You could do the first exercise for an assignment.

6. Yardım önerisi ifade eder.

I could lend you the money to buy a computer.

7. Tavsiye ifade edebilir.

You could do it tomorrow.

8. Geniş ve gelecek zamana ait olasılık ifade eder.



Gliding for the first time could be a frightening development.
 This invention could revolutionize the computer industry.
 Don't eat it; it could be poisonous.
 It could rain today. Take your umbrella.
 Chemical and biological warfare, like nuclear warfare, could one day
 destroy mankind.
 In America, we discard as offal that which could feed families in less
 fortunate parts of the world.
 You should not taste it, since the tiniest bit could kill you.
 The luxurious automobile has every feature a millionaire could dream of
 having.
 Any future world war could include the nuclear bombing of many cities in
 the United States.
 About 14,000 Canadian lakes have died and up to 40,000 could reach the
 same tragic end unless acid rain is reduced.
 Could our life span be extended, or is there an inescapable aging mech-
 anism that restricts human longevity to the present apparent limit?



*"Nonsense! There couldn't be any
 whales in this bay!"*

9. Dolaylı anlatımda *can* yerine kullanılır.

Martin Luther King said, "The money and effort spent on war can be used to combat poverty and discrimination."
 Martin Luther King said that the money and effort spent on war could be used to combat poverty and discrimination.
 They knew that night blindness could be circumvented by eating liver, a source of vitamin A.
 Authorities declared that insect infestation could also threaten the life of a forest.

10. Koşul tümceciklerinde (Type II) kullanılır.

The world would be a better place if we could abolish wars.
 If man could have half his wishes he would double his troubles. —Benjamin Franklin
 If you could sell your experience for what it cost you, you would have a fortune.
 If I could drop dead right now, I'd be the happiest man alive! —Samuel Goldwin

Every businessman would do without advertising if he could.

This could be such a beautiful world if we could all care just a little more.

Koşul ifade eden tümcelerin temel tümceciklerinde **could** kullanımı yaygındır.

You could be happy if you weren't so greedy.

If a society had to consume everything it produced just to stay alive,
nothing could be put aside to increase future productions.

If it weren't for his financial support, I could hardly survive.

☞ **COULD** devrik if-clause kurabilir.

There is a remedy for everything, could men find it.

11. Geçmişte olmuş artık mümkün olmayan işleri ifade eder.

Only five years ago you could buy a house for \$10,000.

No longer could Americans afford ostentatious, gas-guzzling vehicles.

12. Yazılı dilinde kullanılır.

It could be said that human beings love to hate.

CAN vs. COULD



"Well, then, could I eat HALF this candy and just ruin HALF my appetite?"

1	She can speak Chinese.	She could speak Chinese.
2	It can rain tomorrow.	It could rain tomorrow.
3	---	I couldn't finish my paper yesterday.
4	Can you help me?	Could you help me?
5	I know she can swim like a fish.	She said she could swim like a fish.

1. CAN, şimdiki zaman/geniş zamana ait yetenek gösterir. COULD geçmişe ait yetenek ifade eder.
2. Hem CAN hem de COULD geleceğe ilişkin tahmin gösterebilir. COULD daha zayıf bir olasılık gösterir.
3. COULD geçmişte başarılımış bir iş gösterir. CAN, geçmişle ilgili bir anlam üstlenemez.
4. Hem CAN, hem COULD, rica sorularında kullanılır. COULD daha kibardır.
5. Geniş zamandaki tümceler dolaylı anlatıma çevrilirken giriş eylemi PAST ise dolaysız anlatımdaki CAN yerine COULD kullanılır.

could vs. was/were able to

1. *Jack could play chess when he was 5 years old.*
2. *Jack was able to repair his car before we came.*

Birinci tümcede **COULD**, geçmişe ait bir yetenek göstermektedir; Jack'in 5 yaşında satranç oynayabildiğini ifade etmektedir. İkinci tümcede ise belli bir zamanda bir işin yapılabildiği ifade edilmektedir. **WAS/WERE ABLE TO** sadece bir işin belli zamanda yapılabildiğini ifade etmek için kullanılır.

Geçmişte yapılamayan işlerde kullanılan **COULD**, yetenek yokluğunu vurgular.

The cave was so dark that we could not see a thing.

His clothes caught in the barbed wire, he could not escape.

Özne, insan değilse, kullanılacak kip belirteci **COULD** olur.

Her wish to be buried in her village could not be fulfilled.

EXERCISE 124

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin ifade ettiği durumlara uygun şekilde **COULDN'T** ile tümce kurunuz. Örneği inceleyiniz.

Jack wanted to buy a computer, but he didn't have any money.

Jack couldn't buy a computer because he didn't have any money.

1. They wanted to get married, but their parents did not approve of their marriage.
2. She wanted to be an artist, but she had no talent.
3. We wanted to buy the house, but it was too expensive for us.
4. Third World countries wanted to develop their economies, but the United States wanted to keep them underdeveloped countries.
5. Turkey wanted to get rid of terrorism, but European countries were greatly benefiting from it.
6. American blacks wanted equal rights, but the government of the United States was too powerful.
7. The British Navy wanted to set foot in Gallipoli, but Turkish troops stopped them.
8. The Western World wanted to enslave Turks, but Mustafa Kemal started an independence war.

EXERCISE 125

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşluklarda **can**, **could** ya da **was/were able to** kullanınız. Tümceler olumlu ya da olumsuz olabilir.

1. Jack is very happy. He has just married, and his wife ____ cook delicious meals.

2. Jack told me that he _____ play chess well.
3. Anyone _____ make mistakes if he is in a hurry.
4. I am afraid I _____ pay you anything until next week.
5. I _____ never forget what you have done for me.
6. She _____ answer all the questions on the test tomorrow.
7. _____ you tell me how I can get to the train station?
8. The world would be a better place if we _____ abolish wars.
9. If you _____ sell your experience for what it cost you, you would have a fortune.
10. A fool _____ ask a question which forty wise men _____ not answer.
11. By means of much hard work, the volunteers _____ place the raging forest fire under control.
12. Yesterday we _____ paint all the rooms.
13. A lighted-cigarette end _____ be enough to cause a forest fire.
14. If man _____ have half his wishes he would double his troubles.

—Benjamin Franklin

RİCA VE İZİN İSTEME YAPILARINDA KİP BELİRTEÇLERİNİN KULLANIMI



"I wasn't paying attention. Could you please repeat your speech?"

RİCA	YANIT	EN KİBAR
Would you mind helping me?	No, I wouldn't.	
Would you please help me?	Of course.	
Could you please help me?	Certainly.	
Can you please help me?	Sure.	
Will you please help me?	No problem.	
Help me, will you?	Okay.	GÜNDELİK DİL

İZİN İSTEME	YANIT	EN KİBAR
Would you mind if I left early?	No, I wouldn't.	
May I leave early?	Yes, you may.	
Could I leave early?	Yes, of course.	
Can I leave early?	Sure.	GÜNDELİK DİL



Mom, may I poison someone?



DARE, hem kip belirteci hem de bir eylem olarak kullanılır. Kip belirteci olarak olumsuz tümcelerle soru tümcelerinde kullanılır. Eylem ve kip belirteci olarak DARE "cesaret etmek, küstahlik etmek" anlamlarını içermektedir.

Women in New York don't dare to go out at night. (Dare=eylem)

A man who dares to waste one hour of time has not discovered the value of life. –Charles Darwin (1809-1882) (Dare=eylem)

My car can go at 200 kilometers an hour, but I daren't try it at that speed. (Dare=kip belirteci)

Dare you climb this mountain? No, I daren't. (Dare=kip belirteci)

1. Cesaret ifade eder.

She daren't go out alone at night.

What bank would dare offer such terms?

We dare not forget today that we are the heirs of the Turkish War of Independence.

My brother was sleeping, and I dared not wake him.

My brother dare not take off his shoes when others are around because he has got smelly feet.

I accept reality and dare not question it. -Margaret Anderson

Dare she go out alone at night?

Dare he go and speak to her boss?

A person needs a little madness, or else they never dare cut the rope and be free. —*Nikos Kazantzakis*

He that cannot reason is a fool. He that will not is a bigot. He that dare not is a slave. —*Andrew Carnegie*

2. HOW DARE yapısıyla öfke ifade eder.

How dare you speak to me like that?

Don't you dare speak to me like that!

Then the Wolf called out to the Lamb, "How dare you muddle the water from which I am drinking?" —*Aesop*

3. I DARE SAY , *I suppose* anlamında kullanılır.

I dare say the United States is an imperialistic country.

I dare say the British Empire is guilty of countless atrocities.



DARE (eylem)

1. Cesaret gösterir. Bu kullanımda **dare** düzensiz eylem olarak davranışır.

She didn't dare (to) speak or move.

He did not dare to walk to the village.

Only those who dare to fail greatly can ever achieve greatly. —*J. F. Kennedy*

There was such a terrible storm that nobody dared to go out.

With courage you will dare to take risks.

More thoughtful politicians know this, but do not dare to say so.

I never dared to be radical when I was young. —*Robert Frost*

No one in our office dares to give his or her frank opinion.

She dared to contradict her boss, but I dared not to contradict mine.

Never does the human soul appear so strong as when it foregoes revenge and dares to forgive an injury. —*Edwin H. Chapin*

In the Middle Ages the church was determined to burn any man who dared to bring any enlightenment to the human mind.

2. Özellikle çocuk dilinde, meydan okuma ifadesi olarak kullanılır.

I dare you to do it.

She dared me to do it.

I dare you to say this to his face.

I dare you to touch my toy. (Oyuncağıma dokun da göreyim.)

3. Saygısızlık gösterildiğini ifade eder.

He dares to accuse me of telling lies.

EXERCISE 126

Aşağıdaki soruları *daren't* kullanarak yanıtlayınız.

Can you swim in this lake?

No, I *daren't* swim in this lake. It is too polluted.

1. Does she eat mushrooms?
2. Does she object to her mother?
3. Can women go out at night in New York?
4. Does she ask her father to help her?
5. Can you drive this car?



"Boy, your music teacher ought to be ashamed of himself."

1. Bir işin yapılmasının gerektiğini belirtir.

That was a disgraceful thing to do; you ought to be ashamed of yourself.

There's the whole case, and now I want your advice as to what I ought to do.

Anyone who goes to a psychiatrist ought to have his head examined.

—Samuel Goldwin

We ought to work harder, oughtn't we?

Wisdom too often never comes, and so one ought not to reject it merely because it comes late. —*Felix Frankfurter*

Successful gardening is doing what has to be done when it has to be done the way it ought to be done whether you want to do it or not. —*Baker*

Men do less than they ought, unless they do all that they can. —*Thomas Carlyle*

2. Tavsiye ifade edebilir.

You smoke too many cigarettes; you ought to cut down.

The book *American Holocaust* by Stannard ought to be read by everybody.

The fame of great men always ought to be estimated by the means used to acquire it. —*Francois de La Rochefoucauld*

It's okay for us to love our country, but we ought to spend most of our time making our country lovable. —*Andy Rooney*

Even moderation ought not to be practiced to excess.

The church ought to be separated from the state, and the state from the church. —*Pius IX*

3. Beklenti ve akıl yürütme ifade eder.

You ought to catch the bus all right- there is still enough time.

There oughtn't to be any difficulties. The job is quite easy.

They ought to be here by now.

To cease smoking is the easiest thing I ever did, I ought to know because I've done it a thousand times. —*Mark Twain*

EXERCISE 127

Ought To tavsiye ifade eder. Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyerek **Ought To** ile tümce kurunuz.

He has a persistent pain in his chest. It is advisable that he see a doctor as soon as possible.

He ought to see a doctor as soon as possible.

1. I understand that he wants to be an author. If so, it is important that he read a lot.
2. Her husband is too ill to work. It is necessary that she find a good job.
3. You have had too much wine. Don't drive.
4. There are too many spelling mistakes in your composition. It is necessary that you rewrite it.
5. You are not earning much. It is important that you spend money carefully.
6. It is important that you speak less and read more.
7. Anything can happen. Be ready for any surprise.
8. It is important that the church be separated from the state.
9. It is important that one have a good memory when he has told a lie.
10. This is a very dangerous show. It is important that you keep quiet during the performance.



NEED sözcüğünü 4 temel kullanımda görüyoruz. **NEED**'in eylem ve ad olarak kullanımı diğer eylem ve adlardan farklılık göstermez.

1. NEED= eylem "İhtiyaç olmak"

Kuwait and the United States need each other.

The plants need the minerals to make food.

What do we need to make a cake?

A high-powered microscope is needed to detect bacteria in some substances.

2 NEED= ad "İhtiyaç, gereksinim"

We are all aware of the need for better textbooks.

The need for food has caused people to fight wars.

Our need to express ourselves can take many forms.

In thinking only of your present needs and ignoring the future, you are being rather myopic.

3 Kip belirteci NEED gereklilik ifade eder. Sadece soru tümceleriyle olumsuz tümcelerde kullanılır. NEEDN'T gerekliğin olmadığını gösterir.

Need I write down everything you say?

You needn't work overtime, need you?

You needn't do any serious work in this office.

Temel tümcesi olumsuz olan bir tümcede yer alan ad içtümceciğinde NEED olumlu görünümünde olabilir ama anlam olumsuzdur.

I don't suppose we need stay here until everything is over.

Tümceye olumsuzluk anlamı katan belirteçlerle NEED olumlu tümcelerde kullanılabilir.

We	hardly scarcely never	need say that American Indians have been the victims of a genocide that has taken millions of lives.
----	-----------------------------	--

4 NEED TO "yapmak zorunda olmak" anlamındadır ve kullanım açısından bir eylem gibi davranışır.

You do not need to pay now.

Does she need to type all these letters?

Doctors need to approach patients not as "cases" or "disease" but as individuals.

Most schools need to strengthen courses or change teaching techniques.

The results of the test proved to her that she needed to study harder and watch fewer movies on television.

Listen to your intuition. It will tell you everything you need to know.
-Anthony J. D'Angel

There is no reason in the world to fight, however there is every reason to
 need to know how to fight. - Sun Tzu, *The Art of War*

You don't need to go by bus. I'll take you there in the car.

People with depression need to be listened to and encouraged to find their
 own solutions.

EXERCISE 128

Aşağıdaki parçada kullanılan *need* sözcüklerinin hangilerinin *verb*, hangilerinin *modal* ve hangilerinin *noun* olduğunu belirtiniz.

THE WORLD DOES NOT (1) NEED SUCCESSFUL PEOPLE

There is a myth that the purpose of education is that of giving you the means for upward mobility and success. Thomas Merton once identified this as the 'mass production of people literally unfit for anything except to take part in an elaborate and completely artificial charade.' Merton's advice to students was this:

'Be anything you like, be madmen, drunks, and bastards of every shape and form, but at all costs avoid one thing: success.'

The plain fact is that the planet does not (2) need more 'successful' people. But it does desperately (3) need more peacemakers, healers, restorers, story-tellers, and lovers of every shape and form. It (4) needs people who live well in their places. It (5) needs people of moral courage willing to join the fight to make the world habitable and humane. And these (6) needs have little to do with success as our culture has defined it. One (7) needn't think long to realize that success at all costs means total destruction of human values.

EXERCISE 129

Aşağıdaki boşlukları *mustn't* ya da *needn't* ile doldurunuz.

1. A diabetics _____ eat sweet things.
2. You _____ go out until you have finished all your work.
3. Borrowers _____ keep books longer than three weeks.
4. One _____ smoke at the petrol station.
5. As your hair is not very long you _____ have it cut for another week.
6. Your dog bites people. You _____ turn it loose.
7. You _____ love your enemy, but you _____ tell lies about him.
8. I _____ play my radio too loud or I will annoy my neighbours.
9. Women who have a profession _____ get married just for the sake of money.
10. Members of the team _____ train tomorrow as Saturday's match has been cancelled.

11. This boy _____ take any more tablets as he is better already.
12. The dentist told me that I _____ visit him again for six months, but I _____ eat so many sweets.
13. He _____ stay too late at the dance, or he will miss the last bus home.
14. You _____ eat these bananas as they are not yet ripe, but you _____ go hungry while we have so many oranges
15. I _____ stay talking too long or my dinner will get cold.



USED TO geçmişte bir süre devam etmiş durumları ve sık sık tekrarlanmış işleri ifade etmekte kullanılır.

Günümüz İngilizcesinde olumsuz tümcelerde ve sorularda bu kip belirteci USE eylemi gibi davranışmaktadır.

She used to be a politician.

She didn't use to be a politician.

Did she use to be a politician?

When I was at school, we used to have homework every night.

People are not as honest as they used to be.

In ancient times people used to make sacrifices to their gods; sometimes they would even sacrifice human beings.

They used to live in Italy, too.

He used to live opposite the museum, didn't he?

It all looks very strange round here; didn't there use to be a hotel on that corner?

In some factories computerized robots do the work that people used to do.

Did they use to make you learn your tables by heart at school?

She didn't use to be so bitter; in fact she never used to utter an unkind word about anyone. What can have happened to change her?

For many years in the deserts, camels used to be the only form of transportation.

Used To kip belirtecinin, kip belirteci gibi davranıştı örnekler bugün de görülmektedir.

*Used you to trust politicians?
They usedn't to live in our town.*



"He used to love running on the beach, chasing squirrels and catching a ball. That was before I got the computer."

EXERCISE 130

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

1. They live in Ankara. (in Kars)
They used to live in Kars, but now they live in Ankara.
2. He prefers to play golf. (go hunting a lot)
3. She doesn't look well at all. (be quite athletic)
4. He's the store manager. (be just an ordinary salesman)
5. I often watches movies on TV. (go the movies three times a week)
6. He can't stand the sight of her. (be mad about her)
7. Most Americans eat trashy fast foods. (eat healthy meals at home)
8. The West are killing millions for oil. (wage wars in the name of religion)
9. She is too busy now. (take the children to the park and play with them)
10. Americans are killing people of all nations. (kill only native Americans)
11. He never touches the stuff. (drink a lot)
12. Iraqis are tortured and killed by Americans. (tortured by Saddam)
13. Black people in the US are the slaves of the white industry. (slaves on cotton plantations.)
14. Journalists are now after easy fame and money. (honest and hardworking)
15. The US has robbed Iraq of all its riches. (Iraq, a wealthy country)

EXERCISE 131

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

1. Does Jack still smoke cigars?
He used to smoke cigars, but he doesn't anymore.
2. Do you see your parents often?
3. Do John and his wife argue a lot?
4. Does Alice still take everything literally?
5. Is Bill still afraid of the dark?

6. Is your sister still in love with that actor?
7. Does Roger still want to be a doctor?
8. Do you trust that boy at the store?
9. Do the Andersons stop by every Sunday?
10. Do you enjoy living on an island?
11. Does your mother still read a lot of detective stories?
12. Is Alan still as nervous as ever? (Careful!)
13. Do you still buy a new car every year?
14. Is Helen still fond of dancing?
15. Do you still believe everything you hear?

BE ABLE TO

BE ABLE TO, "yetenek , gücü yetme, işi başarma" anımlarını taşıyan bir kip belirtecidir. Present, past ve perfect tense'lerle kullanılabilir.

is		able to		was		able to		has		been able to	
am				were				have			
are								had			

1. *Is/am/are able to ve can yetenek ifade ettiklerinde yakın anlamlıdır. Is/am/are able to işin zorluk çekilerek yapılabildiğini anlatabilir.*

Most birds are able to fly. / Most birds can fly.

A computer is a machine that is able to handle information very quickly.

A healthy body is able to perform two basic physiological functions.

The old lady can swim.

Although the old lady has a severe backache, she is able to swim.

Bees, eels, and salmon are able to return to a particular place after long journeys.

A man's worst difficulties begin when he is able to do as he likes. -Huxley

2. **BE ABLE TO** eylemleri izleyebilir.

We expect to be able to compete with them.

Geologists would like to be able to predict earthquakes accurately.

3. **BE ABLE TO** bir başka kip belirtecini izleyebilir.

will		be able to
should		
would		
must		
have to		
ought to		
may		
might		

I want to take a course in zoology so that I will be better able to understand the nature of animals.

Were Isaac Asimov not a scientist, he might not be able to write such good science fiction stories.

4 WAS / WERE ABLE TO geçmişte bir işin yapılabildiğini gösterir. COULD gibi geçmişe ait yetenek anlamı üstlenmez.

She could swim like a fish. (Yetenek)

She could swim because the sea was calm. (İş yapıldı.)

In our garden we could grow tulips. (Yetenek)

In spite of cold weather, we were able to grow tulips in our garden.
(İş yapıldı.)

By dint of much hard work, the volunteers were able to place the
raging forest fire under control.

I was seldom able to see an opportunity until it had ceased to be one.
— *Mark Twain* (1835-1910)

5 HAS, HAVE / HAD BEEN ABLE TO işin yapıldığını göstermektedir.

Criminals have frequently been able to feed false and misleading
information into computer systems.

She has recently been able to recognize the extent of her responsibility in
her husband's failure.

We have just been able to start a small business.

The patient died because the doctors had not been able to stop his bleeding.

CAN vs. IS/AM/ARE ABLE TO

IS/AM/ARE ABLE TO sadece yetenek göstermektedir. CAN ise olasılık da ifade edebilmektedir.

He is able to drive any vehicle that has wheels.

It can rain any minute.



WAS/WERE ABLE TO sadece geçmişe ait yetenek ve geçmişte başa-
rılmış işleri göstermektedir. **COULD** ise şimdiki zaman ve geniş zama-
na ait olasılık da ifade edebilmektedir.

She could = was able to use a computer at the age of four.

It could rain tomorrow.

He could be a good politician if he were an honest man.

EXERCISE 132

Aşağıdaki boşlukları **could** ya da **was/were able to** ile doldurunuz.

1. The lecture was cancelled, so we _____ get home in time for our favourite TV show.
2. My son has always been an intelligent child; he _____ read long before she started school.
3. The meeting was shorter than he had expected, and he _____ catch the last train home.
4. She couldn't take a job unless it was something she _____ do at home.

5. I fell downstairs yesterday, but fortunately I ____ get to the phone and call a doctor.
6. Motzart ____ play the piano beautifully at the age of five.
7. There was no need to shout. We ____ hear you perfectly well.
8. He looked very embarrassed, and I ____ understand how he felt.
9. There was nobody to help me, but luckily I ____ finish the work on time.
10. The house was completely destroyed in the fire, but we ____ save most of our belongings.

EXERCISE 133

Örneği inceleyerek *although* ve *was/were able to* ile benzer tümceler yapınız.

The British Navy was powerful, but Turks beat it.

Although the British Navy was powerful, Turks were able to beat it.

1. We had little time, but we finished the report.
2. The doctor was very busy, but I saw him.
3. He didn't have much experience, but he repaired the car.
4. There was little food, but she prepared a nice dinner.
5. We were fishing for the first time, but we caught a lot of fish.
6. Jack was seriously ill yesterday, but he came to school.
7. He didn't get a raise last year, but he bought a nice car.
8. The train was very crowded yesterday, but I got a seat.
9. I didn't live near the beach last year, but I swam every day.
10. I had to study last night, but I watched the film.

EXERCISE 134

☞ Could 'un ifade ettiği yetenek geçmişte kalmıştır. Was able to geçmiş'te belli bir anda yapılabilmiş bir işi anlatır.

Verilen tümcelere dayanarak could ve was/were able to ile tümceler kurunuz.

1. I did not have to work in the afternoon last year. I went bird-watching every day.

I could go bird-watching every day last year.

2. I did not have to work yesterday. I went bird-watching yesterday.

I was able to go bird-watching yesterday.

3. Records were cheap last year. We bought a lot of records.
4. My uncle gave me ten dollars yesterday. I bought a record yesterday.
5. The library was open until 12 last night. I finished my homework.
6. I went to New York last week. I visited the Empire State Building.
7. Martin bought a computer last year. He did his homework on the computer.

8. Lucy used to have a beautiful voice. She sang beautifully.
9. Martin used to own a drug store. He made a lot of money.

EXERCISE 135

Aşağıdaki parçada bulunan kip belirteçlerini bulunuz ve anımlarını saptayınız.

Good health is not something you are able to buy at the drugstore, and you can't depend on getting it back with a quick visit to the doctor when you are sick, either. Making your body last without major problems has to be your own responsibility. Mistreating your system by keeping bad habits, neglecting symptoms of illness, and ignoring common rules can counteract the best medical care.

Nowadays, specialists promote the idea of wellness for everybody. Wellness means achieving the best possible health within the limits of your body. One person may need many fewer calories than another, depending on metabolism. Some people might prefer a lot of easier exercise to more strenuous exercise. While one person enjoys playing seventy - two holes of golf a week, another would rather play three sweaty, competitive games of tennis.

Understanding the needs of your body is the key. Everyone runs the risk of accidents, and no one can be sure of avoiding chronic disease. Nevertheless, good health is most often ruined by poor diet, stress, a bad working environment, and carelessness. By changing your habits or the conditions surrounding you, you can lower the risk or reduce the damage of disease.

Physical fitness is a combination of many factors; weight, muscle strength, endurance, flexibility, circulatory and respiratory systems, and stress tolerance. Physically fit people should be able to stay the same weight. They can lift at least one - half their body weight. They can go through a busy day, either physically or mentally, and feel refreshed the next morning. They ought to be able to bend and twist easily in all directions. Wearing the right clothing and shoes, fit people can walk a level mile in fifteen minutes or less. Lastly, but importantly, physically fit individuals are able to control the effects of too much stress through exercise and relaxation.



*"We need to talk about those directions
you gave me."*

IS / AM / ARE GOING TO

"Do you hear me, George? I said Dennis is going to spend the afternoon with us."

1. Niyet ve kararlılık gösterir.

What are you doing over the weekend ?

I am going to sell my house and move into a flat.

Sit down and listen to me; I'm going to give you a piece of advice.

This office block is going to be demolished.

We are going to Turkey next month; we shall stay in Ankara for three or four days and then go on to stanbul.

I am never going to speak to her again.

If the Food and Drug Administration gives its approval, a new drug is going to be provided for the cure of stage fright.

2. Bir işin, olayın kaçınılmamasının gluc olduğunu gösterir.

Look out! She is going to hit you.

You are going to miss that train unless you hurry.

If you keep on being late for work, you are going to be fired.

The world will undergo famines-hundreds of millions of people are going to starve to death.

The rich are going to get richer, but the more numerous poor are going to get poorer.

A Christian is a man who feels repentance on Sunday for what he did on Saturday and is going to do on Monday. — *Thomas Ybarra*

3. Gelecekte, bugüne bağlı olarak, olacakları gösterir.

She is going to graduate from her school this June.

They are going to complete the work soon.

What's going to happen when we have a change of government?

My interest is in the future because I am going to spend the rest of my life there. — *Charles F. Kettering*

BE GOING TO vs. WILL

BE GOING TO kişinin kararlılığını, yapılacak işin büyük bir olasılıkla olacağını gösteriyor. **WILL** ise daha çok bir işi yapma niyetini ifade ediyor.

You can't build a reputation on what you are going to do. —*Henry Ford*
Always do what you say you are going to do.

Perhaps America will one day go fascist democratically, by popular vote. —
—*William L. Shirer*

WAS / WERE GOING TO



"They were going to get married when they were young, but he kept forgetting the wedding date."

Geçmişe ait bir niyetten, bir planдан söz edilmesinde kullanılır.

1. İşin olup olmadığı bilinmiyordur.

She was going to visit her uncle yesterday.
(Dün amcasını ziyaret edecek ama edip etmediğini bilmiyorum.)

2. İşin gerçekleşmediği biliniyordur.

Europeans were going to put an end to the last free Turkish state, but Mustafa Kemal taught them a good lesson.

3. Geçmişte yapılan bir planı ifade eder.

I was just going to make a cup of tea; will you join me?

4. Geçmişte daha sonra olacak yine bir geçmiş olayı ifade eder.

He looked so white I thought he was going to pass out.
The teacher wanted to know what we were going to do when we left school.
The film we watched on TV wasn't quite as interesting as I thought it was going to be.
He told me he was going to stay with his parents over the weekend.

If we had known it was going to be so complicated, we would never have agreed to do it.

5. Dolaylı anlatımda IS/AM/ARE GOING TO yerine kullanılır.

He said, "I am going to repair my car."

He said that he was going to repair his car.



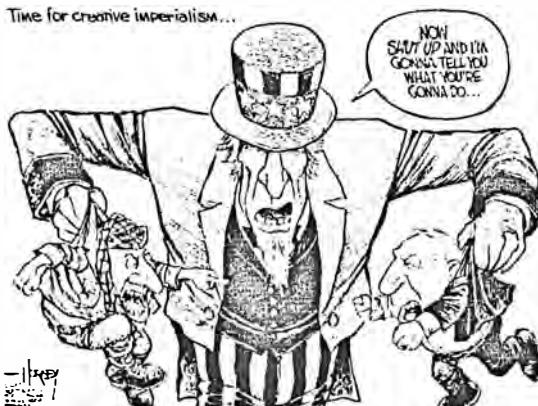
EXERCISE 136

Was/were going to ile örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

I intended to go buy the computer, but it turned out to be too expensive for me.

I was going to go to buy the computer, but I couldn't.

1. He intended to propose to her, but he was too timid.
2. She intended to visit her family, but there were no buses running.
3. Gutenberg intended to publish a new book, but he was too old.
4. He intended to be a soldier, but he wasn't strong enough.
5. Columbus intended to go for a sail once again, but he was put into prison.
6. He intended to paint the house, but there was no paint left.



Yukarıdaki karikatür İsrail ve Filistin çekişmesinde ABD'nin yerini belirliyor.

GONNA, günlük dilde "GOING TO"nun kısaltılmış şekli olarak kullanılmaktadır.

IS / AM / ARE TO**1. Geleceğe ilişkin plan ve kararlaştırılmış işler gösterir.**

The next elections are to take place no sooner than May.
 The prime minister is to address the nation on TV tonight.
 When am I to submit my report?

2. Görev ya da yasak bildirmekte kullanılır.

That medicine is to be taken only at night because it will make you drowsy.
 I am to make it clear that they have been generous.
 You are not to tell about this to anyone!
 Americans are to improve the living conditions in Indian reservations if they really care about human rights.
 An offer as generous as this one is not to be despised.

3. Ümit ifade etmekte kullanılır.

If I am to be a software engineer, I have to work harder.
 If we are to build friendship, we should be frank.

4. Koşul tümcelerinde kullanılır.

If we are to finish the work on time, we had better hurry.
 He knew he had to keep quiet if he was to please his boss.
 Whenever thoughts of suicide form part of the depression, psychiatric help and care is a must, if tragedy is to be averted.
 If we are to live together in peace, we must come to know each other better. – *Lyndon Baines Johnson*

EXERCISE 137

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **is/am/are to** kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

1. Pills of all kinds should be kept out of the reach of the children.
2. The President is expected to pay a visit to India.
3. The USA government should run the country instead of letting the big business do it.
4. There may be a club meeting next week.
5. You shouldn't be late this evening. We will have our dinner early.
6. You should fill in this form and return it within a week.
7. If our civilization is expected to survive, we must break with the habit of deference to great men. Great men may make great mistakes. –*Popper*
8. When a man knows he will be hanged in a fortnight, it concentrates his mind wonderfully. –*Samuel Johnson*

WAS / WERE TO + HAVE**1. Geçmişe ait plan ifade eder. İşin yapılmış yapılmadığı bilinmemektedir.**

She was to type all the letters yesterday.

Jack was to pay a visit to his grandfather.

2. Geçmiş bir olayın anlatımında daha sonra olacak işlerin ifade edilmesinde kullanılır.

Jack was unaware that the math test was to be given on Friday.

Fleming accidentally discovered 'penicillin', and he was unaware that his chance discovery was to have tremendous consequences.

The divorce surprised everybody, because people thought theirs was an ideal marriage. There was to be much speculation about why Mrs. Parks divorced her husband.

The wars of the eighteenth century decided that England was to be richer than France.

3. Tesadüfen, kaderin yazgısı olarak gerçekleşen olayları anlatır.

We both thought we would never meet again. But we were to meet again a year later under very strange circumstances.

The father struggled to earn a living in what was a dying handicraft; the son was to make a fortune in the new machine industry which was beginning to swamp all the old handicrafts.

His athletic activities were cut down after he suffered a back injury in a Harvard football game. The injury was to plague him later in life.

In 342 B.C., Philip II invited Aristotle to return to the Macedonian court and teach his 13-year-old son Alexander. This was the boy who was to become conqueror of the world.

WAS / WERE TO + HAVE**Geçmişe ait planlanmış fakat yapılamamış işler anlatır.**

I was to have made a speech last night, but I was taken to the hospital.

They were to have gone for a picnic last week, but there was a terrible storm.

EXERCISE 138

Örnekleri inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Did you finish the report yesterday? (*My computer went dead.*)

I was to have finished the report yesterday, but my computer went dead.

Did the Browns go out for lunch last night? (*Mr. Brown had a terrible headache.*)

2. Did Lucy and Fred get married last month? (*Fred was fired.*)
3. Did they visit the Art Museum yesterday? (*It was closed.*)
4. Did you give Susan the document? (*She never came here yesterday.*)
5. Did he write a book on pollution? (*His publisher went bankrupt.*)

HAVE TO / HAVE GOT TO



"Keep looking—he's got to be around here somewhere."

HAVE TO, **HAVE GOT TO** ve **MUST** hemen hemen aynı şekilde gereklilik ifade ederler. Aralarındaki farkları şöyle özetleyebiliriz:

MUST	HAVE TO
Gereklilik konuşmacıdan kaynaklanıyor. Ya da konuşmacı gerekliliğin yerinde olduğuna inanıyor. <i>I must go on a diet. (Kendi kararım.)</i>	Gereklilik bir başkasının saptamasıdır. <i>I have to go on a diet. (Doktorun fikri.)</i>

HAVE TO	HAVE GOT TO
Gereklilik uzun dönemi kapsıyor. <i>I have had a serious operation. I have to watch what I am eating.</i>	Gereklilik, özel bir durumla ilişkili. <i>I have got a terrible headache. I have got to take an aspirin.</i>



HAVE GOT TO:

1. Diğer kip belirteçleriyle kullanılmaz.
2. Past şekli yoktur.
3. Soru şekli HAVE başa getirilerek yapılır.

*Have I got to bring anything?
Do I have to bring anything?*

1. Gereklilik ifade eder.

Drivers or front seat passengers in most vehicles have to wear seat belts at all times.

He has no secretarial help and has to do everything for himself.

Sometimes I feel awkward when I have to speak in front of the class.

Some things have to be believed to be seen. — *Ralph Hodgson*

Nations have to determine how much and what sort of education they should provide for their rising generations.

There is no elevator to success. You have to take the stairs. — *H. Jackson Jr.*

The students of today will have to decide how to use computers of tomorrow.

Fashion is a form of ugliness so intolerable that we have to alter it every six months. — *Oscar Wilde*

If you want to make your dreams come true, the first thing you have to do is wake up. — *Anonymous*

Home is the place where, when you have to go there, they have to take you in. — *Robert Frost*

Brokers have to understand the many laws that control the sale and use of land.

It is no use saying, 'We are doing our best.' You have got to succeed in doing what is necessary. — *Winston Churchill*

2. Akıl yürütme ifade edebilir.

The manager is not a rude person. There has to be some reason for his harsh words.

She has to be rich! Look at the car she is driving.

(Zengin biri olmalı. Kullandığı arabaya baksana.)

She has got to be the landlady; look how she is ordering everybody to do things.

3. DON'T HAVE TO / HAVEN'T GOT TO bir işin yapılması zorunlu olmadığını gösterir.

You do not have to wear a seat belt in certain circumstances, such as if you are reversing your vehicle.

A person does not have to drink every day to be an alcoholic. (nisanın alkolik olması için her gün içmesi gerekmez.)

4. HAD TO belli biribeşteçlerini izleyebilir.

will	have to
would	
may	
might	

Whether he'll come or not, we will have to invite him.

This is a malignant disease; we may have to use drastic measures to stop its spread

Two important issues will have to be decided by the courts.

If people wanted to stop pollution immediately, they would have to stop using many of the machines that make life easier for them.

EXERCISE 139

Örnekleri inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Turkey wants to improve her economy. (export more)

She has to export more.

She has recently inherited a huge estate. (work for a living)

She doesn't have to work for a living.

1. She wants to improve her reading. (read more)
2. Her computer is too slow to run new software. (buy a new one)
3. Helen has sold her car. (take the bus to work)
4. Mrs. Taylor doesn't have anything to cook for dinner. (go shopping)
5. You have a terrible cough. (quit smoking)
6. We can't get to Helen's house by subway. (take a bus)
7. He has grown too fat lately. (eat less)
8. She has a terrible toothache. (go to the dentist)
9. My son can solve all his problems. (help him)
10. The weather is nice and warm. (wear a coat)
11. I have an extra car you can use. (rent a car)
12. There is nothing to do here. (wait here)
13. Tomorrow is a holiday. (get up early)
14. She is quite healthy. (worry about her health)

EXERCISE 140

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Helen wants to have a good figure, but she hates cutting down on food.

If she wants to have a good figure, she will have to cut down on food.

1. Tom wants to be a good writer, but he doesn't like to read.
2. Tom wants to earn more, but he doesn't want to work more.
3. Helen wants to learn how to cook, but she doesn't want to help her mother cook.
4. Helen wants to get rid of her cough, but she doesn't want to quit smoking.
5. You want to be a member of the team, but you don't want to devote time and energy.

EXERCISE 141

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

It wasn't necessary for us to work for a living.

We didn't have to work for a living.

1. It wasn't necessary for him to help his father.
2. It wasn't necessary for them to sell their house.
3. It wasn't necessary for him to go to hospital.
4. It wasn't necessary for me to have an operation.
5. It wasn't necessary for me to work overtime at the office last week.



"When he learned to speak, I had to buy him a telephone."

1. Geçmişte yapılmak zorunda kalınmış işleri anlatır.

In the 1983 London Marathon there were so many entrants that there had to be two separate starting points.

The sun shone so brightly that Mary had to put on her sunglasses.

The referee being ill, the match had to be postponed.

In early cars, air had to be pumped into the fuel tank to force gas through the fuel line.

She had to go to the office immediately.

On the long, tedious drive home, Daniel had to turn up the radio to stay awake.

It is no accident that the twentieth century should be the century of highly centralized governments and totalitarian dictatorships; it had to be so for the simple reason that the twentieth century is the century of planetary overcrowding.

2. Dolaylı anlatımda HAVE TO' nun ve kimi zaman da MUST'ın yerine kullanılır.

She said, "I have to go to the library." = She said she had to go to the library.

He said, "I must take my medicine." = He said he had to take his medicine.



Had To, must' in 'past' şekli olarak düşünülmemelidir. Dolaylı anlamda belli durumlarda **must** yerine **had to** kullanılamaz.

1. **Dolaysız anlatımdaki tümcenin öznesi / ise**
He said, "I must find a job." = *He said he must find a job.*
2. **MUST ile kurallar ve kanunlar ifade ediliyorsa**
Passengers must have the exact change. = *It is said on the notice that passengers must have the exact change.*
3. **MUST ile talimat veriliyorsa, dolaylı anlatımda BE TO kullanılır.**
We must lubricate the parts carefully.=*The mechanic told his friend that they were to lubricate the parts carefully.*
Shake the bottle well before drinking the medicine.=*The doctor told her that she was to shake the bottle well before drinking the medicine..*

EXERCISE 142

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

I was expected to finish the report by noon. (work with no break)

I had to work with no break.

1. My brother did not help me clean the house. (*clean the house myself*)
2. Her washing machine was out of order. (*wash the clothes by hand*)
3. She didn't have any money for lunch. (*do without lunch*)
4. He had all his money stolen. (*borrow some money from his friends*)
5. He couldn't answer the questions. (*ask his mother for help*)
6. The prices at Tom's Bargain department store were not reasonable. (*go to Steven's Department Store*)
7. Betty could not find the book she wanted to read in the library. (*buy it herself*)

BE SUPPOSED TO

1. Bir işin yapılması gerektiğini bildirir.

Modern man lives under the illusion that he knows what he wants, while he actually wants what he is supposed to want. —Eric Fromm



The meeting is supposed to conclude at ten o'clock.

Aren't you supposed to wear a seat belt in the car?

Anyone can do any amount of work provided it isn't the work he's supposed to be doing at the moment. —*Robert Benchley*

Never worry about theory as long as the machinery does what it's supposed to do. —*Robert A. Heinlein*

2. Genel olarak doğruluğu kabul edilmiş yargıları ifade eder.

A higher interest rate is supposed to curb domestic investment and consumer spending.

In ancient times, when people believed in magic and spirits, ivy leaves were supposed to be a protection against magic and snakebite.

The Strait of Gibraltar is the place where Atlantis is supposed to have been located.

3. Planlanmış işleri ifade eder.

The meeting is supposed to begin at 9.

Who is supposed to do the cleaning after the party?

Was she supposed to make a speech at the meeting?

4. Yapılmaması gereken işleri ifade eder.

You are not supposed to make any changes in the file.

People over eighty aren't supposed to drive in our county.



"I'd better do my own homework from now on, Dad. The teachers are beginning to think I am an idiot."

1. Yapılması iyi olacak işleri ifade eder.

Had better, belli bir duruma ilişkin tavsiyede bulunmakta kullanılır. Genel durumlar için *should* kullanılabilir.

If you are feeling that way, you had better go see a doctor.

We had better appear what we are, than affect to appear what we are not.

— *François de la Rochefoucauld*

Hadn't we better tell them the truth?

A man had better starve at once than lose his innocence in the process of getting his bread. — *Thoreau*

If parents care about how their children think and what their children think, they had better start caring about how much television their children watch and what kinds of programs their children choose,

You had better not swim if you have just eaten.

You'd better hurry, or you will miss the bus.

I'd better do it myself, hadn't I?

Hadn't you better wear a coat?

Had we better sleep now? Yes, you should/had. No, you don't have to.

With meat being so expensive, we had better eat more vegetables.

If poetry comes not as naturally as leaves to a tree, it had better not come at all. — *Keats*

2. Uyarı ifade edebilir.

You had better not make noise.

You had better not drink if you are to drive.

Hadn't we better be going now if we want to catch the 8.12 bus?

3. Olmaması halinde olumsuzluk yaratacak işleri ifade edebilir.

It had better rain, or all our crops will fail.

You'd better hurry, or you will miss the last bus home.

You'd better not sit up late. Don't forget you've work in the morning.



"You'd better not get caught with that bag of money. The rules clearly state that you can't take money with you!"

EXERCISE 143

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

If you don't take this medicine, you won't get well.

You'd better take this medicine, or you won't get well.

1. If Jack eats all that candy, he will have a stomachache.
2. If you don't go to bed now, you won't get up early in the morning.
3. If you drink any more coffee, you won't be able to sleep.
4. If she doesn't wear a coat, she will catch a cold.
5. If she doesn't spend her money carefully, she will be left penniless before the end of the month.

**WOULD RATHER
WOULD SOONER
HAD RATHER
HAD SOONER**



Bu şekiller tercih ifade ederler. Çoğu zaman (*D RATHER*) kısa şekli kullanılır.

Kip Belirteci + U geniş ya da gelecek zamana ilişkin tercihler bildirir.

He would rather be a live coward than a dead hero.

After I'm dead I'd rather have people ask why I have no monument than why I have one. — *Cato the Elder* (234-149 B.C.)

I'd rather have the red tie.

When there is a lot of traffic, I'd rather take the subway than go by bus.

I would rather be a coward than brave because people hurt you when you are brave. — *E. M. Forster*

I would rather be able to appreciate things I can not have than to have things I am not able to appreciate. — *Elbert Hubbard*

Most people would rather die than think; in fact, they do so. — *Russell*

Nothing is really work unless you would rather be doing something else.
— *James Matthew*



I'd rather regret the things that I have done than the things that I have not.

- *Lucille Ball*

I would rather sit at home and watch television than go to the theatre.

WOULD RATHER/SOONER ve HAD RATHER/SOONER bir ad içtümceciği ile birlikte kullanıldığında geçmiş zaman gerektirirler; anlam ise geniş ya da gelecek zamandır.

I'd rather you didn't come here.

She'd rather you didn't help her.

Would you rather I served the tea?

-Is it all right if I turned off the lights? -I'd rather you didn't turn them off.

-Shall I erase the files? - I'd rather you didn't.

I'd sooner you didn't touch any of those files.

WOULD RATHER/SOONER ve HAD RATHER/SOONER perfect tense'ler ile gerçeğe aykırı geçmiş zaman ifade ederler.

I'd rather I hadn't seen any of them.

I would sooner have eaten my hat than eat that awful dish.

EXERCISE 144

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Would you like to live in İstanbul? (Ankara)

I'd rather live in Ankara.

1. Would you like to go for a walk? (*watch TV*)
2. Would you like to play tennis this afternoon? (*go fishing*)
3. Would you like a cup of tea? (*have some coffee*)
4. Would you like to invite Sally? (*Betty*)
5. Would you like to fly to Europe? (*go by boat*)

EXERCISE 145

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Mrs. Allen prefers tea to coffee.

Mrs. Allen would rather have tea than coffee.

Bill prefers swimming to tennis.

Bill would rather swim than play tennis.

1. Prof. Clark prefers a pipe to cigarettes.
2. My sister prefers going shopping to studying.
3. My parents prefer traveling by plane to traveling by boat.
4. I prefer a house to an apartment.
5. My younger brother prefers physics to chemistry.
6. They prefer living for the present to thinking about the future.
7. They prefer talking about politics to discussing art.
8. We prefer dying to living in bondage.

EXERCISE 146

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Did you spend the winter in Spain? (*go to Turkey*)

Yes, but we would rather have gone to Turkey.

1. Did your brother study business administration? (*computer sciences*)
2. Did you have apple pie for dessert? (*baklava*)
3. Did she buy a PC? (*buy a Mac*)
4. Did you write a book on pollution? (*imperialism*)
5. Did they buy a house in the city? (*in the country*)

WOULD PREFER

"I would prefer to work without an audience."

Would prefer, "tercih" ifade eder. Olumlu şeklinde kendisini eylemin hem -ING hem de TO- şekli izleyebilir. Olumsuz şeklinde genellikle TO- şekli kullanılır.

I would prefer writing novels.

I would prefer to work home.

I would prefer not to watch TV tonight

Regardless of how much patience we have, we would prefer never to use any of it. – O'Brien

EXERCISE 147

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Shall we go fishing? (go bird-watching/I)

I would prefer to go bird-watching.

1. Are you eating out tonight? (*eat home*)
2. Do you want to live in the city? (*live in the country*)
3. Will you borrow some money from your friends (*borrow from a bank*)
4. Why doesn't Fred buy a car? (*take the bus*)
5. Does she like fast food? (*have regular meals*)

EXERCISE 148

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Watching TV spoils my evenings. (watch TV)

I would prefer not to watch TV.

1. Helen is very tired. (*do the housework*)
2. Wine gives me a headache. (*have any*)
3. Arthur likes working alone. (*have a partner*)
4. Tom is a talkative man. (*travel with him*)
5. The traffic is going to be very heavy. (*take the car*)
6. Mr. Cheat is not an honest businessman. (*do business with him*)

BE USED TO



Naturally, Mr. Can't-Say-No is now used to working hard.

Bu kip belirteci "alışıkın olma" ifade eder. Kendisinden sonra ad öbegi ya da eylemin -ING şekli kullanılır.

BE USED TO

BE USED TO	Noun Phrase
	V-ING

I am used to listening to music while reading.

I am used to cold weather.

People in Erzurum are used to extremely cold winters.

Many students are used to working in the nights.

Physical scientists are not used to dealing with biological issues.

He was an only child and used to amusing himself.

At first he was shy with his uncle, but little by little grew used to him,

It was clear enough that she was used to attentions of that sort.

We are used to driving long distances, so the trip doesn't bother us.

Soldiers are used to living in barracks.

The letter was obviously written by a man who was used to working with computers.

He was used to being disliked and feared by his neighbours.

When I was younger I was used to working hard, but now I easily get tired.

A person who is used to the comforts of the city will find the country life extremely difficult.



USE eyleminin edilgen şekli **BE USED TO** şeklinde görülebilir.

Bu kullanımın kip belirteci olan **BE USED TO** ile herhangi bir ilgisi bulunmamaktadır.

Snake venom *is used to prepare* certain medicines.

A wedge *is used to split* wood or rock.

GET USED TO

"YOU'LL GET USED TO HIS SNORING."

Bu kip belirteci "alışmak" ifade eder. Kendisinden sonra ad öeği ya da eylemin -ING şekli kullanılır.

The so-called developed countries got used to plundering the poor nations.

Marriage is like a hot bath. Once you get used to it, it's not so hot.

He could never get used to the hectic life style in the city.

Nothing is wonderful when you get used to it. – *Edgar Watson Howe*

They soon moved back to the country because they couldn't get used to city life.

If you become a postman, you will have to get used to walking long distances.

In life you don't understand things, you just get used to them.

In order to get used to the idea of death, I find there is nothing like coming close to it. – *Lewis Thomas*

A US astronaut says that space takes months to get used to.

He lived in England for years, but he never got used to eating fish for breakfast.

It is always very noisy in the factory, but the workers soon get used to the noise.

We can never get used to Turkish politicians' remaining silent even in the face of the most insulting remarks of the European Union officials.

BE ACCUSTOMED TO GET ACCUSTOMED TO

BE ACCUSTOMED TO/GET ACCUSTOMED TO, be used to ve get used to gibi alışkin olmak ve alışmak anımlarında kullanılır.

We are not accustomed to being treated like this.

They eventually got accustomed to the Mexican food.

People in the city are accustomed to lining up.

He has become accustomed to living comfortably.

A worker who is not accustomed to hot environments and who stands erect and immobile in the heat may faint.

Gradual exposure to heat gives the body time to become accustomed to higher environmental temperatures

The human mind, since it has become accustomed to hallucinating ideals in the process of psychic formation in childhood, tends to continue in adult life to idealize and to throw appearances over reality, disfiguring the truth.

EXERCISE 149

Aşağıdaki boşlukları **used to**, **be used to** ya da **get used to** ile doldurunuz.

1. She _____ living in the city. She can't be happy in a village.
2. If you live in Turkey for a while, you will soon _____ spicy food.
3. I'll never _____ her handwriting! It's impossible to read!
4. I _____ read aloud to my children every evening when they were children.
5. Mrs. Baker has worked hard all her life. She should _____ hard work.

6. I hate the hot weather here, but I suppose I _____ if after a while.
 7. After all these years Jack still can't _____ living in a small town.
 8. He (not) _____ a life of luxury.
 9. She can't _____ the fact that her husband is in prison.
 10. Mr. Grace has been active all his life. He can't _____ a peaceful life.
 11. Mrs. Grace _____ wear a lot of jewelry, but she doesn't any longer.
 12. Sooner or later you _____ being a professional boxer.
 13. We _____ have a lot of fun when we lived in New York.
 14. I _____ sleeping with the windows open.
 15. Now that they _____ their new neighbourhood, they are happy.
 16. Are you _____ driving on the left side of the road?
 17. I hate living in a flat; I don't think I will ever _____ it.
 18. You will _____ tasteless English meals in time; meanwhile, you can have your dinners at MacDonald's.
 19. I can't _____ the idea that my daughter has gone abroad.
 20. Years ago tea _____ be served in small china dishes without handles.
-
-

EXERCISE 150

Aşağıdaki parça da bulunan kip belirteçlerini bulunuz ve anımlarını belirleyiniz.

Social Innovations

It is a fact of commercial life that it is necessary to come up with a "new improved" product each year. Sometimes an innovation is an improvement of substance, sometimes of style. Sometimes the improvement represents a new generation of the product, and sometimes it fails abysmally. The Ford Motor Company devoted huge amounts of technical and consumer research to design the Edsel, but the car was not popular with the public. As a company, Ford was able to discontinue the Edsel, but if the Edsel had been developed by a governmental agency, it would still be in production and would be given to underdeveloped countries as foreign aid or as a bonus for buying our wheat.

When the Edsel failed, Ford did not give up its consumer and technical research but used them to develop other cars such as the Thunderbird and Mustang, which proved successful.

We must do the same with our social programmes. We must see them as stages in the evolution of truly valuable and important social technologies.

Chapter 22

PERFECT MODAL AUXILIARIES

MODAL + (NOT) HAVE + V₃



"You must have been wandering in your sleep again."

Kip belirteçlerinin "perfect" şekilleri, geçmişte gerçekleşmiş ya da gerçekleşmemiş işlerin ve geçmişe ilişkin varsayımların ifade edilmesinde kullanılır.

Gereklendirmemiş İşler	If she hadn't had to look after her aged parents, her life would have been very different.
Yerine getirilmemiş zorunluluklar	You should have asked for permission before you started. Why didn't you?
Geçmişe ilişkin olasılıklar	I don't know who answered the phone. It could have been anybody from the office. Uğur Mumcu might have been assassinated by the British secret service because his last book would have been on the British-PKK cooperation.
Geçmişe ilişkin tahminler	He must have worked very hard to have got such a good degree.

WILL HAVE

By the time you finish reading this sentence, two hundred people will have died of hunger, most of them children.



Will the cycle that keeps Africa poor and famished ever end?

Will have, future perfect ve future perfect continuous tense'lerde kullanılmaktadır. Future perfect tense'ler gelecekte belli bir zamana kadar tamamlanmış olacak işleri ifade etmektedir. Bu özellikleri nedeniyle kimi çarpıcı gerçeklerin ifade edilmesinde kullanılmaktadırlar.

By the time you finish reading this passage, two hundred acres of rain forests will have been destroyed!

At ten o'clock, the orchestra will have finished the symphony.

Can you call me back later this afternoon? By that time, I will have finished the project, and I will know what it may cost.

Our students will have watched approximately sixteen thousand hours of television by the time they graduate from high schools.

Long before the world's food and space are exhausted, millions of people will have inevitably died of malnutrition and disease.

It has been predicted that within the next 60 million years East Africa will have broken away from the rest of the African continent.

WOULD HAVE

Would have, koşul tümcelerinde gerçeğe aykırı geçmiş zaman ifade etmeye kullanılır.

The sun, the moon and the stars would have disappeared long ago, had they happened to be within reach of predatory human hands. – Havelock Ellis

Had Cleopatra's nose been shorter, the whole history of world would have been different. –Pascal

But for the bad weather, we would have had a wonderful time.

If it hadn't been for the unfortunate accident, we would have had a marvelous holiday.

Millions of people would not have been brutally killed if the USA governments had not been so wicked.

The death toll would have been much greater had it not been for the prompt assistance rendered by the rescue services.

The demonstration would have passed off quite peacefully, had the organizers taken a few elementary precautions.

MUST HAVE



*"Uh-oh! Someone must have told this flower
that winter is over."*

Geçmişle ilgili akıl yürütme ifade eder.

Not a single Israeli died in the World Trade Center on September 11. The Israelis who had business there on that day must have been warned ahead of time by Mossad.

That sounds like an ambulance. There must have been an accident.

God must have loved the plain people; he made so many of them. — Abraham Lincoln

This is an excellent book. A talented writer must have written it.

All the kitchen is filled with the smell of garlic. You must have cooked this chicken with a lot of garlic.



*"You must have washed
my schoolclothes from last year too much.
They all shrunk."*

EXERCISE 151

Verilen tümcelere dayalı olarak ***must have*** kullanarak geçmişe ilişkin tahminde bulununuz.

He watched the film four times. Probably he liked it.

He must have liked it.

1. Mr. Jackson has lost a lot of weight. He was probably on a diet.
2. I can't find the keys to my car. Probably I lost them.
3. Look at all those people running. Probably there was an accident.
4. Peggy was driving in a storm. She fell off her motorcycle. Probably she skidded in the rain.
5. Pat is in the hospital with food poisoning. She had dinner at a seafood restaurant. Probably she ate some bad fish.
6. Tom's father had a very bad traffic accident. He was driving home from his office very late at night. Probably he fell asleep on the steering wheel.
7. They have taken Mr. Smith to hospital. He collapsed while he was working in his garden. Probably he had a heart attack.
8. Ali hurt himself playing football. He couldn't even stand up. Probably he broke his ankle.



He must have wished to die.

9. They had to rush Susan to hospital. She was eating fish when she started to choke. Probably she swallowed a fish bone.
10. The telescope is necessary to study the heavenly bodies. Modern astronomy probably started with the invention of the telescope.
11. Galileo built a telescope from his own plans. He was probably interested in studying the sky.
12. Lippershey invented the telescope. He probably wanted to study the sky.

MAY HAVE

Geçmişle ilgili olasılık ifade eder. Olasılığın gerçekleşip gerçekleşmediği bilinmemektedir.

The United States may have killed more than a million Iraqi children having no feeling of guilt whatsoever.

Jack is late to school. He may have missed the bus.

The owners were on trial for arson because they may have set fire to their own house.

By 2000 A.D., the carbon dioxide content of the air may have increased by one third beyond today's content. – Isaac Asimov

At the time of first European contact, North and South America may have been peopled by more than 90 million American Indians.

The flood drove the sea far inland over the flat landscape, flooding countless villages. The death toll may have reached a half million. The origin of the AIDS virus is uncertain, but it may have originated in Central Africa.



**"We're not sure yet, but we think
he may have been asleep at the wheel."**

By the 7th century BC the Etruscans of central Italy were also making fine gold jewelry. These people may have migrated from Anatolia, whence their metalworking skills seem to have been derived.

For collectors, an antique may be prehistoric or only a few years old. It may have been made as a purely utilitarian object, such as a century-old cobbler's bench that now serves as a coffee table or a decorative accessory.

It is estimated that the Comanche may have numbered 20,000 in the 18th century, but by 1910 the population had shrunk to 1,500.

Some historians speculate that Egyptian boats may have reached the shores of American continent long before any European ship.

MIGHT HAVE

1. *May have* ile aynı anlamda kullanılabilir.

It is a most mortifying reflection for a man to consider what he has done, compared to what he might have done.

The Grand Canyon, which is almost a mile wide, might have been created by an asteroid only 150 feet in diameter.

If mankind had wished for what is right, they might have had it long ago.
--William Hazlitt

2. Geçmişte gerçekleşmemiş, bir olasılık ifade edebilir.

You were foolish to speak like that. You might have hurt their feelings.
 (Böyle konuşman aptallıktı. Onları incitebilirdin.)

If we had worked for another firm, we might have got better salaries.
 (Başka bir şirkette çalışsak, maaşlarımız daha iyi olabilirdi.)

You shouldn't have taken that pill. It might have killed you.
 (O hapı yutmamalıydın. Seni ölübürebilirdi.)

3. Geçmişte yapılmamış bir iş nedeniyle birisine kızgınlık ifade edebilir.

You might have warned me that the computer was out of order.
 (Bilgisayarın bozuk olduğunu bana söyleyebilirdin!)

EXERCISE 152

Verilen tümceleri *might have* kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

Maybe Lucy cried because her husband had left her.

Lucy might have cried because her husband left her.

1. Maybe she lost weight because she was sick.
2. Maybe Jack became a pilot because his father was a pilot.
3. Maybe the neighbours helped the Taylors because they were friendly.
4. Maybe the CIA assassinated Martin Luther King, Jr.
5. Maybe he lost his memory. He doesn't remember anything at all.
6. Maybe the French government helped all the ASALA terrorists escape. None was arrested.
7. There were twenty terrorist attacks against American targets in Athens in a 12-month period. Not a single terrorist was arrested. Maybe the Greek government preferred to do nothing.

EXERCISE 153

Aşağıdaki soruları *might have* ve *maybe* kullanarak örnekteki gibi yanıtla-yınız.

Who stole the diamond? (the gardener)

Maybe the gardener stole the diamond.

The gardener might have stolen the diamond.

1. Who wrote this cookbook? (a famous chef)
2. Who drew this picture? (a great artist)
3. Who bought the castle? (Bill Gates)
4. Who killed Robert F. Kennedy? (CIA)
5. Which country provided the greatest financial resources for terrorism against Turkey? (the Netherlands)
6. Who was responsible for spreading those lies about Turkey? (Stephen Kinzer)

SHOULD HAVE



1. Geçmişte yapılması gereken ama yapılmamış işleri ifade eder.

You look terrible. You should have seen a doctor long ago.

Smoking in public areas should have been prohibited a long time ago.

He was given a ticket by the traffic warden; he shouldn't have driven recklessly.

Most people believe that world governments should have been enforcing conservation long ago.

TV is an evil medium. It should never have been invented. But since we have to live with it, let's try to do something about it. —Richard Burton (1925-84)

2. Geçmişle ilgili akıl yürütme ifade edebilir.

She began typing the report two hours ago. It is not a long report. She should have finished typing it by now.

Students who have attended classes regularly should have mastered the essentials of computer literacy.



"But you shouldn't have left the candy where I could reach it.."

EXERCISE 154

Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyerek benzer şekilde **should have** or **shouldn't have** kullanarak tümceler kurunuz.

You had the accident because you weren't careful.

You should have been careful.

Your room looks terrible now because you have had a party.

You shouldn't have had a party.

1. You are fat now because you have eaten too much bread.
2. We did not take measures to decrease our dependence on oil. Now we have a serious energy crisis.
3. You didn't take my advice. Now you are broke.
4. She spent all her time shopping. Now she doesn't have enough time to finish her project.
5. Jack didn't get the job because he was rude to the interviewer.
6. Tom regrets it that he has not taken his medicine.
7. Fred tried to repair his computer, and now it is beyond repair.
8. David didn't read the instructions and couldn't use the computer.



"We shouldn't have left him alone at home, or we should have left him more food."

EXERCISE 155

Aşağıda verilen durumu inceleyiniz. Julia'nın annesinin söylemiş olabileceklerini saptayınız.

WHAT A ROOM !

Mrs. Walker entered her daughter's room, she thought she had entered a room which was first visited by burglars. Nothing was in its place. Nothing was in order. Feeling rather annoyed and helpless, she sat on her daughter's bed. "Julia shouldn't have done this," Mrs. Walkers said to herself.

What else might Mrs. Walkers have said ?

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. Julia did not make the bed. | 5. She left her dictionary on her bed. |
| 2. She left all the drawers open. | 6. She left a pair of shoes in a drawer. |
| 3. She didn't put her pearls in the box. | 7. She didn't turn off the lights. |
| 4. She left the floor dirty. | 8. She threw her pyjamas on the floor. |

EXERCISE 156

Aşağıdaki gazete haberini dikkatle okuyunuz ve verilen tümceleri ***should have*** ve ***shouldn't have*** kullanarak tamamlayınız.

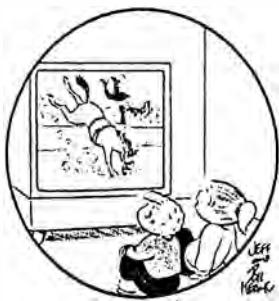
FIRE IN DAISY HOTEL KILLS 56

Fifty-six people were killed last night when a fire swept through the Daisy Hotel on Battle Street. Most of the guests were unable to escape from the hotel because the elevators had been turned off and there were no outside fire escapes. The hotel had apparently not been checked by safety officials for more than a year, and it is believed that both the alarm and the water sprinkling systems were not working. Many guests were injured when they jumped from windows instead of waiting to be rescued by firemen. It appears that the staff on night duty were sleeping when the fire broke out. When they woke up they attempted to warn the guests before calling the fire department.

1. The elevators _____.
2. The hotel _____ by safety officials last year.
3. The alarm and the water sprinkling systems _____.
4. The guests _____ from windows.
5. The guests _____ to be rescued by firemen.
6. The hotel staff _____ the fire department before attempting to warn the guests.

EXERCISE 157

Aşağıdaki gazete haberini dikkatle okuyunuz ve verilen tümceleri ***should have*** ve ***shouldn't have*** kullanarak tamamlayınız.



He should have fastened his seat belt.

**OVERCROWDED BUS
OVERTURNS**

A bus that was carrying more than 75 passengers overturned last night on Route E-5, killing ten passengers and injuring a further 30. The bus was designed to carry only 50 passengers and police are investigating why it was carrying more than its usual number and travelling at nearly 80 miles an hour. Many of the injured lay for nearly half an hour waiting for ambulances to arrive. The bus was not carrying first aid equipment and the driver was not trained in emergency procedures.

1. The bus _____ more than 75 passengers.
2. The bus _____ at nearly 80 miles an hour.
3. The ambulances _____ earlier.
4. The bus _____ first aid equipment.
5. The bus driver _____ in emergency procedures.

COULD HAVE

1. Geçmişte mümkün olmasına rağmen gerçekleşmemiş olan işleri ifade eder.

Helen **must have been** daydreaming while she was driving to school yesterday. She drove through a red light at a busy intersection. She was really lucky. She **could have caused** a terrible accident. She **could have got** killed.

She could have married a rich man, but she didn't want to.

History is the sum total of the things that could have been avoided. –
Konrad Adenauer

A woman never forgets the men she could have married.

Many of the deaths in the poverty-stricken area could have been avoided through better health care.

Sandra's rash action caused trouble that could have been avoided if she had stopped to think.

You were a fool to drive like that. You could have been killed.

Aristotle could have avoided the mistake of thinking that women have fewer teeth than men, by the simple device of asking Mrs. Aristotle to keep her mouth open while he counted.

We talked a lot about this problem with my parents and we discussed how we could have done things differently.

Why didn't he go see the city? I can't imagine what on earth could have happened to him!"

She could have married anybody she wanted to.



*"I am bringing a surprise home, dear,
Do you remember Larnar,
that great, big, handsome he-man
you are always talking about,
the one you could have married
instead of me ...?"*

2. Geçmişle ilgili zayıf olasılık ifade edebilir.

They could have won the match, but I doubt it.

He could have paid all his debts, but I don't think he did.

(Borçlarının hepsini ödemmiş olabilir, ama ben pek sanmıyorum.)

3. Geçmişle ilgili akıl yürütme ifade edebilir.

Nobody but a computer guru could have done such a thing.

(Böyle bir şeyi bir bilgisayar dahisinden başkası yapmış olamaz.)

If you can't remember it, it couldn't have been important. – *Larry Groebe*
I couldn't have gone with you because I was at the hospital then.



geçmişle ilişkin varsayımlar:

can have

can't have

couldn't/have

Bu üç kip belirteci geçmişle ilişkin varsayımları gösterirler.

1. *CAN'T HAVE* ve *COULDNT HAVE* aynı anlamda kullanılır.

2. *CAN HAVE* sadece soru tümceleriyle olumsuz tümcelerde kullanılır.

She can't have spent more than ten minutes cleaning the house. The house is still terribly dirty.

She can't have been studying English for a long time. She can't even speak a word.

You couldn't have eaten in that restaurant last Monday. It was closed.

I couldn't have won the race, so I did not enter it.

Who can have done such a terrible thing?

What can he have done to annoy you so much?

What can she have done to amass such a fortune?

Shakespeare üzerine bir tartışma:

Edebiyat tarihçileri William Shakespeare imzasıyla yazılan oyunların gerçekten William Shakespeare tarafından yazılmış yazılmadığını tartışmaktadır. Kimileri bu oyunları bir başkasının, örneğin Francis Bacon'un yazdığını iddia etmektedirler. Bu tartışmalara katılan Amerikalı ünlü yazar Mark Twain şöyle söylüyor:

Shakespeare could not have written those plays because he did not have the necessary education.

(Oyunları Shakespeare yazmış olamaz çünkü yeterli eğitime sahip değildi.)

William Shakespeare'e atfedilen bazı dizeler için de şu söyleniyor.

These lines couldn't have been written by Shakespeare; they are not really good enough.

(*Bu dizeler Shakespeare tarafından yazılmış olamaz. Yeterince güzel degiller.*)

EXERCISE 158

Örneği inceleyerek *couldn't have* ile benzer tümceler kurunuz.

*It was impossible for me to visit you yesterday because I was on duty.
I couldn't have visited you yesterday because I was on duty.*

1. It was impossible for us to stay at a hotel because we were broke.
2. It was impossible for me to watch TV last night because my TV set was broken.
3. It was impossible for me to cash a check yesterday because the bank was closed.
4. I don't think it rained last night. The ground is dry this morning.
5. I don't believe that you wrote this story. Your English is not that good.
6. It was impossible for me to lend you that money because I had no money last week.
7. Lucy does not know how to drive. (It was impossible for Lucy to drive you downtown yesterday because she does not know how to drive.)
8. It was impossible for Jack to steal the money. He didn't even know there was money in the safe.

needn't have

Geçmişte bir işin gerekli olmadığı halde yapıldığını belirtir.

You needn't have bought anything. We have everything ready.

(Bir şey satın almanız gerekmiyordu. Herşeyimiz hazır.)

We needn't have bought all this food; we had only three guests.

(Bu kadar yiyecek almamız gerekmiyordu. Sadece 3 konuğumuz vardı.)

The machine was working well. You needn't have repaired it.

You needn't have bought a new computer. Your old computer was working perfectly well.

 She needn't have helped you. (Size yardım etmesi gerekmiyordu = ama etti.)

She didn't need to help you. (Size yardım etmesi gerekmiyordu = etti mi etmedi mi bilmiyoruz.)

ought to have

1. Geçmişle ilgili yerine getirilmemiş tavsiye ve görev ifade eder.

When you put down the good things you ought to have done, and leave out the bad things you did do- well, that's Memoirs. – *Will Rogers* 1946

You ought to have been in bed hours ago!

You failed the exam; you ought to have studied harder.

(Sınavı başaramadınız. Daha çok çalışmanız gerekiydi.)

She ought to have told us she was ill. (Hasta olduğunu bize söylemesi gerekiydi.)

You oughtn't to have crossed the road when the lights were red.

(Kırmızı ışıkta caddeyi geçmemeniz gerekiydi.)

You ought to have taken care of that matter a long time ago.

2. Geçmişle ilgili olasılık / bekleneni ifade eder.

The people in the forest were greatly frightened. All the time the days grew shorter and the nights grew colder than they ought to have been.

He left home more than two hours ago. He ought to have finished his shopping. (Evden ayrılan iki saat geçiyor. Şimdiye kadar alışverişini bitirmiş olmalı.)

EXERCISE 159

Aşağıdaki durumu ve örnek tümceyi inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The teacher called Ray's mother to complain about her son's behaviour.

He didn't pay attention in class.

He ought to have paid attention in class.

1. He wrote rude words on the blackboard.
2. He didn't do any homework last night.
3. He didn't bring his books to school.
4. He chewed gum during the class.
5. He was late every day last week.
6. He rode his bicycle in the school garden.

EXERCISE 160

Aşağıdaki örneği inceleyiniz ve verilen tümcelerle ilgili benzer tümceler kurmaya çalışınız.

Five years ago Larry was very poor, but now he is a millionaire.

He must have been very lucky.

He might have married a rich woman.

He may have been successful in business.

He could have robbed a bank.

1. Mr. and Mrs. Taylor are very worried. Their daughter usually gets home before 4.30. It is 6 o'clock now, and she hasn't come home yet.
2. Two months ago Helen was very fat, maybe 15 kilos overweight. Now she is 10 kilos underweight.
3. Five years ago this pop singer was a millionaire. Now he is penniless.
4. Ali has just read a letter, and he is crying.
5. Someone on the radio said that he saw a flying saucer in his garden.

EXERCISE 161

Aşağıdaki konuşmalarda geçen kip belirteçlerini bulunuz ve hangi anamlarda kullanıldığını saptayınız.

Two thieves are looking at a house and thinking about trying to break in.

- FIRST THIEF: Look at that house. It is dark. Everyone must be out.
- SECOND THIEF: They might be sleeping.
- FIRST THIEF: I don't think so. Look at all those newspapers at the front door. They must be away on vacation.
- SECOND THIEF: Let's go see. Do you hear anything?
- FIRST THIEF: No. Look - the mail box is stuffed with mail. They must be away all right.
- SECOND THIEF: You try the doors. I'll try these windows. Something must open.
- FIRST THIEF: What a lot of beer cans! Somebody must have drunk a lot of beer.
- SECOND THIEF: Here is the silverware. Beautiful.
- FIRST THIEF: And here is \$500 lying on the desk. These people must be stupid to leave money lying around.
- SECOND THIEF: Look at all these books. They must like to read a lot.
- FIRST THIEF: Yeah, but I can't find the TV anywhere. They don't have one.
- SECOND THIEF: It may be upstairs. Here it is in the bedroom. They must be watching TV in bed. Help me lift it.
- FIRST THIEF: Shsh! What was that noise? Somebody may come.
- SECOND THIEF: Oh, it is just the cat. Nice kitty. You must feel lonely all alone in this big house.
- FIRST THIEF: Watch out! If you pet the cat, you'll drop the TV. We'd better hurry, because someone must come here every day to feed the cat, and they may come at any time.

When the owners of the house came home from their vacation they discovered that their TV, money, and silverware were missing. They tried to imagine what had happened.

ROBERT: How did they get in?

HELEN: The front and back doors were both locked when we got home. They can't have gotten in through the doors.

ROBERT: The windows on the ground floor are locked. They can't have gotten in through the windows.

HELEN: Oh, look. One basement window is open.

ROBERT: But the TV is too big to go through this window. They couldn't have taken it out through it.

HELEN: All my jewelry is still here. Why didn't they take it?

ROBERT: They may not have seen them.

HELEN: They ate the cake in the refrigerator. They must have been hungry.

The police came and looked for fingerprints, but they didn't find any.

Police: *They must have been wearing gloves.*

Naturally Robert and Helen were upset about the break-in. They expressed a lot of regrets because they didn't take the proper precautions when they went away.

1. We shouldn't have left the cellar window open.
 2. We should have installed a burglar alarm.
 3. We should have left a light on.
 4. We should have locked all the doors.
 5. We should have asked the post office to hold our mail.
 6. We should have given our vacation phone number to a neighbour.
-
-

EXERCISE 162

Aşağıdaki parçada geçen kip belirteçlerini bulunuz ve hangi anlamlarda kullandığını saptayınız.

Asteroids, even small ones, can be devastating if they hit the earth. The Grand Canyon, which is almost a mile wide, might have been created by an asteroid only 150 feet in diameter. Experts estimate that if an object 500 feet in diameter were to hit the earth, it could set fire to trees within a radius of 30 miles, knock down houses within one of 100 miles, and change weather patterns worldwide for as long as a year because of the dust it would throw up.

In the near future, it may be possible to prevent such disasters. A scanning system may soon be able to provide information on the brightness and position of objects in space. The system would be able to indicate changes in the position of these celestial objects and tell us if there is an asteroid headed for earth. A bomb could then be carried to the asteroid by a spacecraft and fired by a radio signal from earth. The explosion would cause a small change in the asteroid's orbit, but if

done early enough, a very slight change would be enough to cause the asteroid to miss the earth.

EXERCISE 163

Aşağıdaki parçada geçen kip belirteçlerini bulunuz ve hangi anlamlarda kullandığını saplayınız.

Berbatville

Berbatville, which used to be a nice town of 100,000 people in the 1960s, has now almost become no man's land. It has now a population of no less than ten million, and it is growing daily. Berbatville has serious water shortages, severe air pollution, no city centers, no well-developed transportation system, and high crime rates. All this is due to lack of planning.

Many of the world's large urban areas are suffering from multiple problems that have resulted from massive growth without careful planning. Berbatville is a typical example of such a city.

Berbatville might have developed differently. With foresight, the city could have avoided many of the problems that exist today. With proper planning, Berbatville could have managed its growth, and the city would have escaped the crushing problems it now faces.

EXERCISE 164

Aşağıdaki durumları inceleyiniz ve uygun kip belirteçleri ile tümceler kurmaya çalışınız. **WOULD HAVE** kullanmayınız.

- A. The Browns decided last year that Berbatville was no place to live. They decided to move to a much smaller town, but they couldn't sell their house and had to stay in Berbatville.

The Browns _____ moved to a smaller town if they had been able to sell their house.

- B. There are no birds left in Berbatville. What happened to them?

I: is obvious. The pollution _____ killed them.

I don't know for sure, but the birds _____ die from a disease.

- C. A river runs through Berbatville. Its water is highly polluted. Several factories dump their wastes into the river. Mr. Brown rode by the river on the way to work and noticed that several dead fish were floating on top of the water.

Toxic dump _____ killed the fish in the river.

- D. James Watt invented the steam engine in the 1700s, and the Industrial Revolution began.

The Industrial Revolution ____ begun if James Watt had not invented the steam engine.

- E. The Wright brothers invented the first airplane and became famous.

If the Wright brothers had not invented the first airplane, they ____ become famous.

- F. Ancient Egyptians needed sharp, durable tools for harvesting wheat, and as a result, they made the first metal sword.

Ancient Egyptian _____ made the first metal sword. if they hadn't needed sharp, durable tools for harvesting wheat.

- G. When World War I broke out, the development of the airplane gained great speed.

The development of the airplane _____ taken much longer if World War I had not broken out.

- H. The elevator was invented, and it became possible to develop skyscrapers.

If elevators hadn't been invented, skyscrapers _____ been built.

- I. The development of the silicon microchip has revolutionized the computer industry. It has made possible the mass production of personal computers.

The mass production of personal computers _____ been possible if the silicon microchip had not been developed.



CHART OF MODAL AUXILIARIES



1	yetenek	She can play the piano.
2	izin	Can I leave early today? Yes, you can.
3	güvence	You can leave everything to me. I'll take care of all.
4	öneri	We can take a taxi.
5	olasılık	Anybody can win the lottery.



1	gelecek zaman	We will finish our work soon.
2	isteklilik	I'll do my best to help you.
3	isteksizlik	I won't drive in fog.
4	rica	Will you let me have it?
5	ikram	Will you have a piece of cake?
6	alışkanlık	He will listen to pop music all day long.
7	olasılık	If he goes there, he will visit his aunt.
8	kararlılık	I will finish the work on time.
9	duyuru	The bar will be closed tomorrow for urgent repairs.
10	mantiksal yargı	A small leak will sink a great ship.
11	durum	Our school will start earlier than others.
12	emir	You will wash all the dishes before I come back.



1	yetenek yokluğu	She can't read.
2	vasaklama	You can't wait here.
3	öneri	Can't we talk about it later?
4	israrlı rica	Can't you be more careful?
5	inanmazlık	You can't be tired. You haven't done anything yet.
6	imkansızlık	You can't go there today; there is no transportation.
7	tahmin	She can't be a teacher. She doesn't know how to read.



1	gelecek zaman	We shall start the meeting early.
2	teklif	Shall we play cards tonight? Yes, let's. No, let's not.
3	isteklilik	He shall be rewarded if he keeps his promise.
4	dinsel buyruk	You shall not lie.
5	yardım önerisi	Shall I carry your suitcases?
6	nivet	We shall go on a diet.
7	hukuk dili	The tenant shall take good care of the residence.
8	israr	You shall obey our rules.

should

1	zorunluluk	One should watch his diet.
2	mantıksal yargı	She should cook well. She is a good housewife.
3	yapışal	It is strange that he should be here.
4	dolaylı anlatım	She said she should do the dishes.
5	koşul tümcesi	If you should have any difficulty, give us a ring.
6	devrik koşul	Should you have any problem, consult the manual.

must

1	zorunluluk	You must read the first two chapters.
2	görev duygusu	I must study harder this year.
3	mantıksal tahmin	He must be over 70. He fought in World War I.

must not

	yasak	You mustn't eat too much meat.
--	-------	--------------------------------

may

1	olasılık	It may snow today.
2	gelecek	They may open a new shop soon.
3	izin isteme	May I come with you? Yes, you may. No, you may not.
4	dua ve beddua	May Turkish Republic live long! May he drop dead!

might

1	olasılık	We might buy a new house this year.
2	dolaylı anlatım MAY yerine	He said, "I might work with you." He said that he might work with me.

could

1	geçmişte yetenek	He could play the piano when he was only five.
2	olasılık	He could be in the office.
3	rica	Could you please tell me the time?
4	koşul tümcesinde	If she were rich, she could be happy.
5	dolaylı anlatımda CAN yerine	She said that she could do nothing to help us.

would

1	rica	Would you please turn on the lights?
2	koşul tümcesinde	If she knew the answer, she would tell us.
3	geçmiş alışkanlık	We would go on a picnic every Sunday.
4	reddetme	She would not tell us anything about her husband.
5	dolaylı anlatım	He said that he would do anything to help us.
6	inanmazlık	Who would take such a story seriously?
7	istek	What wouldn't I give for such a house?

ought to Genel olarak SHOULD yerine kullanılabilir.

1	zorunluluk	I ought to take more exercise.
2	mantıksal yargı	He ought to be home by now.

used to

geçmişte alışkanlık

She used to be a rich person.

have to

1	gereklik	Do you have to get up early every day?
2	akıl yürütme	There has to be some reason for his failure.

have got to

gereklik

I have got to catch the last train.

had to

1	geçmişte gereklik	I had to stay home last night.
2	dolaylı anlatım	He said that he had to help his father.

is/am/re going to

1	niyet; karar	We are going to stop pollution here.
2	kaçınılmazlık	She is going to punish you.
3	gelecek	They are going to sell their house.

was/were going to

1	geçmişe ait niyet	She was going to help her father, but I don't know if she did.
2	gerçekleşmemiş iş	I was going to buy a computer, but I didn't have enough cash.
3	(geçmişte) daha sonra olacak iş	The ceremony was going to start soon, so they all came.

had better

1	tavsiye	You had better stay home if you have got a cold.
2	uyarı	You had better not be so noisy. Everybody is sleeping.

had rather

1	tercih	We'd rather die than be slaves.
---	--------	---------------------------------

would rather

tercih	I would rather go hungry than steal I would rather you stayed home.
--------	--

be used to

alışkanlık

We are used to swimming in winter.

is/am/are to

1	planlanmış iş	The manager is to be here at 7.
2	zorunluluk	You are to wait here for another hour.

was/were to

1	geçmiş ait plan	They were to paint their house.
2	geçmişte olacak iş	He left the house, not knowing he was never to see it again.

get used to

	alışmak	She is getting used to living doing nothing.
--	---------	--

be accustomed to

	alışkin olmak	She is accustomed to working on their farm.
--	---------------	---

get accustomed to

	alışmak	Turks are getting accustomed to having thrashy fast food.
--	---------	---

be Supposed to

1	görev	We are supposed to keep this place clean.
2	genel inanış	Vegetables are supposed to be good for us.
3	planlanmış iş	We are supposed to begin the journey tomorrow.
4	yasak	You are not supposed to erase these files.



*"Judging from what they are saying,
Mom's mother and Dad's mother-in-law
must be the same person."*

PERFECT MODALS

would have <i>koşul tümcesi</i>	If God had intended men to smoke , He would have put chimneys in their heads.
must have <i>geçmişe ilişkin tahmin</i>	God must have loved the plain people; he made so many of them. — <i>Abraham Lincoln</i>
may have <i>geçmişe ilişkin olasılık</i>	Jack is late. He may have missed the bus. As many as 10,000 people may have attended the ceremony.
might have <i>geçmişe ilişkin olasılık</i> <i>geçmişte gerçekleşmemiş iş</i> <i>geçmişle ilgili iş için sitem</i>	The Grand Canyon, which is almost a mile wide, might have been created by an asteroid only 150 feet in diameter. They might have saved her life but for the second attack. You might have told me you were going into town.
should have <i>geçmişte yapılmamış iş</i> <i>geçmişle ilgili tahmin</i>	He should have worked, instead of living on his wife's money. They should have arrived home by now.
could have <i>geçmişte yapılmamış iş</i> <i>geçmişle ilgili olasılık</i>	She could have married anybody she wanted to. Why didn't you ask John ? I'm sure he could have helped you.
can't have <i>geçmişle ilgili tahmin</i>	She can't have written this letter. She doesn't know English.
couldn't have <i>geçmişle ilgili tahmin</i>	It couldn't have been Mr. Jones who left the safe open, because he left early.
ought to have <i>geçmişte yapılmamış iş</i> <i>geçmişle ilgili bekleni</i>	I ought to have bought him some paper, but I forgot. They ought to have taken care of that matter long ago.
needn't have <i>zorunlu olmadan</i> <i>üzülmüş iş</i>	You needn't have brought all this food. We have more than enough here.
was/were to have <i>planlanmış fakat</i> <i>üzülmemiş</i>	There was to have been a hotel on this corner, but the Council refused permission at the last moment.

MODALS

functional classification

işlevsel sınıflandırma

ABILITY — present

<i>can</i>	<i>I can use a computer.</i>
<i>be able to</i>	<i>I am able to use a computer. I will be able to use one soon.</i>

ABILITY — past

<i>could</i>	<i>He could use a computer when he was 5.</i>
<i>be able to</i>	<i>They were able to use the computer yesterday.</i>

LACK OF ABILITY — present

<i>can</i>	<i>She can't cook.</i>
<i>be able to</i>	<i>She is not able to cook. He has not been able to walk without crutches.</i>

LACK OF ABILITY — past

<i>could</i>	<i>She couldn't cook when she got married.</i>
<i>be able to</i>	<i>She wasn't able to cook yesterday.</i>

ASKING FOR PERMISSION

<i>may</i>	<i>May I use your telephone?</i>
<i>can</i>	<i>Can I use your telephone?</i>
<i>could</i>	<i>Could I use your telephone?</i>

REQUEST

<i>would</i>	<i>Would you give me a lift home?</i>
<i>will</i>	<i>Will you give me a lift home?</i>
<i>can</i>	<i>Can you give me a lift home?</i>
<i>could</i>	<i>Could you give me a lift home?</i>

OBLIGATION

<i>must</i>	<i>I must pay this bill before the end of the month.</i>
<i>should</i>	<i>You should stop smoking immediately.</i>
<i>have to</i>	<i>Love is like the measles: we all have to go through it.</i>
<i>ought to</i>	<i>You ought not to squander your money.</i>
<i>have got to</i>	<i>I have got to fill in all these forms.</i>
<i>is/am/are to</i>	<i>All members are to report to the main hall before 7.</i>

LACK OF OBLIGATION -present

<i>don't have to</i>	<i>You don't have to wait here. You may go home.</i>
<i>haven't got to</i>	<i>You haven't got to get up early. It is your day off.</i>
<i>needn't</i>	<i>You needn't buy anything you don't want in our shop.</i>

LACK OF OBLIGATION -past

<i>didn't have to</i>	<i>We didn't have to do any work.</i>
<i>needn't have</i>	<i>There's a lot of food left over from the party. We needn't have made so many sandwiches.</i>

UNFILLED OBLIGATION

<i>should have</i>	<i>You should have told us about the meeting.</i>
<i>ought to have</i>	<i>You ought to have been in bed hours ago!</i>
<i>was/were to have</i>	<i>The bus was to have left an hour ago. I don't know why it didn't.</i>

ADVISABILITY

<i>should</i>	<i>You look terrible. You should see a doctor.</i>
<i>ought to</i>	<i>You look terrible. You ought to see a doctor.</i>
<i>had better</i>	<i>You look terrible. You had better see a doctor.</i>

POSSIBILITY- present

<i>may</i>	<i>A man may be rich and yet not be happy.</i>
<i>might</i>	<i>There might be another oil crisis.</i>
<i>can</i>	<i>The plane can be delayed by the air traffic controllers' strike.</i>
<i>could</i>	<i>Your cold could get worse if you do not take it easy.</i>

POSSIBILITY- past

<i>may have</i>	<i>The origin of the AIDS virus is uncertain, but it may have originated in Central Africa.</i>
<i>might have</i>	<i>Adam might have obeyed God, but he could not resist Eve. –Washburn</i>
<i>could have</i>	<i>You were a fool to drive like that. You could have been killed.</i>

DEDUCTION- present, positive

<i>must</i>	<i>We smell smoke. There must be a fire somewhere in the building.</i>
<i>should</i>	<i>Life in a lighthouse on a barren rock should be very dreary.</i>
<i>ought to</i>	<i>Your eyes are red. You ought to be catching a cold.</i>

DEDUCTION- present, negative

<i>can't</i>	<i>She can't be an American. Her English is terrible.</i>
<i>shouldn't</i>	<i>She shouldn't be over 16. Don't give her alcoholic drinks.</i>

DEDUCTION- past, positive

<i>must have</i>	<i>The smoke is coming from the fifth floor. The fire must have started there.</i>
<i>should have</i>	<i>I had no watch, but I judged from the height of the sun that it should have been nine o'clock when we reached the peak.</i>

DEDUCTION- past, negative

<i>can't have</i>	<i>She mentioned the party yesterday. She can't have forgotten it.</i>
<i>couldn't have</i>	<i>He wasn't even home. He couldn't have seen the accident.</i>

FUTURE

<i>will</i>	<i>I will be thirty years old next month.</i>
<i>shall</i>	<i>Men know where they were born, not where they shall die.</i>
<i>be going to</i>	<i>We are going to work on the farm tomorrow.</i>
<i>be to</i>	<i>The train is to leave late tonight.</i>

PREFERENCE - present

<i>had rather</i>	<i>I had rather eat chicken than mutton.</i>
<i>would rather</i>	<i>I would rather stay home than go swimming.</i>

PREFERENCE - past

<i>would rather</i>	<i>I would rather have gone to a movie. (But we stayed home.)</i>
<i>would sooner</i>	<i>We would sooner have eaten chicken. (But we didn't.)</i>



"I am not supposed to tell you that Mom had a traffic accident and that our car's fender got dented, so don't even ask me."



"At least you could have waited until AFTER the honeymoon."

Changing The World

An Unknown Monk 1100 A.D.

When I was a young man, I wanted to change the world. I found it was difficult to change the world, so I tried to change my nation. When I found I couldn't change the nation, I began to focus on my town. I couldn't change the town and as an older man, I tried to change my family. Now, as an old man, I realize the only thing I can change is myself, and suddenly I realize that if long ago I had changed myself, I could have made an impact on my family. My family and I could have made an impact on our town. Their impact could have changed the nation and I could indeed have changed the world.

PART FOUR

THE

ENGLISH TENSES

CHAPTER 23	The English Tenses	331
CHAPTER 24	The Simple Present Tense	333
CHAPTER 25	The Simple Present Continuous Tense	344
CHAPTER 26	The Future Tense	350
CHAPTER 27	The Future Continuous Tense	355
CHAPTER 28	The Simple Past Tense	358
CHAPTER 29	The Simple Past Continuous Tense	366
CHAPTER 30	The Present Perfect Tense	372
CHAPTER 31	The Present Perfect Continuous Tense	389
CHAPTER 32	The Past Perfect Tense	396
CHAPTER 33	The Past Perfect Continuous Tense	403
CHAPTER 34	The Future Perfect Tense	406
CHAPTER 35	The Future Perfect Continuous Tense	408



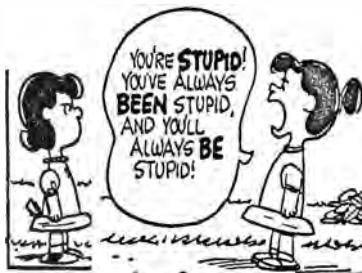
Chapter 23

THE ENGLISH TENSES "DİL BİLGİSEL ZAMANLAR"

TENSE ÜZERİNE

TENSE sözcüğünün Türkçe karşılığı olarak *zaman* sözcüğü kullanılmaktadır. Burada bir açıklama gerekiyor.

1. *The earth revolves around the sun.*
2. *They get up early.*
3. *We go to Bursa tomorrow.*
4. *Atatürk lands at Samsun on May 19, 1919.*
5. *Muhammed Ali punches Liston hard.*



Yukarıdaki tümcelerin hepsi de *simple present tense* ile kurulmuştur. Ama tümcelerin aktardıkları zamanlar farklıdır. Tümce 1, bir bakıma, zamana bağlı olmayan evrensel bir gerçeği ifade ediyor. Tümce 2, alışkanlıktan, genellikle yapılan bir işten söz ediyor. Tümce 3, doğrudan gelecek zaman ifade ediyor. Tümce 4 geçmiş bir olayı öykülüyor. Tümce 5 ise bir boks maçını anlatıyor.

O halde *tense* sözcüğünün karşılığı olan *zamana*, günlük dildeki anlamından ayrı bir anlam yüklediğini söyleyebiliriz. *Tense* ya da *zaman* sözcüğü ile, gerçekte "eylemi girebileceği biçimler" anlatılmaktadır. Bu biçimler, daha çok da günlük yaşamımızdaki zaman ayırmalarını göstermek için kullanılır. Ama başka görevler de üstlenirler. Örneğin, "*Sen artık oldün*" tümcesi, geçmiş zamanı değil, bir tehditi ifade etmek için kullanılabilir.İşte böyle bir kullanım!

Tense konusunda önemli bir gerçek de şudur: *eylemi girebileceği biçimler dilden dile değiştiği gibi, bu biçimlerin ifade edebildikleri de dilden dile değişiklik göstermektedir*. Türkçe {-miş} ekinin doğrudan bir karşılığı İngilizce'de yoktur. {-miş}'in kimi kullanıcıları, İngilizce'de belli yapılarla ifade edilebilir. İngilizce'de bulunan "perfect" tense'lerin karşılığı da biçimsel olarak Türkçe'de yoktur.

Türkçe, İngilizce'de bu tense'lerle ifade edilen bildirileri, kendisinde var olan "tense"lerle ifade etmektedir. Örneğin, İngilizce'de Present Perfect Continuous Tense ile kurulan, *She has been living in Bursa for two years* tümcesi Türkçe'de "present continuous" tense ile ifade edilecektir=İki yıldır Bursa'da yaşıyor.

İNGİLİZCE'DE KAÇ "TENSE" VARDIR?



Bu sorunun yanıtı tense sözcüğüne ne anlam verildiğine bağlıdır. İngilizce'de sadece iki "tense" olduğunu iddia edenler olmuştur: present ve past. Doğrusu farklı sayılar da önerilmiştir. Temel olarak eylemlerin girebildiği biçimler göz önüne alındığında 12 "tense" olduğu söylenebilir. İngilizce'yi yabancı dil olarak öğrenmek için de bu sınıflandırma en uygunudur.

1	Simple Present	She is a good student. She works hard.
2	Present Continuous	She is working hard.
3	Simple Past	She was a good student. She worked hard last year.
4	Past Continuous	She was working hard last year.
5	Future Tense	She will work hard next year.
6	Future Continuous	She will be working hard next year.
7	Present Perfect	She has worked hard all her life.
8	Present Perfect Continuous	She has been working hard for years.
9	Past Perfect	She had worked hard before she became rich.
10	Past Perfect Continuous	She had been working hard when she was fired.
11	Future Perfect	She will have worked as a teacher for 20 years by next April.
12	Future Perfect Continuous	She will have been working as a teacher for 20 years by next April.



Simple Present Tense'te TO BE eyleminin **is**, **am**, **are** ve Simple Past Tense'te **was**, **were** biçimlerinin olduğuna dikkat ediniz. TO BE eyleminin soru ve olumsuz tümce yapımında yardımcı eylemler gibi davranışını görüyoruz:

Is English an easy language?

Life in the 15th century wasn't as complex as it is now.

Şimdi bu "tense"leri teker teker ele alacağız.

Chapter 24

The Simple Present Tense

"Geniş Zaman"

(TO BE DIŞINDAKİ EYLEMLER)

OLUMLU DÜZ TÜMCE

I		love	Turkey.
You			
They		loves	
We			
He		loves	
She			
It			

OLUMSUZ DÜZ TÜMCE

I		do not	want pollution.
You			
They		does not	
We			
He		does not	
She			
It			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Do Don't	I you we they	know the answer?
Does Doesn't	he she it	

OLUMLU ve OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I you we they	do.	
	he she it	does.	

No,	I you we they	don't. do not.	
	he she it	doesn't. does not.	

THE SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE (*TO BE* EYLEMİ İLE)

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I	am 'm	a	writer.		I	'm not am not	a	writer.
You	are 're				You	are not aren't 're not		
He She	is 's				He	is not isn't 's not		
We You They	are 're		writers.		We You They	are not aren't 're not		writers.

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Am Aren't	I	a	student?	
Is Isn't	he she			
Are Aren't	we you they			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I	am.	No,	I	am not.
	he	is.		he	is not
	she			she	isn't
	it			it	
	we	are.		we	are not.
	you			you	aren't.
	they			they	

The Simple Present Tense'in Kullanımı



*"We just don't speak the same language, David.
You're BASIC, and I'm COBOL."*

1. Yinelenen işleri, alışkanlıklarını ve becerileri anlatır.



He takes the dog for a walk every morning.
We always get up late on Sundays.
Turks eat a lot of rice.
These villagers take their dairy herds to the mountains in the summer.
She speaks several languages.
He plays the guitar very well.
The IMF and World Bank impose unequal trades upon the undeveloped countries.

2. Atasözleri ve doğa gerçekleri gibi zamana bağımlı olmayan yargıları bildirir.

Water freezes at 0°C.
The brave only die once.
Hard work is the mother of luck.
Water consists of hydrogen and oxygen.
Water boils at a hundred degrees Celsius.
The earth revolves around the sun.
The state of Hawaii consists of seven islands.
The River Po flows into the Adriatic Sea.
A magnet attracts iron filings.
The languages of American Indians are incredibly complex.
The light from the Sun takes 8 minutes and 20 seconds to reach the Earth.

3. Geçerliliği genel olarak doğru olan ya da belli bir zaman sürekli olan durumları anlatır.

Atatürk ranks as the greatest national hero of all times.
This river has a lot of fish.
Most British restaurants serve terrible dishes.
Your statements have many half truths.
İstanbul has two suspension bridges.

Horror films draw large crowds.
This milk tastes bitter.
Shelly is often careless in her work.

4. Özür dileme, teşekkür etme, resmi ortamlarda ad verme ve yargı bildirme gibi durumlarda kullanılır.

I beg your pardon.	Thank you very much.
I name this ship Joy.	I resign from my post.
I declare you man and wife.	

5. Yapılması planlanmış işleri anlatır. Bu kullanım özellikle gezi programlarında yaygındır.

We pay a visit to the mayor.
The manager speaks at 10.
We visit the museum in the morning and leave for Ankara.

6. Gelecek zaman zarflarıyla gelecek zaman bildirir.

The president visits Germany next month.
School begins tomorrow.

7. Zarf tümceciklerinde gelecek zaman yerine kullanılır.

We can't begin until they arrive.
They will stop playing as soon as the whistle blows.
When the shooting stops, we shall go out.

8. Tarihi olayların anlatımında kullanılır.

The French Revolution begins in 1789.
Atatürk officially starts the War of Independence in Samsun.

9. Sanat yapıtları üzerinde tartışmalarda kullanılır.

In the first chapter of the book, the hero falls in love with the daughter of his enemy.
Hemingway's characters obey a code of behaviour.
Throughout the play, Hamlet seeks revenge for his father's murder.
George Orwell depicts a totalitarian regime in 1984.

10. Medya dilinde geçmiş zaman yerine kullanılır.

10 Bombs Shatter Trains in Madrid, killing 192.
September 11, 2001: Two hijacked airliners smash into the World Trade Centre in New York. A third hits the Pentagon, and a fourth crashes in Pennsylvania, apparently out of control. The world watches as the twin towers collapse, killing an estimated 6,000 people

11. Spor karşılaşmaları nakledilirken kullanılır.

Hakan Şükür traps the ball and heads it across Erdem. Erdem passes the ball to Rüştü.

Taylor swings and misses.

Muhammed Ali punches him hard. He falls. The referee starts to count.

12 Fıkra anlatımında kullanılır.

A man walks into a shop and sees a cute little dog. He asks the shopkeeper, "Does your dog bite?"

The shopkeeper says, "No, my dog does not bite."

The man tries to pet the dog and the dog bites him.

"Ouch!" He says, "I thought you said your dog does not bite!"

The shopkeeper replies, "That is not my dog!"

EXERCISE 165

Aşağıdaki metin *The Plain Truth* (November/December 1986, p. 15) dergisinden alınmıştır. Metni okuyunuz ve soruları yanıtlamaya çalışınız.

Teach Children the Truth about Advertising

**They are what
they watch.**



**Children in the USA watch
upwards of 20,000 TV
commercials a year. No
wonder children so influenced
tell us what they'll eat, wear or
play with.**

WHY BAD ADVERTISING IS BAD

- It teaches false values. By emphasizing a life based on "getting things", there is an erosion of the true values of effort and concern, discipline and responsibility.
- It blinds the mind. When we accept the routine use of illogic, we gradually lose our rational, critical and common-sense thinking processes.
- It encourages selfishness. This fostering of desire for "things" encourages people to want more and more - instead of trying to be more the way decent people should be.
- It corrupts personal and social relationships. It teaches people to respect clothes and some gadget (deodorant spray or perfumed soap) instead of honesty and decency.

1. How many commercials do children in the USA watch every year?
2. What do children tell us?
3. What do commercials teach children?
4. What do commercials do to the mind?
5. What do commercials encourage?
6. What do commercials corrupt?
7. What do commercials teach people?

THE SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE İLE KULLANILAN YAYGIN ZAMAN ZARFLARI

The Simple Present Tense yinelenen işleri ifade ettiğinden, yinelenmenin ne kadar sıklıkta olduğunu belirten zaman zarfları bu tense ile yaygın olarak kullanılmaktadır.

every	week weekend month May summer year
--------------	---

every	day morning afternoon evening night Saturday
--------------	---

now and then
from time to time
every other day
almost every day
about two times a week

more often than not (usually)
as often as not (fairly often)
every so often (occasionally)

every	two three four	days weeks months year
--------------	----------------------	---------------------------------

once	twice	three times	a	day week month year
-------------	--------------	--------------------	---	------------------------------

*once in a blue moon = nadiren

EXERCISE 166

Aşağıdaki soruları ayraç içinde verilen zarfları kullanarak yanıtlayınız.

How often do you visit your grandparents? (*every weekend*)
I visit my grandparents *every weekend*.

Do you ever chat on the internet? (*almost every night*)
Yes, I do. I chat on the internet *almost every night*.

1. How often do earthquakes occur in Japan? (*almost every year*)
2. Do you ever have your eyes checked? (*once a year*)
3. Does your boss ever say nice things? (*now and then*)
4. Do TV channels ever run good shows? (*from time to time*)
5. Do you ever go big-game hunting? (*twice a year*)
6. Do rich countries ever do anything for the good of the poorer countries? (*once in a blue moon*)
7. How often do they hold a meeting? (*about once a month*)
8. Does she ever visit her hometown? (*every year*)
9. How often do you come across people who violate traffic rules? (*almost every moment*)
10. Do you ever write to your parents? (*almost every week*)

THE SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE VE SIKLIK ZARFLARI (FREQUENCY ADVERBS)



Often, seldom gibi bir işin ne kadar aralıklarla yapıldığını gösteren zarflara sıklık zarfları "frequency adverbs" denilebilir. Bu zarfların sıklık ölçüklerini aşağıdaki tabloda olduğu gibi kabaca gösterebiliriz.

100	always
90	almost always
80	generally, usually
70	often, frequently
50	as often as not
40-- 30-- 20	sometimes, at times
10	occasionally, from time to time, not often
5	rarely, seldom, hardly ever
0	never

SIKLIK ZARFLARININ TÜMCE İÇİNDEKİ YERLERİ

Sıklık zarfları genel olarak *TO BE* eyleminden sonra, diğer eylemlerden önce kullanılırlar.

He who follows another is **always** behind.
A bad workman **always** blames his tools.

We	always usually often frequently sometimes occasionally rarely seldom never	go fishing on weekends.
----	---	-------------------------

I	am	always	careless with money.
You	are	usually	
We		often	
They		frequently	
He		sometimes	
She	is	occasionally	
Ali		rarely	
My son		seldom	
		never	

Bu zarflardan **sometimes** ve **occasionally** olumsuz tümcelerde DOESN'T 'tan önce gelirler. **Always** ve **ever**, DOESN'T'i izler. **Often**, **usually** ve **generally** zarfları ise DOESN'T 'dan önce de sonra da kullanılabilir.

He	sometimes occasionally	doesn't	watch TV.
----	---------------------------	---------	-----------

He	doesn't	always ever	read at nights.
----	---------	----------------	-----------------

He	doesn't	often usually	help his wife in the kitchen.
	often usually	doesn't	

Kısa yanıtlarında, zarflar zamirlerle yardımcı eylemler arasında yer alır.

<i>Is he ever careless with money?</i>	Yes,	he	often	is.
<i>Do they usually read at night?</i>	No,	they	seldom	do.

Seldom, **rarely** ve **never** kendileri olumsuz anlam taşıdıkları için, olumsuz tümcelerde kullanılmazlar.

Often, **usually** ve **always** olumsuz tümcelerde kullanıldığı gibi, zıt anlamlı zarflarla da olumsuz şekilleri yapılabılır.

often	x	seldom
usually	x	sometimes
always	x	never

Bir sözcükten fazla olan sıklık zarfları, tümcenin önüne ya da arkasına gelebilir.

Once in a while he listens to me. He listens to me once in a while.
--

Sometimes, occasionally, usually, generally gibi bazı tek sözcüklü zarflar da tümce başı ya da sonunda da yer alabilir.

He is <i>sometimes</i> careless.
<i>Sometimes</i> he is careless.
He is careless <i>sometimes</i> .

NEVER, SELDOM ve RARELY gibi olumsuz anlam taşıyan zarflar tümce başında yer alabilirler ve bu durumda devrik yapıyı gerektirirler.

<i>Never</i> does she listen to what I have to say.

<i>Seldom</i> does she come home early.



EXERCISE 167

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümcelere yerleştiriniz.

Childless couples select baby-sized dogs. (*frequently*)

Childless couples frequently select baby-sized dogs.

1. He who follows another is behind. (*always*)
2. The ignorant admire what they don't understand. (*always*)
3. Music works to enliven a dull evening. (*always*)
4. Half the truth is a great lie. (*often*)
5. She is not able to see an opportunity until it is gone. (*seldom*) ↗
(↗ Dikkat! Tümcenin olumlu olarak kurulması gerekiyor.)
6. They play football. (*sometimes*)
7. Health authorities are always trying to prevent the sale and use of tainted food. (*always*)
8. When speaking Turkish, Peter makes mistakes. (*often*)
9. A joke never gains an enemy but loses a friend. (*often*)
10. A man is more careful of his money than he is of his principles. (*usually*)
11. My mother comes home very weary after a hard day at work. (*usually*)
12. If you chase perfection, you catch excellence. (*often*)
13. Silence does not harm. (*seldom*)
(↗ Dikkat! Tümcenin olumlu olarak kurulması gerekiyor.)
14. We judge people by the company they keep. (*frequently*)
15. A white glove conceals a dirty hand. (*often*)

16. He sends his parents presents. (*occasionally*)
 17. Our boss is very popular because he doesn't look down upon people. (*never*)  (Dikkat!: Tümcenin olumlu olarak kurulması gerekiyor.)
 18. He has his faults, but he does his best. (*always*)
 19. She doesn't want to cook. (*occasionally*)
 20. I don't drink coffee after meals. (*usually*)
-
-

EXERCISE 168

Verilen zarfları kullanarak soruları yanıtlayınız.

Does he take an aspirin when he has got a headache? (*yes/always*)

Yes, he always takes an aspirin when he has got a headache.

1. Does a politician tell lies? (*yes/often*)
 2. Do rich countries ever give a fair deal to poor countries? (*no/seldom*)
 3. Do Germans drink beer? (*yes/often*)
 4. Do you go fishing these days? (*no/seldom*)
 5. Do some European countries support terrorism? (*yes/often*)
 6. Do you ever buy Chinese food? (*no/never*)
 7. Do you ever travel abroad? (*no/never*)
 8. Do you ever meet interesting people? (*yes/occasionally*)
-
-

EXERCISE 169

Aşağıdaki tabloda bir annenin yaptığı işler sıralanmıştır. Bu işlerin ne kadar sıkılıkla yapıldığını sıkılık zarfları kullanarak belirtiniz.

Example: A mother **always** keeps track of the children's doctor and dentist appointments.

WHAT DOES A MOTHER DO ?

- keeps track of the children's doctor and dentist appointments
- makes sure children eat properly and are kept clean
- washes clothes and keep them mended
- takes children to the park
- takes care of children when they are sick
- arranges to be around when children need special care
- keeps the house clean
- keeps clothes clean, ironed, mended, and replaced when need be
- sees to it that father's personal things are kept in their proper place so that he can find what he needs the minute he needs it.
- is a good cook and cooks the meals
- does the necessary grocery shopping
- serves meals properly

EXERCISE 170

Aşağıda ***How often do parents say to their children?*** girişiyile yapılan soruları *sometimes, often, never* gibi siklik zarflarıyla yanıtlayınız.

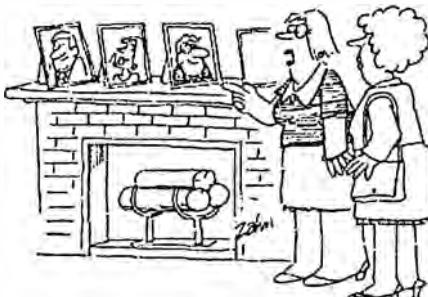
How often do parents say to their children?

1. Don't be late home.
2. If you don't do your homework, you'll never pass any exams.
3. You don't call that awful noise music, do you ?
4. Why don't you listen when I am talking to you?
5. You don't know how lucky you are. When I was your age ...
6. You don't care how much things cost nowadays.
7. When are you going to tidy your room? It looks as if a bomb's dropped in there.
8. You can't have everything you want!
9. We only want what's best for you.

EXERCISE 171

Boşlukları uygun zarflarla doldurunuz.

1. A politician _____ tells lies. (*never, seldom, often*)
2. Success _____ follows hard work. (*often, usually, always*)
3. Drunk driving is _____ dangerous. (*always, never, often*)
4. Men are _____ taller than women. (*usually, never, rarely*)
5. Writing a good book is _____ easy. (*always, frequently, never*)
6. Life in the country is _____ more peaceful than life in the city. (*usually, never, seldom*)
7. Advertisements _____ show the truth. (*never, seldom, sometimes*)
8. An honest man _____ makes as much money as a dishonest man. (*seldom, never, always*)
9. Laws _____ protect the poor. (*seldom, never, always*)
10. The rich countries _____ care about something other than their own gain. (*seldom, never, always*)



**"We don't talk about Larry . . .
he went into politics."**



Chapter 25

THE PRESENT CONTINUOUS TENSE

"Şimdiki Zaman"

OLUMLU TÜMCELER

I	'm am	having	fun.
He	's		
She	is		
We	're		
You	are		
They			

OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I	'm not am not	having	fun.
He	's not		
She	is not isn't		
We	're not		
You	are not		
They	aren't		

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Am Aren't	I	having	fun?
Is Isn't	he she		
Are Aren't	we you they		

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I	am.	No,	I	'm not. am not
	he she	is.		he she	's not. is not isn't
	we you they			we you they	're not. are not aren't

The Present Continuous Tense'in Kullanımı



1. Konuşma anında devam eden işleri anlatır.

The children are playing in the garden.
 She is watching TV now.
 What are they doing at the moment?
 The cat is sleeping peacefully on the hearth rug.
 A cold wind is blowing outside.
 She is making a birthday cake for her husband.

2. Kimi eylemlerle geniş zaman ifade eder.

She is attending a night school.
 I am working harder than I did last year, but I am enjoying my work better.
 We are attending Ankara University.
 She is living in a small town.
 My daughter is studying to become a doctor.
 I am making good progress in my study.
 What are your brothers doing nowadays?

3. Always, constantly, continually, perpetually gibi zaman zarflarıyla sürekli yinelenen işleri anlatır.

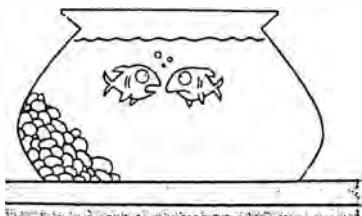
You're always borrowing money from me!
 She is continually making mistakes.
 You are always losing your gloves.
 It's always raining when I want to go out.
 She is always trying to show how well-educated she is.

4. Bir işin belli bir süre için yinelenmeye olduğunu gösterebilir.

He is staying with us this week.
 I am studying hard these days because I have got very poor grades.
 We are staying at a hotel this week because we are having our house painted.
 Air travel is becoming increasingly popular.

5. Gelecek zaman zarflarıyla gelecek zaman ifade eder.

They are taking the 8:00 train.
 He is leaving next week.
 I am going to the movies tonight.



*"I'm leaving you,
Gilbert. You can keep
the bowl, but I am taking
the water and all the colored
stones!"*

More people than ever before are going abroad for their holidays this year.

The Prime Minister is making a speech on television tonight.

6. Konuşmacının kararlılığını gösterebilir.

I am not doing this again. (Bunu tekrar yapmayağım.)

You're not loitering around here. (Burada aylaklı edemezsın.)

7. Bir noktada kesişen iki işten süreklilik gösterme özelliği olan işi ifade etmekte kullanılır.

Whenever I see her, she's smoking. (Onu ne zaman görsem sigara içiyor oluyor.)

She writes even faster if the radio is playing. (Radyo çalışıysa daha da hızlı yazar.)

8. Birisinin her zamankinden farklı davranışta olduğunu gösterebilir.

Jack is normally a very sensible man, but right now he is making a perfect fool of himself.

You are being a nuisance. Why don't you act sensible as you usually do?



Europe and the USA are responding to PKK terrorism.

THE SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE ile THE PRESENT CONTINUOUS TENSE'in Kullanım Açısından Karşılaştırılması

- A. The simple present tense, geniş bir zaman diliminde yapılan işleri anlatır. The present continuous tense ise belirli bir anda yapılmakta olan işleri ifade eder.

The Simple Present	The Simple Present Continuous
Birds produce a number of different cries.	The birds in the garden are making so much noise that I can't hear you.
Nightingales sing beautifully.	A nightingale in the tree is singing beautifully.
Jack sometimes plays billiards.	Jack is playing billiards now.
Helen often cooks Turkish dishes.	Helen is cooking a Turkish dish now.

- B. Zihinsel etkinliklerle ve kimi durumlarla ilişkili eylemlerle the present continuous kullanılmaz.

PRESENT CONTINUOUS TENSE İLE KULLANILMAYAN EYLEMLER

Ankara'yi seviyorum ve Sizi anlıyorum tümcelerinin karşılıkları *I like Ankara* and *I understand you* tümceleridir. Türkçede şimdiki zamanda kullanılabilen LIKE ve UNDERSTAND eylemleri

ZİHİNSEL ETKİNLIK EYLEMLERİ	İYELİK EYLEMLERİ	DUYU EYLEMLERİ	GÖRÜNÜŞ EYLEMLERİ
<i>be</i> <i>believe</i> <i>doubt</i> <i>know</i> <i>matter</i> <i>mean</i> <i>recognize</i> <i>remember</i> <i>suspect</i> <i>suppose</i> <i>think</i> <i>understand</i>	<i>belong to</i> <i>contain</i> <i>consist of</i> <i>have</i> <i>hold</i> <i>own</i> <i>possess</i>	<i>appreciate</i> <i>detest</i> <i>dislike</i> <i>enjoy</i> <i>hate</i> <i>hope</i> <i>love</i> <i>like</i> <i>mind</i> <i>need</i> <i>prefer</i> <i>want</i> <i>wish</i>	<i>appear</i> <i>look</i> <i>seem</i> <i>resemble</i>

Bu eylemlerden kimileri anlık etkinlik ifade ettiklerinde present continuous tense ile kullanılabilirler.

I am thinking about our new project.

We are having all kinds of problems at the moment.

Are you enjoying your stay here?

He usually looks very fit, but today he's looking rather pale.



C. **Work** ile **live** her iki tense ile hemen hemen aynı anlam ile kullanılabilir.

They live on a farm. / They are living on a farm.

He works for a software company.

He is working for a software company.

SIMPLE PRESENT VE PRESENT CONTINUOUS TENSE'LERİ İLE KULLANILAN ZAMAN ZARFLARI

Simple Present
every day
every week
sometimes
usually
often
seldom
frequently
once in a while
never

Present Continuous
right now
at this moment
temporarily
for the time being
this week
only for a limited time
at the moment
just now
this semester
right this moment

EXERCISE 172

Aşağıdaki tümcelerin anlamlarını göz önünde bulundurarak, ayraç içindeki eylemlerin simple present ya da present continuous biçimlerini kullanınız.

1. Now we (*know*) more about the dangers of smoking.
2. The twin brothers no longer (*resemble*) each other.
3. The car which he (*drive*) today (*belong*) to his father.

4. I (*not believe*) that anything good will come out of this.
5. What he (*mean*) is not clear to anybody.
6. We only (*work*) hard when we have to.
7. The report she (*type*) now (*appear*) to be very complex, but it (*contain*) no charts or tables.
8. The ice-cream we are eating (*taste*) very good.
9. The doctor (*feel*) the patient's pulse at this moment.
10. They (*add*) another room to their house, which already (*consist of*) seven rooms.
11. What people think about us (*not matter*).
12. He now (*feel*) that there is little hope of success.
13. Today the average schoolboy (*know*) more about science than most scientists did two hundred years ago.
14. She (*like*) computer games very much.
15. She (*play*) with her friends now.
16. I (*clean*) the whole office every week, don't I?
17. The old politician (*take*) a nap after lunch every day.
18. After a week of snow, everybody is glad that the sun (*shine*) again.
19. Please be quite. Your father (*prepare*) his speech.
20. Water (*change*) into ice when the temperature (*drop*) below zero.
21. The Blue Train (*not stop*) at small stations.
22. My friend (*stay*) with us this weekend.
23. The moon (*go*) round the earth.
24. He usually (*drive*) very carefully, but today he (*drive*) recklessly.
25. Our landlord now (*own*) five apartment buildings.



*"It is usually a lot of 'yesterdays',
no 'tomorrows' and part of a 'today'.*

Chapter 26

THE FUTURE TENSE

(WILL&SHALL)

"Gelecek Zaman"

OLUMLU TÜMCELER

I We	'll will shall	help	Tom.
You They He She	'll will		

İngiliz İngilizcesinde I ve we ile shall kullanılmaktadır. Günümüzde ise bütün kişilerle will kullanıldığı rahatlıkla söylenebilir.

SHALL, soru tümcelerinde future tense ile kullanılmaz.

OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I We	'll not will not shall not won't shan't	help	Tom.
You They He She	'll not will not won't		

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Will Won't	I you he she we they	help Tom?
---------------	-------------------------------------	-----------

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I you he she we they	will.	No,	I you he she we they	will not. won't.
------	-------------------------------------	-------	-----	-------------------------------------	---------------------

THE FUTURE TENSE (BE GOING TO)

OLUMLU TÜMCELER

I	'm am	going to	help Tom.
He	's		
She	is		
We	're		
You	are		
They			

OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I	'm not am not	going to	help Tom.
He	's not		
She	is not		
	isn't		
We	're not		
You	are not		
They	aren't		

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Am Aren't	I	going to	help Tom?
Is Isn't	he she		
Are Aren't	we you they		

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I	am.			No,	I	'm not. am not.
	he she	is.				he she	's not. is not. isn't.
	we you they	are.				we you they	're not. are not. aren't.

THE FUTURE TENSE 'İN KULLANIMI



Gelecek zaman ifadelerinde üç "modal" (kip belirteci) kullanılmaktadır.

will	shall	be going to
-------------	--------------	--------------------

Bu kip belirteçlerinin "gelecek zaman" ifade etmenin yanısıra başka anlamları da vardır.

Günümüz İngilizcesinde, "gelecek zaman" ifadesinde SHALL ve WILL ayrimi kalmamış gibidir.

Genel olarak, WILL, önceden tasarlanmadan yapılacak işleri anlatır. BE GOING TO ise, önceden özneden işi tasarladığını ve yapmaya kararlı olduğunu gösterir. Çoğu zaman bu ayrimın da silinmeyeceği görülmektedir.

1. Yakın gelecek zaman ifadesinde daha çok WILL kullanılır.

As it is so foggy, the flight will probably be delayed.
 We will soon have a nuclear power plant in our country.
 Don't bother about the telephone. John will answer it.
 If you tell him the truth, he'll be disappointed.

2. WILL geleceğe ilişkin tahminlerin ifadesinde kullanılabilir.

Usable fresh water supplies of the world will decrease.

3. BE GOING TO konuşanın kararlığını vurgulayabilir.

I am going to call her today.
 We are going to have dinner at eight o'clock.
 I am going to sell my house and buy a bigger one.

4. BE GOING TO kesinlik anlamını üstlenebilir.

She is going to leave school in June.
 This house is going to fall down.
 Robots are going to do all the housework in the next decade.

5. Zarf içtümcekleri gelecek zaman ifade etseler de "simple present" ile kurulurlar.

When he comes, we will play chess.

Before she leaves, she is going to repair the computer.

As soon as he finishes his breakfast, he will go to work.

I am going to wait here until I am given the permission to leave.



İşin bittiği vurgulanmak istendiğinde zarf içtümceciğinde simple present yerine present perfect tense kullanılır.

She will watch TV after she types the report.

She will watch TV after she has typed the report.

THE FUTURE TENSE İLE KULLANILAN YAYGIN ZAMAN ZARFLARI



"From now on I'll no longer accept volcanoes as science projects."

<i>tomorrow</i>	<i>next week</i>	<i>in 2010</i>
<i>tomorrow morning</i>	<i>next weekend</i>	<i>in the future</i>
<i>tomorrow afternoon</i>	<i>next Monday</i>	<i>in the near future</i>
<i>tomorrow evening</i>	<i>next month</i>	<i>soon</i>
<i>tomorrow night</i>	<i>next May</i>	<i>before long</i>
<i>the day after tomorrow</i>	<i>next spring</i>	<i>in a few days</i>
<i>from now on</i>	<i>next year</i>	

İNGİLİZCE'DE GELECEK ZAMAN İFADE EDEN YAPILARA TOPLU BAKIŞ

1. <i>I will leave tomorrow.</i>	Yalın gelecek zaman.
2. <i>I am going to leave tomorrow.</i>	Kararlılık ifadesi.
3. <i>I leave tomorrow.</i>	Planlanmış iş.
4. <i>I am leaving tomorrow.</i>	Planlanmış iş.
5. <i>I am to leave tomorrow.</i>	Yapılması beklenilen iş.
6. <i>I am about to leave.</i>	Yakında yapılacak iş.
7. <i>I am on the point of leaving.</i>	Yakında yapılacak iş.

EXERCISE 173

Aşağıdaki alıntıda, ünlü Amerikalı bilim kurgu yazarı Isaac Asimov nüfus patlamasının sonuçlarının ne olabileceğini konusunda tahminlerini açıklıyor. Asimov'a göre, gelecekte neler olabileceğini açıklayan WILL tümcelerini bulunuz.

Is Anyone Listening?

Isaac Asimov

The soil in which rain forests grow is not very good and will be soon leached of nutrients by crops planted in them, while rain runoff will gully and destroy the soil altogether. Far from supplying us with agricultural land, the vanishing rain forests will yield to deserts.

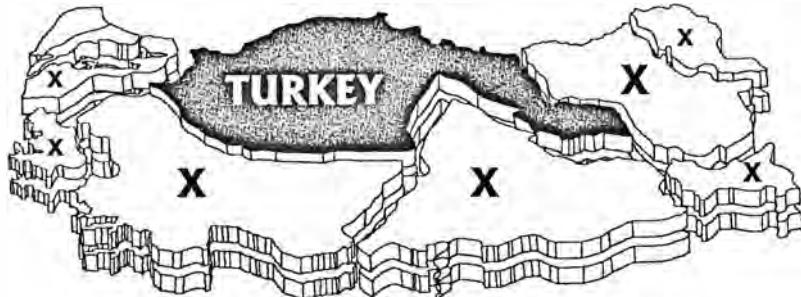
The deserts are indeed expanding as a result of forest destruction, over-farming, and general human mishandling, and, by the year 2000, the area of new desert will be perhaps 12 times the area of the United States. And the fact that there will be less and less good land to cultivate will send more and more people into the overcrowded, festering, fetid cities.

The forests, too, are the habitat of myriad species of plants and animals, a couple million of which (mostly insects, to be sure) have not yet even been classified. Destroying the forests destroys habitats, and about a fifth of the animal and plant species now living will be extinct by the year 2020.

This is not something to be dismissed lightly. Such extinctions will upset the ecological balance and wreak havoc far beyond the extinctions themselves. There is also the question of what compounds of important medicinal and industrial value might exist in the plants and animals we have not yet investigated, and which will vanish forever together with whatever good they might have done us.

Usable fresh water supplies will decrease, since larger and larger portions of them will be polluted to the point where they will be undrinkable without costly treatment that many regions will not be able to afford. Nor will life be able to thrive in polluted water. Acid rain will grow worse and kill more lakes and more fish.

Turkey as the European Union and the USA want to see



They had done it before the Turkish War Independence started.

They did it once. They have done it before. They want to do it again. They are trying to do it.

They are going to do it again if you let them do it.

Chapter 27

THE FUTURE CONTINUOUS TENSE

"Sürekli Gelecek Zaman""

OLUMLU TÜMCELER

I We	'll will shall	be	cleaning	the house all day tomorrow.
You They He She	'll will			

OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I We	'll not will not shall not won't shan't	be	cleaning	the house all day tomorrow...
You They He She	'll not will not won't			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Will Won't	I you he she we they	be	cleaning	the house all day tomorrow ?
---------------	-------------------------------------	----	----------	------------------------------

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

No,	I you he she we they	will not. won't.	No,	I you he she we they	'll	not.	Yes,	I you he she we the	will.
-----	-------------------------------------	---------------------	-----	-------------------------------------	-----	------	------	------------------------------------	-------

The Future Continuous Tense 'in Kullanımı



"I am going to be lying on the beach next month."



Bu tense'te de **will**, **shall** ve **be going to** kip belirteçlerinin kullanıldığına dikkat ediniz.

1. Gelecekte belli bir anda devam etmeyecek işleri anlatır.

He will be flying over the Alps at two o'clock tomorrow afternoon.

Our teacher will be correcting examination papers all next week.

The band will be performing live in İstanbul this summer.

This time next week, I shall be lying on a beach in the Bahamas.

We are going to be having fun in Acapulco next week.

They are going to be working very late tonight.

I feel sure that I will be hearing from her.

The sales representative will be calling on you from time to time.

2. Gelecekte belirsiz zamanlarda olacak işler anlatır.

Thank you for coming to pay our office a visit. You'll be hearing from us shortly.

She will be visiting you from time to time.

Exciting new products and effective marketing strategies will guarantee the company's success.

3. Gelecek zaman ile ilgili tahmin gösterebilir.

Don't worry! You'll soon be speaking Turkish as if it were your native language.

We're very short staffed at the moment, so I won't be going to the conference this year.

He's sure to be in when you call. I expect he'll be watching television, as usual.

4. Sonrası için yapılan tasarıları gösterebilir.

Don't come round tonight because I'll be studying.

After the meal we are having coffee, and then we'll be having liquors.

5. Kibarca soru sormakta kullanılabilir.

Will you be staying at the hotel?



Bu tense ile, 'the future tense 'te kullanılan zaman ifadelerinin *AT THIS TIME* eklenmesiyle yapılan şekilleri kullanılır: *at this time next week*, vb.

At this time next week we shall be sunbathing in Bodrum.

At this time next month the USA will be bombing another country.



EXERCISE 174

Aşağıdaki örneğe benzer soru tümceleri kurunuz.

Mr. White is working on the computer now. (*at this time tomorrow*)
Will he be working on the computer at this time tomorrow?

1. We are lying on a beach in Miami. (*at this time next week*)
2. Mr. Jones is interviewing the candidates now. (*at this time tomorrow*)
3. We are living in the country now. (*at this time next year*)
4. The developing countries are making the same mistakes made by the developed countries. (*in the next decade*)
5. More and more people are buying cars. (*in the next decade*)



*At the current rate of increase, all Americans
will be overweight in the year 2059.*

Chapter 28

THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE

Geçmiş Zaman

THE NEW U.S. FOREIGN POLICY / Andy Singer



Atatürk was a great leader. He won an independence war against the most powerful imperialistic countries. England, France, Italy and the USA were sure that the Turks would never be able to have a free state again.

Atatürk proved them all wrong.

The Simple Past Tense'in kullanıldığı tümcelerde iki öge belirtilmektedir.

1. Eylemin ne zaman gerçekleştiği
2. Eylemin geçmişte tamamlanıp bugünle bir ilişkisinin kalmadığı

Bu nedenle Simple Past'lı tümcelerde ya açıkça belirtilen ya da anlaşılan bir zaman ifadesi bulunmaktadır.

1. *I had my lunch at 2 o'clock.*
2. *I have had my lunch.*

Birinci tümceye göre öğle yemeği saat 2'de yemmiş ve içinde bulunulan anla bir ilişkisi kalmamıştır. İkinci tümce present perfect tense ile kurulmuştur; saat 2'de yemek yemekle içinde bulunduğuuz anla, örneğin, hâlen tok olunması gibi, bir ilişki göstermektedir.

Bu tense'te TO BE eyleminin **WAS** ve **WERE** olarak iki şekli vardır. Diğer eylemlerin past şekilleri genellikle {-ed} eki ile gösterilir. Past şekilleri bu kural dışında gerçekleştirilen eylemlere "irregular verbs-düzensiz eylemler" adı verilmektedir. Örneğin, **watch-watched** düzenli bir eylem, **win-won** ise düzensiz bir eylemdir.

**THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE:
TO BE EYLEMİ DIŞINDAKİ EYLEMLER**

OLUMLU TÜMCELER

I You He She We They	worked	on the computer.
-------------------------------------	--------	------------------

OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I You He She We They	did not didn't	work	on the computer.
-------------------------------------	-------------------	------	------------------

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

Did Didn't	I you he she we they	work	on the computer?
---------------	-------------------------------------	------	------------------

Yes,	I you he she we they	did.	KISA YANITLAR	No,	I you he she we they	did not. didn't.
------	-------------------------------------	------	------------------	-----	-------------------------------------	---------------------



THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE: TO BE EYLEMİ

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ DÜZ TÜMCELER

I He She	was	in Ankara.		I He She	was not wasn't	in Ankara.
We You They	were			We You They	were weren't	

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Was Wasn't	I he she	in Ankara ?
Were Werent	we you they	

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I he she	was.	No,	I he she	was not. wasn't.
	we you	were, .		we you they	were not. weren't.

THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE'İN KULLANIMI

1. Geçmişte, belli bir anda yapılmış/tamamlanmış işleri ifade eder.

The United States entered the arena of capitalism as a world power after the Spanish-American War in 1898.

Before the war, she worked for an insurance company.

Radio was still a new narrative medium in 1938.

I had a busy day yesterday; I entertained a great number of guests.

My aunt's garden contained many varieties of flowers.

She finished her university studies at the age of twenty.

I had a busy day yesterday; I wrote many letters.

We bought this house three years ago.

The very earliest form of writing consisted of pictures drawn by prehistoric men on the walls of the caves where they lived.

2. Geçmişte olan ama artık sürmeyen durumları anlatır.

This was a nice small town.

At one time many birds lived in this area.

She did not enjoy cooking when she was younger, but now she enjoys it very much.

Last year I studied anthropology, but now I am studying linguistics.

3. Geçmişte, aralıklarla yinelenmiş işleri anlatabilir.

She visited us every weekend last year.

Last month we worked eighteen hours every day.

4. Dolaylı anlatumda (Indirect Speech), simple present tense yerine kullanılır.

The Indian chef says, "I hate Christopher Columbus."

The Indian chef said that he hated Christopher Columbus.

5. Belirli yapılarda, gerçeğe aykırı geniş zaman ya da istek/varsayıml gösterebilir.

I wish I knew the answer to your question. (*Keşke sorunun yanıtını bilsen.*)

I'd sooner you didn't talk about our plans. (*Planlarımız hakkında konuşmamamı yeğlerdim.*)

I'd rather you didn't complain about everything. (*Keşke herşeyden şikayetçi olmasan.*)

The USA president threatens Iraq as if it were a child gone bad. (*ABD, Irak'ı sanksi yaramaz bir çocukmuş gibi tehdit ediyor.*)

It's high time you learned to look after yourself! (*Kendi başının çaresine bakmayı öğrenmenin zamanı geldi.*)

6. Kip belirteci USED TO, geçmişte olan ya da yapılan bir işin artık olmadığını ya da yapılmadığını gösterir.

He used to be a keen hunter, but he is too old now.

For many years in the deserts, camels used to be the only form of transportation.

Philosophy used to include almost every kind of knowledge of which human beings were capable.

Turkish cigarettes used to be very popular in the United States until after World War I.



7. Kip belirteci HAD TO geçmişte yapılmak zorunda kalınmış işleri ifade eder.

We had to work overtime last week because there were too many orders to meet.

In the War of Independence Turks were alone and had to face single-handed the full fury of the imperialists.

The Turkish War of Independence had to be fought against the cruellest blood-sucking states of the world.

**THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE İLE KULLANILAN
YAYGIN ZAMAN ZARFLARI
AGO, LAST**

last	night week month summer year Monday May
-------------	---

a day two days two months a year	ago
---	------------

yesterday the other day

EXERCISE 175

Aşağıdaki parçada tümcelerin eylemlerini bulunuz.

CHORES

(1) When I was a young girl, at the beginning of the 20th century, chores were very important in the life of families everywhere in the United States. (2) Chores were the miscellaneous bits of work which were necessary for family life in those days. (3) Each member of the family had his chores.

(4) Feeding the pig was one of my chores. (5) It was considered part of my contribution to our family life. (6) I also fed the horses, put the cow into the barn and swept the floor as soon as I was big enough to sweep it.

(7) Each of my brothers and sisters had chores, too. (8) They carried milk to a neighbour, or got wood for the fire from the pile of wood near the barn, or shoveled snow, or looked for strawberries in the distant places.

(9) Our assignments were sometimes changed as the months passed by. (10) Our mother sometimes wrote each chore on a slip of paper, and the slips were put into a hat. (11) From the hat each of us took his miscellaneous assignments for the following month. (12) Every child in all the families that we knew contributed to the family by doing chores.

(13) Our family was a large one, and we didn't have a servant. (14) Dishes had to be dried. (15) Lamps had to be filled and cleaned. (15) Babies had to be fed. (16) Their cradles had to be rocked so that they would sleep more and Mother could finish cooking in the kitchen. (17) Babies had to be put to bed after they were washed too.

(18) In our family, as in all others, each child felt necessary and important because of his chores.

EXERCISE 176

Aşağıdaki parçayı dikkatle okuyunuz ve parça hakkındaki soruları yanıtlayınız.

Radio was still a new narrative medium in 1938. Perhaps this explains why American radio listeners so easily believed "War of the Worlds," a radio drama about a spaceship landing in an eastern town. At the beginning of the program, the radio announcer revealed that the narrative to follow was a dramatization of an H. G. Wells literary classic. Yet listeners seemed to forget that announcement a few minutes later when live orchestra music was interrupted by a news report of a spaceship landing. The illusion of reality was maintained by returning to the music and interrupting it from time to time with a sequence of news reports that conveyed dramatic details of the attack by visitors from space. This narrative technique was so effective that it literally created panic near the town where the spaceship in the story had landed. Radio listeners had visions of being attacked by spacemen, and the situation seemed critical. Without thinking coherently, people left their homes to hide from the dangers they visualized. Hours later they returned home feeling a little foolish when they realized they had reacted to a radio version of a famous science fiction story.

1. When was radio a new narrative medium?
2. What was "War of the Worlds"?
3. Why did radio listeners easily believe there was a war of the worlds?
4. How was the illusion of reality created?
5. Who did people think attacked them?
6. Why did people leave their homes?
7. How did people feel when they learned the truth about the "war"?



"Yes, your friend was here ... very *tasty* too."

EXERCISE 177

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden hangilerinin "past tense"te kurulduğunu belirleyiniz.

1. Columbus was a cruel and greedy man and he victimized thousands of American Indians.

2. History is a tool used by politicians to justify their intentions. -T. Koppel
3. The USA's foreign policies have caused illimitable suffering throughout much of the world for decades.
4. Britain's colonial expansion established the pre-conditions for the global use of English.
5. It can be easily understood why America has often been accused of imperialism.
6. If you want to become a millionaire, found a religion. -- L. Ron Hubbard
7. President Bush's "facts" are either dead wrong or completely misconstrued.
8. One-third of the average American's diet is made up of "junk" foods.
9. The heat engine had a great role in the Industrial Revolution of the nineteenth century.
10. The new technology is expected to increase the amount of goods produced and decrease the amount of time and money consumed.

EXERCISE 178

Aşağıdaki örneğe bakarak yeni tümceler kurunuz.

It's 55 years since the USA used a nuclear weapon.

The last time the USA used a nuclear weapon was 55 years ago.

1. It's 12 years since he wrote a good book.
2. It is almost a year since he visited his family.
3. It's about three years since we were given a salary increase.
4. It's ten years since I had my eyes checked.
5. It's six months since he won anything.

EXERCISE 179

Aşağıdaki parçayı dikkatle okuyunuz ve parça hakkındaki soruları yanıtlayınız.

Among the nations that were interested in flying, Turks were second to none. As early as A.D. 1002, İsmail Cevheri, who lived in Horasan, claimed that man could fly like a bird. To prove his case, he made wings and jumped off a minaret of Nişabur Mosque. Unfortunately, due to some bad luck, the wings that he had made very carefully did not function properly, and Cevheri was killed in the experiment.

About 5 centuries later another Turkish scientist, Hezarfen Ahmet Çelebi of İstanbul proved Cevheri's case. Hezarfen Çelebi, who set out from the Galata Tower and flew over the Bosphorus safely landed at Üsküdar.

A contemporary of Hezarfen Çelebi, Lâgarî Hasan Çelebi, who built a vehicle called "seven- handed bullet", successfully flew it. He was the first man to fly with a rocket !

1. Where did İsmail Cevherî live ?
2. Which nation was more interested in flying than Turks were ?
3. Why did İsmail Cevherî jump off a minaret of Nişâbur Mosque ?
4. Why was İsmail Cevherî killed in the experiment ?
5. How did Hezarfen Ahmet Çelebi prove İsmail Cevherî's case?
6. When did Lâgarî Hasan Çelebi live?
7. Who flew with a rocket for the first time?

Geçmiş bilmeyenin geleceği olamaz özdeyişini anımsayarak aşağıdaki alıntılarda PAST TENSE yapılarını görmeye çalışınız.

Britain's Lord Avebury, the PKK's main strategist, held hearings in the House of Lords at which Deputy Speaker Baroness Caroline Cox and former Foreign Secretary Lord David Owen called for carving a "Kurdish protectorate" out of Iraq and Turkey.

When the PKK held its founding "parliament in exile" in Belgium in 1995, three members of the British House of Lords either attended or sent personal telegrams of endorsement. The three were Lord Hylton, Lord Avebury, and Baroness Gould.

Beginning on November 13, the government of British Prime Minister Tony Blair, with the support of elements in the Italian and German governments, took dramatic action to protect the London-headquartered Kurdish Workers Party (PKK), which has been waging a terrorist insurgency in Turkey since 1984.

The British government licensed MED-TV in London, through which the PKK broadcasts four hours a day into its enclaves inside Turkey, and all over Europe. I

BRITAIN MANIPULATES THE PKK

In the December issue of *Executive Intelligence Review (EIR)* magazine published in the US, an analysis stated that 'Britain used the Ocalan card against Turkey, scratched the Kurdish issue, did not regard Ocalan as a terrorist, and supported the convening of an 'International Kurdish Conference' within the framework of the EU. The analysis by John Brewda takes up the developments starting with Ocalan's arrival in Rome and the terrorist activities of the PKK. Brewda wrote that Britain took dramatic steps in protecting the terrorist PKK, far beyond supporting the efforts in convening a "Kurdish Conference". To prove his standpoint, Brewda stated that on November 26 Lord Rea, from the British Chamber of Lords, went to Rome and expressed that Britain was closely concerned with the matter and added that he did not act for himself but spoke for Secretary of Foreign Affairs Robin Cook. The *EIR* stated that this was not the first time Britain supported the establishment of a Kurdish state. In 1998 Foreign Minister Robin Cook had said that they were prepared to welcome the foundation of a Kurdish state which would be proclaimed after the collapse of Iraq in 1998. The *EIR* also noted this was an old story and Britain and France supported Kurdish insurgency and separatism even during the Ottoman Empire.

The British government played a direct role in supporting the 17-year war against the Turkish government by the Kurdish separatists.

Chapter 29

THE PAST CONTINUOUS TENSE

Sürekli Geçmiş Zaman

OLUMLU TÜMCELER

I She He	was	watching TV	when the fire broke out.
We You They	were		

OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I She He	was not wasn't	watching TV	when the fire broke out.
We You They	were not weren't		

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

Was Wasn't	I she he	sleeping working reading studying	when the fire broke out?
Were Weren't	we you they		

Yes,	I	was.
	he she	

we you they	were.
-------------------	-------

**SHORT
ANSWERS**

No,	I	was not. wasn't
	he she	

we you they	were not. weren't
-------------------	----------------------

THE PAST CONTINUOUS TENSE'İN KULLANIMI



"I use the internet to keep track of investments. I was losing money too fast, so I got a slower modem."

1. Geçmişte belli bir anda devam etmekte olan işleri anlatır.

Everybody was driving very carefully because the roads were slippery.
 What were you doing at 10:00 last night?
 They were working hard all last week.
 They were playing basketball all yesterday afternoon.

2. Geçmişte oluş zamanları kesişen 2 işten süreklilik özelliği olanı ifade eder.

When Mt. Vesuvius suddenly erupted, everybody in the town was sleeping.
 The sun was shining as we set out for our first winter camping trip.
 It was raining cats and dogs when we left the train station.

3. Oluş zamanları kesişen iki sürekli işi de anlatır.

While we were watching TV, the burglars stole all our jewellery.
 While the British were enjoying themselves, the Irish people were starving to death.
 Turkish people were fighting a war of independence while European peoples were enjoying wealth stolen from all over the world.

4. Geçmişte, iki zaman noktası arasında sürmekte olan işleri anlatır.

Between June of 1998 and December of 1999, he was writing a book on media abuses.

5. Geçmişte, sürekli yapılan işleri anlatır. Bir sıklık zarfı gereklidir.

When he was younger, he was always getting into trouble.
 The poor man was constantly trying to make ends meet.

5. Belli yapılarla gerçeğe aykırı geniş zaman ya da varsayılm /istek ifade eder.

I wish I were working now. (Keşke şimdji çalışıyorum olsam.)
 I'd rather you were staying with us. (Keşke bizimle kalsan.)
 If you were working with us, you would certainly earn more.

6. Planlanan bir işi gösterir.

- What are you doing tonight?
 - I was thinking of visiting the computer fair.
- İki anlama gelebilir:
1. Başka bir önerin varsa, fikrimi değiştirebilirim.
 2. Siz de benimle gelir misiniz?

7 Geçmişe ait yerine getirilmemiş ya da getirilmeyecek tasarımları anlatır.

- I was going to phone you, but I forgot.
 I was thinking of going to Norway this year, but now it seems I have to have an operation.
 I was going to buy a second hand car, but I have changed my mind.
 I am going to visit my family next week. I was going to visit them today, but my boss gave me some extra work.

8. WONDER eylemi ile rica ifadesinde kullanılır.

I was wondering if you could let me use your computer.

9. ALWAYS zarfıyla kullanıldığındaki yapılan işin onaylanmadığı ifade edilir.

She was always making a disturbance in the office.
 He was always making excuses.

10. Öykülemede kullanılabilir.

My car was getting worse all the time. One of the headlights was gradually falling off, and the engine was making more and more funny noises.
 There were a lot of people waiting in the station. Some **were sleeping** on the benches, and others **were walking** up and down. The detective **was looking** for the escaped lunatic, so he carefully moved among them.



Everybody was standing when the manager entered the office.

Müdüür, büroya girdiğinde herkes ayaktaydı.

Everybody stood when the manager entered the office.

Müdüür, büroya girince herkes ayaga kalktı.

EXERCISE 180

Verilen örneği inceleyerek aşağıdaki soruları yanıtlayınız.

What was Jack doing when the earthquake occurred? /sleep/
Jack was sleeping when the earthquake occurred.

1. What were you doing when your father came? /work in the garden/
2. What was Helen doing when she saw Bob? /chat with her friends/
3. Where were you going when your car ran out of gas? /go home

4. What was Bill doing when a bullet hit him? /*treat a patient*
5. What was Caliphate Osman doing when he was stabbed to death? /*pray to God*

EXERCISE 181

Verilen örneği inceleyerek benzer şekilde tümceler kurunuz.

he/watch TV = his wife /prepare the meal

He was watching TV while his wife was preparing the meal.

1. she/take a shower = the thief /try to open the front door
2. her father/talk to her = she/watch her favourite show
3. Mr. Taylor/work on a new book = he/stay in our village
4. he/take pictures of the scene = people /try to help the victims
5. they/drink and eating = the gladiators /kill one another

EXERCISE 182

Verilen örneği inceleyerek aşağıdaki soruları yanıtlayınız.

Why did he have health problems? (*he/drink too much*)

He had health problems because he was drinking too much.

1. Why didn't she go with you? (*she/help her father*)
2. Why did nobody believe him? (*he/lie*)
3. Why did she leave her home? (*her husband/gamble*)
4. Why did she quit her job? (*she/not make enough money*)
5. Why did they stop playing? (*rain cats and dogs*)

EXERCISE 183

Aşağıdaki soruları, örnekte gösterildiği gibi JUST AS kullanarak yanıtlayınız.

When did the teacher arrive? (*the students/leave the classroom*)

The teacher arrived just as the students were leaving the classroom

1. When did the shooting begin? (*the president/leave the house*)
2. When did the lights go out? (*we/turn on the television*)
3. When did she win the lottery? (*think about suicide*)
4. When did she see the burglar? (*he/enter the house*)
5. When did her husband arrive? (*she/be operated on*)

EXERCISE 184

Verilen örnekte gösterildiği gibi ALWAYS ile tümceler kurunuz.

The old man used to complain all the time.

The old man was always complaining.

1. She used to drink beer all the time.
 2. The housewife used to polish her silverware all the time.
 3. She used to brag about her family all the time.
 4. He used to sing all the time.
 5. He used to help his neighbours all the time.
-
-

EXERCISE 185

Aşağıdaki örneği inceleyerek, verilen öğelerle yeni tümceler kurunuz.

I intended to buy a house, but I couldn't afford it.

I was going to buy a house, but I couldn't afford it.

1. They intended to start a new business, but they couldn't raise enough money.
 2. She intended to be a singer, but she had no talent.
 3. I intended to save some money, but I had to have an operation.
 4. He intended to retire, but his wife didn't want him to.
 5. We intended to live here, but we couldn't find a job.
-
-

EXERCISE 186

Aşağıda ayraç içinde verilen eylemlerin simple past ya da past continuous biçimlerini kullanınız.

Columbus (set) set foot on America in 1492.

He (drive) was driving carelessly when the accident happened.

1. While we were (*watch*) our favourite television programme, there was a power-cut.
2. Who (*drive*) the car at the time of the accident?
3. Helen (*not wear*) her glasses, so she couldn't see the driver very well.
4. Sorry. I (*not listen*) to you. I (*think*) of something else. Could you repeat your question?
5. I (*phone*) you three times last night, but you (*not answer*).
6. We (*stay*) home last Sunday because it (*rain*) all day long.
7. Helen was taking a bath when she (*hear*) someone at the door.
8. In the Middle Ages people (*believe*) evil forces (*cause*) diseases.
9. While the old woman (*try*) to get onto the platform, a man (*grab*) her handbag.
10. They completed the task just as the sun (*rise*).
11. She (*shoot*) herself while she (*clean*) her husband's gun.
12. As soon as Columbus (*buy*) the ships, he (*begin*) his voyage.
13. At 9 o'clock yesterday we (*play*) volleyball at the beach. Now we are back to office.
14. After the show (*be*) over, we all (*go*) home.
15. The driver (*drive*) so fast that all the passengers (*be frightened*) to death.
16. Just as I (*finish*) the report, my boss (*bring*) me a letter to type.

17. I (*see*) your uncle at the party last night. He (*talk*) to my boss.
18. I (*pay*) for the teapot when I (*notice*) a leak in it.
19. She looked so white that I thought she (*pass out*).
20. The hunter (*catch*) the bird who (*try*) to escape.
21. He (*spend*) three years in jail when he (*be*) a young man.
22. She (*live*) with her parents when she (*publish*) her first book.
23. I (*be*) glad to travel with you as my car (*give*) trouble.
24. His great grandfather (*be born*) a hundred years ago.
25. My sister (*cook*) a meal for our ten guests all the afternoon.
26. All last week he (*paint*) his house.
27. In the Middle Ages many people (*die*) in famines.
28. While it still (*rain*), we (*leave*) the meeting and (*cycle*) home.
29. The family (*play*) cards in the living-room while thieves (*take*) their possessions from the bedroom.
30. That house (*be worth*) half its present value when I (*buy*) it.
31. She (*spend*) a lot of money on cosmetics yesterday afternoon.
32. The old man (*sit*) in the kitchen when he (*hear*) the explosion.
33. I (*cycle*) along the road when I suddenly (*see*) the strange object.
34. We (*be*) all afraid because it (*get*) dark.
35. Mother (*come*) into the room to see what we (*do*).
36. While I (*learn*) how to use the computer, I often (*ask*) my brother for help.
37. Papers and books (*be*) all scattered everywhere in his study. Obviously the scientist (*write*) a report.
38. The flight attendant (*do*) as he was told as soon as I (*remind*) him of the manager's threat.
39. While he (*dig*) in the garden, he (*find*) an antique pistol.
40. When he first (*meet*) his wife, she (*work*) as a free-lance journalist.



"They were going to build a highway across the desert, but they ran out of money."

Chapter 30

THE PRESENT PERFECT TENSE



Bu tense'in Türkçe'de bire bir bir karşılığı bulunmamaktadır.



OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I	've	gone there twice so far.
You We They	have	
He	's	
She	has	

I	have not	gone there twice so far.
You We They	haven't	
He	has not	
She	hasn't	
	's not	

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Have Haven't	I you we they	gone there twice so far?
Has Hasn't	he she	

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

	I you we they	have.			I you we they	have.
Yes,	he she	has.			he she	has not.
	it				it	



"I am sorry you have just missed him."

THE PRESENT PERFECT TENSE'İN KULLANIMI

The Present Perfect Tense, genel olarak, geçmişte başlamış ve sürmekte olan işlerle, geçmişte olup bitmiş ama etkisi devam etmekte olan işleri anlatır. Türkçe'de, bu tense'in doğrudan bir karşılığı yoktur. Türkçe, present perfect tense'in ifade ettiklerini birden çok tense kullanarak ifade eder.

She has found a good job. (İyi bir iş buldu.)

She has always been hardworking (Her zaman çalışkan olmuştur.)

She has been with us for ten years. (On yıldır bizimle.)

Ali was in Haiti for one year. (Artık orada değil.)

Ali has been in Haiti for one year. (Hâlâ orada)



Hagar ve arkadaşı neden masalarına baltalarıyla gitmek istiyorlar?



1. Geçmişte başlayan ve hâlâ devam etmekte olan işleri anlatır.

Bu kullanımında SINCE ve FOR bağlaçları çok yaygındır.

We met in school in 1990. It is now 2005. I have known him *for* fifteen years./ I have known him *since* 1990.

—How long have you had your present job? — For fifteen years.

The United States is an empire. It is not a recent occurrence, but it has always been an empire, from the days of empire-builders such as Washington and Jefferson.

The real truth of the matter is, as you and I know, that a financial element in the large centers has owned the government of the U.S. since the days of Andrew Jackson.

—President Franklin D. Roosevelt, in a letter written to Colonel House Nov. 21, 1933

The totally satanic military-government of the United States of America has committed massive acts of international terrorism and brutal genocide — from 1899 to the present day. <http://free.freespeech.org/americanstateterrorism/>

2. Geçmişte yapılmış olmakla birlikte etkisini hâlâ devam ettiren işleri anlatır.



She has had three operations. (So she is quite weak.)

She's twisted her ankle. (That's why she is limping)

She has lost all her wealth. (Bütün servetini kaybetti. = Hiç malî mül-kü yok.)

I have run the virus program. (Bilgisayarında virüs yok.)

I have played football for ten years. (On yıl futbol oynamış; futboldan anlarım.)



An old man : I was in Congo once. (Tekrar gitmeyi düşünmüyorum.)

A young man: I have been to Congo once. (Tekrar gidebilir.)

İşin geçmişte yapılması vurgulanıyor.

Last month I went to Istanbul. I visited Topkapı Museum. I saw the Blue Mosque and watched the international folk dance contests.

İşin yapılmış olduğu , kişinin bu işleri yapmış birisi olduğu vurgulanıyor.

Now I can tell my friends that I have been to İstanbul. I have seen the Blue Mosque, and I have watched the international folk dance contests.

3. Geçmişte belirsiz bir zamanda yapılan işleri anlatır.

I have read the book.

She has won the talent contest many times.

We have heard those lies before.

Aristotle has said that man is the thinking animal.

This is the third time I have lent you a huge sum of money.

4. Kısa bir zaman önce tamamlanmış işleri gösterir.

I have just finished typing the report.

We have just returned from a long journey.



"Uh-oh, I have found your missing lampshade."

5. Yukarıda verilen kullanımlarda kimi bağlaçlar bu "tense'i gerektirebilir.

She is penniless because she has had her purse stolen.

He can't go anywhere because he has broken his legs.

She can't find a job in the show business because she has put on too much weight.

I will travel abroad after I have paid all my debts.

6. Bir zaman zarfının süresi tamamlanmamışsa geçmişte yapılanı ifade etmeye kullanılır.

She has cut several classes this week. (= Henüz hafta tamamlanmadı.)

European countries have been the supporters of international terrorism in the information-age colonialism. (Bilgi çağında sömürgeciliği hâlâ devam ediyor.)



THE PRESENT PERFECT TENSE İLE KULLANILAN YAYGIN ZARFLAR ve BAĞLAÇLAR

<i>up to now, up till now, up to the present, so far</i>
<i>for the last two years</i>
<i>during the last few years, during the past few days/weeks/months</i>
<i>recently, lately, finally</i>
<i>often, many times</i>
<i>just, already, ever, yet, never</i>
<i>for, since, ever since</i>
<i>as soon as, now that</i>



"What do you mean, send him home? That's what I have been trying to do for the last hour, Phil."

FOR vs. SINCE

Bu iki sözcük Present Perfect Tense ile en çok kullanılan zaman ifadelerinde kullanılmaktadır. FOR'dan sonra bir zaman dilimi, SINCE'den sonra da bir zaman noktası kullanılır.

FOR + zaman dilimi (<i>six months</i>)
SINCE + zaman noktası (<i>last June</i>)

They've They have	worked lived	here	for	several weeks a few months a long time
			since	January last year. 1975 then they got married



Well done, Son. You have put on another inch since last week.

SINCE hem bir preposition (ilgeç) hem de bir subordinating conjunction (bağlaç) olarak kullanılmaktadır. **SINCE, EVER**'le birlikte anlamı vurgulamak üzere kullanılabilir.

Ever since the United States Army massacred 300 Lakotas in 1890, American forces have intervened elsewhere around the globe 100 times.

Helen has been crying ever since her husband left her.

EVER SINCE'ı izleyen öbek, tümceden anlaşılabiliyorsa atılabilir.

He bought a computer in 1987 and he has been using it ever since.

The 1970's were troublesome for the USA. It has been on a strategic economic decline ever since.

JUST

Kısa bir süre önce yapılmış işleri anlatır.



Mr. and Mrs. Taylor have just washed their car.

He	's (has)	just	taken a shower. eaten breakfast. called home.
I			
You	've (have)		
We			
They			

ALREADY

Bir işin halihazırda yapılmış olduğunu gösterir.

He	's (has)	already	met Peter. talked to him. seen his car.
I			
You	've (have)		
We			
They			

YET

Olumsuz tümcelerde ve sorularda kullanılır.

He She	hasn't (has not)	met Peter talked to him seen his car	yet.
I You We They	haven't (have not)		

Has	he she	met Peter talked to him seen his car	yet?
Have	I you we they		

EVER

Have you ever seen an American Indian tourist in Turkey?
And have you ever wondered why there are no American Indian tourists?



- A. Soru tümcelerinde kullanılarak "Have you ever met an honest politician? = Hiç dürüst bir politikacıya rastladınız mı?" şeklinde yapılar kurar. Böyle bir sorunun yanıtı olumsuz ise, çoğunlukla **NEVER** kullanılır.

Hasn't Has	he she	ever	met an honest politician ?
Have Haven't	I you we they		

- B. **EVER** olumsuz tümcelerde de "hiç; şimdiye kadar" anlamında kullanılabilir.

No statue has ever been put up to a critic. (Eleştirmenler adına hiç heykel dikilmemiştir.)

I haven't ever met an honest politician.

Nations have recently been led to borrow billions for war; no nation has ever borrowed largely for education.

- C. EVER, karşılaştırma yapılarında ve en üstünlük derecesini izleyen sıfat içtümceciklerinde "şu ana kadar, bugüne kadar" anlamıyla yer alır.

That is as lovely a picture as I have ever seen.

Speak when you are angry and you will make the best speech you will ever regret. –Ambrose BIERCE

The world supply of oil, coal, and natural gas is diminishing more rapidly than scientists have ever expected.

The worst-tempered people I've ever met were people who knew they were wrong.

- D. EVER koşul tümceciklerinde de "hiç; şimdiye kadar" anımlarıyla kullanılabilir.

If Europe should ever be ruined, it will be by its warriors. – Charles Louis Montesquieu

If I have ever made any valuable discoveries, it has been owing more to patient attention, than to any other talent. –Isaac Newton

NEVER

Never olumlu tümce biçiminde kullanılmakta ve tümceyi olumsuz yapmak-tadır. Present perfect tense'te "hiç" anlamıyla kullanılabilmektedir.

I have never seen such a thing before. (Daha önce hiç böyle birşey görmemiştim.)

He	has	never	met an American Indian tourist.
I			
You	have		
We			
They			

up to now, up till now, up to the present, so far

Bu zarflar, "şimdiye kadar, bugüne kadar, günümüze kadar, şu ana kadar" anımlarıyla, present perfect tense'in "geçmişte başlayan ve hâlâ devam eden işleri" anlatma işlevine uygundurlar.

So far we have had no problems.

We have heard nothing from him up to now.

Among the people there are killers who have not yet shed blood, and thieves who have stolen nothing, and liars who have so far told the truth. –Kahlil Gibra

The poor, so far, have always and everywhere been far more numerous than the rich.

The anatomy of the alligator has been studied from the middle of the last century up to the present.

EXERCISE 187

Aşağıdaki soruları aşağıdaki örneğe bakarak kendi durumunuza göre yanıtlayınız.

Have you ever played football?

No, I have never played football.

Yes, I have played football.

1. Have you ever travelled abroad?
2. Have you ever been to Nepal?
3. Have you ever won the lottery?
4. Have you ever told white lies?
5. Have you ever had a car accident?
6. Have you ever skin-dived?
7. Have you ever cooked Chinese food?
8. Have you ever used a gun?
9. Have you ever seen an honest politician?
10. Have you ever heard that IMF did something good?

EXERCISE 188

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda since ya da for kullanınız.

1. She has been a nurse ____ May.
2. We have had the same computer for the last three years.
3. She has studied Turkish ____ a few months.
4. My uncle has been living with us ____ last year.
5. He has had his new computer ____ a week.
6. I haven't watched a good film ____ ages.
7. She has not been given love ____ she was a little girl.
8. He hasn't had a happy day ____ his last birthday.
9. They have worked hard ____ the war.
10. Ever ____ the United States Army massacred 300 Lakotas in 1890, American forces have intervened elsewhere around the globe 100 times.
11. American Indians have been killed and tortured ____ 1492.
12. They have been discussing the matter ____ noon.
13. We have been waiting for the news ____ midnight.
14. We have not done anything worthwhile ____ more than a week.
15. He has been a professional boxer ____ almost ten years.
16. We have had to live very poorly ____ the last two years.
17. ____ 1945, when the United States dropped the first nuclear bomb, the threat of nuclear war has dominated world politics.
18. Man has not seen a day of peace ____ the invention of weapons.
19. The puma has been intensively hunted ____ the arrival of European colonists to the Americas.
20. ____ 1840, American presidents elected in years ending in zero have been destined to die in office.

21. Most of this growth has occurred ____ 1950 and is known as "population explosion".
22. Letter writing has gone into a decline ____ the appearance of the telephone.
23. Psychologist have been interested in fear ____ the turn of the century.
24. ____ life began eons ago, thousands of creatures have come and gone.
25. Pollution of all forms has increased substantially all over the world ____ the early twentieth century.

EXERCISE 189

Aşağıdaki tümceleri JUST kullanarak Present Perfect Tense'te yazınız.

The detective talked to the witness a couple of minutes ago.

The detective has just talked to the witness.

1. She visited us a short time ago.
2. She had an operation a few seconds ago.
3. The pop singer was shot to death this morning.
4. She finished her last book a week ago.
5. She received a huge inheritance a little while ago.

EXERCISE 190

Aşağıdaki bıyük tümcelerine, örnekte gösterildiği gibi karşılık veriniz.

Submit your proposal!

I have already submitted my proposal.

1. Type the report!
2. Reformat the disk!
3. Buy an anti-glare screen!
4. Have your eyes checked!
5. Follow the instructions!
6. Revise you composition!

EXERCISE 191

Aşağıdaki soruları YET kullanarak yanıtlayınız.

Why don't you watch TV? (*finish the report*)

Because I haven't finished the report yet.

1. Why do you think she is a poor writer? (*publish a book*)
2. Why are they so ignorant? (*go to school*)
3. Why are you so pessimistic? (*see a good thing*)
4. Why isn't she on vacation? (*choose a place to go*)
5. Why do they stay at a hotel? (*find a good house*)

EXERCISE 192

Aşağıdaki soruları örnekteki gibi BECAUSE kullanarak yanıtlayınız.

Why can't she work? (break her wrist)

She can't work because she has broken her wrist.

1. Why can't she speak properly? (lose all her teeth)
2. Why are you going to the police station? (someone/steal all my money)
3. Why is she in hospital? (eat poisonous mushrooms)
4. Why is Jack sick? (eat too many green apples)
5. Why is the garden in such a bad shape? (be neglected)

EXERCISE 193

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi SINCE ile tamamlayınız.

She wrote a book ten years ago, but she hasn't written another since then.

1. I had my eyes checked two years ago, _____
2. My father gave me some money last moth, _____
3. Our house was painted three years ago, _____
4. She attended our meeting once last month, _____
5. They visited the village last year, _____

EXERCISE 194

Verilen tümceleri örnekte görüldüğü gibi tamamlayınız.

I have apologized to her many times. (she/not forgive me)

I have apologized to her many times, but she still hasn't forgiven me.

1. She has written for many years. (*she/not publish a book*)
2. She has lived in England for many years. (*she/ not learn English*)
3. We have asked them to clean the place many times. (*they/not do it*)
4. I have done all I could to help him. (*he/not finish the work*)
5. We have given him all the tools he wanted. (*he/not repair my car*)

QUOTATIONS

The Americans will always do the right thing—after they have exhausted all the alternatives. —Winston Churchill

Decades of military and covert action around the globe have turned many against the USA, who see them as a violent imperialist power. America is now reaping what it has sown.

The Simple Past Tense ile The Present Perfect Tense'in Kullanım Açılarından Karşılaştırılması

Present Perfect	Simple Past Tense
I have seen that movie. (Zaman belirsiz; yakın geçmiş)	I saw that movie last night. (Zaman belirli; yakın geçmiş)
He has read that book. (Olay geçmişte; zaman belirsiz)	He read that book two years ago. (Zaman belirli)
Have you ever studied Turkish? (Zaman belirsiz -doğumundan konuşma anına kadar) No, I have never studied Turkish. (Hiç çalışmadım)	Yes, I studied Turkish when I was in college. (Zaman belirli)
We have studied English for three years. (Üç yıl önce başladık ve hâlâ çalışıyoruz.)	We studied English for three years. (Artık çalışmıyoruz.)
We have studied English for three years. (Üç yıl İngilizce çalıştık, artık çalışmıyoruz ama İngilizce'yi öğrenmiş olduk)	We studied English for three years. (Artık çalışmıyoruz; bize de şu anda bir faydası yok.)
I have known Lucy since 1980. (Lucy'i 1980'den beri tanıyorum.)	
I have not seen the circus. (Sırkı henüz görmedim ama sirk hâlâ burada, görme şansım var.)	I did not see the circus. (Sırkı görmedim; sirk kenti terketti; artık görme şansım yok.)

I. The simple past tense'in ifade ettiği işler geçmiş zamanda yapılmış ve tamamlanmıştır. İçinde bulunduğuuz anla hiç bir ilişkisi kalmamıştır. The present perfect tense de geçmişte tamamlanmış işler anlatabilir, ama o işlerin mutlaka şimdiki zamanla bir ilişkisi olmalıdır.

1. *He studied Turkish for two years.* (İki yıl Türkçe çalıştı./ Anlaşılıyor ki öğrendiklerini unuttu.)
2. *He has studied Turkish for two years.* (İki yıl Türkçe çalıştı./ Türkçe bilir.)

Kuşkusuz 2. tümce ayrıca, öğrenme işinin hâlâ devam etmekte olduğu anlamına da gelebilir.

II. The simple past tense mutlaka belli bir geçmiş zaman zarfı taşımalıdır. Zarflın varlığı bağlamdan anlaşılıyorsa kendisi tümcede yer almayabilir. Last week, two days ago, yesterday bu tür zarflardandır. Bu zarflar hiçbir zaman the present perfect tense ile kullanılmazlar.

1. *He went to Izmir last year.*
2. *He has gone to Izmir.*

İkinci tümce iki anlam taşımaktadır: (1) İzmir'e gitmişliği var (1. tümcenin aksine belli olmayan bir zamanda); (2) İzmir'e gitti = hâlâ orada.

III. Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyelim:**1. She has worked hard this week.**

(İş tamamlanmış, ama şimdiki zamanla ilgisi var; tümcenin söylenişi sırasında hafta henüz bitmemiş:)

She worked hard this week.

(İş tamamlanmış; şimdiki zamanla bir ilişkisi yok. Hafta geçmiş.)

How many glasses of tea have you drunk today?

(Günün henüz bitmediğini anlatıyor.)

2. I lived in Bursa for many years.

(İş geçmişte tamamlanmış; şimdiki zamanla bir ilişkisi yok.)

I have lived in Bursa for many years.

(İki anlamı var: (1) Bursa'da uzun süredir oturuyorum; (2) Bursa'da uzun süre oturdum, (şu anda orada oturmasamda) Bursa'yı tanırırm.)

3. Did you see the film at the Star?

(İş bütünüyle geçmişle ilgili. Artık film Star sinemasında oynamıyor)

Have you seen the film at the Metropol?

(Soru şimdiki zamanla ilişkili. Film hâlâ Metropol sinemasında oynamakta.)

He worked hard all his life. (Ölmüş olduğu anlaşılıyor.)

He has worked hard all his life. (Yaşamakta olduğu anlaşılıyor.)

IV. The present perfect tense, içinde bulunduğuımız ana kadar yapılmış/yapılan işleri ifade eder.

Have you ever gone to the mountains?

She has never had a peaceful day.

Pollution has always been a serious threat to natural life.

He has seldom worked for us.

(Bütün bu tümcelerde **until now = Şimdiye kadar** anlamı geçerlidir.)

Have you been to a foreign country?

(Bu soruda **ever** anlamı açıklar; tümce şöyle çevrilebilir: Hiç yabancı bir ülkede bulundunuz mu?)

Ever since the United States Army massacred 300 Lakotas in 1890,
American forces have intervened elsewhere around the globe 100 times.

Since 1945, the United States has intervened in more than 20 countries throughout the world.

The largest, most complicated musical instrument is the organ. It has been the primary instrument used in the church since the 4th century.

V. The simple past tense, bir işi göstermek üzere kısa süreli (anlık) eylemleri taşıyan tümceler kurabilir. The present perfect tense ise bir işi göstermek üzere anlık eylemlerle tümceler kuramaz. Anlık eylemlerle

kurulmuş *simple past* tümceler, TO BE eyleminin değişik şekilleriyle *present perfect tense* ile de ifade edilebilirler.

KISA SÜRELİ EYLEMLER	SÜRELİ EYLEMLER
I bought this car in ten years ago.	I have had this car for ten years.
He spent all his money last week.	He has been penniless since last week.
My computer stopped working last week.	I have had problems with my computer lately.
They were put into jail two years ago.	They have been in jail for two years.
India won her independence in 1947.	India has been independent since 1947.



EXERCISE 195

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda uygun 'tense'leri kullanınız.

- In the last five decades, the USA ____ (*attack*) no less than two dozen countries.
- One thing is now abundantly clear: the USA ____ (*have*) some extremely dedicated enemies. Decades of military and covert action around the globe ____ (*turn*) many people against the USA, who see the USA as a violent imperialist power. America is now reaping what it ____ (*sow*).
- Since the war ended over a million Iraqis ____ (*die*) as a result of the cruel sanctions.
- In the last decade, there ____ (*be*) much research into the assassination of John F. Kennedy. According to new information gathered and assessed by Matthew Smith, John F. Kennedy ____ (*be murdered*) on orders emanating from the "alternative" government, big businesses.
- I ____ (*spend*) 33 years in active service as a member of the Marine Corps. And during that period, I ____ (*help*) in the raping of half-a-dozen Central American republics for the benefit of Wall Street. —General Edward Butler
- The French army ____ (*commit*) many acts of rape, torture, and murder in Algeria, during the liberation movement of that country.
- On 7 August, the US embassies in Kenya and Tanzania ____ (*be*) the targets of simultaneous bomb attacks.
- Since 1990 the people of Iraq ____ (*live and die*) under economic sanctions.

SIMPLE PAST TENSE İLE PRESENT PERFECT TENSE'YE KULLANILAN ZAMAN ZARFLARINA ÖRNEKLER

SIMPLE PAST	PRESENT PERFECT
I went there twice yesterday last week in 1969 on Tuesday in August in summer then at that time last year a year ago an hour ago	I have gone there twice since yesterday since last week since 1969 since Tuesday since August since summer since then since that time since last year so far this week up to now



☞ **ç**inde bulundu umuz zaman dilinde yapılan i lerin anlatımında da Present Perfect Tense kullanılır. *I have gone there twice TODAY* tümcesi, konu ma anında hâlâ günün devam etti ini gösterir.

I have done it twice today. this week. this month. this year.
--

The USA has already attacked two countries *in the present decade*.

EXERCISE 196

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin simple past ya da present perfect şekillerini kullanınız.

James Watt (**invent**) **invented** the steam engine in the 1700s.

She (**not graduate**) **has not graduated** from college yet.

1. The town (**be**) _____ unusually crowded for the last two days.
2. I (**buy**) _____ his last book last week, but I (**not read**) it _____ yet.
3. They (**repair**) _____ the machine only twice so far.
4. I (**work**) _____ as a waitress last summer.
5. In the past, fewer people (**have**) _____ the chance to go to school.
6. She (**eat**) _____ all the food. There is nothing left to eat.
7. She (**have**) _____ a strange feeling in her stomach since last week.
8. There (**be**) _____ too many power-cuts recently.
9. They (**cancel**) _____ all the flights last night due to bad weather.

10. Two months ago she (*pay*) ____ us a small amount. We (*not see*) ____ her since then.
11. Up to now, we (*not have*) ____ any trouble with our computers.
12. We (*go*) ____ fishing every week last year.
13. We (*spend*) ____ all our money. We can't buy anything else today.
14. Christopher Columbus (*kill*) ____ thousands of American Indians.
15. I (*never smoke*) since I (*have*) ____ a heart attack last year.
16. Since 1901 many famous scientists (*win*) ____ Nobel Prizes for physics, chemistry, and medicine.
17. Since Alcock and Brown's flight in 1919, millions of people (*cross*) ____ the Atlantic by plane.
18. Doctors (*discover*) ____ how to cure many diseases during the last hundred years.
19. Medical associations (*spend*) ____ millions of dollars on research into cancer, but it is still a major cause of death.
20. In the 20th century, scientists (*Invent*) ____ many new electronic devices such as radio, television and computers.

EXERCISE 197

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin simple past ya da present perfect şekillerini kullanınız.

1. We (*know*) ____ each other for a long time.
2. I (*not buy*) ____ anything since last month.
3. It (*be*) ____ two months since she had an operation.
4. American Indians (*be*) ____ victims since Columbus set foot on their land.
5. Nobody (*attend*) ____ the meeting last week.
6. She (*work*) ____ as a war correspondent since 1998.
7. During the present decade, we (*see*) ____ many advances in computer technology
8. They (*discover*) ____ new cure for AIDS last year.
9. The USA (*be*) ____ an imperialistic country since the Spanish-American War.
10. They (*close*) ____ down the factory many years ago.
11. Since 1969 astronauts (*travel*) ____ to the moon several times.
12. Mary and I had an argument on Monday and she (*not speak*) ____ to me since then.

EXERCISE 198

Verilen örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The war began two months ago.

It has been two months since the war began.

1. They marketed a new product last year.
2. She has not had a contract for three years.
3. She left her husband three years ago.

-
-
4. They sold their castle a year ago.
 5. They launched their last project only a month ago.
-
-

EXERCISE 199

Verilen örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

I wrote something ten hours ago.

I haven't written anything for ten hours.

It has been ten hours since I wrote something.

1. I met my old boss last week.
 2. She received a message from her ex-husband yesterday.
 3. They were on a scientific expedition two years ago.
 4. I went to a health club two years ago.
 5. Toxic particles filled our river last year.
-
-

EXERCISE 200

Verilen örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The last time we had a decent meal was a week ago.

We haven't had a decent meal for a week.

1. The last time she won a contest was ten years ago.
 2. The last time we had a game of chess was last Monday.
 3. The last time she cooked for her family was two months ago.
 4. The last time she went to the hairdresser was in October.
 5. The last time I backed up my data was on Monday.
-
-

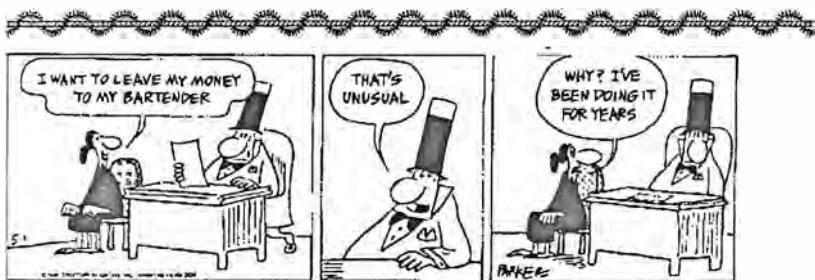
EXERCISE 201

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde eylemin doğru şeklini seçiniz.

1. She (*studied/has studied*) Turkish for six years, and she can speak it quite fluently.
2. I (*worked/have worked*) at the library every night this week, but I have not yet completed the paper. It will take at least another week to get it done.
3. My uncle is very well informed on the media. He (*did/ has done*) a good deal of reading about it.
4. I would be happy to help you paint the house, but I (*have already promised/already promised*) to go shopping with Jack.
5. Last week I (*went/have gone*) to the dentist only once. This week I (*went/have gone*) three times.
6. I (*decided/have decided*) to go abroad this summer. I decided to go after I found that I could have three months' vacation.

Chapter 31

THE PRESENT PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE



OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I	've have	been	working here	for a year.
You We They				
He	's has			

I	have	been	working here	for a year.
You We They	not haven't			
He She	has not hasn't			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Have Haven't	I you we they	been	watching	TV for an hour?
Has Hasn't	he she			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I you we they	have.
	he she it	has.

No,	I you we they	have. haven't
	he she it	has not. hasn't

THE PRESENT PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE ' in Kullanımı



"You have been working awfully hard lately. If you need a little fresh air and sunshine you can go to www.fresh-air-and-sunshine.com."

I. Geçmişte başlamış ve hâlâ devam etmekte olan işleri anlatır.

I have been taking medicine for my cold since Thursday.

He has been drinking all afternoon; he shouldn't drive.

I have been working in the garden all morning.

Ever since I read the book, I have been wanting to meet the author.

We've been walking for hours! Let's have a rest.

I've been digging the garden. That's why I'm so dirty!

The workmen have been digging up the road, and now the traffic cannot pass.

We have been driving along muddy roads, and now the car is dirty.

He has been training for several weeks and should do very well in the cross-country race.

He has been drinking and can't walk straight.

I have been working in the garden and need a bath.

The United States has been dominating the neocolonial war against the world's poor since World War II.

Ever since the United States Army massacred 300 Lakotas in 1890, American forces have been attacking defenseless nations all over the world.

She has been living in the same house since she was born.

The speaker has been talking for over two hours, making little sense, if any at all.

He can't be clever; he has been watching TV far too long.

2. İşin süreklilik gösterdiğini vurgulamak için kullanılır. İş kısa bir süre önce bitmiş olabilir.

I am exhausted because I have been walking too fast.

My eyes are aching because I have been working on the computer for ten hours.

3. Kimi eylemlerle yarılmış işleri anlatır.

She has been working on this book for years. (= Ama hâlâ bitiremedi.)



*"There! My mother has been wanting
a colored telephone! Now she has got one!"*



WANT, gerçekte continuous tense'lerle kullanılmayan bir eylemdir. Yukarıdaki karikatürde WANTING bir şeyin uzun süredir istenilenini vurgulamak üzere kullanılmıştır.

EXERCISE 202

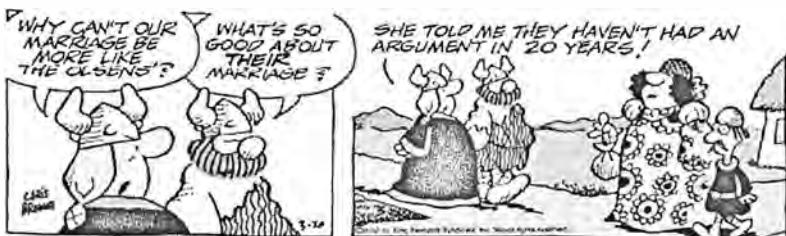
Verilen örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

She feels happy. (get good grades)

She feels happy because she has been getting good grades.

1. She is getting poorer and poorer. (*spend money carelessly*)
2. I have got a headache. (*work on the computer for a long time*)
3. She has got square eyes. (*watch television too much*)
4. She is impatient. (*wait for hours*)
5. She is bored. (*work alone*)
6. They are ambitious. (*make a lot of money*)
7. He can't walk straight. (*drink heavily*)
8. She is really in need of rest. (*work hard*)

9. They can't finish the work by noon. (work too slowly)
10. European countries will regret it. (support terrorism in more than one way)



THE PRESENT PERFECT TENSE İle THE PRESENT PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE ' in Kullanım Açılarından Karşılaştırılması

I. *The present perfect continuous tense, present perfect tense' e göre daha da bir kullanıma sahiptir. Bu tense sadece geçmişte başlayıp devam etmekte olan işleri anlatır.*

1. *He has lived in London for ten years.*
2. *He has been living in London for ten years.*

Birinci tümce iki şekilde yorumlanabilir: (1) Özne, şu anda Londra 'da oturmuyor olabilir; geçmişte 10 yıl Londra'da yaşamış olabilir; (2) Özne hâlâ Londra 'da oturuyor olabilir. İkinci tümcenin ise sadece bir yorumu vardır: özne hâlâ Londra 'da oturmaktadır.

II. *The present continuous tense ile kullanılmayan eylemler çoğunlukla the present perfect continuous tense ile de kullanılmaz. Bu eylemlerle the present perfect tense kullanılır.*

- We have known them for a long time.
They have understood our points.*

III. *The present perfect continuous tense kimi eylemlerle yarılmış işleri anlatır. The present perfect tense 'in bu kullanımını yoktur.*

- We have been repairing the computers. (= Tamir bitmedi.)
We have repaired the computers. (= Tamir bitti.)*

IV. *The present perfect continuous tense çoğunlukla geçmişte başlayıp devam etmekte olan TEK bir işi ifade eder. Aralıklarla yapılan işleri anlatmaz. Bu nedenle de just, already, ever, never, finally vb. zarflarla kullanılmaz.*

V. *Kimi durumlarda bu iki tense birbirleri yerine kullanılabilirler.*

- I have attended all sorts of social activities all my life.
I have been attending all sorts of social activities all my life.*

EXERCISE 203

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin ya present perfect ya da present perfect continuous şekillerini kullanınız.

1. We agree with everything you (*say*) for the last half hour.
2. I (*smoke*) cigarettes for twenty years, and my doctor (*advise*) me to quit.
3. He (not see) a doctor since 1999.
4. We (*wait*) for him since half past eight and we shall wait only another five minutes.
5. He (*revise*) for the history examination for several weeks and I believe he will do well.
6. The Prime Minister just (*announce*) that the treaty has been signed.
7. A strong wind (*blow*) all the afternoon.
8. The truck driver (*try*) to start his truck for the last twenty minutes and is beginning to despair.
9. He already (*write*) his will.
10. They (*save up*) to buy a house since last year, but they don't expect to have enough money for another two years.
11. The politician (*talk*) about trivial matters for over an hour, and we wish he would stop.
12. It (*rain*) all day. I wish it would stop.
13. My brother recently (*find*) a good job.
14. The lady (*bargain*) with the trader for fifteen minutes and they (not agree) yet on a price.
15. I (*clean*) my room for two hours and (*not finish*) yet.

**THE PRESENT CONTINUOUS TENSE İle THE
PRESENT PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE'İN
Kullanım Açılarından Karşılaştırılması**

Türkçe'de present perfect tense yapısının bir benzeri bulunmamaktadır. Present Perfect Tense karşılığı olarak Türkçe'de farklı tense'ler kullanılmaktadır.

1. Ali and Tom are playing chess.
2. Ali and Tom have been playing chess.

Birinci tümce, Ali ile Tom'un konuşma arasında satranç oynadığını belirtiyor. İkinci tümce de aynı yargıyı taşımakla birlikte, satranç oynama işinin geçmişte başladığını gösteriyor. Zaten çoğu zaman the present perfect continuous tense tümceler, işin, geçmişte ne zaman başladığını belirtmek üzere *for two hours, since 9 o'clock* gibi zaman zarfları taşırlar.

3. Ali and Tom are playing chess for an hour. (Oynayacaklar.)
4. Ali and Tom have been playing chess for an hour. (Oynamaktalar.)

Üçüncü tümcedeki zaman ifadesi (*for an hour*) tümcenin gelecek zaman ifade ettiğini göstermektedir, yani satranç oynama işi gelecekte yapılacaktır. Dördüncü

tümcede ise, satranç oynama işinin bir saat önce başladığı ve hâlâ sürdüğü ifade edilmektedir.

EXERCISE 204

Verilen örneklerle bakarak yeni tümceler kurunuz.



She is waiting for the bus.

How long has she been waiting for the bus?

She is watching TV.

How long has she been watching TV?

1. He is painting his studio.
2. The children are playing basketball.
3. Helen is playing the piano.
4. She is playing chess with her husband.
5. They live in a small cottage.
6. She is swimming.

EXERCISE 205

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin present continuous ya da present perfect continuous şekillerini kullanınız.

1. I (*not work*) ____ with you tomorrow.
2. She (*repair*) ____ her son's computer for the last two hours.
3. What ____ mechanic (*do*) at the moment?
4. She (*write*) ____ new year cards for hours.
5. Developed countries (*pollute*) ____ the world since the Industrial Revolution began.
6. I see that you (*wear*) ____ a strange hat.
7. She (*take*) ____ music lessons for two months.
8. It (*rain*) ____ like this for two days.
9. They (*have*) ____ lunch in the cafeteria now.
10. He (*work*) ____ for the same company for about 30 years.
11. She (*take*) ____ a nap now; don't bother her.
12. The cost of living (*rise*) ____ steadily since 1988.

EXERCISE 206

Aşağıdaki parçası okuyunuz ve soruları yanıtlayınız.

APARTMENT PROBLEMS

Mr. and Mrs. Willis have been having a lot of problems in their apartment recently.

For several weeks the bedroom ceiling has been leaking, the refrigerator hasn't been working, and the paint in the hallway has been peeling.

In addition, they have been taking cold showers since last week because the hot water heater hasn't been working, and they haven't been sleeping at night because the radiators have been making strange noises.

The Willises are furious. They have been calling their landlord every day and complaining about their problems. The landlord has been promising to help them, but they have been waiting for more than a week, and he still hasn't fixed anything at all.

1. What have Mr. and Mrs. Willis been having recently?
2. How long has the bedroom ceiling been leaking?
3. When did the paint in the hallway begin to peel?
4. How long have they been taking cold showers?
5. Why have they been unable to sleep at night?
6. Has the landlord fixed anything yet?



"If he has nothing to hide, that means he has already hidden it."

A Fact to Surprise You

More than 50% of the people in the world have never made or received a telephone call.

Chapter 32

THE PAST PERFECT TENSE



Bu tense'in doğrudan bir karşılığı Türkçe'de bulunmamaktadır. Past Perfect Tense, geçmişte yapılan iki işten önce yapılanı anlatmakta kullanılır.

Bürodan **ayrılmadan** önce bütün gizli belgeleri kasaya **koydu/koymuştu**.

Before he **left** the office, he **had put** all the secret documents in the safe.

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I				
You				
He	'd			
She	had			
We				
They				

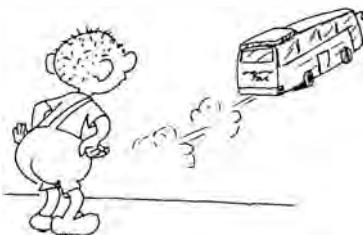
I				
You				
He	had not			
She	hadn't			
We				
They				

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Had	I			
Hadn't	you			
	he			
	she			
	we			
	they			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

	I you he she we they	had.		I you he she we they	had not. hadn't.
Yes,			No,		



The bus had already left when Avni arrived at the bus stop.

THE PAST PERFECT TENSE'in Kullanımı

**By the time the law arrived, the citizens
had already found and dealt with Public
Enemy No 1.**

(What is Public Enemy No 1?)

1. Geçmişte yapılmış iki işten daha önce yapılanı gösterir.

Stephen Wozniak and Stephen Jobs introduced the personal computer Macintosh.

Stephen Wozniak and Stephen Jobs demonstrated their technological potential.

Stephen Wozniak and Stephen Jobs built and sold a blue box.

Wozniak ve Jobs'un yukarıdaki işleri yapış sıraları aşağıdaki metinde past perfect tense ile gösteriliyor.

Before Stephen Wozniak and Steven Jobs introduced the personal computer Macintosh, they had already demonstrated their technological potential. They had built and sold a blue box, which

was a pocket-sized device that allowed telephone users to make long-distance calls for free. Although Wozniak insists that he never used the illegally devised blue box to defraud the telephone company, he boasted about using the invention to call the Vatican and get through to Pope Paul VI. Soon after the blue box was devised, it was discovered and banned.

He was very tired. He walked for ten miles.

He was very tired *because* he had walked for ten miles.

She gave her husband the present which she *had bought* the week before.

David *had eaten* Japanese food before, so he knew what to order in the Japanese restaurant.

Tom sat down exhausted. He *had painted* the whole house with no break.

When he entered the supermarket to do the shopping, he remembered that he *had left* his wallet home.

The lecture did not begin until everyone *had arrived*.

When she finally stopped talking, we all realized that more than an hour *had passed*.

After the meeting, we decided that he *had not really said* anything important.

By two o'clock he *had finished* most of the work.

In 1995, he *had been* out of work for ten years.

I wish I *had never met* her. (Keşke ona hiç rastlamasaydım.)

The fat man ate as though he *had not eaten* for days. (Şişman adam günlerdir yemek yememiş gibi yiyyordu.)

2. Geçmişte belli bir ana kadar sürmüş işleri anlatır.

By the time he retired, he *had amassed* a fortune.

When he quit working, he *had built* a number of hotels.

3. Dolaylı anlatımda (indirect speech), the simple past ve present perfect tense yerine geçer.

All said, "I made a mistake."	All said that he <i>had made</i> a mistake..
All said, "I've made a mistake."	All said that he <i>had made</i> a mistake.

4. Koşul tümceciklerinde gerçeğe aykırı geçmiş zaman ifade eder.

If Tom had been walking carefully, he wouldn't have fallen.

(Tom dikkatli yürüseydi düşmezdi.=Dikkatli yürümedi ve düştü.)

If the European governments *had not supported* terrorism, the Twin Towers would not have been attacked on September 11.

If the Turks in Cyprus *had not been massacred* in 1974, the Turkish Army would not have gone to Cyprus.

5. **The past perfect tense, geçmişte yapılmış iki işten daha önce yapılmış olanı ifade ettiği için, hemen her zaman the simple past tense'te bir tümcecik eşliğinde kurulur. Çoğu zaman bu tümcecikler BEFORE ve AFTER ile bağlanırlar. Genellikle BEFORE "simple past"lı, AFTER ise "past perfect"lı tümceğin başında yer alır.**

The miser counted the money. Then he locked it in a safe.

Before the miser locked the money in a safe, he *had counted* it.

The miser *had counted* the money before he locked it in a safe.

After the miser *had counted* the money, he locked it in a safe.

The miser locked the money in a safe after he *had counted* it.



Eğer bir iş daha önce başlamasına rağmen, bitirilemeden kesilmiş ise, BEFORE "past perfect" li tümceğin başında yer alabilir. Bu kullanım kuşkusuz daha çok yaygın değildir.

The teacher took our papers away before we *had finished* answering the questions.

The inspector came round to our workshop before we *had completed* the project.

6. **After ve Before'un yanısıra Past Perfect Tense ile sıkılıkla kullanılan bağlaçlar bulunmaktadır.**

<i>by the time</i>	By the time the police arrived the scene, the burglars had disappeared.
<i>when</i>	When the police arrived, the burglars had disappeared.
<i>once</i>	Once the guests had left, we cleaned the house.
<i>as soon as</i>	As soon as our guests had left, we cleaned the house.
<i>until</i>	He didn't sign the paper until he had read it carefully.
<i>no sooner ... than</i>	No sooner had our guests left than we cleaned the house. Our guests had no sooner left than we cleaned the house.

7. **Geçmiş zamanla ilişkili tümcelerde, iki iş ya da olgu söz konusu olduğunda, önceki için past perfect tense yeğlenir.**

He stole the necklace. He admitted it.

He admitted that he *had stolen* the necklace.

Mr. Taylor angrily stamped out the fire that the local hooligans *had started* on his verandah.

It was difficult to believe that they *had been married* for fifty years.

Her death did not come as a great shock as she *had been ill* for a long time.

THE PAST PERFECT TENSE ile THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE 'in Kullanım Açılarından Karşılaştırılması

- I. **The simple past tense** geçmişte belli bir zamanda bitirilmiş işleri anlatmaktadır. **The past perfect tense** ise geçmişte yapılan bir işten ya da geçmişte belli bir andañan daha önce yapılan işleri anlatır.
World War broke out in Europe. (in 1938).
The children had gone to sleep (before their father came home).
 Çoğu zaman bu iki "tense" aynı tümce içinde BEFORE ve AFTER bağlaçları ile kullanılır.
The burglars had left BEFORE the police arrived.
AFTER the burglars had left, the police arrived.
- II. Sıfat ve ad tümceciklerinde geçmişte yapılan işlerin hangisinin daha önce yapıldığı "simple past-past perfect" zıtlığı ile ifade edilir.
The terrorist who had murdered three Turks went to Belgium.
I noticed that the safe had been opened.
He claimed that he had repaired the car.

EXERCISE 207

Verilen örneğe bakarak tümceler kurunuz.

She poisoned her husband. Afterwards she admitted it.
She admitted that she had poisoned her husband.

1. The Italian politicians helped the terrorists. Afterwards they admitted it.
2. The children ate all the cake. Afterwards she realized it.
3. The waitress was too slow. Afterwards we complained.
4. He lost all his money on the stock market. Afterwards he told his wife about that.
5. He stole all the money. Afterwards he told me about that.

EXERCISE 208

Verilen örneğe bakarak tümceler kurunuz.

The two friends completed the project. Then they went to a night club.
The two friends who had completed the project went to a night club.

1. The woman taught for ten years. Then she decided to take up writing.
2. The Italian politicians lied many times. They were finally caught red-handed.
3. The politician accepted bribes many times. Then he had to resign.
4. Some American slave owners killed many slaves. Afterwards they felt no guilt over their disgusting crimes.
5. The candidate answered the first two questions. Then he kept silent.
6. The committee had considered the measure several times. Then it took action.

EXERCISE 209

Aşağıdaki örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The teacher left the room. Then the students began to shout.

After the teacher had left the room, the students began to shout.

Before the students began to shout, the teacher had left the room.

1. He had a traffic accident. Then he drove more carefully.
2. He sold all he had. Then he went to a small town.
3. Pollution killed all the fish in the lake. Then people grew poorer.
4. He bought a computer. Then he became a good accountant.
5. She sat for the exam five times. Then she decided to quit school.

EXERCISE 210

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ayrıc içinde verilen eylemlerin ya simple past ya da past perfect şekillerini kullanınız.

The police paid no attention to the old woman's complaint because she had phoned them so many times before.

1. Kate (*feel*) a lot better after she (*take*) two aspirins.
2. Tom (*admit*) that he (*hit*) my car, but said that he (*not damage*) it.
3. The police (*get*) to the house as fast as they could, but the burglars (*disappear*).
4. By the time the train arrived, Susan (*manage*) to push her way to the front of the crowd.
5. The politician (*sink*) down exhausted. He (*shake*) hands with at least a thousand people during the political rally.
6. The bus finally started. The luggage (*delay*) the departure.
7. He (*never eat*) Chinese food before he came to USA.
8. We (*realize*) that he had lied to us.
9. We found all the shelves empty. The thieves (*take*) everything.
10. To our surprise, we saw that nothing (*be stolen*).
11. Our business was not what it used be. We (*lose*) our best customers.
12. My uncle (*die*) last week. He (*had*) cancer treatment for a year.
13. I couldn't find my files on the computer. Someone (*erase*) them all.
14. I (*feel*) a little better after we (*rest*) by the lake.
15. The town square was packed with demonstrators, but by the time we finished our meeting, they (*left*).

EXERCISE 211

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde simple past ya da past perfect tense kullanınız.

1. All the children (*die*) of cold by the time the tribe (*reach*) a warm region.
2. Before the teacher (*say*) anything, the students (*begin*) to complain about the difficult questions.

3. He (*never be*) happy in his life until he (*marry*) his second wife.
4. The company never (*send*) us the software that we (*pay for*).
5. They (*not hire*) him because he (*lie*) about his qualifications.
6. The lawyer (*ask*) his client why she (*lie*) to him about her family.

EXERCISE 212

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi birleştiriniz.

*She (just marry) /her father (die)
We had just married when her father died.*

1. Hemingway (*scarcely begin*) to work on his new book/he (*commit suicide*).
2. He (*just buy*) a new computer /he (*win*) the lottery.
3. The old man (*already die*)/ they (*take*) him to the hospital.
4. I (*already erase*) the files on the computer /I (*realize*) that I had no other copies.
5. She (*already marry*)/he (*decide*) to propose to her.
6. The children (*already eat*) candies /their mother (*lock*) refrigerator.

EXERCISE 213

Aşağıdaki soruları örnekte gösterdiği gibi **because** kullanarak yanıtnez.

Why were Turks angry with the Italian politicians? (they/help the PKK terrorists)

Turks were angry with the Italian politicians because they had helped the PKK terrorists.

1. Why did he have indigestion? (*he/eat his meal too fast*)
2. Why did he give the wrong answer? (*he/not understand the question*)
3. Why was he disappointed? (*the girl he loved/marry someone else*)
4. Why did the boys become frightened? (*they/hear the forest fire*)
5. Why did the woman call the police? (*she/see a traffic accident*)

EXERCISE 214

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma (reported speech) çeviriniz.

John said, "I took the examination yesterday."

John said that he had taken the examination the previous day.

Mary said, "I did not break anything."

Mary said that she hadn't broken anything.

1. The professor said, "I have not found any solution yet."
2. The detective said, "The lost child has been found."
3. The politician said, "The money for the new hospital has been raised."
4. Helen exclaimed, "I have never seen such a pretty child!"
5. The manager said, "Nobody deserved promotion."

Chapter 33

THE PAST PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I				
You				
He	had	been	cleaning the garden	when it started to rain.
She				
We				
They				

I				
You				
He	had not	been	washing the car	when it started to rain.
She	hadn't			
We				
They				

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Had	I	been	washing the car	when it started to rain?
Hadn't	you			
	he			
	she			
	we			
	they			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I you he she we they	had.	No,	I you he she we they	had not. hadn't
------	-------------------------------------	------	-----	-------------------------------------	--------------------

THE PAST PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE 'in Kullanımı



"I had been working late with the computer. It kept calling me stupid, stupid, stupid. I couldn't stand it. I picked up a blunt instrument ..."

1. Önceden yapılmakta olan işin sürekliliğini vurgular.

In 1990 he had been working in Silicon Valley for three years.

He had been teaching for ten years when we met him.

He had been working for that company for ten years when he was promoted.

At five o'clock we had been working for ten hours.

Bill had been taking violin lessons for ten years before he gave his first concert.

The delegates had been discussing the matter when the prime minister arrived.

2. Dolaylı anlatımda (indirect speech), "past continuous" ve "present perfect continuous" yerine geçer.

The scientist said, <i>"I was writing my report."</i>	The scientist said <i>that he had been writing his report.</i>
The scientist said, <i>"I have been studying the problem for years."</i>	The scientist said <i>that he had been studying the problem for years.</i>

3. The past perfect continuous tense, the present perfect continuous tense gibi, tek bir işin sürekliliğini vurgular.

The Italian politicians who had been supporting PKK terrorists spoke very rudely about Turkey.

We had been working on the computer for hours when they finally came back.

The natives had been living peacefully for centuries when Columbus set foot on the continent to bring terror and slavery.

EXERCISE 215

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

He ate half of the sandwich. Then he realized that the meat in it had gone bad.

He had eaten half of the sandwich before he realized that the meat in it had gone bad.

1. He bought and sold stolen jewelry for years. Then the police caught him.
2. He had a love affair with an actress. Then his wife found out.
3. We waited under a tree for an hour. Then a strange-looking animal came our way.
4. I waited for answer for six months. Then it arrived.
5. I spent all my money. Then I realized that I hadn't bought a return ticket.

EXERCISE 216

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde verilen eylemlerle past perfect ya da past perfect continuous kullanınız.

1. Marco Polo was amazed by the wonders and riches he saw in the Orient. While the weavers of Venice were just learning to work with silk, Oriental weavers _____ exquisite patterns for centuries. (*produce*)
2. In all, Marco Polo _____ twenty-four years exploring the Eastern world before he returned to Venice. (*spend*)
3. The old politician came home exhausted. He _____ more than ten villages. (*visit*)
4. By the end of America's genocidal assault in Korea, nearly 3 million civilian people in North Korea _____. (*die*)
5. American and European slave owners felt no guilt over what they _____ and were doing. (*do*)
6. Until recently, scientists _____ unable to substantiate connection between cigarette smoking and cancer of the lung. (*be*)
7. We _____ all day and were utterly exhausted when we finally reached our destination. (*walk*)
8. The Turkish public was highly suspicious of the American oil company whose profits _____ in spite of the energy crisis. (*increase*)

Past Perfect ile Past Perfect Continuous Tense'in Karşılaştırılması

Past perfect continuous işin sürekliliğini vurgulamaktadır.

<p><i>Jack had lived in a small apartment in the city when he decided to move to his father's village.</i></p> <p>(Jack, babasının köyüne taşınmaya karar verdiğiinde, küçük bir dairede oturmakta olabilir, ama daha önce de etmemiş olabilir.)</p>	<p><i>Jack had been living in a small apartment in the city when he decided to move to his father's village.</i></p> <p>(Jack, babasının köyüne taşınmaya karar verdiğiinde, küçük bir dairede oturmaktadır.)</p>
<p><i>The delegates had discussed the matter when the prime minister arrived.</i></p> <p>(Başbakan geldiğinde, delegeler sorunu tartışmış durumdalardır.)</p>	<p><i>The delegates had been discussing the matter when the prime minister arrived.</i></p> <p>(Başbakan geldiğinde, delegeler sorunu tartışmaktadır.)</p>

Chapter 34

THE FUTURE PERFECT TENSE

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I We	'll will shall	have	finished	the work by then.
You They He She	'll will			

I We	'll will not won't shall not shan't	have	cleaned the garden	by the time Father gets home.
You They He She	'll will			

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Will Won't	I you he she we they	have	cleaned the garden	by the time Father gets home?
---------------	-------------------------------------	------	--------------------	-------------------------------

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

No,	I you he she we they	will not won't.	Yes,	I you he she we they	will.
-----	-------------------------------------	--------------------	------	-------------------------------------	-------

THE FUTURE PERFECT TENSE'in Kullanımı

1. Bir işin, gelecekte belli bir andan önce yapılacağını gösterir.

By morning we will have been working ten hours without a rest.
 She will have written three short stories this year when she finishes the one she is writing now.
 We shall have heard from the publishers again by next month.
 By the time we get back from holiday, we will have done two thousand miles.
 I'd better cook a meal for them. They won't have eaten on the way, will they?
 Will you have finished those letters in time for the boss to sign them before he leaves?

2. Nadiren olasılık ya da varsayılmı ifade edebilir.

It is midnight. They will have arrived there by now.
 (Geceyarısı oldu. Şimdiye kadar oraya varmışlardır.)

THE FUTURE PERFECT TENSE İLE KULLANILAN YAYGIN ZAMAN ZARFLARI

BY	tomorrow next week next month
----	-------------------------------------

BY	THIS TIME	tomorrow next week next month
----	-----------	-------------------------------------

EXERCISE 217

Orneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

He is going to make a speech. (By noon)
By noon, he will have made a speech.

1. She is going to make all the telephone calls. (*By 10*)
2. They will arrest the escaped prisoner. (*by midnight*)
3. We are going to interview all the applicants. (*by Wednesday*)
4. We are going to do what we have promised. (*By March*)
5. She is going to buy herself a boat. (*by next summer*)

EXERCISE 218

Aşağıdaki tümceleri *future perfect tense* ile yazınız.

1. By Monday next week we (*interview*) more than a hundred people.
2. The dinner (*be ready*) by the time we reach home.
3. My brother (*publish*) his first book before he leaves school.
4. It is expected that scientists (*find*) a cure for most forms of cancer by the end of next decade.
5. When my uncle, who is a pilot, flies to England next Thursday, he (*fly*) over 500,000 kilometers since he qualified.

Chapter 35

THE FUTURE PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ TÜMCELER

I We	will shall		been	working here	
You They He She	will	have			for ten years by next May..

I We	will not won't shall not shan't		been	working here	for ten years
You They He She	will not won't	have			by next May.

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ SORULAR

Will Won't	I we you they he she	have	been	working here	for ten years by next May?
---------------	-------------------------------------	------	------	--------------	-------------------------------

OLUMLU VE OLUMSUZ KISA YANITLAR

Yes,	I you he she we they	will.	No,	I you he she we they	will not. won't.
------	-------------------------------------	-------	-----	-------------------------------------	---------------------

THE FUTURE PERFECT CONTINUOUS TENSE 'in Kullanımı

Bu "tense", gelecekte belli bir andan önce tamamlanacak işin sürekliliğini vurgular. Future perfect tense ile bunun dışında anlam farklılığını göstermez.

We shall have been living in this town five months by next June.

He will have been studying French six years by next summer.

He is going to retire next month. By then he will have been working with us for exactly thirty years.

By the end of the month, we will have been working on the project for two years.

EXERCISE 219

Aşağıdaki soruları örnekteki gibi future perfect tense kullanarak yanıtlayınız.

Has Jack graduated from college yet? (By next spring)

No, not yet. But he will have graduated from college by next spring.

1. Have you paid all your debts yet? (*By next year*)
2. Has he resigned from his post yet? (*By next week*)
3. Has she married yet? (*By September*)
4. Have they held the ceremony yet? (*By Monday*)
5. Have you had your eyes checked yet? (*By this afternoon*)

EXERCISE 220

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde future perfect continuous tense kullanınız.

In 2005, they *will have been running* their business for 20 years. (*run*)

1. By next year, he _____ alone for 10 years. (*live*)
2. In June, we _____ educational software for five years. (*develop*)
3. At six o'clock, the patient _____ for three hours. (*sleep*)
4. In August, she _____ cancer for ten years. (*fight*)
5. On Monday, she _____ in the cell for three weeks. (*stay*)

EXERCISE 221

Aşağıdaki soruları örnekteki gibi yanıtlayınız.

How long have you been working as a software developer? (*In June /for three years*)

In May I will have been working as a software developer for three years.

1. How long have you been writing detective novels? (*next year/for ten years*)
2. How long has he been a CIA agent? (*In 1996/for ten years*)
3. How long has the Western World been exploiting Africa? (*In 2002/for three centuries*)
4. How long have you been a secret agent? (*In February /for a year*)

EXERCISE 222

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde *future*, *future continuous*, *future perfect* ya da *future perfect continuous tense* kullanınız.

1. On the 30th of next month, she (be) *will have been* a pilot for four years.
2. We (*watch*) *will be watching* TV tomorrow night.
3. In another month's time, she (will) *will have been living* on this island for three years.
4. When he quits writing, he (*write*) about ten books.
5. I (never forget) the day when the earthquake hit.
6. By next month, we (*pay*) all our debts.
7. With all this noise, I (*need*) no more distraction.
8. We (*work*) in the office all day tomorrow.
9. I (*clean*) the attic if I find any time.
10. By the time the meeting is over, we (*listen*) to ten hours of foolish talk.

SEQUENCE IN TENSES **TENSE'LERİN DİZİLİSİ**

Bir tümcede birden çok "tense" kullanılabilir. İngilizce'de hangi tense'lerin birlikte kullanılabileceğine ilişkin temel ilkeler bulunmaktadır. Temel olarak bir tümcede kullanılan tense'lerin ya PRESENT ya da PAST olması gerektiğini söyleyebiliriz.



Yukarıdaki karikatürdeki büyüğünün zarf içtümceği içeren sorusuna bakalım:

Present	Present
After you have killed all yours,	what will you do?

Bu tümce söyle de olabilir:

Past	Past
After you had killed all yours,	what would you do? what did you do?

Dolaylı anlatımda giriş eylemi (*says*) present ise ad içtümceciğinde herhangi bir tense kullanılabilir.

He	says	that he	his room.
----	-------------	---------	-----------

Dolaylı anlatımda giriş eylemi (*said*) past ise ad içtümceciği özel durumlar dışında past olmak zorundadır.

He	said	that he	cleaned was cleaning might clean had cleaned would clean would have cleaned	his room.
----	-------------	---------	--	-----------

It is hard to pay for bread that has been eaten. – Danish proverb
The lawn looks nice because I have cut the grass.

Aşağıdaki tabloda hangi 'tense'lerin *present*, hangilerinin *past* olduğunu gösteriyoruz.

PRESENT TENSE'ler	PAST TENSE'ler
<i>Simple Present</i>	<i>Simple Past</i>
<i>Present Continuous</i>	<i>Past Continuous</i>
<i>Present Perfect</i>	<i>Past Perfect</i>
<i>Present perfect Continuous</i>	<i>Past Perfect Continuous</i>
<i>Future Tense</i>	
<i>Future Continuous Tense</i>	
<i>Future Perfect Tense</i>	
<i>Future Perfect Continuous Tense</i>	



Sıfat içtümcezikleri işlevleri nedeniyle "tense" dizinine uymak durumunda olmayabilirler.

Ted Taylor, who used to be a business tycoon, is now a homeless person.

Bununla birlikte genel olarak sıfat içtümcezikleri taşıyan tümcelerde de "tense" dizini gözetilmelidir.

Ted Taylor, who had lost all his money gambling, was penniless.

Ted Taylor, who has lost all his money gambling, is penniless.

EXERCISE 223

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin doğru şekillerini kullanınız.

1. While Barbara (*puts*) in her contact lenses, the telephone (*ring*).
2. The thief *has been caught*, so we (*be*) safe now.

3. Before negotiations (*begin*) yesterday, many pessimists (*have expressed*) doubt about them.
4. Early travelers to Alaska (*find*) a territory that (*be*) rich in minerals.
5. I was terribly disappointed in my poor grade because I (*studied*) very hard.
6. The manager is in jail now because he (*be convicted*) of receiving bribes.
7. By 2020, scientists surely (*find*) a cure for most of the childhood diseases.
8. The doctor has suggested bed rest for the patient who (*suffer*) from a bad cold.

A TEST BATTERY ON THE ENGLISH TENSES

EXERCISE 224

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin doğru şekillerini kullanınız.

1. Everybody wondered what (*cause*) the explosion.
2. Before she started exercising, she (*be*) overweight.
3. Alcohol (*evaporate*) rapidly at room temperature.
4. These days rising oil prices (*affect*) the entire world
5. Writing (*require*) dedication and hard work.
6. On March 21, the night (*last*) 12 hours all over the world.
7. The moon (*circle*) the earth in 27.3 days.
8. Dogs (*be*) very popular pets all over the world.
9. Today the name of Atatürk (*mean*) a lot to any conscientious Turk.
10. Knowledge of the Turkish Independence War (*seem*) even more invaluable today.
11. The pouring rain (*halt*) all traffic yesterday.
12. A bad workman always (*blame*) his tools.
13. We (*watch*) the news when the telephone rang.
14. The accident (*happen*) while they (*come*) down the mountain yesterday.
15. By next year, we (*earn*) enough money to pay for a nice house.
16. The lawn looks nice because I (*cut*) the grass.
17. We (*own*) this house since I was fifteen.
18. The State of Hawaii (*consist*) of seven principal islands.
19. Everybody (*know*) that a rolling stone (*gather*) no moss.
20. I (*sit*) at the dentist's at this time tomorrow.
21. The tiger (*die*) when the bullet struck its heart.
22. The committee (*make*) its decision before all the facts were in.
23. Helen (*study*) the piano ever since she was a little girl.
24. If the police officer (*wait*) two seconds longer before firing his gun, the hoodlum might have killed him.
25. If you (*sell*) the stock at that price, you have made a mistake.
26. The lone bank robber (*make*) his escape long before the police arrived.

27. The politician (*speak*) for two hours when he suffered the heart attack.
28. We arrived at the airport only to learn that our plane (*already, leave*).
29. He (*drink*) heavily ever since his last book turned out to be a failure.
30. After careful discussion, last week the Senate (*pass*) the education bill by an overwhelming majority.
31. He (*do*) his assignment, so don't disturb him.
32. You brought me bad luck. I wish I (*never meet*) you.
33. We (*discover*) to our horror that he (*erase*) all the files on the computer.
34. Don't waste your breath. He cannot hear you. He (*fall*) asleep.
35. I have made up my mind. I (*resign*) next week.
36. It is late now. It is high time children (*go*) to bed.
37. She (*die*) if she thought she was ugly.
38. This monument (*stand*) here for centuries.
39. She (*get*) promoted only a day ago.
40. As the old man (*walk*) down the stairs, he (*slip*) and (*break*) his leg.
41. At this time tomorrow afternoon, I (*make*) my farewell speech to my company.
42. She realized that she (*hurt*) her husband's feelings.
43. She (*win*) the big prize in the National Lottery last year.
44. He (*never pay*) his bills promptly.
45. The taxi (*arrive*) by the time we get downstairs.
46. By the time a gambler leaves Las Vegas, he (*lose*) all his money at the gambling tables.
47. My computer (*freeze*) every fifteen minutes. I think it is out of order.
48. Believe it or not, we (*not see*) anything better than this.
49. Right now the patient (*take*) a nap. He (*fall*) asleep ten minutes ago.
50. They (*close*) the shop by the time I found a parking space.

EXERCISE 225

Verilen zaman zarflarına göre tümcelerde gerekli değişiklikleri yapınız. Zarfların tümcelerde doğru yerde bulunmalarına özen gösteriniz. Örneği inceleyiniz.

He writes two short stories every month.

yesterday	<i>He performed three operations yesterday.</i>
by this time next week	<i>He will have performed three operations by this time next month.</i>
already	<i>He has already performed three operations.</i>

L He writes two short stories every month.

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| 1. <i>last week</i> | 4. <i>next week</i> |
| 2. <i>before he went on a holiday</i> | 5. <i>by the time his son comes to visit him</i> |
| 3. <i>upto now</i> | 6. <i>yet</i> (TÜMCE soru ya da olumsuz olmalı.) |

II. She often plays the piano.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. <i>when I saw her</i> | 4. <i>next week</i> |
| 2. <i>while we were studying</i> | 5. <i>on Thursday nights</i> |
| 3. <i>right now</i> | 6. <i>since 9 o'clock</i> |

III. She is writing to her family.

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. <i>when the guests arrived</i> | 4. <i>next week</i> |
| 2. <i>last week</i> | 5. <i>every two weeks</i> |
| 3. <i>right now</i> | 6. <i>already</i> |

IV. We seldom play cards.

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. <i>when the guests arrived</i> | 4. <i>for three hours</i> |
| 2. <i>at 9 o'clock tomorrow</i> | 5. <i>almost every night</i> |
| 3. <i>right now</i> | 6. <i>since I came home</i> |
-

EXERCISE 226

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin doğru şekillerini kullanınız.

1. Bertrand Russell (*be born*) in 1872.
2. During the present decade, we (*see*) many advances in computer technology.
3. Şeker Bayramı (*not come*) on the same date every year.
4. Get some iodine quickly. A bee just (*sting*) me.
5. He (*find*) the lecture easy to follow because he (*read*) about the subject.
6. He (*go*) to the party if he had been invited.
7. He (*not hear*) of Mark Twain before I gave him the book *Adventures of Tom Sawyer*.
8. He (*run*) away to sea when he was a boy, and he is still a sailor.
9. He (*study*) in England for several years when he had to return home.
10. He just (*buy*) a summer cottage in the country.
11. His sister (*start*) writing in 1990 and (*publish*) three books so far.
12. I (*spend*) the money on clothes unless you tell me not to.
13. I (*swim*) for over half an hour when the sea suddenly (*become*) rough.
14. I often (*work*) until midnight when I (*be*) a student.
15. I used to think he was a nice man, but now I (*think*) he is a nasty man.
16. Iron (*expand*) when it is heated.
17. It (*be rumoured*) that President Kennedy (*be shot*) by a secret agent.
18. People (*become*) tired more quickly at high altitudes.
19. She (*learn*) to use the computer when she (*be*) five years old.
20. She used to be poor, but now she (*own*) a large estate.
21. Since 1900 science (*progress*) rapidly.
22. The children (*shout*) in the garden. I can hear them.
23. The clouds (*gather*) since this morning. It will rain soon.
24. The fire already (*destroy*) much of the building when the firemen (*arrive*).
25. The little boy was crying because somebody (*take*) his chocolate.

26. The prime minister (*be ill*) last month but he (*recover*) now.
27. The Second World War (*last*) for six years.
28. Tobacco (*be brought*) from America to Europe in the sixteenth century and (*be smoked*) all over the world in the last four hundred years.
29. Up to now his manuscript (*be rejected*) by more than five publishers.
30. We (*be*) married ten years next August.

EXERCISE 227

Doğru seçenek bulunuz.

1. Look! The sun ____ through the clouds.
A. shone B. shines C. is shining D. shining E. are shining
2. She ____ as a waitress when she was a student, but now she owns two restaurants.
A. had worked B. has worked C. used to work
D. would work E. had been working.
3. The fishermen ____ nothing when they returned home.
A. were catching B. caught C. had caught
D. would catch E. have caught
4. The murderer has been caught, so everybody ____ safe now.
A. have been B. is C. will be D. are E. can
5. It's high time we ____ paying more attention to noise pollution.
A. to start B. started C. are starting
D. will start E. will be starting
6. She ____ hard ever since her husband was fired.
A. had been working B. was working C. worked
D. is working E. has been working
7. When he was a young man, he ____ to be a writer.
A. wants B. would want C. wanted
D. has wanted E. would have wanted
8. She ____ her dog for a walk every morning before it died.
A. takes B. took C. has taken
D. is taking E. has been taking
9. At the end of the day we ____ ten hours' work.
A. shall be doing B. shall have done C. shall do
D. are doing E. shall have been doing
10. Before I woke up, the burglars ____ most of my possessions.
A. have taken B. were taking C. had taken
D. will take E. are taking
11. He ____ on his computer when I entered the room.
A. is working B. has worked C. was working
D. has been working E. will work

12. We _____ five kilometers, so we are exhausted.
A. had run B. have run C. will run D. was running E. run
13. What countries _____ before she went to Canada?
A. will she visit B. does she visit C. can she visit
D. has she been visiting E. had he visited
14. As soon as they _____ the first installment, the television set will be delivered.
A. pay B. paid C. had paid D. will pay E. were paying
15. The water in the pond _____ last night.
A. would freeze B. froze C. has frozen
D. had frozen E. freezing
16. The burglars ran away when they _____ the policeman.
A. have seen B. sees C. saw D. had seen E. would see
17. We were driving around the lake when the car _____ out of petrol.
A. runs B. ran C. run D. has run E. had run
18. What _____ to Helen after her husband had died?
A. did happen B. happened C. has happened
D. will happen E. could happen
19. Until her husband bought her a fur coat, she _____ miserable.
A. has been B. has been C. had been D. would be E. is
20. He _____ the car coming before he heard its tires screech.
A. can't see B. had seen C. has seen D. sees E. would see
21. Jack _____ for the tennis tournament diligently, but he couldn't beat his opponent.
A. can practise B. has practised C. had practised
D. practises E. would practise
22. By 2005, we _____ all our objectives.
A. have achieved B. are achieving C. must achieve
D. will have achieved E. will be achieving
23. They _____ the offices by the time I found a parking space.
A. had closed B. closed C. have closed
D. were closing E. will close
24. By the time a child is 7, he _____ thousands of murders on TV.
A. watches B. would watch C. will watch
D. watched E. will have watched
25. I promised my wife that I _____ smoking.
A. will quit B. quits C. shall quit
D. would quit E. can quit
26. Thousands of people _____ the art exhibit by the time it closes.
A. will see B. will have seen C. saw
D. have seen E. had seen
27. To the American aristocracy, the true enemy _____, and still is, the American common people. —*Sherman H. Skolnick*
A. is always B. was always C. had always been
D. would always be E. has always been

28. Helen was terribly disappointed with her grade because she ____ very hard.
A. had studied B. studied C. has studied
D. would study E. studies
29. Scientists ____ that the sun may die in the distant future.
A. predict B. predicted C. had predicted
D. predicting E. were predicting
30. The shoplifter insisted that he ____ for the candy bars.
A. has paid B. will pay C. had paid D. pays E. will pay
31. Yesterday I met Margaret, an old friend from school, at the post office. I ____ her for ages —at least eight years.
A. hadn't seen B. haven't seen C. didn't see
D. would not see E. will not see
32. Our town ____ its appearance completely in the last four years.
A. is changing B. was changing C. has changed
D. had changed E. would change
33. Last night Tom was walking through the park with his girlfriend when suddenly a man ____ her bag and ____ away.
A. grabbed/ran B. had grabbed/had run C. has grabbed/ran
D. grabs/runs E. was grabbing/was running
34. By the time the manager finally arrived, we ____ for more than an hour.
A. waited B. have been waiting C. were waiting
D. had been waiting E. are waiting
35. The surgeon ____ on three patients before he attends a staff meeting.
A. will have operated B. has operated C. had operated
D. operated E. would have operated
36. The first English coffeehouse ____ in 1650.
A. opened B. has opened C. had opened
D. was opening E. would have opened
37. For the past three years, the United States ____ more aggressive than ever before.
A. was B. is C. will be D. has been E. is being
38. He ____ better as soon as he had been given the injection.
A. has felt B. had felt C. felt D. feels E. would feel
39. Our air is no longer clean because we ____ the environment.
A. have polluted B. polluted C. polluting
D. had polluted E. would pollute
40. He ____ short of money ever since he bought a second-hand car.
A. is B. was C. had been D. has been E. would be

"How can I ever thank you?" gushed a woman to Clarence Darrow, after he had solved her legal troubles.

"My dear woman," Darrow replied, "ever since the Phoenicians invented money there has been only one answer to that question."

CHART OF VERB FORMS IN THE ENGLISH TENSES

Simple Present Tense		
1st Person	I speak	We speak
2nd Person	You speak	You speak
3rd Person	She speaks	They speak
Present Continuous Tense		
1st Person	I am speaking	We are speaking
2nd Person	You are speaking	You are speaking
3rd Person	She is speaking	They are speaking
Future Tense		
1st Person	I will speak	We will speak
2nd Person	You will speak	You will speak
3rd Person	She will speak	They will speak
Future Continuous Tense		
1st Person	I will be speaking	We will be speaking
2nd Person	You will be speaking	You will be speaking
3rd Person	She will be speaking	They will be speaking
Simple Past Tense		
1st Person	I spoke	We spoke
2nd Person	You spoke	You spoke
3rd Person	She spoke	They spoke
Past Continuous Tense		
1st Person	I was speaking	We were speaking
2nd Person	You were speaking	You were speaking
3rd Person	She was speaking	They were speaking
Present Perfect Tense		
1st Person	I have spoken	We have spoken
2nd Person	You have spoken	You have spoken
3rd Person	She has spoken	They have spoken
Present Perfect Continuous Tense		
1st Person	I have been speaking	We have been speaking
2nd Person	You have been speaking	You have been speaking
3rd Person	She has been speaking	They have been speaking
Past Perfect Tense		
1st Person	I had spoken	We had spoken
2nd Person	You had spoken	You had spoken
3rd Person	She had spoken	They had spoken
Past Perfect Continuous Tense		
1st Person	I had been speaking	We had been speaking
2nd Person	You had been speaking	You had been speaking
3rd Person	She had been speaking	They had been speaking
Future Perfect Tense		
1st Person	I will have spoken	We will have spoken
2nd Person	You will have spoken	You will have spoken
3rd Person	She will have spoken	They will have spoken
Future Perfect Continuous Tense		
1st Person	I will have been speaking	We will have been speaking
2nd Person	You will have been speaking	You will have been speaking
3rd Person	She will have been speaking	They will have been speaking

PART FIVE

EMBEDDING

CHAPTER 36	Embedded Sentences	421
CHAPTER 37	Noun Clauses	428
CHAPTER 38	Wish Clauses	458
CHAPTER 39	Indirect Speech	466
CHAPTER 40	Adjective Clauses	503
CHAPTER 41	Adverb Clauses	547
CHAPTER 42	Conditional Clauses	593
CHAPTER 43	Comparison and Contrast	626

Chapter 36

EMBEDDED SENTENCES

(subordinating clauses)

İçtümceecikler

Experience is a comb which fate gives to a man when his hair is all gone.



"I'd say
what you have there is a fish
that has mercury in it."

İngilizce'nin temel tümce kalıplarını ilgili bölümlerde incelemiştik. Bütün diğer dillerde olduğu gibi İngilizcede de temel tümce kalıbıyla kurulan çekirdek tümceler iki değişik yöntemle birleştirilirler. Chapter 13'de Tümce Türleri bölümünde bu yöntemleri açıklamıştık. Bu yöntemleri bir kez daha örnekle yelim.

A. Coordination

The United States has many weapons of mass destruction.
The United States has used them very frequently.

Bu iki tümcenin AND ile birleştirileceği kolayca görülüyor.

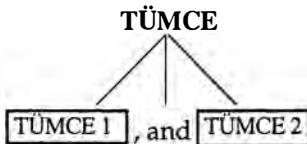


The United States has many weapons of mass destruction,
and it has used them very frequently.

Bu tür tümcelere *compound sentence* (*sıralı tümce*) denebildiğiini belirtmişik. Tümceyi şöyle gösterebiliriz.

TÜMCE 1 , and TÜMCE 2 .

Kuşkusuz arıklı TÜMCE 1 ve TÜMCE 2 aslında onları içinde barındıran bir diğer tümcenin öğeleri olmuştur. Bu durumu da söyle gösterebiliriz.

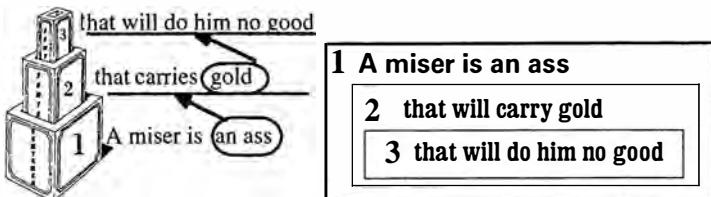


TÜMCE 1 ve TÜMCE 2'yi içinde barındıran TÜMCE'ye "ÜSTTÜMCE" adını verelim.

B. Subordination

Şimdi EMBEDDED SENTENCES (İÇTÜMCE) kavramını açıklamaya hazırız.

A miser is an ass/He carries gold/The gold will do him no good tümceleri aşağıdaki şekillerde gösterildiği gibi birleştirilebilir.



Gördüğü gibi, Tümce 2, Tümce 1'in içine, Tümce 3 de Tümce 2'nin içine konmaktadır. Tümce 2, AN ASS adını, Tümce 3 de GOLD adını nitelemektedir. Biz EMBEDDED SENTENCE karşılığı olarak *içtümcek* terimini kullanıyoruz.

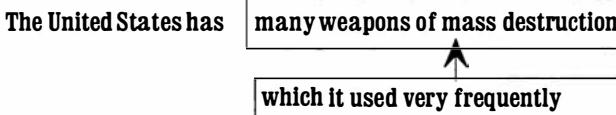
Bir başka örnek:

The United States has many weapons of mass destruction.

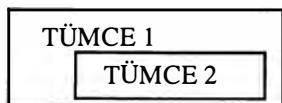
It has used them very frequently.

Bu iki tümcenin birleştirilmesi sonucu ortaya çıkan tümce söyle:

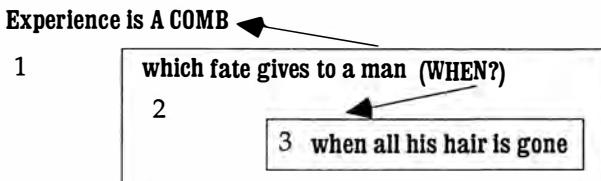
The United States has many weapons of mass destruction, which it used very frequently.



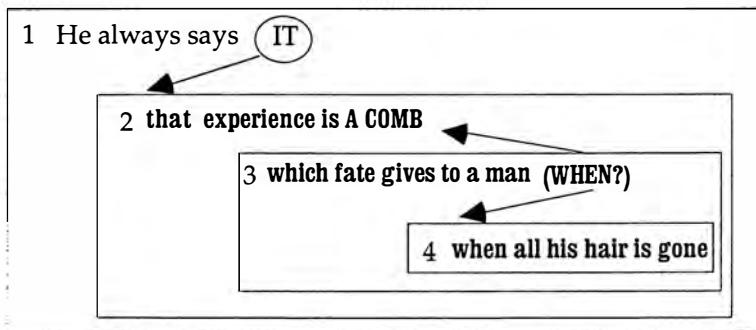
Bu yöntemi söyle de gösterebiliriz:



Bir örnek daha verelim:



Aşağıdaki örnekte mümkün olan 3 tür içtümcecik örneklenmektedir.



EMBEDDED SENTENCES (SUBORDINATING CLAUSES)

ADJECTIVE CLAUSES	Experience is a comb which fate gives to a man. ☞ ...which fate gives to a man, "comb" adını niteliyor.
NOUN CLAUSES	He always says that experience is a comb that fate gives to a man when his hair is all gone. ☞ ...that experience is a comb that fate gives to a man when his hair is all gone "say" eyleminin nesnesi olarak kullanılıyor.
ADVERB CLAUSES	He always says that experience is a comb that fate gives to a man when his hair is all gone. ☞ ...When his hair is all gone, "give" eylemini ZAMAN göstererek niteliyor.

EXERCISE 228

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki "embedded" tümceleri bulunuz ve türlerini belirleyiniz.

1. Most people know what arrows look like.
 2. Arrows were once important weapons of wars and hunting that archers used skillfully.
 3. For many years archery was the method which men used in hunting and in making war.
 4. When gunpowder was discovered, archery became merely a sport.
 5. Archery today is a sport which many people enjoy.
 6. That an archer needs a keen eye is obvious.
 7. It is also obvious that he must have a strong arm.
 8. The bows which are used in archery are long and springy.
 9. Hickory, which is springy, is often used.
 10. If steel is used, it must have the same quality.
-

EXERCISE 229

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizili "embedded sentence"ların türünü belirleyiniz.

1. A child-sex scandal that threatened to destroy Tony Blair's government last week has been mysteriously squashed.
2. Neil Mackay reported that senior members of Tony Blair's government were being investigated for child-sex pornography.
3. If he is compared to American and British war-mongers, Saddam may look like a man with whom you can share a few tins of beer.
4. The CIA plotted to kill men such as Lumumba or Castro or others who displeased Washington.
5. It is obvious that there is no place for corporate media in a true democracy.
6. Globalization is ravaging ecosystems and societies while most people sit back and let it happen.
7. Nestle Corporation is forcing money from the hands of Ethiopian people who are starving.
8. Israel is a second example of a country whose entire population is armed.
9. A very small number of media companies shape what we view and read.
10. Let every man teach his children that labor is honorable. -R. G. Ingersoll
11. Today is the tomorrow you worried about. -Proverb
12. If it weren't for the United States bombing us, we would be happier.
13. We shall be happy when the war is over.
14. The USA troops fired upon 900 Muslim Filipinos until all were killed.
15. Many people believe that today's American society is decadent.
16. Because my gun misfired, I missed my opportunity to shoot a pig.
17. President Bush insists that the USA exercise in mass murder in Iraq is an honorable endeavor and important to the freedom of the world.
18. Hitler, who annihilated millions of Jews, thought that he was doing God a favour.

19. The highway which goes from Mersin to Pozantı provides a most beautiful winter drive.
20. His special fishing spot which he calls "Hidden Treasure" is known to few people.



"I found something I didn't know I lost."

EXERCISE 230

Aşağıdaki yazı Amerikalı yazar Art Buchwald'ın Amerika'nın Vietnam'ı bombardıldığı günlerde bu savaşın anlamsızlığını göstermek için yazdığı mizahi bir yazıdır. Yazında kullanılan EMBEDDED SENTENCE'ları bulup türlerini saptamaya çalışınız.

TEACHING CHINA A LESSON

Secretary of State Dean Rusk announced at his press conference that the real reason we are fighting in Vietnam is to contain Red China.

This came as good news to the Vietnamese people, many of whom are still not too sure what the war is all about.

Two Vietnamese peasants were huddled in a foxhole during a bombing raid.

"Say," said one of them to the other. "Did you hear the good news? This war has nothing to do with us. It's really between China and the United States."

"No kidding?" the other peasant said, hugging the earth as a bomb exploded "Where did you hear that?"

"On the radio. You see, the reason why the United States is fighting in Vietnam is to contain China's expansionist ambitions. This is America's way of telling China to keep her hands off Southeast Asia."

Another bomb exploded.

"I wish there were another way of doing it," the peasant said.

"That's the trouble with you, Dao. You never can see the big picture. If the United States doesn't show that it's willing to honor its commitments in Vietnam, then every country in Southeast Asia will fall."

A bomb hit a hut about 100 feet from the foxhole.

"I guess I'm just selfish at heart," Dao said. "I really can't get too excited about what is happening in the rest of Southeast Asia at the moment."

"Dao, I'm surprised at you. There are one billion Chinese people, and they are committed to taking over one billion free people, and if it weren't for the United States bombing us, they would do it tomorrow."

Several fields caught on fire.

"Okay, I grant you that the free world has a great stake in Vietnam. But even so I don't enjoy being bombed."

"Nobody likes being bombed. But once you understand the reasons behind it, then it all makes sense."

"If this is really a contest between the United States and China, why *don't* the Americans bomb China? Why don't the Americans bomb China instead of us?"

"Because that would get China into the war, and the United States doesn't want China in the war, stupid."

"Don't call me stupid. I don't see why we should be bombed just because the United States doesn't want to bomb China."

"Good grief, Dao, do you want to remain a peasant all your life? Secretary Rusk has spelled it out as clearly as possible. He's even willing to stop the bombing if Hanoi will go to the conference table."

"Why won't Hanoi go to the conference table?"

"Because if it does, the Chinese will lose face."

"I was afraid of that."

Another bomb exploded a few feet from the foxhole, and dirt fell on both men.

Dao said, "When did Rusk say the Chinese would see reason so he wouldn't have to bomb us anymore?"

"He said he wasn't sure, but possibly in the next generation."



Noam Chomsky, bütün diğer ülkelerin karşı olmasına rağmen Irak'a saldıran ABD ve İngiltere hakkındaki görüşlerini aktarıyor. Konuşmasındaki içtümceçikleri bulmaya çalışınız.

Noam Chomsky, interviewed in the Indian publication *Frontline*.

The US and Britain have simply announced very clearly and loudly, that they are violent criminal states that are intent on destroying totally the fabric of international law, a fabric that has been built up laboriously over many years.

They have announced that they will do as they please and will use violence as they please, independently of what anyone else thinks. In my view, that is the sole significance of the bombing and is probably the reason for it.

This action is in fact a call for a lawless world in which the powerful will rule. The powerful happen to be the United States and Britain, which is by now a pathetic puppy dog that has abandoned any pretence of being an independent state.

Every time Tony Blair opens his mouth, he looks more disgusting and ridiculous, and his performance marked a painful and shameful day in the history of Britain.



Dennis'in kurdüğü tümcede hem noun clause, hem adjective clause hem de adverb clause bulunmaktadır. Onları görebiliyor musunuz?



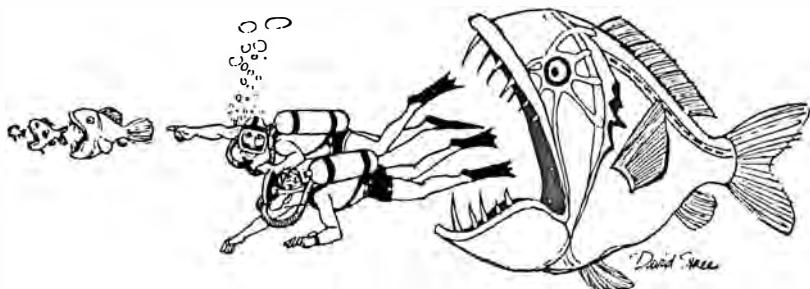
"It is a good thing you fell asleep because they were using words you didn't ever want to hear in this house."

Chapter 37

NOUN CLAUSES

AD İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

bir tümcede özne ya da nesne olarak kullanılan içtümceecikler



“Do you realize that we are now witnessing one of the universal truths?”

Tümce kalıplarını incelerken temel öğeleri görmüştük. Geçişli bir eylem olan REALIZE eyleminin NP¹ + V + NP² kalıbında kullanıldığını biliyoruz.

NP ¹	V	NP ²
They	realize	something.

Yukarıdaki tümcede "onların bir şeyin farkına vardıkları" söyleniyor. Aşağıdaki tümcede farkına varılan şeyin ne olduğu açıklanıyor: *they are witnessing one of the universal truths.*

Bir tümce olan *They are witnessing one of the universal truths.* yapısı bir başka tümcede NP² olarak, yani nesne olarak kullanılmaktadır.

NP ¹	V	NP ²
They	realize	they are witnessing one of the universal truths.

Bir tümcenin içinde NP olarak kullanılan tümcelere ad içtümceciği (noun clause) adı veriliyor. İngilizce bu tür ad içtümceciklerini **THAT** bağlacı ile işaret eder. **THAT**, günlük kullanımda ve konuşma dilinde çoğu zaman düşer.

NP ¹	V	NP ²
They	realize	that they are witnessing one of the universal truths.

Wade Frazier (<http://home1.gte.net/res0k62m/america.htm>), Amerika'nın ilk cumhurbaşkanı hakkında bir şey söylüyor: *George Washington became America's richest man by stealing Native American land*,

NP ¹	V	NP ²
Wade Frazier	says	something.

Frazeir'in tümcesi bir başka tümcede NP² olarak, yani bir ad içtümceciği olarak kullanılmaktadır. Düz tümceler ad öbeği olarak kullanıldıklarında önlerine **THAT** bağlacı konmaktadır.

NP ¹	V	NP ²
Wade Frazier	says	that George Washington became America's richest man by stealing Native American land.



Önüne **THAT** konulan her düz tümce bir ad içtümceciği olur. Yani hem özne hem de nesne olarak kullanılabilir. Bu konudaki kısıtlama, **THAT**'lı ad içtümceciklerinin nesne olarak ancak belirli eylemlerle birlikte kullanılabilmeleridir.

Bu işlemen Türkçe'deki karşılığını inceleyelim:

George Washington Kızılderililerin topraklarını çalarak Amerika'nın en zengin adamı oldu.

Wade Frazier, Washington'UN Kızılderililerin topraklarını çalarak Amerika'nın en zengin adamı ol-DUĞ-U-NU söylüyor.

Göründüğü gibi Türkçe'de ad içtümceciği haline sokulurken özne ve eylem bazı ekler almaktadır.

AD İÇTÜMCECİKLERİNE TOPLU BAKIŞ

TÜMCE TÜRÜ	Ad İçümceciği Bağlacı	ÖRNEKLER
1. Düz Tümce We have nothing to fear but fear itself.	that	Roosevelt says we have nothing to fear but fear itself. That we have nothing to fear but fear itself is obvious.
2. Soru Tümcesi A. Yardımcı Eylemlerle Yapılan Sorular Can brothers and sisters learn to get along ?	whether (or not) ALSO: if	We do not know whether or not brothers and sisters can learn to get along, We do not know if brothers and sisters can learn to get along, Whether or not they can learn to get along is open to discussion.
B. Soru sözcükleriyle Yapılan Sorular Who can learn to get along? When can they learn to get along? How can they learn to get along? What can they do? Why can they learn to get along? Where can they learn to get along? Which task can they learn? Why is war God's way of teaching Americans geography? Whose oil is the USA after?	who whom what which whose when where why how	I can't understand how they can learn to get along. I don't know who can learn to get along. How they will learn to get along is a mystery. We don't know why they can't learn to get along. He didn't tell me where they could learn to get along. Do you know which task they can learn? I have forgotten what they can learn. Ambrose Bierce explains why war is God's way of teaching Americans geography. We all know whose oil the USA is after.
3. Buyruk Tümcesi Try to get along.	that	He suggested that they try to get along.
4. Ünlem Tümcesi What a naughty boy he is! How naughty he is!	what how	We have forgotten what a naughty boy he is. We have forgotten how naughty he is.

Yukarıdaki tabloda görüldüğü gibi ad içümceciklerinin yapılmasında belli sözcükler kullanılmaktadır.



İngilizce'de ad içtümcecikleri hangi sözcüklerle yapılıyor?

Ad içtümceciklerinin yapımında kullanılan sözcükler, tümce türlerine göre belirlenmiştir. Bu sözcükleri kullandıkları tümce türlerine göre gösterelim.

that	Statements Düz Tümceler	We believe that honesty is the best policy. That roses have thorns does not trouble me.
	Imperatives Buyruk Tümceleri	The captain ordered that we open fire.
QW	QW-Questions Soru Sözcüklü Sorular	Everybody knows who invented the telephone. How he escaped is a mystery.
if	Aux. Questions Yardımcı Eylemli Sorular	He asked me if everything was okay.
whether (or not)	Yardımcı Eylemli Sorular	We don't know whether the world can survive another world war. Whether or not Bill Gates will win the case remains to be seen.
what how	Exclamatory Sentences Ünlem Tümceleri	We now realize how greedy Christopher Columbus was. Everybody is talking about what a cunning man Bill Gates is.

İngilizce'deki ad içtümceciklerini kullandıkları sözcüklere göre 3 bölge ayıriz.

- 1. THAT- ad içtümcecikleri**
- 2. WHETHER OR NOT/IF- ad içtümcecikleri**
- 3. QW (Question Word)-ad içtümcecikleri**

THAT- ad içtümcecikleri

THAT-li ad içtümcecikleri yaygın kullanıma sahiptirler. Tümcede çeşitli işlevler üstlenirler.

- Tümcenin öznisi olabilir.**

That inflation is dangerous is obvious.

2. Tümçenin nesnesi olabilir.

Everybody knows that inflation is dangerous.

3 TO BE eyleminin tamamlayıcısı olabilir.

His claim is that inflation is dangerous.

4. Belli adlarla birlikte kullanılabilir.

The belief that inflation is dangerous is widespread.

5 Belli sıfatlardan sonra kullanılabilir.

I am sure that inflation is dangerous .

6. Slot-filling IT ile kullanılabilir.**a. Gecikmiş özne olarak**

It is often claimed that inflation is dangerous .

It is obvious that inflation is dangerous .

b. Gecikmiş nesne olarak

He has made it obvious that inflation is dangerous .

I hate it that my train is always late.

c. Kalıp tamamlayıcı olarak

It is not that I don't like you.

It is just that we don't speak the same language.

7. There is NOUN kalıbıyla kullanılır.

There is no doubt that inflation is dangerous .

8. Belli adlarla kalıplasmaşmış yapıtlarda kullanılır.

It is a pity that we cannot prevent inflation .

Şimdi bu kullanımları teker teker ele alalım.

1. Tümçenin öznesi olabilir.

That inflation is dangerous is obvious.

THAT-ad tümceği, tümçenin öznesi olarak ancak belli eylemlerle birlikte kullanılabilir. Bunların en yayğını BE eylemidir. BE'nin yanısıra ettiğen anlamlı eylemlerle, *make, matter, bother, concern, make a difference* gibi eylemler de özne olarak **THAT-ad tümceği** kullanabilir.

That the Western world has double standards makes us furious.

That the Western world insists on having double standards may result in further conflicts.

Flatter, anger, amaze, surprise, disappoint, sadden, please gibi duygular ifade eden eylemler de **THAT-ad tümceği** özne olarak kullanabilirler.

That she was appointed treasurer greatly flattered her.

That you keep delaying our orders bothers us.

THAT-ad tümceği özne olarak yaygın şekilde iki tümce kalıbında kullanılır.

NP	BE	ADJ	That inflation is dangerous is obvious.
NP¹	BE	NP¹	That inflation is dangerous is a fact.

Ancak THAT-ad tümceciğinin özne olarak kullanımı özellikle konuşma dilinde yaygın değildir. Çoğu kez bu tür tümceler Slot-filling IT yapısına dönüştürülür.

It is obvious that inflation is dangerous.
It is a fact that inflation is dangerous.

EXERCISE 231

Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyiniz ve verilenlerle benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Smoking causes cancer. (obvious)

That smoking causes cancer is obvious.

It is obvious that smoking causes cancer.

The European Union is hypocritical. (worry us)

That the European Union is hypocritical worries us.

It worries us that the European Union is hypocritical.

1. All Gore ran for president. (*amaze me*)
2. She wants to divorce her husband. (*understandable*)
3. She is on a diet. (*does not surprise me*)
4. Most lakes are dangerously polluted. (*easy to see*)
5. There is nothing we can do to help him. (*makes me sad*)
6. The Western world respects human rights. (*has never been proved*)
7. The European Union is playing dirty tricks on Turkey. (*self-evident*)
8. Highway accidents may paralyze traffic for hours. (*known to everybody*)
9. Tom wrecked the family car. (*drove his father mad*)
10. The modern society is becoming dangerously competitive. (*unfortunate*)
11. Political corruption cannot be prevented. (*obvious*)
12. Television rots the brain. (*obvious*)
13. European countries have double standards. (*evident*)
14. Plants can cure a wide range of conditions. (*claimed by herbalists*)
15. The European Union is trying to impose a self-destructive solution on the Turkish Cypriots. (*not difficult to see*)

2. **Tümcenin nesnesi olabilir.**

Everybody knows that inflation is dangerous.

THAT-ad tümceciğini nesne olarak alabilen eylemlerin hemen hemen tümü ya dolaylı anlatımda kullanılan eylemlerdir ya da zihinsel etkinlik ifade eden eylemlerdir.

Everybody knows that nicotine causes cancer.

I disagree with you that Turkey should join EU at all costs.

Don't complain to me that you are putting on weight. Eat less.

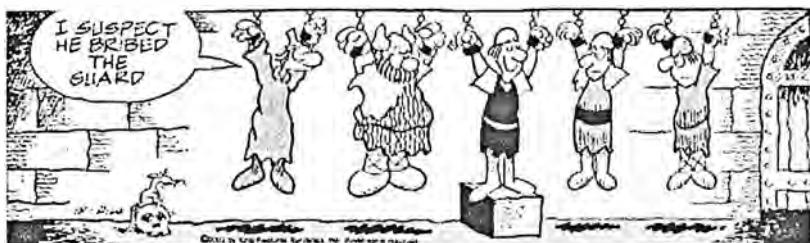
The doctor suggests that she be operated at once.

Teachers complain that classes are getting too crowded.

Nicholas Hildyard claims that the Rich countries are responsible for the continuing poverty in the world.

INDIRECT SPEECH (Dolaylı Anlatım) Eylemleri

admit	claim	exclaim	maintain	promise	swear
agree	confess	explain	mention	relate	teach
announce	complain	foretell	notify	remark	tell
argue	convince	hint	persuade	remind	threaten
assert	declare	indicate	pray	report	warn
assure	deny	inform	predict	say	
boast	disagree	insist	proclaim	state	



MENTAL ACTIVITY (Zihinsel Etkinlik) Eylemleri

ascertain	dream	hold	perceive	reveal
assume	estimate	hope	presume	see
believe	expect	illustrate	pretend	show
calculate	explain	imagine	prove	suspect
care	fancy	indicate	question	suppose
conceive	feel	know	realize	surmise
conclude	find	judge	recall	think
consider	find out	learn	reckon	trust
convince	forget	mean	reflect	understand
decide	grant	mind	regret	
discover	guess	note	rejoice	
doubt	hear	notice	remember	wish



1. *Care* (çoğunlukla olumsuz tümcelerde ve sorularda kullanılır.)
2. *Mind* (çoğunlukla olumsuz tümcelerde ve sorularda kullanılır.)
3. Dolaylı anlatım (Indirect/Reported Speech)其实 ad içtümcekleri ile ifade edilmektedir.

EXERCISE 232

Örnekleri inceleyiniz ve verilenlerle benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Radiation is the greatest known danger to explorers in space. (scientists believe)

Scientists believe that radiation is the greatest known danger to explorers in space.

Iceland is one of the most active volcanic regions of the world. (The scientist claims)

The scientist claims that Iceland is one of the most active volcanic regions of the world.

1. About half of the acid rain falling on Canada is attributed to U.S. sources. (*We think*)
2. The most economically damaging kinds of computer crime are introducing viruses, theft of services, and disruption of computer systems. (*Everybody can see*)
3. No one knows the magnitude of the computer crime problem. (*She says*)
4. Illness was a punishment sent upon them when the god Apollo was angry. (*The ancient Greeks believed*)
5. Noise can affect human beings negatively in both physiological and psychological ways. (*Scientists know*)
6. There is no specific treatment for anorexia nervosa or bulimia. (*Doctors believe*)
7. The number of people who cannot afford to pay for housing is rising. (*She fears*)
8. Cancer can strike anyone at any age. (*Do you think*)
9. Deterioration of our environment clearly holds threats for our physical well-being. (*Medical experts warn*)
10. Properly canned food can be saved for as long as three years. (*Food experts say*)

3. **TO BE eyleminin tamamlayıcısı olabilir.**

His claim is that inflation is dangerous.

Bu kullanımda özne olarak kullanılabilen belli adlar bulunmaktadır.

belief	fact	suggestion	truth
claim	idea		understanding
conviction	problem		

Our understanding is that inflation is highly dangerous.

The truth is that air pollution has become a serious danger in many cities.

The obvious fact is that the developed countries shamelessly exploit the cheap slave labour that is available from the natives of the colonies.

EXERCISE 233

Örnekleri inceleyiniz ve verilenlerle benzer tümceler kurunuz.

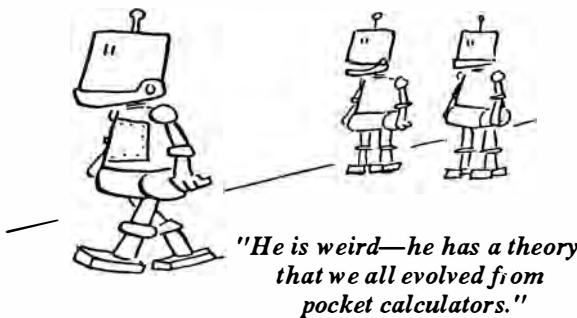
Many young people die of cancer. (*sad truth*)

The sad truth is that many young people die of cancer.

It is extremely difficult to be sure about radiation damage. (*trouble*)

The trouble is that it is extremely difficult to be sure about radiation damage.

1. Natural food is not always good. (*truth*)
2. We all find hearing more difficult as we age. (*trouble*)
3. High blood cholesterol can be controlled by change in diet. (*fact*)
4. Automobile accidents are as familiar as the common cold but far more deadly. (*sad truth*)
5. Plastic does not rot. (*trouble with plastic*)
6. After heart disease and cancer, alcoholism has become the country's biggest health problem. (*the sad truth*)
7. Badly polluted air can cause sickness and even death. (*problem*)
8. Physical exercise can help you to relax and to better handle your mental or emotional stress. (*truth*)



4. Belli adların "appositive" i olabilir.

The belief **that inflation is dangerous** is widespread.

The belief	is	that inflation is dangerous.
the belief	Ø	
	x	that inflation is dangerous

Burada görüldüğü gibi, *the fact* ve *that inflation is dangerous* ad öbekleri birbirlerini işaret etmektedir.

Görüldüğü gibi, (a) bir tümcedir; (b) ise aynı şeyi işaret eden iki ad öbeğinden oluşan bir ad öbeğidir. Bu tür yapılar oluşturabilen belli adlar vardır.

announcement	claim	fact	impression	suggestion
assumption	conviction	hypothesis	news	theory
axiom	delusion	idea	notion	thesis
belief	doctrine	illusion	principle	

The announcement that there were three accidents made everyone nervous.

The fact that the world is round cannot be denied.

I was surprised when I heard the news that he became a writer.

Your belief that smoking is harmless does not have any grounds.

He has the idea that proverbs display universal wisdom.

EXERCISE 234

Örnekleri inceleyiniz ve verilenlerle benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Every language has a number of proverbs. (*fact/not surprise me*)

The fact that every language has a number of proverbs does not surprise me.

Proverbs are similar across cultures. (*claim/seem to be true*)

The claim that proverbs are similar across cultures seems to be true.

1. Nature can cure our sickness. (*belief/widespread*)
2. There is now a danger of extinction of all life on this planet. (*Einstein's suggestion/frighten us*)
3. You never even tried to tell the truth. (*fact/disturb us the most*)
4. Her father is a talented artist. (*fact/ not make her a good artist*)
5. Poverty is at the root of all crimes. (*belief/seems to be true*)
6. We should tolerate European hypocrisy. (*suggestion/irritating*)
7. European countries really care about human rights. (*belief/ridiculous*)
8. Man is the only animal with the ability to speak. (*hypothesis/should be true*)
9. This Turkish journalist is shamelessly defending Western prejudice and hypocrisy. (*news/not come as a surprise*)
10. TV stars have found ways to avoid income taxes. (*news /not somehow surprise us*)

EXERCISE 235

Örneği inceleyiniz ve benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Some people believe that the cat is a natural enemy of the mouse.

The belief that the cat is a natural enemy of the mouse is wrong.

1. Some people believe that money will always bring happiness.
2. Some people believe that the enmity between cats and dogs is instinctive.
3. Some people believe that cats and dogs can never be friends.
4. Some people believe that books are just for entertainment.
5. Some people believe that computers will replace teachers.

5. PERSON +BE + ADJ kalıbında kullanılan belli sıfatlar THAT-içtümceği gerektirebilir.

I am sure that inflation is dangerous .

NP (person) +BE + Adjective kalıbında yer alan kimi sıfatlar anlamlarına bağlı olarak bir başka öge gerektirirler. Örneğin,

This computer is very expensive.

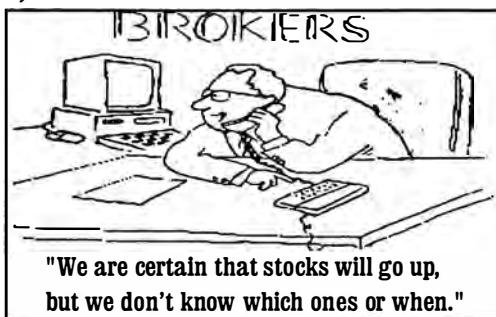
tümcesi keindi başına tam bir ifade olarak görülürken,

I am sure ...

yapısı anlam açısından tamamlanmamış görünmektedir. Aşağıdaki tümcede ise *that we will lose all our money on the stock market* THAT-içtümceği eksikliği tamamlamaktadır.

I am sure that we will lose all our money on the stock market.

The apartment manager should make sure that all residents respect the rights of others.



Bu kalıpta kullanılan sıfatların en yaygınları şunlardır:

afraid	convinced	happy	sorry
ashamed	delighted	hopeful	sure
aware	disgusted	pleased	surprised
certain	furious	positive	thankful
confident	glad	proud	thrilled
conscious	grateful	satisfied	worried

EXERCISE 236

Örnekleri inceleyiniz ve verilenlerle benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Does nicotine cause cancer? (sure/medical researchers)

Medical researchers are sure that nicotine causes cancer.

Will we lose our money on the stock market? (afraid/I)

I am afraid that we will lose our money on the stock market.

1. European countries support PKK terrorism. (*furious /Turks*)
2. Is Disneyland the best vacation spot in the world? (*sure/most Americans*)
3. Did the pop singer steal her boyfriend's money? (*confident/lawyer*)
4. Hasn't he done anything good? (*sorry/we*)
5. Has the CIA assassinated Martin Luther King? (*confident/black people*)
6. Will millions of people die of starvation next year? (*worried/scientists*)
7. May boredom lead to drug addiction? (*convinced/psychologists*)
8. Can she take care of herself? (*proud/her mother*)

6. Slot-filling *IT* ile kullanılabilir.

a. Gecikmiş özne olarak

It is often claimed that inflation is dangerous .

It is obvious that inflation is dangerous .

b. Gecikmiş nesne olarak

He has made it obvious that inflation is dangerous .

I hate it that my train is always late.

c. Kalıp tamamlayıcı olarak

It is not that I don't like you. (Seni sevmiyorum değilim.)

It is just that we don't speak the same language.

Göründüğü gibi *Slot-filling IT* için ad içümcəcikleri ile 3 temel kullanım söz konusudur. Bunlardan (a) ve (b) kullanımlarında *IT*'in *that inflation is dangerous* ve *that my train is always late* ad içümcəcikleri yerine kullandığı görülüyor. Diğer kullanımda ise *IT*'in yerini aldığı herhangi bir öğe bulunmamakta ve *IT* tümce kalibini tamamlamakta kullanılmaktadır.

SLOT-filling IT'in gecikmiş özne kullanımı son derece yaygındır. *IT IS -ADJECTIVE + THAT-NOUN CLAUSE* kalibinde kullanılan yaygın sıfatlar şunlardır:

clear	fortunate	inevitable	odd	surprising
curious	funny	interesting	possible	unlikely
desirable	good	likely	probable	vital
essential	important	necessary	sad	wonderful
evident	impossible	obvious	strange	

<i>It is</i>	<i>a pity</i>	<i>that</i>	<i>globalization is aggravating poverty and hunger in Third World countries.</i>
	<i>a miracle</i>		
	<i>a shame</i>		
	<i>a fact</i>		
	<i>a good thing</i>		



Suyun üstündeki adam kim? Adamın babası kim? Balıkçılar ona neden kızıyorlar?

ÖZEL BİR KULLANIM

"Bir şeyin zamanı geldi de geçti bile" anlamı TIME adıyla bu kullanımda veriliyor. THAT-ad içtümceciğindeki eylem PAST biçimde kullanılıyor.

	time about time high time	that	we did something about your headache.
--	---------------------------------	------	---------------------------------------

EXERCISE 237

Örnekleri inceleyiniz ve verilenlerle benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The USA has attacked, bombed and invaded more countries than any other state. (*self-evident*)

It is self-evident that the USA has attacked, bombed and invaded more countries than any other state.

Some Turkish journalists work as agents of Western imperialism. (*I hate it.*)

I hate it that some Turkish journalists work as agents of Western imperialism.

1. The French were the first settlers to establish permanent settlements in Canada. (*He made it obvious*)
2. People cannot breathe in the sea. (*obvious*)
3. The 2000 American election has shown that Americans cannot count. (*be suggested*)
4. Holders of nuclear weapons claim to be peace lovers. (*paradoxical*)
5. Agricultural life changes very little year by year. (*an established fact*)
6. Brazil, like many other countries, has laws against pollution, but these laws are not enforced strictly enough. (*true*)
7. Pollution from exhaust pipes kills more people than traffic accidents do. (*be calculated*)
8. The CIA provoked the invasion of Kuwait by Iraq. (*can be easily shown*)
9. Poor agricultural practices results in soil erosion. (*has become evident*)
10. TEMA Foundation is trying to increase public awareness of dangers of soil erosion. (*fortunate*)

7. *There is + NOUN* kalıbıyla kullanılır.

There is no doubt that inflation is dangerous .

Bu kalıpta belli adlar kullanılabilir.

There is little hope that she will solve her financial problems.

There is some evidence that the manager has embezzled a huge sum of money.

There is no certainty that a good man will be rewarded and a bad man will be punished.

There is a possibility that they will soon put an end to the war.

There is no likelihood that white people will truly treat blacks as their equals.

8. *Belli adlarla kalıplasmış yapıarda kullanılır.*

It is a pity that we cannot prevent corruption.

We had no idea that she was planning to ruin our business.

I didn't have the slightest idea that she was a computer guru.

We didn't have the faintest idea that a so-called developed country could support terrorism.

It is a pity that most women bury their writing talent under a pile of dirty dishes.

Some people have no idea that the wealth of developed countries is really the blood they sucked from the poor nations.

ÖZEL BİR KULLANIM:

URGENCY (the subjunctive)

THAT-ad içtümcecikleri, iki kalıpta belli eylem ve sıfatlarla *ivedilik* (urgency) ifade ettiklerinde kullanılan tense açısından özel bir durum gösterirler. Aşağıdaki tabloda *know* eylemini izleyen THAT-ad içtümceciği ile *recommend* eylemini izleyen THAT-ad içtümceciğini bu açıdan karşılaştırınız. Aynı şekilde *obvious* ve *necessary* sıfatlarını izleyen THAT-ad içtümceciklerini inceleyiniz. *Recommend* eylemiyle *necessary* sıfatını izleyen THAT-ad içtümceciklerinde eylemlerin tense göstermeyen yalın şekilleriyle kullanıldığını görüyoruz. Dilbilgisi kitaplarında bu kullanımını (the subjunctive) başlığı altında görürsünüz.

URGENCY tümcelerde yer alan THAT-ad içtümceciklerinde, SHOULD eylemlerle birlikte kullanılabilir.

2. Tümcenin nesnesi olabilir.

I know that she cashes her check on Monday.

I recommend that she cash her check on Monday.

I recommend that she should cash her check on Monday.

It is obvious that she must be given an injection.

It is necessary that she be given an injection.

It is necessary that she should be given an injection.

URGENCY tümcelerinin olumsuz şekillerine dikkat ediniz.

It is vital that the patient not move.

It is vital that the old man not be given any more medicine.

The new manager requires that we not spend any time chatting.

İvedilik gösteren eylem ve sıfatların en yaygınları aşağıdaki tabloda gösterilmektedir.

VERBS OF URGENCY			
advise	demand	move	require
ask	desire	propose	stipulate
beg	forbid	recommend	suggest
command	insist	request	urge

ADJECTIVES OF URGENCY		
advisable	good (better, best)	necessary
desirable	imperative	requisite
crucial	important	urgent
essential	mandatory	vital

EXERCISE 238

Örneği inceleyerek, verilen tümceleri URGENCY tümceleri şeklinde yazınız.

I urged them to watch their diet.

I urged that they should watch their diet.

1. Her mother insisted on our apologizing to the manager.
2. I recommend your cashing the check promptly.
3. Our coach recommends our wearing heavier coats.
4. The judge ordered the thief to return the money.
5. It's essential for the police to look into the matter.
6. It's not necessary for you to wrap her purchases.
7. It was important for him to save at least a hundred dollars.
8. The judge asked me to explain exactly what happened.
9. It's very important for your husband to carry his credit cards with him.
10. It is advisable for obese people to try to lose weight.

11. Books borrowed from the library must be returned within two weeks. It is obligatory.
12. She requested the band to play her favourite song.

EXERCISE 239

Yeni müdürün söylediğini URGENCY kalıbıyla örnekteki gibi ifade ediniz.

Do not spend any time gossiping.

The boss requires that we not spend any time gossiping.

Be on time.

My boss requires that we be on time.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. Don't make personal calls. | 6. Never make mistakes. |
| 2. Keep your breaks to fifteen minutes. | 7. Be friendly but efficient. |
| 3. Don't leave before seven o'clock. | 8. Take pride in your work. |
| 4. Plan your vacations in advance. | 9. Come to me if you have any problems. |
| 5. Work fast | 10. Pay for anything you break. |

İki ya da daha fazla THAT-ad içtümceciğinin aynı eylemin nesnesi olması

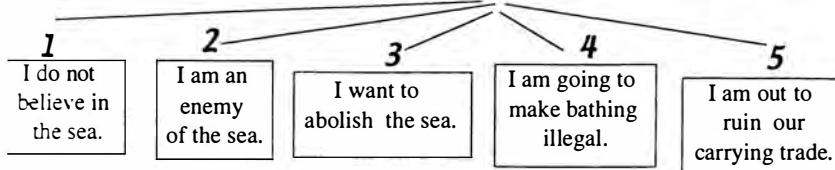
Bir eylem birden çok THAT-ad içtümceciğini nesne olarak alabilir. Aşağıdaki parçada G. B. Shaw güzel bir örnek sunuyor.

If I take it for granted that the sea exists, none of you will contradict me. If I say that the sea is sometimes furiously violent and always uncertain, and that those who are most familiar with it trust it least, you will not immediately shriek out that I do not believe in the sea; that I am an enemy of the sea; that I want to abolish the sea; that I am going to make bathing illegal; that I am out to ruin our carrying trade and lay waste all our seaside resorts and scrap the British Navy. If I tell you that you cannot breathe in the sea, you will not take that as a personal insult and ask me indignantly if I consider you inferior to a fish. Well, you must please be equally sensible when I tell you some hard facts about Democracy.

—George Bernard Shaw, Preface to *The Apple Cart*

You will not shriek out

THAT



whether (or not) -ad içtümceciği

"Now we'll see whether your expensive French courses were worth the price or not, Jack."

"Are your expensive French courses worth the price?" she asked her husband.

We'll see	whether (if)	his expensive French courses were worth the price or not.
She asked him	whether (if)	
She doesn't know	whether (if)	

Görüldüğü gibi, **whether**, yardımcı eylemle yapılmış bir soruyu ad tümceciği haline sokmaktadır. Bu tür sorular *evet* ya da *hayır* ile yanıtlanırlar. Bu olumsuz olasılık da **or not** sözcükleriyle işaret edilebilir. Ad tümceciği kısaysa bu sözcükler en sonda yer alabilirler. Uzun bir ad tümceciği söz konusuya **whether or not** şekli tercih edilir.

We don't know whether a certain amount of fat in the diet is essential to human health or not.

IF, daha çok günlük konuşmalarda kullanılır. **IF**'li ad içtümceçikleri sadece nesne olarak kullanılır. Kısa ad tümceciklerinde **or not** en sonda yer almak koşuluyla kullanılabilir.

Most governments cannot decide if they should restrict the press on the Internet or not.

WHETHER OR NOT ya da **IF NOT**, yardımcı eylemli yapılan soruları ad öbeği şeklinde sokarak indirect/reported speech yapısında kullanılmaktadır.

*"Will you quit?" Bush asked Gore.
Bush asked Gore if he would quit (or not).*



IF YOU ARE TIRED yapısı, bir koşul tümceciği de olabilir.

Have a rest	if you are tired.	(Conditional Clause)
He asks me	if you are tired	(Noun Clause)



WHETHER ... OR NOT yapısı bir koşul tümceciği de olabilir.

Time spent in a book shop can be most enjoyable, whether you are a book-lover or not. (Bir kitap kurdu olsanız da olmasanız da bir kitapçıda geçirilen saatler çok eğlenceli olabilir.)

The society should look after all children alike, whether they are legitimate or not.

Many substances, whether man-made or natural, can cause harm to man or the environment.

If/whether (or not) olumsuz tümcelerle sorularda belli dolaylı anlatım eylemleriyle kullanılabilir.

Did she ever say if she trusted you?

She never indicated whether she liked her job or not.

INDIRECT SPEECH (DOLAYLI ANLATIM) EYLEMLERİ			
announce	explain	mention	state
ask	indicate	reveal	suggest
debate	inquire	say	tell

Zihinsel etkinlik eylemleri de If/whether (or not) ile kurulan ad içtümcekicilerini nesne olarak alabilir.

Zihinsel Etkinlik Eylemleri				
care	determine	hear	learn	see
choose	doubt	judge	notice	wonder
decide	find out	know	observe	

Please see whether everybody has left the office.

Mr. Brown didn't notice whether his wife was in the kitchen.

She wonders whether she will be promoted.

1. WHETHER (OR NOT) özne olarak kullanılabilir.

Whether one will be happy or not depends on himself.

Whether (or not) IQ tests are dependable is open to discussion.

2. WHETHER (OR NOT)/ IF nesne olarak kullanılabilir.

If/whether (or not)-ad içtümceciğinin nesne olarak kullanımı en yaygın kullanım şeklidir. Bu tür ad içtümcekicilerini nesne olarak alabilen eylemleri yukarıda Dolaylı Anlatım ve Zihinsel Etkinlik Eylemleri tablosunda sergiledik.

The shoe knows whether the stockings have holes. –Proverb

If you ask yourself whether you are happy, you cease to be so. —John Stuart Mill

I don't know whether war is an interlude during peace, or peace is an interlude during war. —G. Clemenceau

The case has been going on for so long that I've forgotten whether I'm really innocent or guilty. —Ashleigh Brilliant

Don't throw away the old bucket until you know whether the new one holds water. —Swedish Proverb

An Englishman is like a crocodile: when it opens its mouth you cannot tell whether it is trying to smile or preparing to eat you up. (İngiliz timsaha benzer; ağızını açtığında gülmeyecek mi yoksa sizi yutacak mı bilemezsiniz.) — Indian Proverb

Who asks whether the enemy were defeated by strategy or valor? —Vergil

People are beginning to ask whether there comes a time when patients should be allowed to die.

3. WHETHER (OR NOT), 2. tümce kalıbında kullanılabilir.

The real problem is not whether machines think but whether men do. —Skinner

The question is not so much whether there is life on Mars as whether it will continue to be possible to live on Earth.

The question is whether (or not) he is ready for the operation.

4. WHETHER (OR NOT) tümceği bir ilgecin nesnesi olabilir

We are concerned about whether he would get the money.

The question of whether a computer can think is no more interesting than the question of whether a submarine can swim. —Edsger W. Dijkstra

5. WHETHER - tümceği Slot-filling IT ile kullanılabilir.

It does not matter whether the cat is black or white. So long as it catches the mouse, it is a good cat. —Xiaoping

It's not whether you get knocked down. It's whether you get back up. —Lombard

It is seldom clear whether intellectual activity brings happiness or causes melancholy.

EXERCISE 240

Örnekleri inceleyerek verilenlerle benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Do scores on IQ tests show intelligence? (*he wants to know*)

He wants to know if scores on IQ tests show intelligence.

Do schools destroy the ability to think? (*Some psychologists wonder*)

Some psychologists wonder whether schools destroy the ability to think.

1. Might solar activity have a direct effect on the earth's weather? (*some scientists wonder*)
2. Do the candidates meet the requirements? (*They want to determine*)
3. Does his son have a talent for writing? (*He wants to find out*)
4. Can this powerful antiseptic be used to combat human disease? (*The scientist wants to see*)
5. Will privatization solve our problems? (*One can wonder*)

EXERCISE 241

Aşağıdaki soruları, kutu içinde verilenleri kullanarak, örnekteki gibi tümceerde kullanınız.

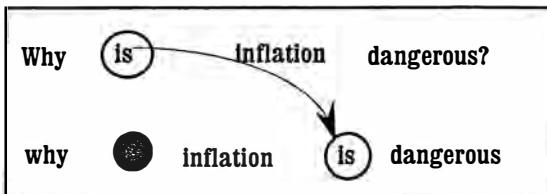
has been a major issue
has been a problem
has been an argument

Is an 80-hour work week too long?

Whether an 80-hour work week is too long has been a major issue in many places.

1. Are employers responsible for working conditions?
2. Do employees deserve safe working conditions?
3. Should employers pay for work injuries?
4. Should children work?
5. Do workers have the right to complain?
6. Should employers provide health and retirement benefits?
7. Should unions be legal?
8. Should workers have the right to strike?

QW-ad içtümceciği



"Why is inflation dangerous?" He asks me.

He asks me why inflation is dangerous.

İngilizce'de soru sözcüğüyle yapılan bir soru, soru sözcüğü yerinde kalma konşülüyla, düz tümceye çevrilince bir ad içtümceciği yapılmış olur. *QW-ad içtümceciği* tümcede çeşitli görevler üstlenebilir.

**1 Tümcenin öznesi olabilir.**

How he opened the safe is a mystery.

2 Tümcenin nesnesi olabilir.

Psycholinguistics investigates how language is acquired.

3 TO BE eyleminin tamamlayıcısı olabilir.

The question is why he is here.

4 Belli sıfatlardan sonra kullanılabilir.

I am not sure why inflation is dangerous .

5 Gecikmiş özne olarak kullanılabilir.

It might be asked why inflation is dangerous .

6 Bir ilgecin nesnesi olabilir.

We are concerned about why inflation is dangerous .

7 Belli adlarla kalıplasmaş olarak kullanılır.

We don't have the faintest idea why inflation is dangerous .

1. QW-ad içtümceciği, tümcenin öznesi olabilir.

<i>His job is a secret.</i>	<i>What he does for a living is a secret.</i>
-----------------------------	---

<i>His methods are clever.</i>	<i>How he does his work is very clever.</i>
--------------------------------	---

What you are doing is simply spoiling your children.

Where the new plant will be built is up to the government.

Why the news was not released earlier will be explained tomorrow.

How the gang managed to open the safe is a mystery.

When you leave does not matter.

What goes up must come down.

WH-Noun Clause'lar özne olduklarında eylem obeğinde kullanılan sınırlı sayıda seçenek vardır.

does not matter to me

is confidential

does not concern me

is a secret

is a mystery to me

is something I can 't reveal

is none of our business

must be kept confidential

is his business

must be kept top secret

2. Tümcenin nesnesi olabilir.

Psycholinguistics investigates how language is acquired.

Being very intelligent, he quickly understood what I was trying to explain.

We shall never find out why Kennedy was assassinated.

They do not know what our long-term prospects are.

Listen to what he is saying.

Tomorrow we shall discuss when the next meeting is to take place.

I wonder why she should buy a thing like that.

Nobody knows where he keeps his money.

No man can lose what he never had. –Izaak Walton (1593-1683)

One sometimes wonders what the point one's life is.

Tell me what you desire, and I will tell you what you are. –H. F.

Amiel

He who does not travel by sea does not know what the fear of God is.

Very few people can see that big business uses the media to create a climate of ignorance.

Researchers have found that about 25 percent of American children and adolescents are overweight.

George Washington, the first president of the United States, claimed that there was no difference in "Indians" from wolves.

(<http://www.iwchildren.org/redskinhate3.htm>)

SAKURAI
RECKLINGHAUSER ZEITUNG
Recklinghausen
GERMANY



Few people realize what globalization is all about.

This is it.

EXERCISE 242

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda kutu içindeki öğeleri kullanınız. Kimi boşluklarda birden çok öğe kullanılabilir.

<i>know</i> <i>don't know</i>	<i>guess</i> <i>believe</i> <i>be sure</i>	<i>can't imagine</i> <i>can't decide</i>
----------------------------------	--	---

1. We _____ that the telescope was invented by Lippershey.
2. I _____ that astronomy is the oldest science.
3. I _____ that stars and planets have attracted man's attention since the earliest times.
4. She _____ that the telescope shows many stars which cannot be seen without it.
5. I _____ how much a small telescope costs.
6. I _____ star-gazing is an enjoyable hobby.
7. I _____ what I should write about the stars and planets.
8. I _____ what this is. I have never seen anything like this before.

3. TO BE eyleminin tamamlayıcısı olabilir.

The question is why he is here.



The question is why she insists on living here.

I don't want to be what I was last year.

The problem is where to hide it.

The only time people dislike gossip is when you gossip about them.

A man is literally what he thinks. —James Allen

4 Belli sıfatlardan sonra kullanılabilir.

I am not sure why inflation is dangerous .

We were not aware how unhappy she was.

5. Gecikmiş özne olarak kullanılabilir.

It might be asked why inflation is dangerous .

It does not matter what he thinks of us.

It must be doubted whether he will come.

It was pointed out how often it had been done.

It might be asked why pollution cannot be prevented.

It remains problematic whether he will come.

6. Bir ilgecin nesnesi olabilir.

We are concerned about **why inflation is dangerous**.

We are curious about who the other guests were.

I do not worry about what he can do.

If men talked only about what they understood, the silence would be unbearable.

7. Belli adlarla kahiplaşmış olarak kullanılır.

We don't have the faintest idea **why inflation is dangerous**.

We have no idea where he went.

QUESTION WORDS WITH -EVER THAT FORM NOUN CLAUSES

whoever, whomever, whatever, whichever, wherever

America is a free country. You can say **whatever** you want to say – as long as it pleases the USA government, of course. If there is nothing you can say to please the USA government, you are free to keep your mouth closed.

BE complement	<i>You can be (whomever you want to be).</i>
Linking Verb Complement	<i>You sound like (whoever sings that famous song).</i>
Subject	<i>(Whatever you get me) will be lovely. (Whoever stole my cookies) is in big trouble! (Whoever had done it) was not admitting anything. (Whatever you suggest) will be acceptable to us.</i>
Object	<i>You can say (whatever you please). This is a free country. Read (whichever you like).</i>
Object of preposition	<i>I would like to talk about (whatever happened last night). We need to get around (whatever this is). I'm going to work through (whatever we encounter). He didn't speak of (whoever made the threat). They didn't get to (wherever they wanted).</i>
Verb Complement	<i>I can go (wherever I want). Stay (wherever you are.)</i>

A TEST BATTERY ON NOUN CLAUSES

EXERCISE 243

Örnekleri inceleyerek benzer tümceler yapınız.

- a. How does toothpaste prevent tooth decay? (*not known*)
How toothpaste prevents tooth decay is not known.
 - b. Where do elephants go to die? (*a mystery*)
Where elephants go to die is a mystery.
1. Why do women have a harder time losing weight than men? (*not known*)
 2. How did they build the pyramids ? (*beyond my comprehension*)
 3. What triggers the starvation disease? (*not known*)
 4. Where will the new site be? (*not yet announced*)
 5. Who will be in charge of the operation? (*a secret*)
 6. Why is inflation dangerous? (*should be easy to understand*)
 7. Where are we going? (*none of your business*)
 8. Whose fault was it? (*not clear*)
 9. Why did the poor woman commit suicide? (*obvious*)
 10. Who assassinated Martin Luther King? (*not known*)
-
-

EXERCISE 244

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

He said, "I need more time to do this."

He said that he needed more time to do that.

1. He said, "I have already read this book."
 2. The gardener said, "I often water the garden."
 3. My friend said, "I can help you if you want."
 4. The doctor said, "You look well today."
 5. Saddam Hussein said, "Americans are the new Mongols of the Middle East."
-
-

EXERCISE 245

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

How many children like the taste of liver or wheat germ? (*we really don't know*)

We really don't know how many children like the taste of liver or wheat germ.

1. How much exposure to the drug is necessary to kill the bacteria?
(*experiments will show*)
2. What does this word mean? (*Can you tell me*)

3. How can butterflies find their way home? (*Scientist are trying to explain*)
4. How well is a child doing in school? (*Tests can determine*)
5. How and why did the modern cult of sport arise? (*We must inquire*)
6. Why does a cancerous cell grow and divide endlessly? (*No one knows yet*)
7. What did they eat at their last meal? (*Old people are unable to remember*)
8. What caused dinosaurs to disappear? (*Scientists still do not know*)
9. Why does the Belgian government support terrorism? (*We still can't understand*)
10. How can slavery exist in various forms in Europe? (*European scholars fail to explain*)

EXERCISE 246

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

I know that the USA can commit any crime if profitable..

I knew that the USA can commit any crime if profitable.

11. We think that we can prevent water pollution.
12. We doubt that she has taken her medicine.
13. I suppose that she is a good cook.
14. They threaten that they will sue us.

EXERCISE 247

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Who looted Iraqi museums?

Don't ask me who looted Iraqi museums.

I don't have the slightest idea who looted Iraqi museums.

15. Who did Harry marry?
16. Why is English spelling difficult?
17. What did Helen ask for?
18. How much will it cost me to fly there?
19. Whose room is he in?
20. Who stole my diamond ring?

EXERCISE 248

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

America has never been a democracy.

That America has never been a democracy is a fact.

It is a fact that America has never been a democracy.

21. Obesity is a serious hazard to health.
22. A diet high in calories leads to obesity.
23. Obesity is linked to heart disease.

24. We need better health education in order to prevent obesity.
 25. One of the major causes of obesity in USA is an overabundance of food.
-

EXERCISE 249

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Why did he sell his house? (*We don't understand*)

We don't understand why he sold his house.

26. Who did he sell the secrets to? (*We could never find out*)
 27. How had the murderer entered the room? (*The detective discovered*)
 28. Why was everybody silent? (*My friend explained*)
 29. When would the program end? (*I wondered*)
 30. Where was the money hidden? (*They discovered*)
-

EXERCISE 250

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Don't be misled by USA propaganda..

Take care that you don't be misled by USA propaganda.

31. Don't overfeed your dog.
 32. Don't make too many mistakes.
 33. Don't be misled by European hypocrisy.
 34. Don't believe everything you read in newspapers.
-

EXERCISE 251

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Where did the CIA develop biological weapons?

Nobody knows where the CIA developed biological weapons.

Where the CIA developed biological weapons is a complete mystery.

It is a complete mystery where the CIA developed biological weapons.

35. What caused the accident?
 36. Who murdered Olof Palme?
 37. Who did she see in the room?
 38. Why did the CIA murder the scientist?
-

EXERCISE 252

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

(IT IS + THAT-tümce)

The USA is run by the ultra-rich. (*It is a pity*)

It is a pity that the USA is run by the ultra-rich.

39. The CIA worked to provoke Iraq to invade Kuwait. (*It is obvious*)
 40. Expenditure on health has been increasing. (*It is true*)

41. Thousands of people die of hunger every day. (*It is sad*)
 42. We don't have a leader like Atatürk. (*It is a pity*)

EXERCISE 253

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Why did the USA invade Iraq? (*no secret*)
Why the USA invaded Iraq is no secret.

43. Where does she live? (*a secret*)
 44. Who has stolen the letter? (*not known*)
 45. How has computer technology transformed the way people interact? (*easy to show*)
 46. Why has America often been accused of imperialism? (*obvious*)

EXERCISE 254

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Who is the most merciless president of the US?
I don't know who the most merciless president of the US is.

47. Who is the most popular singer in Turkey?
 48. What gives a language global influence?
 49. Whose novel reveals the barbarous nature of British imperialism?
 50. How many children have died in Iraq since the Gulf War?
 51. At what age do children begin to notice and react to TV?
 52. How dangerous can this computer virus be?

EXERCISE 255

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The expert has suggested this. Turkey should have nothing to with the US's war crimes.
The expert has suggested that Turkey have nothing to with the US's war crimes.

53. The law requires this. Everyone must take a driver's license.
 54. Her employer demands this. She must come to work on time.
 55. The committee proposed this. A lawyer should be consulted.
 56. We have demanded this. Karen Fogg should be declared persona non grata.
 57. The doctor urges this. I should stay in bed for a week.

EXERCISE 256

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

This is imperative. Do not smoke near the gasoline tanks.
It is imperative that you (should) not smoke near the gasoline tanks.

58. This is essential. I should see my doctor at once.

59. This is necessary. You must study for an examination.
 60. This is urgent. The police should be notified about the theft.
 61. This is vital. Do not permit them to know our plans.
 62. This is best. Cancel your trip at once.

EXERCISE 257

Ayraç içindeki eylemin uygun şeklini boşluğa yazınız.

The teacher insists that we (be) **be** careful in our writing.

63. They requested that we not (play) the piano _____ after midnight.
 64. The policeman demanded that I (show) _____ him my driver's license.
 65. I suggested that she (see) _____ another doctor.
 66. It is important that you (clean) _____ the rifle carefully
 67. She demanded that her husband (tell) _____ the truth.
 68. It is necessary that everyone (be) _____ quiet.
 69. He insisted that his son (be named) _____ Ali.
 70. It is essential that air pollution (be prevented) _____.

EXERCISE 258

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

He advised **this**. We should not tell **them** the bad news.

He advised that they not be told the bad news.

71. I move **this**. We should adjourn **the meeting**.
 72. We proposed **this**. We should build **a new highway**.
 73. We recommend **this**. We should give **her** the chance to explain the problem.

EXERCISE 259

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

You don't agree with me. It does not mean I am wrong.

The fact that you don't agree with me does not mean I am wrong.

74. He writes about everything. It doesn't mean that everything he writes is true.
 75. There are lots of programs on TV. It does not mean that they are all worth watching.
 76. Many people attend the art course. It proves that the course is interesting.
 77. A pop singer is said to have a love affair. It is irrelevant.
 78. Judy is studying medicine. It indicates that she is a hard working student.
 79. You don't trust anyone. It does not prove that everybody is dishonest.
 80. The people upstairs use their washing machine late at night. It bothers us very much.
 81. That watch costs a fortune. It does not prove its quality.

EXERCISE 260

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

We don't like it. The Bush regime encourages the rich to plunder the poor.

We don't like the fact that the Bush regime encourages the rich to plunder the poor.

82. We regret it. Your letter was misplaced.
83. Are you bothered by it? He keeps interrupting our conversation.
84. You shouldn't object to it. Sean has offered to help.
85. Her family is disturbed by it. Ginger wants to leave school.
86. Neil is encouraged by it. The teacher likes his work.
87. Don't be discouraged by it. Few students have been able to pass that test.
88. Is she aware of it? That school does not offer scholarships to foreign students.
89. The professor won't mind it. The class has become too crowded.
90. We are concerned about it. Most of the students have been absent very often recently,
91. I am delighted by it. Our school won the first prize in physics.

EXERCISE 261

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **Slot-filling** *it* ile yeniden yazınız.

That today's American generals are nothing more than bureaucrats of mass slaughter is a shame.

It is a shame that today's American generals are nothing more than bureaucrats of mass slaughter.

92. That Harry dislikes his job is not much of a surprise.
93. That Harry is unhappy in his marriage is obvious.
94. That he hasn't already had a divorce is surprising.
95. That he has remained married so long amazes me.
96. That he will get a divorce soon is almost certain.
97. That he finds a better-paying job is essential.
98. That he might not make enough to support his family worries us.
99. That few young people take up creative hobbies is a shame.
100. That the Italian and French governments support terrorism should not surprise us.

Chapter 38

WISH CLAUSES DİLEK TÜMCECİKLERİ

WISH eylemi ve THAT-ad iç tümcecikleri



THAT-ad iç tümcecikleri *wish* eyleminin nesnesi olarak kullanıldığından özel bir yapı oluşturur. Bu yapıda THAT-ad iç tümceciğinde sadece past yapılar kullanılabilir. *TO BE*'nin simple past şeklinde sadece *WERE* kullanılır. Yapının iki temel kullanımı vardır.

Şimdiki zamana ya da geleceğe ilişkin istekler	I wish I were a hammer. I wish you would fix the roof.
Geçmişe ilişkin istekler	I wish Noah had swatted his two mosquitoes.



"I wish Noah had swatted his two mosquitoes."

Wish tümcecikleri, anımları gereği "gerçeğe aykırılık" ifade etmektedirler.



WISH tümcezikleri **gerçeğe aykırı durumlar** ifade ederler. İki şekilleri bulunmaktadır:

- A. *Gerçeğe aykırı geniş/şimdiki zaman*
- B. *Gerçeğe aykırı geçmiş zaman*

A.	<p>I wish it weren't raining. Keşke yağmur yağmasa. (Ama正在下雨.)</p> <p>I wish I were a hammer. Keşke bir çekiç olsam. (Ama 我不是一把锤子.)</p> <p>I wish you would fix the roof. Keşke çatıyı tamir etsen. (Ama 你没有修理屋顶.)</p>
B.	<p>I wish Noah had swatted his two mosquitoes. Keşke Nuh Peygamber (gemideki) iki sivrisineği öldürseydi. Ama öldürmedi. Onlar da hâlâ yaşıyip bizi sokuyorlar.</p>



Günümüzde tekil kişilerle WAS kullanma eğilimi giderek güçlenmektedir.

I wish I was a hammer.



Copyright 1996 Randy Glasbergen. www.glasbergen.com

*"Whenever something goes wrong, I just push this little button and restart.
I wish my whole life were like that!"*

EXERCISE 262**THE WISHING WELL**

The Wishing Well in Wonderville Park is a very popular spot for the people of Wonderville. People come, drop in their coins, and hope that their wishes come true.

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde adları geçen Wonderville sakinlerinin hangi dileklerde bulunabileceklerini önekteki gibi saptayınız.

1. Jack is not handsome.
Jack wishes that he were handsome.
2. Lucy's husband drinks too much.
3. Helen wants to marry a rich man.
4. John thinks it was a mistake for him to marry Lucy.
5. George does not have a good car.
6. Tim broke his father's heart.
7. Mike's restaurant does not have many customers.
8. Slim regrets that he has sold his house.
9. Martha has put on too much weight.
10. Mary cannot sing at all.

**DİLEMEK ANLAMINDAKİ WISH**

I wish you a happy new year.

Hope versus Wish

Türkçe'yi göz önüne alarak HOPE ve WISH eylemlerinin benzer anlamları olduğunu düşünebiliriz. Ne var ki HOPE eylemi WISH'in aksine "gerçeğe aykırılık" ifade etmez. Ümit ifade eder. + (Tense'lere dikkat)

I hope that he will come.

I wish that he would come.

EXERCISE 263

Aşağıdaki parçayı okuyunuz ve verilen öbeklerle wish tümcecikleri kurunuz.

WHAT A DAY !

Julia did not feel very energetic when she got up. "I can't stand waiting for the bus," she said to herself. "The train station just seems to be too far away to walk today. I will drive to work."

"I'll be just a little lazy today," she thought. "Let the garbage stay where it is now. I will take it out when I come home after work."

She was very unlucky with the traffic. There had been a terrible traffic accident, and she was stuck in a terrible jam.

She was already tired when she got to the office, so she decided to do her paper work later thinking that they would not be needed. She had a pleasant morning chatting with her friends.

Just before lunch, her boss told her that those papers were needed immediately and gave her some more work to be finished that day. Julia had to stay in the office late.

When she came home, she found her kitchen a mess. The cat had tipped over the garbage pail and made a mess all over the kitchen. It took her more than an hour to tidy up the kitchen.

Just as she was leaving the kitchen, the door bell rang. It was her boss. He told her that she had made some terrible mistakes and asked her to correct them for the meeting the next day.

Julia felt so frustrated that she thought of calling her mother to tell her what had happened. However, she didn't do that, because she knew what her mother would tell her - maybe the thousandth time, "Julia, the laziest work the hardest."

1. drive to work
Julia wishes he hadn't driven to work.
2. be lazy in the morning
3. take the garbage can out
4. unlucky with the traffic
5. do her paper work as soon as she got to the office
6. not chat with her friends
7. not stay in the office late
8. not make mistakes in her paper work

EXERCISE 264

Aşağıdaki durumlarda, kişilerin isteklerini nasıl ifade edeceklerini kararlaştırınız.

1. Jack hopes he gets good grades on his next report card. If he gets good grades, his parents will buy him the computer he has wanted for a long time.
I wish I could get good grades on my next report card.
2. Jack is sick and tired of eating hamburgers every day. He has been eating hamburgers ever since they moved to this city. He wants to eat something decent for his lunches.
3. Ali can never fix anything around the house. His father tells him that he is "all thumbs". If he were good at repairing things, he would be able to help his father.
4. Henry is having a hard time learning Turkish. He would like to have a "better ear" for languages. He has been living in Turkey for six months

now, but he still feels very uncomfortable speaking Turkish. If he had a better ear for languages, he thinks he would be speaking Turkish much better.

5. Jack's alarm clock didn't ring this morning. If it had rung, he wouldn't have been late to class, and if he hadn't been late, the teacher wouldn't have scolded her.



"I wish I had known more about safety rules."

IF ONLY

IF ONLY de *wish* tümcecikleri gibi, geniş, gelecek ve geçmiş zamanlara ait gerçeğe aykırı istekler bildirir.

If only that house belonged to me!

If only I could find a good job.

If only I were your age!

If only my father had not died so young!

EXERCISE 265

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

1. I can't use a computer. I can't find a better job.
If only I could use a computer, I would find a better job.
2. I didn't know you liked classical music. I didn't invite you.
3. You are not telling the truth, so we have problems.
4. The children are making too much noise. I can't get any sleep.
5. I fell asleep, and I missed my favorite TV program.
6. I am not as fit as I was when I was twenty.
7. He told me I looked terrible. Now I feel depressed.
8. Environmental pollution continues. Many species will soon be extinct.



IF ONLY, temel tümcecİYE gerek olmaksızın çok istenilen şeyleri ifade etmekte kullanılır. Sonda kullanılan ünlem işaretİ isteGIN yoğunluğunu işaret etmektedir.

EXERCISE 266

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

1. She speaks too much.
If only she didn't speak so much!
2. We can't put an end to wars.
3. I can't stay here any longer.
4. My boss keeps insulting me.
5. I can't buy a computer.
6. Computers are too expensive for me.
7. I am quite overweight.
8. She never listens to me.

**EXERCISE 267**

Aşağıdaki tümceleri inceleyerek uygun wish tümcecikleri yazınız.

1. Harry did not drive to his work today. He took the bus, and he was late for work.
He wishes he had driven to work.
2. Harry is not a good computer user.
3. Harry did not ask for help, and he couldn't do the work on his own.
4. Harry is out of practice.
5. Harry thinks his boss does not treat him well.
6. Harry accidentally erased some files.
7. Harry would like his boss to respect him more.
8. Harry is terribly absent-minded.
9. Harry's car won't start, and he doesn't know what the problem is.
10. Harry spent too much time proofreading the report.
11. His girl friend's parents do not like Harry.
12. Harry would like to be ten years younger.

EXERCISE 268

Örnektekilere benzer tümceler kurunuz.

There is no way to prevent earthquakes.

I wish there were a way to prevent earthquakes.

We can't predict earthquakes.

I wish we could predict earthquakes.

Helen did not do her holiday shopping last weekend.

I wish she had done her holiday shopping last weekend.

1. I didn't take full advantage of my educational opportunities.
2. You were so impatient with me yesterday.
3. I can't help you with that situation.
4. They were not able to find the cause of the jet engine's malfunction.
5. My sister doesn't know how to cook.
6. My sister broke off the engagement.
7. I wasn't able to attract their attention.
8. She fell in love with a scoundrel.
9. You made a terrible fuss.
10. They take everything so literally!
11. I didn't know what was going on.
12. You embarrassed me in front of my guests.
13. Their marriage isn't working out well.
14. I don't know about computers as much as you do.
15. I didn't take my mother's advice last month, and I have been regretting it ever since.



The child wishes he were at home watching TV.

EXERCISE 269

Aşağıdaki durumlar için **WISH-Clause** tümceleri kurunuz.

1. The leaders of the world are not as concerned as the general population about human survival.
2. Most countries did not care about world resources.
3. Nations of the world cannot live in peace.
4. Arms race began after World War II.
5. Our educational system is not good, so we cannot compete with developed countries.
6. The government cannot manage the economy well.
7. The wealth of the country is poorly distributed.
8. There is no way to stop arms race.
9. Developed countries are as greedy as ever.
10. Corruption in governments cannot be prevented.
11. Nations of the world are not waging war against poverty.
12. The European Union countries harbour terrorists.

EXERCISE 270

OPEC ülkelerinden birinin vatandaşı konuşuyor. Verilen konu başlıklarını hakkında Venezuela vatandaşının neler dileyebileceğini belirlemeye çalışınız.

Venezuela is an OPEC country. In the early 1970s, the rise in oil prices caused drastic changes in our society. We began to import most of our food, clothing, medicine, and machinery. We relied on oil money.

We did not realize the effect of this. We did not plan for the future and spent all our income so quickly.

Today, Venezuela has a large trade deficit and a tremendous national debt. Because of this, inflation is high and the economy is in bad condition.

We produce too few of our products, and what is more disturbing, we are not saving our oil for the future. Our leaders cannot stop this trend.

- the rise in oil prices

I wish the oil prices had not risen so much.

- import most of our food, clothing, medicine and machinery
- rely on oil money
- not realize the effect of importing too much
- not plan for the future
- spend all our income quickly
- have a large trade deficit
- have a tremendous national debt
- inflation high
- produce too few products
- not save oil for the future
- stop this trend



Chapter 39

INDIRECT SPEECH

(Reported Speech)
dolaylı anlatım



*"Our customers are right. You are a lousy cook.
Even dogs don't eat your food."*

Patron, aşçısıyla konuşurken

Even dogs don't eat your food,

diyor. Bu konuşmaya tanık olduğumuzu varsayılmı. Lokanta sahibinin aşçısına söylediğini bir başka kimseye aktarmamız gerekiğinde izlenecek iki yöntem vardır.

1	The boss says to the cook,		"Even dogs don't eat your food.
2	The boss tells the cook	that	even dogs don't eat his food.

Birinci yöntemde patronun sözleri, ağızından çıktıığı şekliyle aktarılıyor. Bunu göstermek için de söylediğleri ("....") işaretleri arasına konuyor. Bu, doğrudan aktarım (dolaysız anlatım=direct speech) yöntemidir.

İkinci yöntemde, patronun aşçuya söylediğleri 3. kişinin ağızından, yani dolaylı olarak aktarılmaktadır. Bu, dolaylı aktarım (*indirect speech/reported speech*=dolaylı anlatım) yöntemidir. Dolaylı anlatımda kişi zamirlerinin nasıl değiştiği görülüyor.

Konuşmanın geçmişte olduğunu vurgulanması için tümcenin eylemi PAST olmalıdır.

- | | | | |
|----------|-------------------------------|-------------|--|
| 3 | The boss TOLD the cook | that | even dogs did not eat his food. |
|----------|-------------------------------|-------------|--|



Charlie Brown, Linus'a, kardeşlerin birbirlerini sevmeyi öğrenebileceğini söylüyor.

Linus, ablası Lucy'e Charlie Brown'un söylediğlerini aktarıyor.



Charlie says that brothers and sisters can learn to get along.

Charlie says that brothers and sisters can get along the same way mature adults get along.

Charlie says that adults can get along the same way nations get along.

Yukarıda verilen örneklerde dolaylı anlatım tümcelerinin ad içtümceciği taşıdığı görülüyor. Aslında da buyruk tümcelerinin aktarımı dışında diğer tümcelerin dolaylı anlatıma aktarılması, konuşucunun ağzından çıkan tümcelerin ad içtümceciği haline sokulmasını gerektirmektedir.

The boss	said	something.
The boss	said	THAT even dogs did not eat his food.

The boss	told	the cook	something.
The boss	told	the cook	THAT even dogs did not eat his food.

☞ Günlük dil kullanımında **THAT** bağlacı düşmektedir.

DOLAYSIZ ANLATIMDAN DOLAYLI ANLATIMA AKTARIMDA OLUŞAN DEĞİŞİKLİKLER

A WORD
Emily Dickinson

*A word is dead
When it is said,
Some say.*

*I say it just
Begins to live
That day.*

Yukarıdaki şiirde dolaylı aktarımda herhangi bir değişiklik yapılmadığını görüyoruz:

*Some say that a word is dead when it is said, but I
say that it begins to live that day.*



*The boy says that his teddy bear wants chocolate.
The boy tells me that his teddy bear wants chocolate.
The boy said that he his teddy bear wanted chocolate.
The boy told me that his teddy bear wanted chocolate.*

Dolaysız anlatım, dolaylı anlatıma çevrilirken yapılan değişiklikleri 5 bölükte toplayabiliriz.

1	Tense değişmeleri
2	Zamir değişmeleri
3	Zaman zarfı değişmeleri
4	Yer zarfı değişmeleri
5	Diğer değişimeler

1. Tense Değişiklikleri

Yukarıdaki örneklerde iki giriş eylemi kullandık: **SAY** ve **TELL**. Tense değişmeleri, tümcenin giriş eyleminin "tense"ine bağlı olarak gerçekleşmektedir.

GİRİŞ EYLEMİ

Charlie Brown	says is saying will say will be saying might say has said has been saying	that he likes his sister.
---------------	--	---------------------------

Göründüğü gibi giriş eylemi aşağıdaki tenselerden birinde ise dolaylı anlatımda herhangi bir tense değişikliğine gerek olmamaktadır.

Simple Present Tense
Present Continuous Tense
Future Tense
Future Continuous Tense
Present Perfect Tense
Present Perfect Continuous Tense



GİRİŞ EYLEMİ PAST İSE YAPILMASI GEREKEN DEĞİŞİKLİKLER: "bir derece past"



Henry said, " I have tried everything to save my marriage."

Henry	says	THAT he has tried everything to save his marriage.
Henry	said	THAT he had tried everything to save his marriage.

Giriş eylemi *SAID* iken, yani "past" iken Henry'nin "present perfect tense"teki tümcesi "past perfect tense" çevrilmiş, yani "bir derece past" yapılmıştır..

1. Tense ve Modal Değişiklikleri

Genel olarak tense değişiminde dolaylı anlatıma aktarılacak tümcenin "bir derece past" yapılma ilkesinden söz edilir. Aşağıdaki tablo bu ilkeyi sergiliyor.

Dolaysız Anlatım		Dolaylı Anlatım
Simple Present	→	Simple Past
Present Continuous	→	Past Continuous
Future Tense (Simple)	→	would
Future Tense (be going to)	→	was/were going to
Present Perfect Past Perfect	→	Past Perfect
Past Continuous Past Perfect Continuous	→	Past Perfect Continuous

DIRECT	HE SAYS (THAT) ...	HE SAID (THAT) ...
works	works	worked
is working	is working	was working
was working	was working	was working had been working
worked	worked	worked had worked
has worked	has worked	had worked
has been working	has been working	had been working
will work	will work	would work

KİP BELİRTECİ (MODAL) DEĞİŞİKLİKLERİ

Dolaysız Anlatım		Dolaylı Anlatım
will	→	would
can	→	could
must	→	must, had to, would have to
may	→	might
have to	→	had to
could	→	could, had been able to
Shall I ...?	→	I should ...

DEĞİŞİME UĞRAMAYAN KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ
should, might, ought to, had better, used to



"It says we should travel more and meet new people."

2. Zamir Değişiklikleri

Konuşmanın aktarılmasında, konuşmayı aktaran ile konuşması aktarılan kişi arasındaki ilişkiye göre doğal olarak zamirler değişecektir.



Charlie Brown said, "I like my sister."

Charlie Brown said that he liked his sister.

I → he

my → his

Charlie Brown'ın söylediğini, kızkardeşi bir başkasına aktarırsa ne diyecektir?



Charlie said that he liked me.

3. Zaman Zarfı Değişiklikleri

today	→	that day, the same day
yesterday	→	the day before the previous day
the day before yesterday	→	two days before
two days ago	→	two days before two days earlier

two days ago	→	two days before two days earlier
tomorrow	→	the following day the next day the day after
the day after tomorrow	→	in two days' time
last week last month last year	→	the month before the previous month the preceding month
next week next month next year	→	the following week a week later
in two days in two weeks	→	two days from then two weeks from then
now	→	then

4. Yer Zarfı Değişiklikleri

here	→	there
------	---	-------

5. Diğer Değişiklikler

this	→	that
these	→	those
this (pronoun)	→	it
these (pronoun)	→	them
come	→	go

Tümce türlerinin gerektirdiği giriş eylemleriyle her türün dolaylı anlatıma aktarılış şekillerini de tablo halinde gösterelim:

Dolaysız Anlatım Direct Speech	Dolaylı Anlatım Indirect Speech	Giriş Eylemleri
Düz Tümceler (Statements)		
He says, "I am ready." He said, "I am ready."	He says that he is ready. He said that he was ready.	SAY, TELL announce, add, complain, explain, report, report, shout, etc.
Evet/Hayır Soruları (Yes/No Questions)		
He says, "Are you tired?" He said, "Are you tired?"	He asks me if I am tired. He asked me if I was tired.	ASK, want to know, wonder, enquire

He says, "Where is Ed?" He said, "Where is Ed?"	He asks me where Ed is. He asked me where Ed was.	ASK, want to know, wonder,
--	--	----------------------------

Buyruk Tümceleri ve Ricular (Commands and Requests)

He says, "Eat less." He said, "Eat less."	He tells me to eat less. He told me to eat less.	TELL, ASK, WANT advise, beg, command, instruct, order, recommend, remind, warn
--	---	--

Ünlemler (Interjections)

He says, "What a day!"	He said that it was a hectic day.	SAY, TELL, complain, report, shout, etc.
------------------------	-----------------------------------	--



She said she was going to fix the leaky faucet.

He said that he could type 120 words a minute.

He said that he didn't have any money.



He said that he had lost all his wealth on the stock market.

Jack told Barbara that he would wash the dishes.

Ecevit said that he had answered all the questions.



The palm reader told him that he would be rich.

He said that his teddy bear wanted chocolate.

Her boss told Lucy that she was fired.

DEĞİŞMELERİ GÖSTEREN ÖRNEKLER**DÜZ TÜMCELER (STATEMENTS) ZÄ AN VE YER ZARFLARI**

He said, "I like my sister."	He said (that) he liked his sister.
He said, "I hate liars."	He said (that) he hated liars.
He said, "I am working."	He said (that) he was working.
He said, "Our new computer may come tomorrow."	He said (that) their new computer might come the next day.
He said, "My brother will have an operation tonight."	He said (that) his brother would have an operation that night.
He said, "I would prefer reading to watching TV."	He said (that) he would prefer reading to watching TV.
He said, "We might lose this."	He said (that) they might lose that.
He said, "I can understand you."	He said (that) he could understand me.
He said, "I could do this."	He said (that) he could do that.
He said, "I ought to leave now."	He said (that) he ought to leave then.
He said, "I bought a Macintosh yesterday."	He said (that) he had bought a Macintosh the day before.
He said, "I have repaired this."	He said (that) he had repaired that.
He said "I would retire now if I could."	He said (that) he would retire then if he could.
He said, "Honesty is the best policy."	He said (that) honesty is the best policy.
He said, "I was in hospital last week."	He said (that) he had been in hospital the week before.
The boss said, "We might be finished later today."	The boss said that they might be finished later that day.
The teacher said, "We will visit library today."	The teacher said that they would visit the library that day.
The housewife said, "I bought this dishwasher only the day before yesterday, and it is already out of order."	The housewife said that she had only bought that dishwasher two days before, and that it was already out of order.
The captain said, "The offensive will begin the day after tomorrow."	The captain told that the offensive would begin in two days' time.
He said, "I first went abroad a year ago".	He said that he had first gone abroad the previous year.
The black writer said, "White people treat us as though we were still slaves."	The black writer said that white people treated them as though they were still slaves.
She said, "I'm exhausted. It is time we stopped working."	She said she was exhausted and it was time they stopped working.

SAY ve TELL dışında giriş eylemleri

Dolaylı anlatımda farklı anlam vurgulamalarını göstermek için pek çok eylem giriş eylemi olarak kullanılmaktadır.

*"Will you erase the damaged files?" my boss asked.
I assured my boss that I would erase the damaged files.*

*"The computer seems to be out of order," said I.
I pointed out that the computer seemed to be out of order.*

*"The coffee is too cold," said the customer.
The customer complained that the coffee was too cold.*

Düz Tümceler	Sorular	Buyruklar
answer	remind	ASK
boast	reply	enquire
claim	retort	want to know
declare	SAY	
explain	state	
mumble	suggest	
point out	TELL	
promise	threaten	
protest	warn	



Evet/Hayır Soruları (YES/NO QUESTIONS)

He said, "Is it time to take my medicine?"	He asked the nurse if it was time to take his medicine.
He said, "Am I going to die?"	The patient asked the doctor if he was going to die.
'Did Christopher Columbus really kill many Indians?' asked my friend.	My friend asked me if Christopher Columbus had really killed many Indians.
'Did the CIA assassinate Martin Luther King?' asked my friend.	My friend wanted to know if the CIA had assassinated Martin Luther King.



Jack asked Lucy if she would marry him.



She asked Bush if he was going to invade Vietnam again.



She asked Jack if he had taken an aspirin.

Where is the post office?
When does the next bus come?
Who is that man over there?
How much do those books cost on sale?

Could you tell me

where the post office is?

Do you know

when the next bus comes?

Who knows

who that man over there is?

Can you tell me

how much those books cost on sale?



Our budget has been cut. Tell our research and development people to stop cloning sheep and start cloning money!

SORU SÖZCÜKLÜ SORULAR (QW-QUESTIONS)

He said, "Where did you hide the money?"	The detective asked the burglar where he had hidden the money.
He said, "Who broke this vase?"	He asked the boy who had broken the vase.
He said, "What time is it?"	He asked Ayşe what time it was.
"Can I take another candy?" asked Helen.	Helen asked if she could take another candy.
"May I use computer?" Helen asked her friend.	Helen asked her friend if she might use her computer.
"Which software do you use the most?" enquired the manager.	The manager enquired which software he used the most.



Tom asked Helen what she was reading.



Bill asked Jack where he could get a good haircut.



The woman asked him why the apples were so expensive.

Buyruk Tümcceleri ve Ricalar (Commands and Requests)



They told their son to get his hair cut.



Mrs. Smith told the students to be quiet.



Mrs. Smith told the students not to write on the desk.



The worker told Bill not to sit on the beach.

He said, "Be careful with the gun."

He told the boy to be careful with the gun.

He said, "Let's do it."

He suggested to us (that) we should do it.

He said, "Don't be foolish."

He told her not to be foolish.

He said, "Don't eat mushrooms."

He told us not to eat mushrooms.

He said, "Please come with me."

He asked her to go with him.

He said, "Would you lend me \$100?"

He asked his friend to lend him \$100.

"Please wait here until your name is called," said the secretary.

The secretary asked him to wait there until his name was called.



He asked his mother to give him a handful of candies.



"I don't need a wife. My Mom tells me what to do!"

ÖZEL DURUMLAR

-
1. **Kimi zaman buyruk tümceleri WAS/WERE NOT TO ile dolaylı anlatıma aktarılabilir.**

Tom said to his father, "Your business will be in good hands while you are in the hospital. Don't worry."

Tom told his father that his business would be in good hands while he was in the hospital and that he wasn't to worry.

-
2. **Buyruk tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarılırken taşıdığı anlama uygun giriş eylemleri kullanılabilir.**

"Please give me ten dollars," the boy said to his mother.

The boy **begged** his mother to give him ten dollars.

The boss said, "Check the oil."

The boss **instructed** the mechanic to check the oil.

"You will not forget to erase the damaged files, will you?" said the boss.

The boss **reminded** the computer expert to erase the damaged files.

ÜNLEMLER (INTERJECTIONS)

Ünlem tümcelerinin dolaylı anlatıma çevrilmesinde anlama uygun eylem ve sıfatlar seçilir.

John: Good heavens! You look terrible!

Jack: Yes. I know I do. I've just had a fight with my boss.

When John met Jack, he exclaimed in surprise and told him that he looked terrible. Jack agreed with him and said that he knew he did: he then explained that it was because he had just had a fight with his boss.

"Wonderful! I have won the first prize!" exclaimed Helen.

Helen was delighted to find that she had won the first prize.

"Oh, dear! It looks as if we are losing the match," said the coach.

The coach was afraid that they were going to lose the match.

"What a lovely computer!" the boy exclaimed.

The boy exclaimed that it was a lovely computer.

"Thank you," the old lady said.

The old lady thanked the boy.

"Have a safe journey back home!" they said.

They wished us a safe journey back home.

"Ugh! I can't stand the sight of oysters," said his wife.

Her wife gave an exclamation of disgust and complained that she hated oysters.

öneriler, uyarilar, söz verme ve tehditler

"I promise to help you if you ever need a software developer," said Bill.
Bill promised to help us if we ever needed a software developer.

"Don't buy this computer; it is as slow as snails," said Helen.

My friend warned me against buying that computer because it was as slow as snails.

My friend warned me not to buy that computer because it was as slow as snails.

My friend warned me that I shouldn't buy that computer because it was as slow as snails.

"You look grossly overweight; I think you should go on a diet immediately," said the doctor.

The doctor advised the patient to go on a diet immediately because he was grossly overweight.



"Let's buy a new computer," said Jack.

Jack suggested that we should buy a new computer.

Jack suggested their buying a new computer.

"If you gamble again, I will have you removed from my will," said the old man to his son.

The old man threatened his son that he would remove him from his will if he gambled again.

SAY US. TELL



Tell my Dad that you are a brain surgeon.

Düz tümcelerin dolaylı anlatıma aktarılmasında kullanılan en yaygın iki giriş eylemi SAY ve TELL'dir. SAY genellikle bir tümcenin kime söylendiğinin belirtilmediği durumlarda kullanılır. Dolaylı anlatımında SAY TO SOMEONE kullanımı oldukça kısıtlıdır.

He said that he had done nothing wrong.

He said TO ME that he had done nothing wrong. (Yaygın değil) TELL eylemi mutlaka bir dolaylı nesne gerektirir.

He told ME that he had done nothing wrong.

TELL eylemi VERB + SOMEONE +TO DO SOMETHING kalibiyla, buyruk tümcelerinin dolaylı anlatıma aktarılmasında da kullanılır. SAY bu kalıpta kullanılamaz.

EXERCISE 271

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda SAY ve TELL eylemlerinin doğru şekillerini kullanınız.

1. Benjamin Franklin _____ a small leak will sink a great ship.
2. Should I _____ you who is responsible for all this confusion?
3. I _____ my boss that I had not been able to finish the report.
4. What did he _____ about his latest job?
5. If he calls, please _____ him I will be out all day long.
6. They _____ to me that they had no opening in the company.
7. What else can I _____?
8. Could you please _____ me what the problem is?
9. Helen _____ me all about the project. She _____ that it had been a disaster.
10. A coach always _____ his team to work harder.
11. James Oppenheim _____ that the foolish man seeks happiness in the distance
12. Please don't _____ me that you can't help me.
13. All right, I _____ you what, the car's yours for, let's _____ , £500.
14. Experts _____ this painting is a fake Picasso.
15. When I see a clever advertisement, I _____ to myself, "What lies are they _____ this time?"
16. Most people _____ that tea is best if it is made in a china tea-pot.

17. I'll try to teach my parrot to ____ a few words.
18. Some people ____ it's cruel to keep animals in captivity.
19. Parents often ____ their children that some things are too difficult for children to understand.
20. How on earth am I going to ____ my family that I have failed again?



*"But you just said to clean my room.
Not my closet, too."*

Günlük kullanımda SAY, **tell someone to do something** kalıbında, **someone** zamiri olmaksızın kullanılabilmektedir.

YOU	TOLD ME	TO CLEAN MY ROOM.
YOU	SAID	TO CLEAN MY ROOM.

Ali ile Veli derste. Öğretmen konuşuyor.

TEACHER: Answer only three of the questions.

Ali: What did he say? I didn't hear what he said.

Veli: He SAID to answer only three of the questions.

DOLAYLI ANLATIMA GENEL BİR BAKIŞ

Dilin temel amacı iletişimini sağlamaktır. Dilde oluşan kurallar da bu amaca ulaşmayı sağlayacak kurallardır. Dolaylı anlatımında örneğin, giriş eyleminin PAST olması durumunda aktarılan tümcenin eyleminin de PAST yapılması kuralı, bir sağlıklı iletişim sağlaması kaygısından kaynaklanmaktadır. Jack, şöyle bir tümce yapmış olsun.

I bought a computer yesterday.

Tom da bu tümceyi bir başkasına aktarmak istesin. Genel kurala göre değişiklikleri yapılarak tümceyi söyle kuracaktır.

Jack said that he had bought a computer the previous day.

Eğer Tom bu aktarma işini, Jack'in tümceyi söylediği aynı günde yapmış ise iletişimde bir aksama söz konusu olacaktır. Çünkü gerçekle Jack'in tümcesindeki YESTERDAY, hâlâ YESTERDAY konumundadır. O halde Tom, iletişimde bir şekilde sağlamak için aktarma içinde tense değişiklerini yapmamayı söyleyecektir.

Jack said that he bought a computer yesterday.

Bir başka örnek:

Jack: What did the conductor say?

Harry: He said that the next stop is Times Square.

Burada Jack ile kondiktörün konuşması ile, Jack'in bu konuşmayı Harry'e aktarması hemen hemen aynı zamanda olmaktadır. Bir sonraki durak hâlâ Times Square'dır.

Bir diğer örnek:

The experts said that several earthquakes might occur next month.

Burada da "next month" hâlâ "next month" durumundayken tense değişikliği yapılmamıştır. Bütün bu örneklerde bakarak dilbilgisi kitaplarında verilen genel kuralların özel durumlara uymayabileceğini anımsamak yararlı olacaktır.



"A phone message should say who called and who it was for."

BİR METİNDE SÖYLENENLERİN AKTARILMASI

Bir metinde söylenenlerin aktarılmasında kullanılan simple present tense'tir. Kullanılan eylem çoğu zaman SAY'dır. SOMEONE SAYS yapısı tümcelerin başında değil, farklı konumlarda yer alır.

Best Buy Says Water Is Equal to Paste for Cleaning Teeth

For cleaning teeth, water on the brush works just as well as toothpaste, *Best Buy*, the consumer's magazine, says in its current issue. Almost the only reason for buying toothpaste is that it seems to encourage people to brush their teeth, the journal says. The important thing is to brush teeth not sideways but up and down at least once a day.

GİRİŞ EYLEMİNİN "PAST" OLMASINA KARŞIN "TENSE" DEĞİŞİKLİĞİ YAPILMAYACAK DURUMLAR

I. BE eylemi nadiren past perfect tense'e dönüşür.

The little boy said, "I was afraid of death."

The little boy said that he was afraid of death.

II. Vecizleşmiş sözler, ya da evrensel doğruları ifade eden tümceler "tense" değişikliğine uğramazlar.

Nikita Khrushchev said, "Politicians are the same all over. They promise to build a bridge even where there is no river."

Nikita Khrushchev said that politicians are the same all over and added that they promise to build a bridge even where there is no river.

Socrates said, "I was really too honest a man to be a politician and live."

Socrates said that he was really too honest a man to be a politician and live.

Francis Bacon said, "Natural abilities are like natural plants; they need pruning by study."

Francis Bacon said that natural abilities are like natural plants, and that they need pruning by study.

III. Aktarılan sözün içinde bulunulan anda da geçerliliği sürüyorsa "tense" değişikliği yapılmayabilir.

He said, "The capital city of Turkey is Ankara."

He said that *the capital city of Turkey is Ankara*.

John Abbot said, "War is the science of destruction."

John Abbot said that *war is the science of destruction*.

IV. Koşul tümcelerinde TYPE II ve TYPE III "tense" değişikliğine uğramadan dolayı anlatımında yer alırlar.

Soame Jenyns said, "If Christian nations were nations of Christians there would be no wars."

Soame Jenyns said that if Christian nations were nations of Christians there would be no wars.

He said, "I would visit the Anatolian Civilizations Museum if I went to Ankara."

He said that he would visit Anatolian Civilizations Museum if he went to Ankara.

"I'd be really pleased," said Lucy to me, "if you could find the time to help me."

Lucy said that she would be really pleased if I could find the time to help her.



The inventor said that he would invent a light-operated computer if someone financed the project.

Mucit, projesi desteklense ışıkla çalışan bir bilgisayar yapacağını söyledi. (Mucit, hâlâ projesini destekleyen birini bekliyor.)

The inventor said that he would have invented a light-operated computer if someone had financed the project.

Mucit, projesi desteklenmiş olsaydı, geçmişte ışıkla çalışan bir bilgisayar yapmış olacağını söyledi.

V. Tarihsel gerçekler ve durumlar "simple past" ile ifade edilir; dolaylı anlatımda da aynı "tense" te kullanılırlar.

"The Opium Wars (1839-42, 1856-60) showed clearly that England and France were ruthless imperialistic power," said the historian.

The historian said that the Opium Wars (1839-42, 1856-60) showed clearly that England and France were ruthless imperialistic powers.

"Hundreds of those of American Indians were massacred by the American governments," said the Indian chief.

The Indian chief said that hundreds of those of American Indians were massacred by the American governments.

VI. Simple past ya da past continuous tümcecikler WHEN / WHILE bağlaçlarıyla yapılan zarf cümlecikleri aldığında "tense" değişikliğine uğramadan dolaylı anlatımda kullanılırlar.

"The driver was talking on his mobile telephone when he ran into a tree," said the policeman.

I said that they were playing poker when I got there.

"The priests were discussing whether angels were males or females when Fatih sieged Constantinapolis," he said.

He said that the priests were discussing whether angels were males or females when Fatih sieged Istanbul.

VII. Simple past tense ile anlatılan bir öykü dolaylı anlatıma aktarılırken çoğunlukla tense değişikliğine uğramaz.

Among many other things, Benjamin Franklin was also an inventor. He was one of 17 children, all of whom were expected to help support the large Franklin household. As a young child, he worked in the shop of his father, a soap and candle-maker, but this work did not appeal to a boy who loved to read and study. Therefore, when he was 12, Benjamin was sent to assist his half - brother James who had a printing shop. There, surrounded by books, young Ben would often stay up late into the night reading on a wide range of subjects.

VIII. Konuşucu ile konuşmayı aktaran kişi açısından kullanılan zaman ifadeleri aynı zamanı işaret ediyorsa tense değişikliği gerekmez.

(Hem Mr. Işıkara hem de konuşmayı aktarıcı aynı zamanda Dinar'dalar. Aktarıcı konuşmayı aynı saatlerde aktarıyor.)

Mr. Işıkara said,	"There was a devastating earthquake here in Dinar	yesterday." last week." on the 23th." a month ago." in 1999."
Mr. Işıkara said	that there was a devastating earthquake here in Dinar	yesterday. last week. on the 23th. a month ago. in 1999.

Şimdi şu örneğe bakalım:

 Aktarıcı Dinar'da değil. Mr. Işıkara'nın konuşmasını bir hafta sonra aktarıyor. Artık Mr. Işıkara ile aktarıcının zaman göndermeleri uyuşmuyor.

Mr. Işıkara said on television last week that there'd been a devastating earthquake there in Dinar the month before.

BİRDEN ÇOK TÜMCENİN DOLAYLI ANLATIMA AKTARILMASI

İnsanlar nadiren tek tek tümcelerle konuşur ya da yazar. Çoğu zaman tümceler birbirlerini izler. Bu nedenle kimi tümcelerde kısaltmalar yapılır. Böyle konuşmaları ya da metinleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarırken anlamanın verilebilmesi için değişik giriş eylemlerinin yanısıra bazı eklemeler ve yapısal değişiklikler de gerekebilir.

"Look, Jack , here is our chance, " **said** George. "Let's join the racing team. We are the best drivers around here. Don't you think we can easily beat all the rest? Come on, if we miss this opportunity, we may never be able to do anything good with ourselves."

George **suggested** to Jack that they should join the racing team. He **declared** that they were the best drivers around then and **asked** him if they wouldn't easily be able to beat the others. He **urged** that they should seize the opportunity because it could be their last chance to do anything good with themselves.

EXERCISE 272

Kutudaki giriş eylemlerini kullanarak aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız. ALLOW gibi bazı eylemlerin ALLOW SOMEONE TO DO SOMETHING kalıbında kullanıldığını anımsayınız.

admit	beg	complain	explain
offer	promise	remember	remind
threaten	warn		

1. "Look here," the gangster said. "If you don't start talking, I will hit you."
2. "It's not fair," said Lucy. "Why does the company have to treat me so badly? These sort of things never happen to anybody else."
3. "Oh, it's just occurred to me," said Jack. "I have a paper due tomorrow."
4. "You remember how to start the machine, don't you?" Kate said. "Just press the green button."
5. "Of course, I'll never be able to prove it," the detective said, "but I bet it was the politician himself who set his house on fire."
6. Mr. Caldwell said to his wife, "If you like, I'll feed the children and put them to bed, and then you can finish your report."
7. "O.K., I have made a mistake," said the typist.
8. "Mr. Caldwell," said the mayor's assistant, "under no circumstances will you be allowed to see the mayor. For the last time I'm asking you to leave this office at once."
9. "You are crazy if you use this machine before it has been properly serviced," the mechanic said.
10. "I give you my word," said his friend "that I will keep your secret."
11. Jones!" said the detective. "Drop that gun at once!"
12. "Please, please say you'll help me," my brother said. 'I'll do anything you want, but please help me with my homework.'"
13. "All right. Those who have finished their work may go home," said the boss.
14. "Don't go too near the edge ,," said the guide. "You can easily slip there if you're not careful and that can be quite dangerous."

EXERCISE 273

Kutudaki giriş eylemlerini kullanarak aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

advise	ask	command	beg
direct	instruct	order	suggest
urge	want		

1. The policeman said to the driver, "Stop!"
2. The stewardess said to the passenger, "Please speak slowly."

3. The robber said to us, "Don't move a finger."
4. The director said, "Please come in."
5. The doctor said to the patient, "You must stay in bed."
6. The lawyer said to thief, "Don't say a word to the police."
7. "Swimming is not good for you," the doctor said to the patient.
8. "Let's not quarrel anymore over little things," my sister said to me.
9. The Safety Council say to all ocean swimmers, "Keep an eye on the waves and dive under the big ones."
10. "Please, forgive me, officer!" the pickpocket said to the police officer.

EXERCISE 274

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız. Bu tümcelerin dolaylı anlatıma aktarımında "tense" değişikliği yapılmaması gerekligine dikkat ediniz.

We were about to finish the work when the lights went out. He (explain) ...

He explained that they were about to finish the work when the lights went out.

1. Hazreti Ali was stabbed to death while he was praying to God. The historian (say) _____
2. You wouldn't be so fat if you didn't eat too much. The doctor (point out) _____
3. If fishermen did not use drift-nets, fewer seals, dolphins and sea birds would die. A marine expert (explain) _____
4. The gorilla grabbed his tie while he was feeding him. The zoo keeper (explain) _____
5. Cancer of the stomach was an extremely common form of cancer 30 years ago. The nutrition expert (say) _____
6. The Jewish people were mercilessly prosecuted in Europe. The teacher (explain) _____
7. Lord Byron hated Turks. The teacher (say) _____
8. I was looking for something in the attic when I found an antique pistol. The housewife (say) _____
9. Graham Bell invented the telephone. He (insist) _____
10. Whales have the power to talk to each other. The biologist (claim) _____
11. The Vikings were fishermen before they became pirates. The historian (explain) _____
12. When we entered the bar, everybody was fighting. The policeman (say) _____
13. While I was doing my homework, my brother never gave me a moment of peace. Helen (complain) _____
14. I wouldn't buy this computer if I knew it was so slow. The student (say) _____
15. You shouldn't forget to take your pills. The doctor (tell the patient) _____

EXERCISE 275

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

"Would you bring something to eat when you come to office?" said Tom to his wife. "I am as hungry as a wolf."

Helen asked John to bring something to eat when he came to office. She said she was as hungry as a wolf.

1. Frank ran up to the policeman. "My car's been stolen," he gasped.
2. "It was most unwise," the policeman said to me, "to insult a police officer like that. You will have to pay a fine."
3. "Do not lean out of the window," said his mother.
4. "I wish we had brought some lighter clothes with us," said Helen. "Mersin is much hotter than I expected."
5. "The trouble with everybody in this office," James said to his friend, "is that nobody can speak up and say what he really thinks."
6. When Jack arrived home from school, he looked very ill. "Go to bed at once," ordered his mother. "You look like death warmed up! Whatever's wrong with you?"
7. "Have you any idea where Peter goes every night?" Mrs. Dibble said to his wife. "He comes awfully late and he is unusually silent. I'm getting worried about him."
8. "At least," said I, "I can say I have really done my best to help you."
9. "My computer is awfully out-dated," Jack said to his father. "Will you buy me a new one?"
10. "If ever we were to win a big prize in the National Lottery," my mother said the other day, "We shouldn't buy anything for ourselves. We should give all the money to charity."
11. The hostess stopped the old man as he was getting up out of his seat, and said: "We're going to take off in a moment or so, sir. Would you please sit down again and fasten your seat belt." She looked at his cigarette and frowned. "I'm afraid that you will have to stop smoking too, sir. Smoking is no longer allowed on the aircraft."
12. Mrs. Taylor (on the telephone): "This is Lucy Taylor. I have an appointment with Dr. Wilde at six o'clock tomorrow. I'm awfully sorry but I simply have to cancel it. My grandmother died today, and I have to go to Chicago to attend the funeral. Please tell Dr. Wilde how sorry I am."
13. "They weren't at home," said the boy. "I rang and rang, but there was no sign of life in the house."
14. "Have you seen the children's room?" said Mrs. Taylor to her husband hysterically. "Have we produced a race of barbarians? Everything breakable has been broken. There might have been some sort of civil war there!"

EXERCISE 276

Helen 'in George 'a yaptığı önerileri *SUGGEST* eylemini kullanarak aktarınız.

Let's buy a Mac.

He suggested that we should buy a Mac.

1. Why don't we eat at home?
2. Let's stop quarreling.
3. How about throwing a party?
4. Why not move to a small town?
5. We'd better stay away from crowded places.
6. Why don't we take up bird-watching as a hobby?
7. Why don't we go swimming?
8. It might be a good idea to invest in the stock market.



**"The trouble with this company is nobody wants
to accept responsibility for anything.
But don't tell anyone I said that!"**

EXERCISE 277**THE JOB INTERVIEW**

David had a job interview yesterday. The interview lasted fifteen minutes, and he was asked a number of questions.

Aşağıdaki soruları dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

What is your name?

The interviewer asked David what his name was.



1. Where were you born?
2. How old are you?
3. Where do you live?
4. Do you have a driving license?
5. What is your educational background?
6. Have you taken any courses on computer programming?
7. Have you ever written a computer program?
8. Are you willing to work overtime?

10. Have you ever been fired?
11. What languages can you speak?
12. Why do you want to quit your present job ?
13. Will you be willing to move to another city ?
14. Have you ever been chosen employee of the year ?
15. Why have you had five different jobs in the past two years ?



EXERCISE 278

Aşağıdaki diyalogu okuyunuz ve Bob ile Steve Jobs arasında geçen konuşmada Bob'un söylediklerini tamamlayınız.

- Tom: Hi, Bob. How was the job interview yesterday? How did it go?
- Bob: I think that it went well, but I'm not sure whether I've got the job. They're still interviewing a few more candidates. There are so many people looking for jobs these days."
- Tom: Well, tell me about the interview. Who did you talk to? What kinds of questions did they ask?"
- Bob: I talked with Bill Gates. Of course, he asked me how much experience I had had and why I wanted to work with them. I told him about my work as a software developer in ThinkNow. I said I had been working there for ten years. I also told him that I received a huge salary. Then he wanted to know why I was quitting my job.
- Tom: What did you say to him?
- Bob: Well, I told him about my marriage plans. I said that my fiancee refused to leave New York and added that that was why I wanted the new job in New York.
- Tom: Did he ask anything else?
- Bob: He asked me when I could start working for them if I was given the job? And I told him I could begin as soon as I notified ThinkNow.

Bob'un Steve Jobs'a söylediklerini yazınız.

Steve Jobs: Have you got any experience as a software developer?

Bob:

Steve Jobs: _____

How long have you been working in ThinkNow?

- Steve Jobs: How long have you been working in ThinkNow?
 Bob: _____
- Steve Jobs: Are you pleased with your salary?
 Bob: _____
- Steve Jobs: Why do you want to quit your job?
 Bob: _____
- Steve Jobs: When can you start working for us if you are given the job?
 Bob: _____

EXERCISE 279

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1. Mr. Taylor said that his wife would be glad to get rid of him.
2. He said that he didn't suppose she would give him a divorce.
3. His wife told him that he might as well forget about a divorce.
4. Mr. Taylor said that he wished she would let him tell her about it.
5. He said that he wanted to get rid of her so he could marry his stenographer.
6. Mrs. Taylor said that they had been all over that before.
7. She said that she had known all along that he wanted to divorce her.
8. She said that she was always two steps ahead of what he was thinking.
9. Mr. Taylor told her that his secretary wanted him to get a divorce.
10. His wife answered that that was his problem, and that he would never get a divorce.
11. She said that he was just getting himself worked up over nothing.
12. He told her that he had made up his mind to marry her and that she would not be able to stop him.
13. She said that they would see about that.
14. Mr. Taylor said that he had never found happiness in that house.
15. His wife told him that if he had looked in the right place, he would have found it.

EXERCISE 280

Dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1. The dean said, "All the students have repaid their loans."
The dean said all the students had repaid their loans.
2. Mrs. Harris said, "I haven't been able to find the catalog."
3. Mr. Wilson said, "My wife has enrolled in a French course."
4. The dressmaker said, "All the needles have disappeared."
5. The librarian said, "None of the books has been returned."
6. Margaret said, "Someone has borrowed my bilingual dictionary."
7. The police officer said, "The motorcycles haven't been repaired."
8. Nick said, "I've read the whole newspaper."

EXERCISE 281

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

"Will the USA attack Iran after Iraq?" Everybody (wonder)

Everybody is wondering whether the USA will attack Iran after Iraq.

1. Has the United States used biological weapons in Iraq?
 2. Will the US ever stop intervening in other nations' internal affairs?
 3. Can antibiotics cure all diseases?
 4. Does an octopus attack all divers?
 5. Is the height that can be reached by airplanes still increasing?
 6. Can people recognize the sound of their own voices?
 7. Does noise shorten one's life?
 8. Will scientist be ever able to cure AIDS?
-

EXERCISE 282

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1. George asked his teacher, "When was Martin Luther King assassinated?"
 2. Helen asked Tom, "Is star-gazing an enjoyable hobby?"
 3. The students said to the scientist, "Do you think that extra-terrestrial intelligence exists?"
 4. I asked the doctor, "Are the eyes of human beings sensitive to all light?"
 5. Everybody asks geologists, "Is it possible to predict earthquakes accurately?"
 6. I asked him, "Do lie detectors really detect lies?"
 7. We asked him, "When did the Olympic Games originate?"
 8. Somebody asked the teacher, "Since when has the United States been an imperialistic country?"
 9. The journalist asked the American minister, "Why did the United States attack Iraq?"
 10. She asked me, "How did Alfred Nobel become a rich man?"
-

EXERCISE 283

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaysız anlatıma aktarınız.



1. I told my son to get his hair cut.
I said, "Get your hair cut."
2. They asked us not to wait for them.
They said, "Please don't wait for us."
3. We told him not to worry about it.
4. She asked me not to lie to her.
5. I told him to use his imagination.

6. We told them to behave themselves.
7. I asked her not to be late.
8. He told me to take it easy.
9. She told him to go sleep.
10. I asked them to turn off the radio.
11. She asked me to forgive her.
12. We told him not to give up his job.
13. I asked her not to be angry.
14. He told me not to sympathize with Jack.
15. They asked us to promise to visit them.

EXERCISE 284

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1. Teacher: "Don't lie to me." (*She told Charles*)
Student: *She told Charles not to lie to her.*
2. "Don't be ridiculous." (*They told him*)
3. "Please don't refuse him." (*I asked them*)
4. "Don't work so hard." (*We told them*)
5. "Please don't swear." (*Charles asked her*)
6. "Don't laugh at them." (*He told me*)
7. "Don't embarrass me." (*She told him*)
8. "Please don't come in." (*He asked them*)
9. "Don't worry." (*I told her*)
10. "Please don't go away." (*He asked me*)
11. "Don't wear that necktie." (*She told him*)
12. "Please don't wait for us." (*They asked me*)

EXERCISE 285

Could ... please kullanarak aşağıdaki tümceleri örnektekine benzer şekilde dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

Tom's father asked him to help him in the garden.

Tom's father said, "Tom, could you help me in the garden, please?"

1. Carol Brown's father asked her to help him in the lab.
2. Bill Green's sister asked him to do the laundry.
3. Sam White's brother asked him to feed the dog.
4. Betty Black's mother asked her to open the door for the carpenter.
5. Mary Ann asked Andrew to make a list of the employees' names.
6. Charles asked Nora to call the typewriter repair service.
7. Nick asked Lucy to pour him a cup of coffee.
8. Dave asked Mary to get his robe from the closet.

EXERCISE 286

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma çeviriniz. Evrensel doğruların ifade edildiği tümcelerde tense değişikliğine gerek olmadığını anımsayınız.

1. Atatürk said, "A Turk will die happily if the alternative is slavery."
Atatürk said that a Turk will die happily if the alternative is slavery.
2. The teacher said, "A good education is important."
3. Linda said, "Greed is the root of all evil."
4. Thoreau said, "Books are the carriers of civilization."
5. P. Markham, "The world is simply not rich enough to meet All American desires."
6. Seneca, "A great fortune is a great slavery."
7. Chomsky said, "American democracy is really corporate totalitarianism."
8. Most experts said, "The European Union is a Christian club."
9. Ed said, "When a man has no reason to trust himself, he trusts in luck."
10. Ann Landers said, "Luck is usually disguised as hard work, so most people don't recognize it."
11. The historian Fromkin said, "The fall of the Ottoman Empire is the cause of all Middle East conflicts."
12. The expert said, "The US economy has become increasingly militarized."

EXERCISE 287

Ayrıca içinde verilen eylemleri kullanarak örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

1. I do not believe in taking medicine. The doctor (*confess*) _____.
The doctor confessed that he didn't believe in taking medicine.
2. The US invaded Iraq to steal the oil there. The expert (*tell*) _____.
The expert told that the US invaded Iraq to steal the oil there.
3. We killed millions of American Indians. Mr. Smith (*admit*) _____.
Mr. Smith admitted that we killed millions of American Indians.
4. This substance is easy to digest. The chemist (*report*) _____.
The chemist reported that this substance is easy to digest.
5. Heat sets up a convection current in water. The physicist (*explain*) _____.
The physicist explained that heat sets up a convection current in water.
6. The real aims of the US are global military and economic dominance. The strategist (*explain*) _____.
The strategist explained that the real aims of the US are global military and economic dominance.
7. Travelers are not allowed to bring more than one bottle of whisky into England. The customs officer (*say*) _____.
The customs officer said that travelers are not allowed to bring more than one bottle of whisky into England.
8. We have never been fair to American Indians and the black population. The American historian (*confess*) _____.
The American historian confessed that they have never been fair to American Indians and the black population.
9. Father has won on the football pools. The boy (*exclaim*) _____.
The boy exclaimed that father has won on the football pools.
10. I've been waiting for you for the last half an hour. Tom (*complain*) _____.
Tom complained that he has been waiting for you for the last half an hour.
11. The paintings were authentic but the furniture wasn't. The antique-dealer (*tell*) _____.
The antique-dealer told that the paintings were authentic but the furniture wasn't.
12. President Kennedy was assassinated. The teacher (*remind*) _____.
The teacher reminded that President Kennedy was assassinated.
13. Malcolm X was assassinated by the CIA. Mr. Smith (*insist*) _____.
Mr. Smith insisted that Malcolm X was assassinated by the CIA.
14. Sir Winston Churchill died in 1964. The history teacher (*tell*) _____.
The history teacher told that Sir Winston Churchill died in 1964.

EXERCISE 288

Aşağıdakileri örnekteki gibi dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

She wanted to know whose house I was going to rent?

Whose house are you going to rent?

1. He explained that he had telephoned at 11 o'clock, but nobody had answered.
2. Bill asks if it is always possible to do that.
3. Bill said that the litter-baskets were empty and the ground was covered with rubbish and asked if the visitors hadn't been asked to keep the place clean.
4. He said he wouldn't have married her if he had not been offered a fortune.
5. She said she would never forget my name.
6. She asked her friend how much she weighed and told her she ate too much.
7. We asked her how old her father was.
8. She asked me where I had worked the year before.
9. We told him to be patient.
10. Bill told me that his father had never gone to the movies in his life because he believed it was a waste of time.
11. I said that if it snowed that afternoon I would stay home.
12. He said he would help me if he could, but it was difficult.
13. The teacher apologized for being late. He explained that he had been held up in a traffic jam.
14. The coach said that if it rained, the match would be postponed.
15. The teacher told the students that they were being noisy.
16. The policeman told the drivers not to drive carelessly.
17. Tom asked Helen who he had gone to lunch with.
18. Giving a sigh, Mrs. White remarked that it had started raining again and she hadn't brought a raincoat.
19. The boss asked Arthur what time it was.
20. He greeted me sadly and told me that the last bus had just gone.

EXERCISE 289

Aşağıdakileri örnektekine benzer şekilde dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1. "How do you feel?"

His father asked Jack how he felt.

2. "Why don't you try to sleep?"

He wanted to know why Jack _____.

3. "How long will it be before I die?"

Jack asked his father _____.

4. "What are you making such a fuss about?"

Larry couldn't understand what his mother _____.

5. "Why didn't you tell me before?"
His mother asked him _____.
 6. "How can they possibly stay here?"
She wanted to know _____.
 7. "Why can't we move to a larger place?"
Larry wanted to know _____.
 8. "Why didn't you tell somebody?"
Mrs. Eisenhower asked her son _____.
 9. "What's your brother asking for?"
She asked _____.
 10. "When will the boy be able to get up?"
She asked the doctor _____.
 11. "How long will the effects of the potion last?"
Alan asked the old man _____.
 12. "How can I possibly thank you?"
Alan wondered _____.
-

EXERCISE 290

MEMO
TO: Robert C. Faulty
FROM: Ms. Lee
RE: Your Performance at Work

Mr. Robert C. Faulty'nin patronunun 'memo'sunda söylediklerini örnekteki gibi dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1. You have been working too slowly.
In the memo, the boss said that he had been working too slowly.
 2. I am concerned about your performance at work.
 3. Your coffee breaks last too long.
 4. You often get to work late.
 5. You took too many sick days last month.
 6. You aren't very polite to customers.
 7. You don't get along well with the other employees.
 8. I'd like to meet with you as soon as possible to discuss this.
-

EXERCISE 291

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1. "Be careful and don't break the vase," he told me.
2. "Aren't you happy because your mother has come?" I asked her.
3. He said, "Why didn't you wait for me, Bill?"
4. "Did you finish your work yesterday?" he said to me.
5. "Do we have to walk to the station?" she said to her husband.

6. "This is the most difficult test I have ever had," she said.
7. "What is the climate like in your country?" she asked me.
8. "Is your little daughter able to wash the dishes?" Mrs. Brown said to Mrs. White.
9. "Ought the light to be on? My eyes are bad," said the pilot.
10. "If I were you, I wouldn't buy this house," she said to me.
11. "You should dust the dressing-table," Mrs. White said to the servant.
12. She said to me, "What must I do if the lights go out?"
13. "Who cooked this terrible thing?" the customer said to the waiter.
14. The teacher said to the father, "Do you want to know how many windows your son broke?"
15. "Can you be ready by 6 o'clock if I help you?" he said to his wife.
16. "Be careful," the teacher said to her. "You're making too many mistakes."
17. "Must you be shouting when you speak to someone?" she said to me.
18. "I am really sorry I kept you waiting so long yesterday," she said to me.
19. "Don't bother me," she said to her. "Don't you see I am busy?"
20. "Listen to me," my father said to me. "I am sure you have not realized there is a lot of work to do at home these days."
21. He said to the tailor, "When will my suit be finished?"
22. "Send these flowers to your mother," Mr. Brown said to his son. "Today is her birthday."
23. "I had been cleaning the car for five minutes when I realized it wasn't my car," Mr. Brown said laughing.
24. "Your son came home two days ago, didn't he?" I said to Mrs. Hunter.

EXERCISE 292

Aşağıdaki metinden dolaylı anlatım tümceleri çıkarınız.

The Taylors are going away on vacation soon and are a little concerned because there have been several robberies in their neighborhood recently. They called the police and asked what they could do to prevent their house from being broken into while they were away. The police told them to lock all the windows and leave on a few lights. They also advised them to ask the neighbours to pick up the mail. And they warned them not to tell many people that they would be away.



"AREN'T YOU GOING TO ASK ME IF I HAVE FORGOTTEN ANYTHING?"

EXERCISE 293

David MacRae is a software consultant who works out of his home in St. Laurent, Quebec. (<http://www.quebecoislibre.org/010414-13.htm>)

David MacRae'nin söylediğini dolaylı anlatıma çeviriniz.

Today, American imperialism is the single biggest danger to American security and world peace. It has thoroughly corrupted the national government and the media. The American populace is as bombastic as the Prussians ever were. It serves only to turn the world against the US.

Playing games in the Middle East by supporting the Shah of Iran against Saddam Hussein and then Hussein against Khomeini and now anyone against Hussein has served only to turn both Iran and Iraq into implacable enemies. In time, Saudi Arabia will follow.

You can get away with doing this to smaller powers. But this time the war-mongers are playing with real fire. China has twice the population of the United States and the European Union combined. Should it ever reach its potential, Americans will have real reasons to regret their provocations. So will the rest of the world. Let the Indians worry about the Chinese. They are right next door and there's a billion of them too. Instead the US is turning both countries into enemies of the West. It's insane.

EXERCISE 294***Classic Quotes on Western Hegemony***

<http://www.wakefieldcam.freeserve.co.uk/classicquotes.htm>

Aşağıda önemli kişilerce söylemiş önemli sözler bulunmaktadır. Bu sözleri giriş eylemi *past* olan tümcelerle dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

1.	Journalist: Gen. Colin Powell:	Is it true that 200,000 Iraqi people were killed in the 1991 Desert Storm campaign? It's really not a number I'm terribly interested in.
2.	Ramsey Clark : Former U.S. Attorney General	The greatest crime since World War II has been U.S. foreign policy.
3.	Ralph McGehee	Death squads have been created and used by the CIA around the world particularly the Third World since the late 1940s.
4.	Winston Churchill	We must use aerial bombing, machine gunning and gassing for the control of Indian rebellion. We will kill more Indians cheaply.

5.	Winston Churchill	We must become the owners, or at any rate the controllers at the source, of at least a proportion of the oil which we require.
6.	George Kennan (former Head of the US State Department Policy Planning Staff)	We have about 60% of the world's wealth but only 6.3% of its population. Forget about human rights, the raising of living standards and democratisation.
7.	Einstein, 1947	I came to America because of the great, great freedom which I heard existed in this country. I made a mistake in selecting America as a land of freedom, a mistake I cannot repair in the balance of my lifetime."
8.	M. Luther King, Jr.	We have no honorable intentions in Vietnam. Our minimal expectation is to occupy it as an American colony and maintain social stability for our investments.
9.	George Washington President of the USA	There is no difference in Indians from wolves. Both are beasts of prey although they differ in shape.

EXERCISE 295

Aşağıdaki diyalogu dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

A man met a lad weeping. "What do you weep for?" he asked.

"I am weeping for my sins," said the lad.

"You must have little to do," said the man.

The next day, they met again. Once more the lad was weeping. "Why do you weep now?" asked the man.

"I am weeping because I have nothing to eat," said the lad.

"I thought it would come to that," said the man.

-Robert Louis Stevenson

EXERCISE 296

Aşağıda Lucy'nin durumunu inceleyiniz ve ona söylenenleri "past" giriş eylemleriyle dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.



Lucy, who is 16 years old, wants to marry Fred. Fred is 30 years old and doesn't have a regular income. Lucy says she will do anything to marry Fred.

1. Her brother said to Lucy, "How can you be so foolish?"
2. Her mother said, "You are too young to get married."
3. Her father said, "Don't do anything silly."
4. Her sister said, "You are making a big mistake."
5. Her best friend said, "You will regret this all your life."
6. Her uncle said, "You can't get married until you are 18."

7. Her aunt said, "Fred doesn't even have a regular job."
8. Her grandmother said, "If I were you, I would think twice."
9. Her grandfather said, "Fred isn't good enough for you."
10. Her uncle said, "You haven't known Fred long enough."
11. The judge said, "You need your parent's consent."
12. Her cousin said, "You are being very foolish."

EXERCISE 297

GALILEO AND ROBERTO

Kutudaki giriş eylemlerinden uygun olanlarını kullanarak aşağıdaki diyalogu dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

believe	claim	estimate	find out	hope
imagine	know	say	state	suppose
tell	think			

Galileo is in his study with a friend of his. The friend is also interested in astronomy. They are looking at the crescent moon.

- GALILEO Well, What do you see ?
 ROBERTO (looking through the telescope) That's strange. The edge of the crescent is rather uneven and jagged, Also I see some spots of light in the dark part of the moon.
- GALILEO What do you think they are ?
 ROBERTO I can't imagine what they are. Do you have an idea?
 GALILEO They must be mountains.
 ROBERTO You must be joking! Who has ever heard of mountains on the moon ?
- GALILEO No, I am not joking. I really think they are mountains.
 ROBERTO I don't believe it ! All our astronomers have known for the past two thousand years that there are no mountains on the moon.
- GALILEO Well, the astronomers must have been wrong. You can see that for yourself. If they had had a telescope, they would have seen the mountains.
- ROBERTO But the moon can't be like the earth. It cannot have mountains and valleys.
- GALILEO I am telling you that it must be like the earth. It is the only possible explanation. And the earth is simply an ordinary heavenly body - one among thousands. Take a close look. Is the dark part of the moon really dark ?
- ROBERTO I must admit it isn't. There is a pale light on it .
 GALILEO Exactly, and tell me why it is so.
 ROBERTO I don't have the slightest idea.
 GALILEO I'll tell you why. It is light from the earth.
- ROBERTO Nonsense ! It can't be. How can the earth shine ? You can't tell me that light comes from mountains and seas and forests !
- GALILEO Why not ? The earth shines in the same way as the moon shines - they are both illuminated by the sun.

EXERCISE 298

Aşağıdaki konuşmayı bir metin olarak dolaylı anlatıma aktarınız.

A Television Program

- MODERATOR: Today's topic on "Youth Speaks Out" is television. Why don't we just go around first and get your general impressions. Helen, could we begin with you? What do you think of today's TV programs?
- HELEN: Well, if you ask me, they are terrible. Most of the programs are a complete waste of time.
- MODERATOR: Tom, how do you feel about them?
- TOM: Well, in general, I agree with Helen. But what bothers me more is that they are too violent.
- JANE: I think so too. As far as I am concerned, **there are too many trashy action films and not enough educational programs.**
- MODERATOR: What about the news report?
- JANE: Yes, well, in my opinion, the news shows are extremely superficial; they don't tell you anything.
- TOM: Oh, I don't know about that. I think the news reports are not too bad. Presenting the news is still what TV does best.
- HELEN: Oh, no. It is not true at all. TV news is just another form of entertainment. And, in fact, there is very little truth in TV news.

EXERCISE 299

Karikatürdeki falcının düşündüklerini ve Mr. Taylor'a söylediklerini aktarınız.

THE FORTUNE TELLER



- 1.a She says to herself that more money is coming in.
 1.b She tells Mrs. Taylor to come in.

- 2.a _____
 2.b _____
 3.a _____
 3.b _____
 4.a _____
 4.b _____
 5.a _____
 5.b _____

- 6.a _____
 6.b _____
 7.a _____
 7.b _____
 What does the fortune teller say to herself?
 8. _____
 9. _____

Chapter 40

ADJECTIVE CLAUSES (RELATIVE CLAUSES)

SİFAT İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

The hands *that help* are far better than the lips *that pray*.

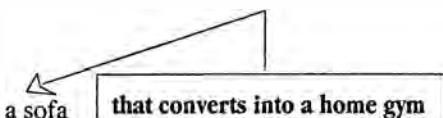
—Robert G. Ingersoll



"We don't want a sofa that converts into a bed.
We want a sofa that converts into a home gym."

a	comfortable	sofa	
a		sofa	that converts into a home gym

Sıfatlar adları niteleyen sözcüklerdir ve niteledikleri adların önünde yer alırlar. Sıfat içtümceçikleri, adları niteleyen içtümceçiklerdir ve niteledikleri adların arkasında yer alırlar.



Bütün dillerin sınırlı sayıda tümce kalıbine sahip olduğunu biliyoruz. Ayrıca bütün dillerin, oluşturulan çekirdek tümceleri birleştirmek için çeşitli yöntemlere başvurduğunu da biliyoruz.

1.	The housewife wrote a novel.	Pattern 6
2.	The novel was excellent.	Pattern 1
3.	The housewife wrote an excellent novel.	Pattern 6

Tümce 3'ün Tümce 1 ile Tümce 2'nin bir şekilde birleştirilmesiyle elde edildiği görülüyor.

Şimdi İngilizce'de bu birleşmenin nasıl olduğunu görelim.

1.	The housewife wrote A NOVEL.	Pattern 6
2.	THE NOVEL was excellent.	Pattern 1

Bu iki tümcede aynı varlığı gösteren ad öbekleri bulunmaktadır: *a novel* ve *the novel*. İki tümcede aynı varlığı gösteren iki ad öbeği bulunuyorsa İngilizce'de bu iki tümce birleşebilir demektir.

* The housewife wrote a novel/the novel was excellent.

Bu diziliş, anlamı belirlemektedir ama, henüz kabul edilebilir bir tümce olmamıştır. Aynı varlığı gösteren ad öbeğinin ikinci kullanımında, onun yerine bir zamir kullanılması gereklidir.

The housewife wrote a novel / WHICH was excellent.



Bu tümce artık kabul edilir bir İngilizce tümcedir. Bu işlemde iki olgu gerçekleşmiştir.

1. *The novel was excellent tümcesi, WHICH was excellent içtümcecik şekliyle, The housewife wrote a novel tümcesinin içine konmuştur.*
2. *İçtümcecik WHICH was excellent, a novel ad öbeğini nitelemektedir.*

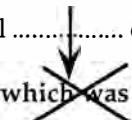
Şimdi adjective clause, relative clause ve relative pronoun terimlerinin neden oluşturulduğunu açıklayabiliriz.

1. **WHICH**, bir zamir olarak kullanılmaktadır çünkü (NOVEL) adının yerine kullanılmaktadır.
2. **WHICH**, iki tümceyi birleştirir görülmektedir, o halde zamir olarak "relative" türde bir zamir olmalıdır. Böylelikle "relative pronoun" terimi oluşturuluyor.
3. Mademki **WHICH was excellent** içtümceciği relative pronoun olan WHICH ile kurulmaktadır, o halde bu içtümceciğe **relative clause** denebilir.
4. Mademki **WHICH was excellent içtümceciği** (A NOVEL) adını nitelemektedir o halde ona bir ikinci ad olarak **adjective clause** denebilir.

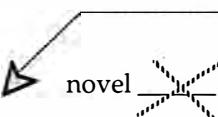
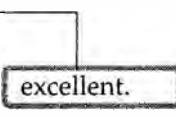
Şimdi REDUCTION bölümünde ele alacağımız bir olguya deşinelim.

The housewife wrote a novel which was excellent.

Relative pronoun WHICH, eğer TO BE eylemi tarafından izleniyorsa hem kendisi hem de BE atılabılır.

The housewife wrote a novel excellent.


Ne var ki İngilizce * *The house wrote a novel excellent* gibi bir dizilişi kabul etmeyecektir.

The housewife wrote a  novel 

The housewife wrote an  novel.

Böylelikle *The housewife wrote an excellent novel* tümcesinin gerçekte nasıl olduğunu görmüş olduk. Burada çok önemli bir dil gerçeğini de yineleyelim: Bir adım önüne gelen bütün sıfatlar gerçekte bir adjective'un kısaltılmış şeklidir.

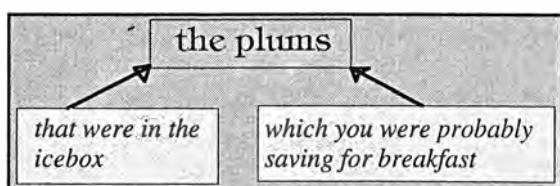
THIS IS JUST TO SAY

William Carlos Williams

*I have eaten
the plums
that were in
the icebox*

*and which
you were
probably saving
for breakfast*

*Forgive me
they were delicious
so sweet
and so cold.*



SIFAT İÇTÜMCEKİLERİ AD ÖBEĞİ YAPMANIN BİR ŞEKLİDİR
The novel was excellent tümcesinin nasıl *the excellent novel* ad obeğine dönüştüğünü gösterelim.

0	The novel was excellent.
1	The novel was excellent.
2	the novel which was excellent
3	the novel — which was excellent
4	the excellent novel

EXERCISE 300

Aşağıdaki tümceleri sıfat içtümcevikleri kurarak yeniden yazınız.

1. The violent storm destroyed the city.
The storm which was violent destroyed the city.
2. My uncle bought the expensive car.
3. The European Union countries are still exploiting the poor countries.
4. The writer wrote an unusual detective novel.
5. We should protect ourselves from dangerous chemicals.
6. Good books are as rare as good people.
7. The CIA trained blood-thirsty agents.
8. You should only pick the ripe apples.
9. The imperialistic European states still use terrorism for their own gains.



BİR TÜMCEYİ AD ÖBEĞİ (NOUN PHRASE) ŞEKLİNÉ SOKMANIN YA DA SIFAT İÇTÜMCEĞİ (ADJECTIVE CLAUSE) YAPMANIN BİR BAŞKA YOLU

Yukarıdaki örnekte *The novel was excellent* tümcesini, *The housewife wrote a novel* tümcesi içine koyarak şöyle bir tümce elde etmişik.

The housewife wrote a novel.

The novel was excellent.

The housewife wrote a novel which was excellent.

Şimdi bu işlemin tersini yapalım, yani *The housewife wrote a novel* tümcesini, *The novel was excellent* tümcesi içine koyalım.

Bunun için elde edeceğimiz ad öbeğinde NOVEL adının, temel ad olması gerekmektedir.

The novel [the housewife wrote the novel] was excellent

The novel [the novel the housewife wrote] was excellent

The novel [WHICH the housewife wrote] was excellent.

Ya da doğrudan doğruya *The housewife wrote a novel* tümcesinin kendisini, NOVEL adının temel ad olduğu bir NP yapalım.

The housewife wrote a novel

the novel the housewife wrote

the novel WHICH the housewife wrote

RELATIVE PRONOUN ÖZNE Mİ, NESNE Mİ?

Sıfat içtümceciklerinde dikkat edilmesi gereken unsurlardan birisi de relative pronoun'ların, sıfat içtümceciğinin hem öznesi, hem de nesnesi olabileceğidir. Relative pronoun'un, hangi durumda ne olarak kullanıldığını görmek tümceyi anlayabilmek açısından çok önemlidir.

EXERCISE 301

Aşağıdaki tümceleri, relative pronoun'ları özne ve nesne durumunda kullanarak iki ad öbeği halinde yazınız.

1. The worm ate the apple.

the worm which ate the apple
the apple which the worm ate

2. The violent storm destroyed the city.
3. The cat climbed the apple tree.
4. The dog hid a large bone under the tree.
5. Good study habits bring rewards
6. The computer wrote a beautiful poem.
7. The jellyfish eat small plants or animals.
9. The pollution killed our lake.
10. The Gulf War destroyed many Iraqi towns.

THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS İLGİ ZAMİRLERİ



"Are you the man who thinks he is a lightbulb?"

İngilizce'de sıfat içtümceciklerinin yapılışında kullanılan 5 temel relative pronoun bulunmaktadır.

who	whom	that	which	whose
------------	-------------	-------------	--------------	--------------

İngilizce, 3 soru sözcüğünü de belli durumlarda relative pronoun olarak kullanmaktadır.

where	when	why
--------------	-------------	------------

RELATIVE PRONOUN'LARLA İLGİLİ AYIRICI ÖZELLİKLER

Relative pronoun'larla ilgili olarak bilinmesi gereken özellikler şunlardır:

1. Özne olarak mı yoksa nesne olarak mı kullanılıyor? Yoksa hem özne hem de nesne olarak mı kullanılıyor?
2. Ne tür adların yerine kullanılabiliyor? (Hayvan, eşya, insan)
3. İlgeçlerle yanyana kullanılabiliyor mu?
4. Hem tanımlayıcı (defining) hem de tanımlayıcı olmayan (non-defining) sıfat içtümcecikleriyle kullanılabilir mi?

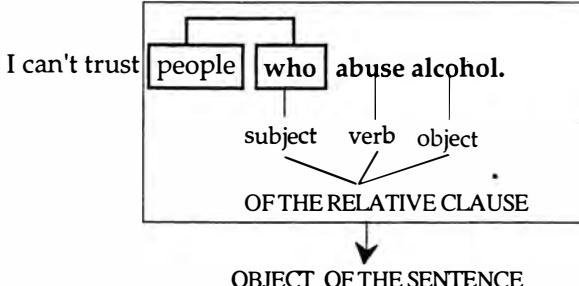
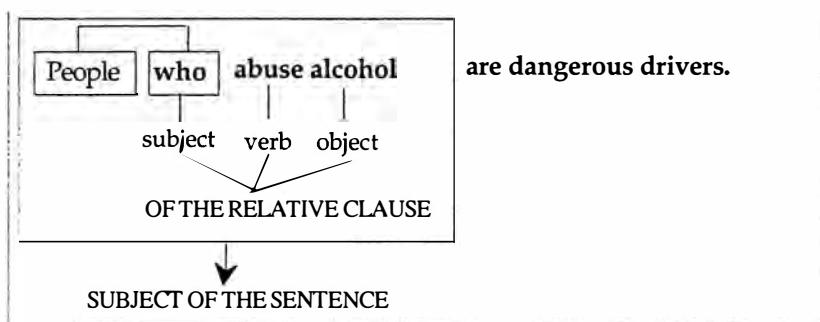
Aşağıdaki tabloda *relative pronoun*'ların özellikleri gösterilmektedir.

	who	whom	that	which
Özne	+	—	+	+
Nesne	+	+	+	+
İnsan	+	+	+	—
İnsan Olmayan	—	—	+	+
Tanımlayıcı	+	+	+	+
Tanımlayıcı olmayan	+	+	—	+

Relative pronoun'ları şimdi teker teker ele alalım.

A. who

1. People **who abuse alcohol** are dangerous drivers.
2. He **who sups with the devil** needs a long spoon. –Proverb
3. He never trusted a politician **who people liked too much**.
- 4.a The two burglars **who had stolen the diamond ring in the museum last year** were arrested.
- 4.b George Orwell, **who disliked British imperialism**, quit his job as a policeman in Burma.



1. WHO, sıfat içtümceğinin öznesi olarak kullanılır.

People *who abuse alcohol* are dangerous drivers.

Water is an enemy for people *who suffer from hydrophobia*.

Gandhi disagreed with those *who wanted India to become an industrial country*.

The veterinarian *who cured the racehorse* received a handsome fee.

Procrastinators are people *who have a chronic habit of putting things off*.

The fearless are merely fearless. People *who act in spite of their fear* are truly brave. -James A. LaFond-Lewis

2. Eski metinlerde, WHO'nun HE zamiri ile birlikte yaygın olarak kullanıldığını görüyoruz. Günümüz İngilizcesinde one who .. , a person who ya da those who ... yapıları tercih edilmektedir.

He *who seeks God* has already found Him. -Graham Greene

He *who opens a school door* closes a prison.

He *who says what he likes* shall hear what he does not like.- Proverb

He *who conceals his disease* cannot expect to be cured.

Who are the greater criminals — those *who sell the instruments of death*, or those *who buy them and use them?* -Sherwood



WHO, kimi zaman **WHOEVER** gibi "one who..." anlamında kullanılabilir.

*Whoever controls the media controls the public.
Who controls the past controls the future. Who controls the present controls the past.* -George Orwell

3. WHO, günlük kullanımda sıfat içtümceğinin nesnesi olarak da kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımda WHOM'un yerini almaktadır.

The man *who* the detective was following turned out to be the serial killer.

He never trusted a politician *who* people liked too much.



WHO, nesne olarak **WHOM** yerine kullanıldığındá atılabilir. Özne durumunda kullanılan **WHO** atılamaz.

He never trusted a politician **who**-people liked too much.
He never trusted a politician **WHO** talked too much.

4. WHO, hem tanımlayıcı hem de tanımlayıcı olmayan sıfat içtümceciklerinde kullanılır. Tanımlayıcı olmayan sıfat içtümcecikleri, virgülerle ayrılır.

Most of the men *who broke into these ancient tombs* died of unknown diseases.

People *who are chain smokers* are risking their lives.

Mark Twain, *who established himself as a great writer*, wrote many articles condemning American imperialism.

George Orwell, *who disliked British imperialism*, quit his job as a policeman in Burma.

Armstrong, *who first set foot on the Moon*, had been a test pilot for the Navy.

EXERCISE 302

Aşağıdaki tümceleri relative pronoun **WHO** kullanarak birleştiriniz.

1. Sequoyah was the son of an unknown white man. Sequoyah became a very important figure.
2. Sequoyah never attended school. Sequoyah observed at an early age that the white man had a method of conveying messages by means of printed symbols.
3. Sequoyah had to overcome the ridicule of his people. His people suspected him of witchcraft.
4. Cherokees in Tennessee and Georgia could write letters to tribesmen. The tribesmen had moved to Arkansas.
5. Sequoyah invented the Cherokee alphabet. Sequoyah was honored in several ways.

B. whom

1. No one loves the man *whom he fears*. —Aristotle
- 2.a We cannot really love anybody *with whom we never laugh*.
- 2.b We cannot really love anybody *whom we never laugh with*.
—Agnes Repplier
3. She has got three sons, *all of whom live with the family*.
4. She has got three sons, *of whom only one is a sailor like her husband*.
- 5.a The man *whom the detective was following* went into a vacant building.
- 5.b Inspector Ferguson, *whom his friends like very much*, has decided to retire.
6. He is the man *whom we have been waiting for*.
7. When Columbus landed on America's shores, he encountered copper-skinned people *whom he promptly called "Indians"*.

1. WHOM, sıfat içtümceciğinin nesnesi olarak kullanılır.

Tom's mother is 110 years old. He visits her every week.

Tom's mother whom he visits every week is 110 years old.

The politician *whom everybody trusted* turned out to be a crook.

The speeding motorist *whom the policeman stopped* offered him a bribe.

The man *whom they said jumped off of the bridge and plunged into the freezing water* turned out to be my brother.

Governments, like physicians, must simultaneously be the masters and the servants of those *whom they govern*. —Harry V. Jaffa

The measure of a man is not in the number of his servants but in the number of people *whom he serves*. —Paul D. Moody

We are inclined to believe those *whom we do not know* because they have never deceived us. —Samuel Johnson

We always love those who admire us; we do not always love those *whom we admire*. —François de La Rochefoucauld

Most people feel that it does not matter *whom they vote for* because all politicians are the same.

2. WHOM, ilgeçlerle yan yana kullanılabilir. Günlük konuşma dilinde ilgeçler genellikle sıfat içtümceğinin sonuna konulur.

An American president was shot during his first year in office (1881) by a man to *whom he wouldn't give a job*.

Childless couples frequently select baby-sized dogs *upon whom they lavish parental affection*.

Nothing is enough to the man *for whom enough is too little*.
—Epicurus

Hatred is a boomerang which is sure to hit you harder than the one *at whom you throw it*.

He is the poet *whom many young people get the inspiration from*.

3. WHOM, pronoun + of whom yapısında kullanılır.

The US soldiers killed 11 Iraqi civilians, Three of them were children.

The US soldiers killed 11 Iraqi civilians, three of whom were children.

She has got three sons, *all of whom live with the family*.

There were ten people in the room, *any of whom could have stolen the money*.

At the meeting there were boxers, footballers, swimmers and many other athletes, *some of whom were world-famous*.

Italy is a country of fifty-million actors, *the worst of whom are on the stage*. —Orson Welles

He had several friends, *all of whom were secret agents.*

The family had many wealthy friends, *quite a few of whom were popular politicians.*

The U.S. consolidates its links with the Colombian and Peruvian military, *both of whom have appalling records of human rights violations.* – Chomsky

4. PRONOUN + OF+ WHOM yapısı, OF WHOM + PRONOUN şeklinde kullanılabilir.

The US soldiers killed 11 Iraqi civilians, Three of them were children.

The US soldiers killed 11 Iraqi civilians, of whom three were children.

She has got three sons, *of whom only one is a sailor like her husband.*

There are approximately 800,000 American Indians today, *of whom about 250,000 live on reservations.*

They reveal that 15 million Central Americans, almost 60% of the population, live in poverty, *of whom 9.7 million live in "extreme poverty."*

5. WHOM, hem tanımlayıcı hem de tanımlayıcı olmayan sıfat iç-tümcekleri ile kullanılır.

The man *whom the detective was following* went into a vacant building.

Inspector Ferguson, *whom his friends like very much*, has decided to retire.

Mark Twain, *who hated American imperialism*, wrote several articles on American atrocities.

6. WHOM bir ilgeçle yanına değilse atılabilir.

He is the man *whom we have been waiting for.*

We frequently judge people by the company *with whom they consort.*

We frequently judge people by the company *whom they consort with.*

EXERCISE 303

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşluklara WHO ya da WHOM koyunuz.

1. The girl _____ took my money forgot to give me the package.
2. This is Mike, _____ is my best friend.

3. Clever people are careful where they go and with ____ they drive on holidays
 4. Frank Olson was an American scientist, ____ was murdered by the CIA.
 5. He ____ stops being better stops being good.
 6. The media prefer to forget the numerous terrorists for ____ the U.S. has been a haven.
 7. Life is a tragedy for those ____ feel, and a comedy for those ____ think.
 8. The ultra-rich, ____ control the Bush administration, have hijacked our democracy and diminished the American dream. –Peter Montague
 9. The Vietnamese people still remember the 700,000, ____ were tortured and maimed by the USA.
 10. Karen Fogg, ____ used to be the European Commission chief in Ankara, spent a fortune to sponsor anti-Turkey campaigns.
 11. Columbus, ____ personally oversaw the genocide of the Taino Indian people, deserves no respect.
 12. I like painting seascapes with my mother, with ____ I work every day.
 13. Some Americans no longer believe Bush, ____ has been proved to be a liar.
 14. George W. Bush is a mere puppet, ____ is told by his controllers where to go and what to do and say. [<http://www.whatreallyhappened.com>]
 15. The only people ____ never fail are those ____ never try.
 16. The total wealth of the three individuals, ____ are the richest in the world, is greater than that of most poor nations.
 17. The girl with ____ I share a room has gone home for the weekend.
 18. An unknown journalist filmed the American soldiers ____ were torturing the Iraqi prisoners.
 19. You may forget with ____ you laughed but you will never forget with ____ you cried.
 20. The people with ____ I worked in London have invited me back.
 21. Allende was a committed Marxist, ____ had no allegiance to the Soviet Union.
 22. The worst-tempered people ____ I've ever met were people ____ knew they were wrong.
-
-

EXERCISE 304

Aşağıdaki tümceleri WİOM kullanarak birleştiriniz.

1. A strange couple lives in my neighbourhood. There is an article about this young couple in the newspaper.
2. Susan is a nice person. I will borrow some money from her.
3. I spoke to some impatient students. We had ordered the textbooks for them.
4. Emerson was a great philosopher. Gandhi got his inspiration from him.
5. That is Prof. Stone, the famous anthropologist. I worked with him for many years.
6. The police interviewed the jeweler. The diamonds had been stolen from the jeweler.

7. Sequoyah invented the Cherokee alphabet. His people suspected Sequoyah of witchcraft.
8. I am greatly indebted to Professor Smith. I achieved my present position through him.
9. The students will be studying here for three weeks. All of them are from India.
10. This actress spent a short while in prison. The tax authorities pressed tax evasion charges against her some time ago.
11. These players make up an entertaining basketball team. None of them is less than two metres.
12. John Lennon was shot dead in New York in 1980. A street has been named after him in Liverpool.

C. that

1. Cigarettes are killers *that travel in packs.* – M. S. Ott



- 2.a Films *that draw crowds* are usually comedies.
- 2.b Do not kindle a fire *that you cannot extinguish.*
3. Cancer is the enemy *that the scientist have been long fighting against.*
- 4.a A sharp tongue is the only edged tool *that grows keener with constant use.* –Washington Irving
- 4.b The wheel *that squeaks the loudest* is the one *that gets the grease.*
5. That is the most unusual animal *that I have ever seen.*
6. There are no problems *that we cannot solve together*, and very few *that we can solve by ourselves.* –Lyndon B. Johnson
7. The only thing *that you can get without working* is hunger.
8. It is privilege *that causes evil in the world*, not wickedness, and not men. –Lincoln Steffens
9. Happiness in intelligent people is the rarest thing *that I know.*
–Ernest Hemingway
10. He *that lives upon hope* will die fasting.– Benjamin Franklin

SOFTWARE

*"I need a better word processor for my husband.
One that will correct his spelling,
grammar, and opinions."*

1. THAT, bütün adların yerine kullanılabilir.

We consider John the best man *that can do this job properly*.

The man *that can smile at his defeat* has won. – Hubbard

The USA and rich European countries employ several "news filters"
that determine what news is printed in the media

2. THAT, hem özne hem nesne olabilir.

Films *that draw crowds* are usually comedies.

Junk is anything *that has outlived its usefulness*.

The hand *that rocks the cradle* is the hand *that rules the world*.

Cancer is the enemy *that the scientists have been fighting against for years*.

The American people have a right to air *that they and their children can breathe without fear*. –Lyndon B. Johnson

3. THAT, ilgeçlerle yanyana kullanılamaz. İlgecin sıfat iç-tümceciği sonunda yer alması gereklidir.

Terrorism is a danger *that all nations must fight against*.

The news *that we were waiting for* turned out to be rather unpleasant.

We did not like the story *that we had to listen to*.

4. THAT, sadece tanımlayıcı sıfat iç-tümceciplerinde kullanılır.

The USA media never writes about the damage *that the U.S. bombing inflicted onto Iraq's civilian population*.

Any media organization *that criticized the USA* was wiped out.

5. THAT, sıfatların en üstünlük derecesiyle yapılan karşılaştırmada kullanılan sıfat iç-tümceciplerinde kullanılır.

The USA has come to possess the most powerful weapons of mass destruction *that the world has ever known*.

He began to tell me a series of the funniest stories *that I have ever listened to.*

The discovery of this drug is the greatest discovery *that has been made in the last ten years.*

The last two earthquakes were the worst *that had been experienced in living memory.*

- 6. ALL, ANY, FEW, LITTLE, NONE, MUCH, EVERYONE, EVERYBODY, EVERYWHERE, EVERYTHING, NOTHING, NOBODY, NO ONE** zamirlerini niteleyen sıfat içtümcecikleriyle kullanılır.



All *that remained of the ancient building* were the fluted columns.

All *that is necessary for the triumph of evil* is that good men do nothing. —Edmund Burke

I am a part of all *that I have met.* —Tennyson

Men do less than they ought, unless they do all *that they can.*

—Thomas Carlyle

All *that is gold* does not glitter.

- 7. FIRST, NEXT, LAST, ONLY** gibi sıfatların niteledikleri adları izleyen sıfat içtümceciklerinde kullanılır.

The only thing *that we have to fear* is fear itself. —F. D. Roosevelt

If you want to make your dreams come true, the first thing *that you have to do* is wake up.

- 8. THAT, ayrik tümcelerdeki sıfat içtümceciklerinde kullanılır.**

It is privilege *that causes evil in the world*, not wickedness, and not men. —Lincoln Steffens

It is actually the rich *that the politicians serve*, not the poor.

- 9. THAT, nesne yerine kullanıldığında atılabilir.**

Do not kindle a fire *that you cannot extinguish.* —Proverb

I have never been hurt by anything *that I didn't say.* —Calvin Coolidge

Computers are capable of doing all the tasks *that the human brain performs* even more efficiently.

The USA has the biggest military force *that the world has ever seen.*

10. Eski metinlerde HE zamiriyle birlikte kullanılmıştır.

He that is good for making excuses is seldom good for anything else.

— Benjamin Franklin

He that speaks without care shall remember with sorrow. — Seneca

EXERCISE 305

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde sıfat içtümceviklerinin altını çiziniz. THAT zamirinin hangi ad yerine kullanıldığını saptayınız.

1. The wheel that squeaks the loudest is the one that gets the grease.
 2. A sharp tongue is the only edged tool that grows keener with constant use. —Washington Irving
 3. Water is in the air, too, as a gas that we cannot see.
 4. Without the immigrants who helped build it, the United States would not be the strong nation that it now is.
 5. I love the man that can smile in trouble and that can gather strength from distress. —Thomas Paine
 6. In some factories computerized robots do the work that people used to do.
 7. Some elements emit energy that, like the rays of the sun, can be either good or harmful to humans.
 8. The recipe that appeared in the magazine calls for many exotic ingredients.
 9. A tapeworm is a parasite that lives in the intestines of humans and animals.
 10. Organizers are tiny computers that can store all kinds of information.
 11. A truth that is told with a bad intent can beat all the lies you can invent.
—William Blake
 12. Edison began experimenting with an apparatus that he had ordered to be built.
 13. The inference that I drew from his words was that he was unwilling to help us.
 14. Gelatin is a protein substance that comes from the skins and bones of animals.
 15. Do not kindle a fire that you cannot extinguish. —Proverb
-

EXERCISE 306

Aşağıdaki tümceleri THAT (relative pronoun) kullanarak birleştiriniz.

1. We will take the last train. It leaves at 11 p.m.
2. Have you seen my green book? I have left it on the table here.
3. Don't cook the meat. I put it in the freezer.
4. There's a pub near here. It serves very good meals.
5. Here's the computer program. I told you about it.
6. I bought a new computer. It caused me a lot of trouble.
7. I got on a train. The train had no central heating.

8. My friend sold me a car. The car turned out to be a lemon.
9. Have you read the book? Vural Savaş has written the book.
10. He seems to have told many lies. Those lies have caused great trouble.



EXERCISE 307

Örneğe bakarak benzer tümceler kurunuz.

expensive/house/we/see

This is the most expensive house that we have ever seen.

1. frightening/experience/have
2. Clinton/interesting/president/Americans/have
3. the hotel rooms/spacious and comfortable/we/stay in
4. the swimming pool/clean and fancy/we/swim in
5. good/vacation/we /have
6. Madame Mitterand/disgust/person/we/know

EXERCISE 308

THAT günlük kullanımda kullanılabilir. Aşağıda verilenlerden örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

- A. I think your friend Helen is very nice.
 - B. Yes. She is the nicest person I know.
- | | |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. your cousin -friendly | 6. your younger sister -talented |
| 2. your uncle -funny | 7. Walter -stingy |
| 3. Larry -lazy | 8. James -stubborn |
| 4. the students in our class -smart | 9. your upstairs neighbor -noisy |
| 5. your brother -sloppy | 10. grandfather -generous |



"I want you to know that your job is secure. They will never invent a computer that does nothing."

D. which

Helen devised a plan *which baffled our opponents*.

A fool can ask a question *which forty wise men cannot answer*.

Ankara, *which is the capital city of Turkey*, is quite beautiful.

A house *which has four bedrooms* must be quite expensive.

The heart has eyes *which the brain knows nothing of*. – Charles H. Perkhurst

Politics is perhaps the only profession *for which no preparation is thought necessary*. – R. Stevenson (1850-94)

That which is everybody's business is nobody's business. –Izaak Walton (1593-1683)

He sold me a dozen eggs, *half of which were bad*.

They entered a house *of which I do not care to state the location*.

Scientists finally discovered black holes, *the existence of which Einstein's theory predicted*.

Jack had all his money stolen, *which spoiled his holiday*.

1. WHICH, hayvanlar ve eşyalar yerine kullanılır.

A nutrient is a substance in foods *which performs one or more of the functions of food*.

With fatalism, he accepted the hardships *which beset him*.

2. WHICH, hem özne hem nesne olarak kullanılabilir.

A nation *which makes the final sacrifice for life and freedom* does not get beaten. –Mustafa Kemal

The Industrial Revolution had some consequences *which have been a disaster for the human race*.

Man is born perfect; it is the capitalist system *which corrupts him*. –Arthur SCARGILL

Many of the new technologies *which now dominate production in an advanced country* are in conflict with the ecosystem.

3. WHICH, hem tanımlayıcı hem de tanımlayıcı olmayan sıfat içtümceciklerinde kullanılır.

Gullivers's Travels, *which is regarded by many as a tale for children*, is actually a bitter satire attacking man's folly.

Vitamin E, *which is found in nutritious foods such as green vegetables and whole grains*, acts as an antioxidant in cell membranes.

4. WHICH, ilgeçlerle yanına kullanılabilir.

Human beings are the only animals *of which I am thoroughly and cravenly afraid*. – George Bernard Shaw

The eggs contains a good balance of nutrients and is an excellent food *with which we should start the day*.

People on the kibbutz own nothing privately, nor do they earn money *with which they can buy things.*

There are no such things as incurables; there are only things *for which man has not found a cure.* – Bernard M. Baruch

The two most common types of vascular headache are migraine and cluster headaches, *for which no known cure exists.*

The capacity and efficiency *with which your body can function* depends on the degree of development of your muscular power.

5. WHICH, THAT zamirini niteleyen sıfat içtümcevikleri kullanabilir.

There is nothing so useless as doing efficiently *that which should not be done at all.* -Peter Drucker

Music expresses that *which cannot be put into words and that which cannot remain silent.* –Victor Hugo

6. PRONOUN/NOUN + OF WHICH yapısında kullanabilir.

The East has many cultures. Some of them are very ancient.

The East has many cultures, some of which are very ancient.

He sold me a dozen eggs, *half of which were bad.*

He has composed a vast amount of music, *little of which is ever played today.*

Corn is used in many different forms, *some of which are corn meal, hominy, grits, and breakfast preparations.*

Scientists finally discovered black holes, *the existence of which Einstein's theory predicted.*

All plants and animals exhibit the tendency to vary, *the causes of which have yet to be ascertained.* –Thomas Huxley

An estimated 35 million people in the United States suffer from various allergies, *some of which are mistaken for the common cold.*

There are many causes of hyperactivity deficiency, *only some of which are known.*

7. OF WHICH + PRONOUN/NOUN yapısında kullanabilir.

That room had only two doors. One of them was always locked.

That room had only two doors, of which one was always locked.

Reflect upon your present blessings - *of which every man has many* - not on your past misfortunes, *of which all men have some*. -C. Dickens
They entered a house *of which I do not care to state the location*.

The fourth type of anoxia is histotoxic anoxia, *of which cyanide poisoning is the only important example*.

8. Cansız varlıklar ve hayvanlar için iyelik gösterilmesi gerekiğinde *OF WHICH* yapısı kullanılır.

The fruit the taste *of which was different from anything I had eaten before* looked strange, too.

The most widespread device is the cellular telephone, the price *of which has dropped from several thousand dollars to a few hundred*.

9. Connective relative clauses / bağlayıcı sıfat içtümceviklerinde kullanılır.

CONNECTIVE RELATIVE CLAUSES

Sıfat içtümcevikleri, özel bir kullanımıyla, bir adı değil de bir tümceyi nitelemek için kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımda relative pronoun olarak sadece WHICH kullanılabilir. Aşağıdaki tümcede, *which spoiled his vacation* sıfat içtümceviği, *Jack had all his money stolen* tümcesini nitelemektedir. Bağlayıcı sıfat içtümcevikleri önünde virgül yer alır.

Jack had all his money stolen. THIS spoiled his vacation.

Jack had all his money stolen , which spoiled his vacation.

Aşağıdaki kutuda bulunan iki tümcede herkesin bildiği şey nedir? Tümcelerden hangisinde “connective relative clause” bulunmaktadır.

The CIA murdered Martin L. King, which I think everybody knows.

The CIA murdered Martin L. King, whom I think everybody knows.

Fats add variety, taste, and texture to foods, which accounts for the popularity of fried foods.

In the northeast Pacific Ocean, the sea is about miles deep, which makes it difficult to explore the seabed.

The rail dispute has finally been settled, *which is a great relief to commuters*.

Shortage of space and food in an overcrowded world will make people more aggressive, which will increase the likelihood of large-scale wars.

EXERCISE 309

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte görüldüğü gibi connective clause kullanarak birleştiriniz.

Martin forgot the password. That was a disastrous blunder.

Martin forgot the password, which was a disastrous blunder.

I missed my bus. This made me late for my bus.

I missed my bus this morning, which made me late for work.

1. The boy was selected to play in the team. It pleased him enormously.
2. He painted the whole house in less than ten hours. I thought that was incredible.
3. The laser beam can also remove bones. This makes it invaluable in ear surgery.
4. She has very poor eyesight. This has prevented her from being an artist.
5. My brother, who had never seen a lion before, claimed that he could tame lions. That was foolish.
6. He had been a poor man most of his life. This gave him a pessimistic world view.
7. Mrs. Parker bought three expensive dresses. It made her husband furious.
8. Many families nowadays are much smaller than formerly. This enables parents to give their children more attention and better conditions.
9. In most over-populated countries standards of hygiene and education are inadequate. This makes it very difficult to prevent baby deaths.
10. We received thirty replies to the advertisement. This pleased us.
11. He won a huge sum of money on the national lottery. This suddenly made him the wealthiest man in town.
12. Gandhi spoke with a humility and lack of pride. This impressed his listeners.
13. My wife had gone to visit her family. This meant that I had to cook for myself.
14. He gave up his job and devoted all his time to music. This infuriated his wife's family.
15. Inflation is continuing to rise. This means that the economy is still a long way from recovery.

EXERCISE 310

Doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. What's the name of that woman _____ phoned last night?
A. which B. who

2. The thing _____ I can't understand is why she won't tell anyone how old she is.
A. that B. who
 3. The man _____ she eventually married was a computer programmer.
A. which B. who
 4. Her father, _____ I never met, was a keen hunter.
A. that B. whom
 5. I've just remembered something _____ I've been meaning to tell you for ages.
A. that B. whom
 6. I don't believe the story _____ he told us.
A. who B. that
 7. I really liked that tea _____ you made me this morning.
A. who B. that
 8. The flight _____ Joe was leaving on was cancelled.
A. who B. which
 9. The person whose fingerprints are on the gun was Dr. Taylor, _____ had killed her wife.
A. who B. that
 10. Her last book, _____ was published last year, became a best seller.
A. that B. which
-
-

EXERCISE 311

Aşağıdaki boşlukları **WHO**, **THAT** ya da **WHICH** ile doldurunuz. Kimi tümcelerde hem **THAT** hem de **WHICH**'ın kullanılabileceğine dikkat ediniz.

1. Have you received the parcel _____ we sent you?
2. The water _____ he drank was dirty.
3. The book _____ is lying on the table is mine.
4. He managed to lift the suitcase, the weight of _____ was 70 kilos.
5. The letter _____ he wrote was in reply to mine.
6. The hotel _____ we stayed at last summer is now closed.
7. The meal _____ I had last night made me ill.
8. They are painting the wall against _____ I usually lean my bicycle.
9. The chair _____ is standing in the corner will have to be repaired.
10. *World Watch*, _____ is published four times a year, contains a lot of interesting articles.
11. The car _____ I bought ten years ago is still in good working order.
12. The boy _____ was knocked down by a lorry is now in hospital.
13. Have you completed the work _____ you were given?
14. My bike, _____ I had left at the gate, had disappeared.
15. Gaelic, _____ is the language of the Scots, is little spoken nowadays.
16. The concert _____ we attended last night was very enjoyable.
17. Industrial pollution might kill our plants, many of _____ have little resistance to smog.

18. On his way to Bodrum, _____ he had visited before, he stopped in several little villages.
19. Robert Mugabe, _____ became the first Prime Minister of Zimbabwe, took several university degrees.
20. Peter, _____ couldn't see the screen, decided to change his seat.
21. This is the gun with _____ the murder was committed.
22. The bag in _____ the robbers put the money was found outside the bank.
23. The medicine _____ the doctor gave me had no effect at all.
24. The shoes _____ she finally bought were the ones _____ she tried on first.

EXERCISE 312

Aşağıdaki tümceleri WHICH relative pronoun ile birleştiriniz.

1. We like the old house on the corner. It has been for sale.
2. The river flows into the Baltic Sea. The river contains a considerable amount of salmon.
3. Much of the territory in North America had been previously owned by the French. The British acquired large tracts of the territory from the French.
4. Someone contaminated the salt solution. The sample was drawn from this solution.
5. I bought a few blue vases. The town is noted for these vases.
6. The invading armies shouldn't have destroyed the art treasures. The people were proud of them.
7. I appreciate your enclosing the educational materials. We requested them.
8. I suggest you refer to the historical novel. It won the Nobel Prize.



I have finally found a house (which) you can afford.

EXERCISE 313

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde atılabilcek olan relative pronoun'ları ayrıç içine alınız.

1. She is the woman that we saw at the restaurant last night.
2. Which is the baby that was crying in the morning?
3. Debbie is the girl whom Rachel is living with.
4. Did you see the bear that killed the hunter?
5. Prof. Moore is the scholar whom we all admire.
6. This is the kind of predicament which all of us try to avoid.

7. Have you read the book that caused all the controversy.
 8. These are the suggestions that the committee made.
 9. Did you understand the instructions that he had explained?
 10. We are visiting a small town that produces the best tea in the world.
-
-

EXERCISE 314

Aşağıdaki tümceleri OF WHICH ile birleştiriniz.

Asimov went on to write a total of 399 essays. The last of them appeared in February 1992.

Asimov went on to write a total of 399 essays, the last of which appeared in February 1992.

1. The forests are the habitat of myriad species of plants and animals. A couple million of them have not yet even been classified.
2. China currently has 1.2 million passenger cars. Only 5 percent of them are privately owned.
3. Reduce the intake of animal flesh and broaden your eating horizon by trying ethnic foods. Many of them include delicious meat-free dishes.
4. There were fifteen registered Holstein dairy cows in the field. Nine of them subsequently died of the effects of the toxic spray.
5. There are a number of necessary raw materials. For the supply of them we are predominantly dependent on imports from foreign countries.
6. He had all his money stolen. In consequence of that, he gave up all his future plans.
7. There are 48 airports in the country. About half of them have paved runways.
8. The wild animals of Afghanistan include more than 100 mammal species. Some of them are nearing extinction.
9. By far the most common type is essential hypertension. The causes of essential hypertension are unknown.
10. Asbestos is now generating up to 12,000 cancer cases a year in the United States. Almost all of them are fatal.
11. There is still bitter controversy about nuclear energy. Many governments are currently spending vast sums of money on the development of nuclear energy.
12. His sitting-room is lined with books. He has read none of them.
13. He invested his money in four companies. Three of them went bankrupt within a year.
14. There is an Indian legend. According to it man and woman were created from a piece of wood.
15. Primates have supple fingers. They can perform delicate operations with them.
16. Darwin's theory of evolution is based upon evidence. Fossils provide some of the evidence.

EXERCISE 315

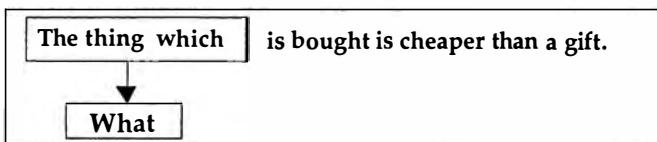
Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz

Life is full of mysteries, many of which will never be explained.
Life is full of mysteries, of which many will never be explained.

1. He had a room full of pictures, none of which was of any value.
2. He has composed a vast amount of music, little of which is ever played today.
3. That room had only two doors, one of which was locked.
4. All plants and animals exhibit the tendency to vary, the causes of which have yet to be ascertained. *–Thomas Huxley*
5. Fast foods contain heavy helpings of calories, fat, sugars, sodium, and preservatives, most of which wreak havoc on body organs.
6. There are many extinct primates. Most of them were unable to adapt themselves to changing habitats.

THE THING(S) WHICH = WHAT

WHICH zamiri, *thing* ve *things* adları yerine kullanıldığında *the thing(s)* which yapısı WHAT olarak kısaltılır.



What is good for some is black poison to others.

What is reasonable is true, and *what is true* is reasonable. *–George Wilhelm*

What is written without effort is in general read without pleasure.

–Samuel Johnson

What you wear in your heart shows in your face.

 *the thing(s) which* yapısı WHAT olarak kısaltıldığında WHAT-öbeği tekil olarak algılanır:

The things which are harmful to our body are to be avoided.

What is harmful to our body is to be avoided.



The thing(s) which=what kısaltması, WHAT-ad içtümceçikleri ile aynı görünüşe sahip olabilmektedir.

The thing which he said had nothing to do with our discussion.

What he said had nothing to do with our discussion.

“*What did he say?*”

I do not know *what he said*.

EXERCISE 316

Aşağıdaki tümceleri *the thing(s) which=what* kısaltmasını yaparak yeniden yazınız.

1. The things which he said are totally irrelevant to the discussion.
2. That which is called firmness in a king is called obstinacy in a donkey.
—Lord Erskine
3. A charlatan makes obscure the thing which is clear; a thinker makes clear the thing which is obscure.
4. That which is enough for one is enough for two.
5. The quality, not the longevity, of one's life is the thing which is important. —Dr. Martin Luther King Jr.

E. whose

WHOSE, gerçekte bir zamir değildir çünkü bir adım yerine değil, iyelik gösteren bir sözcüğün yerine kullanılır.

The old man was very happy.	His	son had returned from war.
The old man whose son had returned from war was very happy.		

☞ Cansızlar ve hayvanlarla WHOSE yerine OF WHICH kullanılabilir.

The Atlantis, the exact location of which is not known, was an island.
whose location is not known,

WHOSE genel olarak, insanlar için iyelik gösteren sözcüklerin yerine alır. Günlük kullanımda cansız varlıklar ile de WHOSE kullanılabilmektedir.

OXFAM is an association *whose contributions are held in high esteem*.

OXFAM is an association *contributions of which are held in high esteem*.

A woman *whose mother or sister had breast cancer* is more likely to develop breast cancer herself.

Physical fitness is necessary for athletes, soldiers, firemen, and all those *whose jobs require high levels of physical performance*.

The chairman scolded the speaker *whose foolish remarks made everybody laugh*.

Man, *whose body is as fragile as a jar*, should make his thoughts firm as a fortress.

Whose advice I listen to is nobody's business.

EXERCISE 317

Sıfat içtümceviklerinin altını çiziniz ve relative pronoun'un hangi adın yerine kullanıldığını belirtiniz.

1. A miser is an ass that carries gold and eats thistles.
2. Self-sacrifice is the real miracle out of which all the reported miracles grow.—*Ralph Waldo Emerson*
3. Any system which depends on human reliability is unreliable. —*Tom Gibb*
4. Among the things which may improve the cardiovascular system are exercising, dieting, giving up smoking, and avoiding stress.
5. Some psychologists believe that the causes which underlie many physical disorders, like stuttering, are of psychological origin.
6. Thoughtfulness for others, generosity, modesty, and self-respect, are the qualities which make a real gentleman. —*Thomas Huxley*
7. Between World War I and World War II, many nations made great improvements in aircraft, which promoted the development of aerial bombs.
8. The delay of which they complained was not really our fault.

EXERCISE 318

Aşağıdaki tümceleri WHOSE kullanarak birlleştiriniz.

1. The man immediately reported the theft. His bag had been stolen.
2. This vast lake is in a remote part of the country. Its depth has not yet been measured.
3. A young London reporter has won this year's prize for journalism. His output has been of a consistently high quality.
4. This actor is from Wales. His stormy marriage to Elizabeth Taylor used to be the subject of great publicity.
5. The lecturer talked about Hemingway. I have started reading Hemingway's novels.

BİR BİRLERİNİN YERİNE KULLANILABİLEN RELATIVE PRONOUNS

Adjective clause'ların ilginç bir özelliği, kimi relative pronoun'ların anlam değişikliği ya da kullanım değişikliği yaratmadan birbirleri yerine kullanılabilirlerdir.

The gambler **{ who
that }** had lost all his money was a politician.

No man loves the man $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{whom} \\ \text{who} \\ \text{that} \\ \emptyset \end{array} \right\}$ he fears.

Cigarettes are killers $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{which} \\ \text{that} \end{array} \right\}$ travel in packs.

The books $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{which} \\ \text{that} \end{array} \right\}$ make us think are the best.

The books $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{which} \\ \text{that} \\ \emptyset \end{array} \right\}$ we like best make us think.

Brain is the apparatus WITH which we think.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{which} \\ \text{that} \\ \emptyset \end{array} \right\}$ we think WITH

The author ABOUT whom he talked was Isaac Asimov.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{whom} \\ \text{who} \\ \text{that} \\ \emptyset \end{array} \right\}$ he talked ABOUT



EXERCISE 319

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde OF WHICH öbeklerini WHOSE ile değiştiriniz.

1. A weed is just a plant the virtues of which have not yet been discovered.
A weed is just a plant whose virtues have not yet been discovered.
2. There are still many bacteria the size and shape of which are not known yet.
3. Antidepressants are a class of drugs used to treat patients with depression, the symptoms of which include insomnia and loss of appetite.
4. The book the binding of which is torn has been stolen by an English priest from a Turkish museum.
5. No nation should be reduced to a flock of timid and industrious animals, the shepherd of which is the government. –*De Tocqueville* (1840)
6. There was an explosion of a giant star, the remains of which can still be observed in space today.
7. The USA had a long history of slavery, the abolition of which cost many black lives.

EXERCISE 320

Aşağıdaki tümceleri sıfat içtümcecikleri kullanarak birleştiriniz.

Some people won't buy computers. I don't understand them.
I don't understand people WHO won't buy computers.

1. Some planes can carry a couple of hundred people. I've never flown in one.
2. My friend is going to travel around the world. I envy him.
3. Some machines can make 2400 copies an hour. I've never seen one.
4. Some motorcycles can go 120 mph. I've never ridden one.
5. The book was written by my favorite author. It won an award.
6. The theories were developed in the 1600s. They were the beginning of rocket technology.
7. The huge temple was built by the Egyptians. It was a place to worship the sun.
8. The devices were created by engineers and technicians. They help blind people.
9. His temperature was recorded by the nurse. It went down when the doctor came.
10. Newton's laws were published many years ago. They are well known today.
11. Many objects had polluted the environment. They were collected by the environment protection group.
12. The man had written to the senator. He was worried about pollution.
13. Richard Armstrong was an explorer and a mountaineer. He disappeared in a blizzard in the Karakoram.

14. The death of Paul and his wife was undoubtedly brought about by the loss of both their children. This loss deprived them of all motive for living.
15. The student discussed the gems with expert knowledge. This knowledge astonished the professor.
16. The actress hadn't told the detective that she could do judo. The detective had conducted the inquest.

EXERCISE 321

Aşağıdaki tümceleri verilen öğelerle başlayacak şekilde sıfat içtümcevikleri kullanarak birléstiriniz.

I told you about the project. All the major companies are interested in the project.

All the major companies are interested in the project which I told you about.

1. Jack's car had broken down. He had to take a bus.

Jack _____

2. The hotel was full of guests. The hotel was miles from anywhere. The guests had gone there to admire the scenery.

The hotel _____

3. I lent you a computer. It belongs to a friend of mine. She lives in Kaş.

The computer _____

4. A politician's jewels were stolen. A police officer was staying in the same hotel. The politician was interviewed by him.

The politician whose _____

5. Her wallet contained over £100. It was found in the street by a schoolboy. He returned it.

My wallet, _____

6. The ship hit an iceberg and sank. Warning messages had been sent to it. The ship ignored these.

The ship, _____

7. The postman realized I was on holiday. You had sent me a parcel. The postman left it next door.

The postman, _____

8. I used to own a dog. People came to the door. The dog never barked at them.

The dog I _____

9. We went to a beach on the first day of our holiday. It was covered in seaweed. This smelled a lot.

The beach we _____

10. Our neighbours have three small children. The children make a lot of noise. My neighbours never apologize.

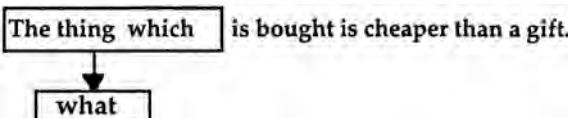
Our neighbours, _____

11. I lost my wallet last week. It was found by a workman. He was digging a hole in the street outside our house.
The wallet _____
12. The government is working on a new economic policy. The purpose of the new policy is to make common people as wealthy as possible.
The government _____
13. The car driver was sent to prison for six months. The entire blame for the accident rested on his shoulders.
The car driver _____
14. One important thing is to save money, time and manpower. A computer can do this.
One _____
15. A car crashed into a large group of people. None of those people was killed.
A car _____
16. Foreign visitors often find that English weather is not so bad as they thought. They often associate it with cold, fog and rain.
Foreign visitors _____

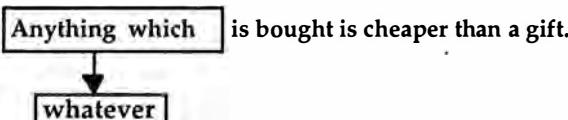
-EVER'LI içtümcecik bağlaçları

**whatever, whoever, whomever, whichever, wherever,
whenever, however**

EVER'lı iç tümcecik bağlaçları, vurgulama gösterirler.



Satın alınan şey, hediyeden daha ucuzdur.



Satın alınan herşey, hediyeden daha ucuzdur.

(Ne satın alınırsa alınsın, hediyeden daha ucuzdur.)

One who	steals his neighbour's shirt usually dies without his own.
Anyone who	
Whoever	

Komşusunun gömleğini çalan genellikle gömeksiz ölü.
Komşusunun gömleğini çalan kim olursa olsun kendisi gömeksiz ölü.

WHOEVER anyone who=	Whoever steals his neighbour's shirt usually dies without his own. –Proverb
WHOMEVER anyone whom=	Give this book to whomever you see here first.
WHATEVER (1) anything that=	Whatever is begun in anger ends in shame. Do whatever your enemies don't want you to do. We always weaken whatever we exaggerate. Whatever is worth doing is worth doing well.
WHA TEVER (2) any=	Paint the door whatever colour you like. The crisis will affect whatever chances of a settlement there are.
WHICHEVER any that=	You may borrow whichever car you want. We'll tune to whichever program is best.
WHENEVER at any time that=	You can borrow my car whenever you want. I'll give him a key so that he can get into the house whenever he likes.
WHEREVER any place that=	They went wherever they could find work. I can live wherever I like. Wherever there is a secret, there must be something wrong. Wherever there is smoke, there is fire.
HOWEVER any place/way/manner that=	It's an informal party. You can dress however you like. Some people believe in a fate that falls on men however they act.

- & 1. Whoever, hem özne hem nesne olarak kullanılabilir.
2. Whomever, sadece nesne olarak kullanılabilir.

 → EVER'lı sözcükler kimi zaman zıtlık gösterirler.

Whoever you are, you can't have any privileges. (*Kim olursan ol, ayrıcalığın olamaz.*)

Whichever road we take, I'm sure it will be the wrong one.

Whatever you say, I still maintain a drink or two is very useful for getting to tell you something about themselves.

However carefully you drive you will have probably an accident eventually.

Ambition is such a powerful passion in some people that however high they reach they are never satisfied.

However weak we may be, we shall never surrender.

Whichever way you look at it, the problem looks serious.

 -EVER'lı sözcükler şaşkınlık, belirsizlik de gösterebilirler.

Wherever did you get that hat? (Bu şapkayı da nereden buldun?)

He certainly looks important, whoever he is. (Her kimse önemli birine benziyor.)

He says he is an entrepreneur, whatever that means. (Bir “entrepreneur” olduğunu söylüyor, her ne demekse.)

EXERCISE 322

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde the thing(s) which ve anything which yerine WHAT ve WHATEVER kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

1. People who talk of outlawing the atomic bomb are mistaken—the thing which needs to be outlawed is war.— *Leslie Richard Groves*
2. The thing which Einstein conceived was a new look at the very old laws of nature.
3. Anything which needs to be maintained through force is doomed. —*Henry Miller*
4. In the scientific approach, anything which is inconsistent with the facts must be discarded or revised.
5. Anything which is popular deserves attention.— *James Mackintosh*
6. We always weaken the things which we exaggerate. —*Laharpe*
7. Anything which occurs in the mind will surely affect anything which occurs in the body.
8. Liberty is the right to do the things which the law permits. —*Montesquieu*

EXERCISE 323

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçe'ye çeviriniz.

1. Whatever is popular deserves attention.
2. You must do jogging whenever (it is)possible.
3. Whatever is worth doing at all, is worth doing well.
4. You can use a pencil or a pen, whichever is available.
5. Whenever people agree with me I always feel I must be wrong. —*Oscar Wilde*
6. Whoever controls the media--the images--controls the culture. —*Allen Ginsberg*
7. I will buy whichever computer arrives first.

8. They went wherever they could find work.
9. In the scientific approach, whatever is inconsistent with the facts must be discarded or revised.
10. Whatever fosters militarism makes for barbarism; whatever fosters peace makes for civilization. —*Herbert Spencer*



(Karikatürist neyi eleştirmektedir?)

DEFINITION /tanımlar

Man /is an animal/ that can think.

Bir tanimda 3 öğe bulunmak durumundadır:

1. Tanımlanan öğe (MAN)
2. Tanımlanan ögenin ait olduğu sınıf (ANIMAL)
3. Tanımlanan öğeyi sınıfındaki diğer öğelerden ayırcı özellik (THINKING)

Sıfat içtümceçikleri tanım yaparken ayırcı özelliğin ifadesinde yaygın olarak kullanılmaktadır. Tanımlar yaygın olarak iki şekilde görülür.

Tanımlanan öğe	Sınıf	Ayırcı özellik
Man	is an animal	that can think.
A dishwasher	is a machine	that washes dishes.
A mind reader	is a person	who can read minds.

Sınıf	Ayırcı özellik	Tanımlanan öğe
The animal	that can think	is called man.
A machine	that washes dishes	is called a dishwasher.
A person	who can read minds.	is called a mind reader.

EXERCISE 324

Aşağıdaki soruları tanım yaparak yanıtlayınız.

What's a cigarette lighter. (gadget)

It's a gadget that lights cigarettes.

1. What's a pencil sharpener? (a device)
2. What's a can opener? (a machine)
3. What's a hair dryer? (a machine)
4. What's a clothes dryer? (a machine)
5. What's a newspaper publisher? (a person)
6. What's a bank manager? (a person)

EXERCISE 325

Aşağıdaki tümceleri tanım olarak yeniden yazınız.

A librarian helps people find books.

A librarian is a person who helps people find books.

1. A dietitian plans meals in a hospital.
2. A pharmacist works in a pharmacy .
3. A nurse works in a hospital.
4. A photographer takes pictures.
5. A gardener takes care of a garden.
6. A postman delivers letters and parcels.
7. A detective solves mysteries.
8. A wine-taster tastes wines.
9. A travel agent arranges holidays and journeys.
10. A model poses for photographs.

**Look at these Iraqi children who have been
"liberated" by the USA**

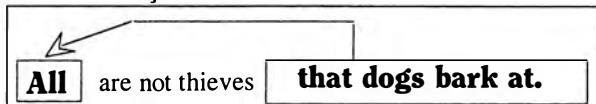


Will the cycle that keeps most of the world poor and famished ever end?
Will the USA and Europeans who suck blood all over the world ever let poor nations alone?

DISCONTINUOUS ADJECTIVE CLAUSES

KESİNTİLİ SİFAT İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

Genel kural olarak sıfat içtümcezikleri niteledikleri adın hemen arkasına gelirler. Kimi özel durumlarda bu genel kural değişebilmektedir. Aşağıdaki örnekte *that dogs bark at* sıfat içtümceciği, *ALL* zamirini nitelemekte olmasına rağmen *Köpeklerin her havlادığı hırsız değildir* yargısını vurgulama ile ifade etmek için tümçenin sonuna konmuştur.



All is not gold *that glitters*. (*ALL* niteleniyor.)

He knows little *who tells his wife all he knows*. — Thomas Fuller
(*HE* niteleniyor)

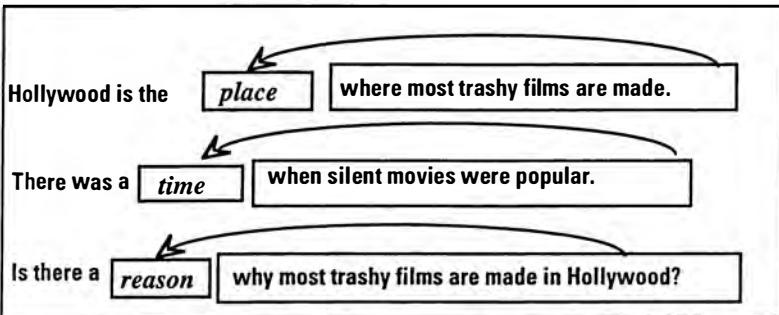
Nobody has completed his education *who has not learned to live with an insoluble problem*. (*NOBODY* niteleniyor.)

EXERCISE 326

Aşağıda altı çizilerek gösterilmiş sıfat içtümceziklerinin hangi öğeleri nitelediğini belirtiniz.

1. All that time is lost which might be better employed. — Rousseau
2. No man is worth his salt who is not ready at all times to risk his well-being, to risk his body, to risk his life, in a great cause. — Theodore Roosevelt
3. Nothing is politically right which is morally wrong. — O'Connell
4. He is poor whose expenses exceed his income.
5. He is a good speaker who convinces himself.
6. There has never yet been a man in our history who led a life of ease whose name is worth remembering. — T. Roosevelt (Dikkat: iki ayrı sıfat içtümceciği var.)
7. Every man is dishonest who lives upon the labor of others, no matter if he occupies a throne. — Robert Green Ingersoll
8. Hardly a little boy is to be found who does not collect something.
9. To date, no storage method for radioactive nuclear wastes has been found that is absolutely infallible.
10. He labours in vain who tries to please everybody.

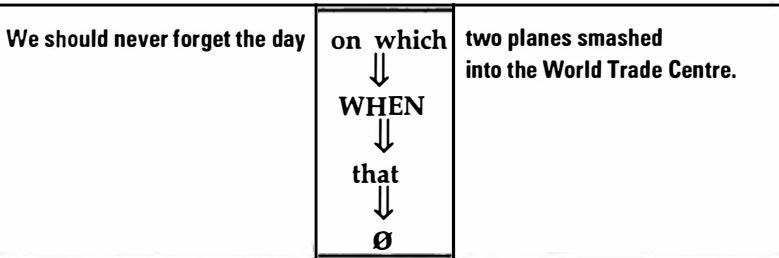
WHEN-WHERE-WHY as relative pronouns



WHEN, WHERE ve WHY soru sözcükleri zaman, yer ve neden göstermek üzere kurulan **PREPOSITION+WHICH** yapısının yerine geçerek relative pronoun gibi kullanılabilirler. Aşağıda bu kullanımları örnekliyoruz.

F. when

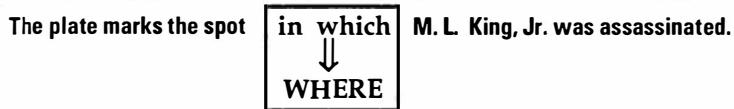
In which/on which/at which (moment, day, month) gibi bir zaman adı yerine geçiyorsa bunlar yerine WHEN kullanılabilir. Bu durumda THAT de kullanılabilir. Relative pronoun'un bütünüyle atılabilmesi de mümkündür.



The old man often recalls the day when he used to live with his children.

Ours is a century in which some of the oldest dreams of mankind have been realized, in which mankind has flown.

G. where





"It's a cometery. That's where
dead people live."

IN WHICH/ON WHICH/AT WHICH bir yer adı yerine geçiyorsa bunların yerine WHERE kullanılabilir.

What is a flea market?

Robert: Ali, I am going to the flea market. Do you want to come?

Ali: The flea market? Why do you want to buy fleas?

Robert: Oh, they don't sell fleas there. A flea market is an open-air market where people sell second-hand things and antiques.

The bank robber wanted to live in a country where nobody would recognize him.

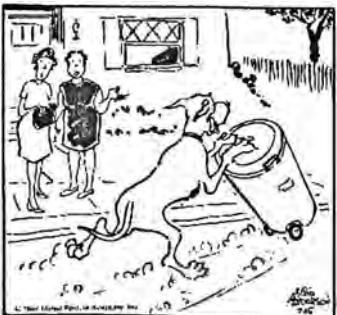
One day man, with more advanced methods of exploring space, will find new planets where he can settle.

H. why

FOR WHICH, reason adı yerine geçiyorsa WHY olarak kısalabilir.

Can you give one good reason **for which** we should go to the moon?

↓
why



*"That's the reason why we
removed the wheels
from our trash container."*

While thousand and thousands of people are dying of hunger, can you give us one sensible reason why we should go to the moon?

The reason why America is so oblivious to CIA crimes is that the mainstream media willingly comply with the agency.
There is good reason why we should prize independence.



WHEN, WHERE, WHY relative pronoun olarak kullanıldıklarında bir adı niteleyeceklerdir. Bu soru sözcüklerinin ad içtümceciğinde de kullanıldığını biliyoruz.

We don't know **WHERE HE LIVED**. (ad içtümceği)

We don't know the village **WHERE HE LIVED**. (sifat içtümceği)

EXERCISE 327

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden hangilerinde **WHY**lı sifat içtümceği ve hangilerinde ad içtümceği olduğunu saptayınız.

1. She explained the reason why the prices had risen.
2. Why the news was not released earlier will be explained tomorrow.
3. A dog's fidelity to its owner is one of the reasons why that animal is a favorite household pet.
4. Since the turn of the century; psychologist have been interested in how and why fear is manifested in humans.
5. It might be asked why pollution cannot be prevented.
6. Rome had Senators too, that's the reason why it declined.
7. The reason why worry kills more people than work is that more people worry than work.—*Robert Frost*
8. Ask why statistics are used, and why we should accept them as true.

EXERCISE 328

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden hangilerinde **WHEN**li sifat içtümceği, hangilerinde ad içtümceği ve hangilerinde zarf içtümceği olduğunu saptayınız.

1. The day when we had the meeting ended in a catastrophe.
2. When we leave does not matter.
3. It made him the unhappiest man in the world when his wife left him.
4. This kind of analysis, when it is done well, can yield interesting results.
5. People often start behaving like raving lunatics when they get behind the wheel of a car.
6. The twentieth century is an age when many people are starved for fantasy.
7. When motorless aircrafts were first made, they were all called gliders.
8. That he was involved in the robbery was obvious when he was caught with the stolen money.
9. The day when Columbus set foot on the new continent was the beginning of an era of enslavement.
10. There was a time when philosophy included almost every kind of knowledge

EXERCISE 329

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden hangilerinde WHERE 'li sıfat içtümceği hangilerinde ad içtümceği olduğunu saptayınız.

1. Nobody knew where the dispute would lead to.
2. The inspectors visited the warehouse where the burglary had taken place.
3. The map shows the cave where the pirates hid the gold.
4. Atlantis may have been the Greek island of Thera, where a volcano erupted about 1450 B.C.
5. Where the new plant will be built is up to the government.
6. What UFOs are and where they come from are still matters for speculation.
7. One area where deep-rooted hatred is exhibited is in the ethnic clashes that constantly occur around the globe.

EXERCISE 330

Aşağıdaki tümceleri WHEN, WHERE ve WHY kullanarak birleştiriniz.

Come to the meeting tomorrow at 10 am. You will receive further information at that time.

Come to the meeting at 10 am, at which time (=when) you will receive further information at that time.

Wheat should be planted in spring. Earth is warm and moist in spring.

Wheat should be planted in spring when earth is warm and moist.

The Smiths went to Hawaii. They will spend their holiday there.

The Smiths went to Hawaii where they will spend their holiday.

1. Mr. King is going to have an operation on Dec. 25th. Everybody will be celebrating Christmas on that Day.
2. We moved to Bursa. We soon bought a nice house there.
3. She likes living in Ankara. She can go to theaters, exhibitions and concerts there whenever she wants to.
4. Tina will return to Turkey in 2000. She will have earned her master's degree by that time.
5. How beautiful it was to visit Mersin in April. The orange and lemon blossoms were in full bloom in April.
6. It is difficult to live in Mersin in July or August. The heat is unbearable that time.
7. It is not always a good idea to shop at the open market. The salespeople do not always let you choose the fruits and vegetables and they put rotten fruits in your bag there.
8. The hydrogen chloride solution was heated to 210 degrees. At this point the solution exploded.
9. The town is small one. They killed him in the town.
10. The house is very comfortable. They live in the house.

TANIMLAYICI VE TANIMLAYICI OLMAYAN SIFAT İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

(Defining & Non-defining Relative Clauses)

İngilizce dilbilgisi kitaplarında bu tür sıfat içtümcecikleri için kullanılan terimler şunlardır:

Defining/Non-defining
Restrictive /Non-restrictive
Essential/Non-essential

Sıfat içtümcecikleri adları nitelemektedir. Kimi zaman bu niteleme doğrudan adın kimliğini belirlemekte kullanılmakta, kimi zaman da ad hakkında ek bilgi vermektedir.

The British Empire is still exploiting poor countries.
The British Empire has always been a harsh ruler.
The British Empire, which has always been a harsh ruler, is still exploiting poor countries.

Bu örnekte, tümcenin öznesi olan *the British Empire*, kimliği açısından başka bir betimleme gerektirmemektedir. Bu nedenle, *which has always been a cruel ruler* iç tümcesi tanımlayıcı bir sıfat içtümceciği değildir. Tanımlayıcı olmayan sıfat içtümcecikleri, virgülerle, ana tümceden ayrılır.

Winston Churchill hated Turks.
He wanted the British Army to bomb Turkish villages.
Winston Churchill, who hated Turks, wanted the British Army to bomb Turkish villages in Çanakkale.

Şimdi şu tümcelere bakalım.

American policemen who take bribes from drug-pushers are severely punished.
American policemen, who take bribes from drug-pushers, are severely punished.

İkinci tümcede *who take bribes from drug-pushers* sıfat içtümceciği, virgülerle tümcenin geri kısmından ayrılmamıştır. Yani sıfat içtümceciği tanımlayıcı olarak kullanılmıştır. Bir başka deyişle, sadece ve sadece uyuşturucu satıcılarından teşvet alan American polislerinin şiddetle cezalandırıldığı söylenmektedir.

İkinci tümcede, *who take bribes from drug-pushers* sıfat içtümceği, virgüllerle ayrılmıştır. Buna göre bu sıfat içtümceği tanımlama için gerekli değildir. Bu durumda tümceye göre bütün Amerikan polisleri uyuşturucu satıcılarından rüşvet almakta ve şiddetle cezalandırılmaktadır.

Her father is an author.
He sleeps all day and works all night.

Her father, who is a writer, sleeps all day and works all night.

Bir insanın bir tek babası olabileceğine göre, *father* adını niteleyen sıfat içtümceğinin tanımlayıcı olmaması gerekmektedir.

Hangi tümceye göre şeyhin tek eşi var?

1. *The sheik's wife, who wrote a novel secretly, was punished.*
2. *The sheik's wife who wrote a novel secretly was punished.*

İlk tümceye göre, şeyhin tek eşi var çünkü sıfat içtümceğinin tanımlayıcı olmadığı, virgüllerle belirtilmiştir.

İkinci tümcede sıfat içtümceğinin tanımlayıcı, yani şeyhin hangi eşinin cezalandırıldığını belirtiyor.

EXERCISE 331

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde bulunan sıfat içtümceklerinin tanımlayıcı olup olmadığını belirtiniz.

1. Patterson Tower (which is recently completed office building) is a monument of concrete ugliness.
2. The movie (that I wanted to see) is no longer playing.
3. West Point cadets (who break the honor code) are expelled.
4. Ray's wife (who is a famous author) is president of the local Red Cross.
5. One of my friends (who has great faith in the curative power of herbals) is a computer expert.
6. Sir Arthur Conan Doyle (who created Sherlock Holmes) believed in supernatural powers.
7. Orchids (which are delicate flowers) die quickly.
8. Children should eat foods (which are high in protein.)
9. The roast beef (she served us last night) was dreadful.
10. She has got only one son (who is fond of skydiving).
11. Apples (which will be served to guests) should be perfect.
12. Our neighbour (who won the lottery) immediately quit his job.
13. Agatha Christie (who wrote a number of books) is considered to be one of the greatest detective novel writers.
14. The girl (who produced the best poem) was only twelve years old.

15. Children (whose parents smoke) will often become smokers themselves.
16. His dog (which likes to chew paper products) ate his homework.
17. The high school course (which was most valuable to me) was typing.
18. Dauphin Island (which is located off the coast of Alabama) is a favorite spot for fishermen.

EXERCISE 332

Aşağıdaki tümceleri tanımlayıcı olmayan sıfat içtümcevikleri kullanarak birleştiriniz.

1. In 1945 George Orwell published *Animal Farm*. It is surely one of the greatest books of the century.
2. He had dozens of friends and acquaintances. Not one of them was prepared to help him when his business collapsed.
3. The items in this cabinet are together worth some \$25,000. Several of them belong to my uncle.
4. George Bush seemed to spend most of his time playing golf. He used to be President of the USA.
5. William Golding died at the age of 81. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1983.
6. The Selimiye Mosque is regarded as a masterpiece of Ottoman architecture. It was built in the 16th century by Sinan.

EXERCISE 333

Aşağıdaki, ilk kızılderili alfabenin yaratıcısı Sequoyah hakkında bir parçadır. Parçadaki sıfat içtümceviklerini bulup altlarını çiziniz. Relative pronounların hangi adların yerine kullanıldığını belirtiniz.

Like the giant redwood tree which was named as a tribute to him Sequoyah (1770?-1843) towered above his fellows. He was the son of an unknown white man and a Cherokee Indian woman who alone brought him up in a Cherokee village in Tennessee. Although he never attended school and did not know how to read, write, or speak English, he observed at an early age that the white man had a method of conveying messages by means of printed symbols. He decided to try to invent characters that would do the same thing for the red man.

Sequoyah's quest which began with his studying printed matter and experimenting with symbols ended after many discouraging years of struggle with his invention of the Cherokee alphabet. This alphabet which consisted of 86 characters standing for syllables that could be combined into words was the work of a true genius.

Sequoyah had yet to overcome the ridicule of his people who suspected him of witchcraft. In 1821 he submitted his alphabet to a public test before an assembly of Cherokee leaders. There, he and one of his sons who had learned the alphabet from him were placed at distances from each other. The members dictated sentences to one and took them to the other who read them aloud to the group. Thus the assembly tested and approved Sequoyah's system.

Sequoyah's alphabet had a great effect upon the tribe whose members by the thousands learned to read and write in their own language within a year. Cherokees in Tennessee and Georgia could write letters to tribesmen who had moved to Arkansas. By 1827, as a result of the efforts of a missionary, a printing press was set up for the publication of the Cherokee Phoenix which was the first Cherokee newspaper.

Sequoyah was honored in several ways which included the naming of a county in Oklahoma for him, the placing of a statue of him in the nation's Capitol, and giving his name to the California redwood tree (spelled sequoia). Most important of all however, is the learning and culture the alphabet brought to the Cherokees whose advancement in society stems so directly from the work of Sequoyah's genius.

(Aşağıdaki yazıda kullanılan sıfat içtümceciklerini bulmaya çalışınız.)

CHILDREN CAN BE KILLED BY THE HAMBURGERS THAT THEY EAT

Losing a child is truly the most horrifying experience a parent can witness.



LAUREN BETH RUDOLPH, who was 6 years, 10 months, and 10 days old, died in her mother's arms. She died from the hamburger she had eaten on December 18. It was something her parents had never suspected or even considered. They had heard the doctors who treated Lauren refer to her illness as hemolytic uremic syndrome (HUS). Lauren's parents had never heard of HUS or had any idea what it was.

They certainly had no idea that the great majority of cases of HUS, perhaps as many as 90 percent, are caused by bacterium found principally in ground beef.

The bacterium E. coli 0157:H7 that killed Lauren, was identified quickly at her autopsy, but the public health department kept the information to itself, saying nothing to her parents who were consumed by the devastating task of arranging for their daughter's funeral.

A month later Lauren's parents quite by accident learned what had killed their daughter. Someone from public health department leaked the information that seven hundred people who were killed by the bacterium E. coli 0157:H7 had eaten hamburgers at Jack-in-the-Box, a national hamburger chain. That was where their daughter Lauren had eaten a small hamburger a month earlier.

Chapter 41

ADVERB CLAUSES zarf içtümcecikleri



Zarfların eylemleri niteleyebilen sözcükler olduğunu biliyoruz. Bu niteleme yer, zaman, neden ve tarz göstererek olmaktadır.

- 1.a Mrs. Wilson cried *yesterday*.
- 2.a Mrs. Wilson cried *at home*.
- 3.a Mrs. Wilson cried *like a little girl*.
- 4.a Mrs. Wilson cried *to make her husband feel guilty*.

Zarfların eylemi nitelemesi gibi, kimi tümcecikler de benzeri anımlarla tümçenin eylemini niteleyebilirler.

- 1.b Mrs. Wilson cried *when her husband shouted at her*.
- 2.b Mrs. Wilson cried *where nobody could see her*.
- 3.b Mrs. Wilson cried *as if she were a little girl*.
- 4.b Mrs. Wilson cried *so that her husband would feel guilty*.

When, after, before, where gibi zarf tümceciklerinin başında kullanılan sözcüklere *subordinating conjunction* adı verilmektedir. İngilizce'de ilginç olan bir durum, bu bağlaçlardan AFTER, BEFORE, SINCE, UNTIL ve TILL'in aynı zamanda ilgeç olarak da kullanılabilmesidir.

After the conquest, Constantinapolis was called İstanbul.

After Constantinapolis was conquered, it was called İstanbul.



Kimi ilgeçler de eylemleri zarf tümcecikleri gibi niteleyebilen öbekler (phrase) kurabilirler.

TIME	by, during, up to, within, after, before, until, till, since
MANNER	as, like
REASON	as a result of, because of, due to, owing to, thanks to
CONCESSION	despite, in spite of, regardless of, albeit
CONDITION	but for
RESERVATION	save for, except for, barring
COMPARISON	like, similar to, unlike

YAYGIN OLARAK KULLANILAN ZARF İÇTÜMCECİĞİ BAĞLAÇLARI

TIME	CONDITION	CONTRAST	CAUSE	PURPOSE
after	if	although	because	in order that
before	unless	though	since	so that
when	only if	even though	as	
while	on condition that	whereas	now that	
whilst	providing (that)	while	inasmuch as	
as	provided (that)			
whenever	in case (that)			
since	in the event (that)			
until				
till				
as long as				
once				
as long as				
so long as				

Zarf tümeciği bağlaçlarının sözdizimsel kullanımının ne kadar basit olduğunu aşağıdaki tablo göstermektedir.

After Wherever Whenever Because If As long as	he had to take long trips, he travelled by plane.
--	--

ZARF İÇTÜMCECİĞİ BAĞLAÇLARI GENEL TABLOSU

TIME zaman	after before as once since ever since	until till when whenever while whilst	directly immediately as long as as soon as	the minute (that), by the time that every minute hardly ... when no sooner ... than
-----------------------------	--	--	---	---

PLACE / yer	where	wherever	as far as	as near as
--------------------	-------	----------	-----------	------------

MANNER / tarz	as	as if	as though
----------------------	----	-------	-----------

CAUSE REASON neden	as because since now that whereas	inasmuch as for so much as seeing that ,	because of the fact that due to the fact that in view of the fact that, on account of the fact that owing to the fact that
---	---	---	--

CONCESSION CONTRAST zıtlık	although though even though even if whereas when while where	in spite of the fact that notwithstanding (the fact) that albeit that (archaic), HOWEVER + ADJ/ ADV NO MATTER + QW Clause ADJ AS HE IS ADJ AS IT MAY SEEM for all one's for every X, it has VERB AS SOMEONE MAY
---	---	---

CONDITION koşul	if as if unless only if so/as long as what if	conceded that in case (that) providing (that) provided (that) in the event (that) on condition that suppose that supposing (that)	if it weren't for if it hadn't been for whether ... or not
----------------------------------	--	--	--

PURPOSE amaç	so that in order that	in the hope that to the end that	for the purpose that
-------------------------------	--------------------------	-------------------------------------	----------------------

RESULT sonuç	so ... that such ... that	so much so that
-------------------------------	------------------------------	-----------------

DURATION süreç	until till	as as/so long as	since ever since	all the time
RESERVATION uymazlık		except that excepting that except for the fact that	but that but for the fact that save that	
CONTINGENCY beklenti		for fear that	lest	in case that
COMPARISON karşılaştırma	as as not so as as ... so	ADJ.+ER THAN ADV.+ER THAN MORE ADJ. THAN MORE ADV. THAN	LESS ADJ. THAN LESS ADV. THAN	



"Was the rainbow in colour when
you were a kid, Mr. Wilson?"

ZARF İÇTÜMCECİKLERİNİN TÜMCE İÇİNDEKİ YERLERİ

Zarf içtümceciklerinin tümce içinde üç ayrı yerde kullanılması mümkündür.

1. Zarf tümcecikleri normal olarak temel tümcecikleri izlerler.

Our manager was highly respected because he was a man of great talents.
He never touched anything before he deserved it.

2. Zarf tümcecikleri vurgulanmak istendiklerinde temel tümceciğin önünde kullanılır. Bu gerçekte devrik bir yapıdır. Bu nedenle de yazılı dilde, temel tümcecikten bir virgülle ayrılırlar.

Because he was a man of great talents, our manager was highly respected.
Before he deserved it, he never touched anything.

- 3. Zarf tümcecikleri, temel tümceciğin içine de konabilir. Bu durumda yazılı dilde zarf tümceciğinin önünde ve arkasında virgül kullanılır.**

Our manager, because he was a man of great talents, was highly respected.

 *Although, even though, while, in spite of the fact that* bağlaçları kimi zaman temel tümcecikle zayıf bir ilişki içindedir. Bu durumda, zarf içtümceciği doğal yeri olan temel tümceciğin arkasında da kullanılsa bir virgülle temel tümcecikten ayrılır.

She keeps working on her book, even though she knows that it will never be finished.

ADVERBIAL CLAUSES OF TIME



"I'll be right here when you come out, dear!"

after

After he had married, he became a new man, giving up all his bad habits. Experience is a comb that life gives you *after you lose your hair*. –*Judith Stern*

Hope for a miracle *only after everything else has failed*. (Ancak her çaba boşça çıktıktan sonra mucize bekle.)

The Americans will always do the right thing *after they've exhausted all the alternatives*. –*W. Churchill* (Amerikalılar her zaman doğru şeyi yapacaklardır *diğer bütün seçenekleri tüketiktikten sonra*.)

as long as

We will fight for our country *as long as we live*.

Governments last *as long as the under-taxed can defend themselves from the over-taxed*.

as soon as

Radio and television can transmit news *as soon as it happens.*

The poor man is ruined *as soon as he begins to ape the rich.*
—*Publilius Syrus* (1st Century B.C.)

As soon as the witness was sworn in, the lawyer began to assail him with questions.

American English (that spoken in the United States) diverged *as soon as the American colonies were founded at the start of the 17th century.*

If you are having problems with your heart, I think you should consult your doctor *as soon as you can afford it.*

as

As people grow old, their bones may become quite brittle.

The defects of the mind, like those of the face, grow worse *as we grow old.* —*François de La Rochefoucauld*

As she was preparing the lunch in a hurry, she cut two of her fingers.

before

This was a nice place *before the tourists discovered it.*

Before I could utter a word, my boss left the office.

Before human language was written, it was spoken.

by the time that

By the time the Persian Gulf War ended, thousands of Iraqi children had died.

By the time the British Empire left India in 1947, ten million Hindians had died of hunger.

hardly ...when

He had *hardly* recovered from influenza *when he developed measles.*

Hardly had 20 years passed after World War I *when Germany started World War II.*

immediately, the minute (that)

I called my parents *immediately I got home and asked about the earthquake.*

The minute (that) shy open their mouths, they begin to tremble and forget all what they want to say.

directly

I realized that I had made a mistake by asking for a loan *directly I had said it .*

no sooner ... than

No sooner had he closed his eyes than he fell asleep.

No sooner had I finished one task, than I was asked to do another one.

No sooner had she entered the building, than she felt something strange.

 *No sooner'dız izleyen yapının devrik (inverted) olduğuna dikkat ediniz.*

every minute, every time

Every minute you are angry, you lose sixty seconds of happiness.



*"Every time I play my banjo,
the alley cats throw shoes at
me."*

once

One cannot escape having some values, and *once he has them*, they operate as prejudices or biases in his thinking.

since

Letter writing has gone into a decline *since the telephone was invented*. He has been able to read *since he was four*.

Ever since humans have inhabited the earth, they have made use of various forms of communication.

 *He went to Istanbul in 1967 and has lived there ever since.*

till

Health is not valued *till sickness comes*. – Proverb

The man who goes alone can start today; but he who travels with another must wait *till that other is ready*. –Henry David Thoreau

until

"I refuse to pay any more beauty treatments until I see some results."

I won't talk to him *until he apologizes*.

Until the automobile and the airplane were invented, the camel was the only means people had for crossing the deserts of Asia and Africa.

A game is not won *until it has been played.*

You never realize what a good memory you have *until you try to forget something.* –Franklin P. Jones

Defeat never comes to any man *until he admits it.* – Josephus Daniels

Procrastinators are people who have a chronic habit of putting things off, usually until the last minute and sometimes *until it is too late altogether.*

This will never be a civilized country *until we spend more money for books than we do for chewing gum.* – Elbert Hubbard

Because what helps one person may not help another, different drug treatments often must be tried *until the right one is found.*

Many responsible people feel that no more nuclear reactors should be built *until we know how to control their wastes.*

We never know the love of our parents for us *until we have become parents.* –Henry Ward Beecher

Never insult an alligator *until after you have crossed the river.* –Proverb

when

History teaches us that men and nations behave wisely *when they have exhausted all other alternatives.* –Abba Eban

When more calories are consumed than are needed by the body, the excess energy is stored as fat.

A man's worst difficulties begin *when he is able to do as he likes.* — Thomas Huxley

The greatest strength of propaganda is *when it isn't recognized as such.*

Only when our arms are sufficient beyond doubt can we be certain beyond doubt that they will never be employed. – John F. Kennedy

Only when he is well again, will his father let him play football.



ONLY WHEN tümce başında kullanıldığında temel tümceciğin devrik olduğuna dikkat ediniz.

whenever

Whenever thoughts of suicide form part of the depression, psychiatric help and care is a must, if tragedy is to be averted.

Whenever I hear anyone arguing for slavery, I feel a strong impulse to see it tried on him personally. –Abraham Lincoln

Whenever a radical change occurs, some individuals are leftbehind.

while

We should not wait *while human existence progresses rapidly toward extinction.*

Don't step on a daisy *while you are looking for a rose.*



"He wasn't wearing glasses or a mustache when you came in."

EXERCISE 334

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları kutu içinde verilen zarf içtümceği bağlaçlarından uygun olanlarıyla doldurunuz.

after as soon as	as before	by the time ever since	since until	when whenever
---------------------	--------------	---------------------------	----------------	------------------

- _____ the United States dropped atom bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, 200,000 civilians were killed.
- Oddly, nobody seems to think very seriously about health _____ they get sick or injured.
- Because Helen was uninterested in school, she dropped out of high school _____ she turned sixteen.
- Jack began to work as a taxi driver _____ his father had lost all his money.
- _____ people grow older, they find it more difficult to keep fit.
- A fire is never out _____ the last spark is extinguished.
- _____ we moved into town, our fuel bill has tripled.
- Her second-hand car was in excellent condition _____ she bought it.
- She slammed on the brakes _____ her car sped downhill.
- You'll appreciate the central heating _____ the winter comes.
- The secretary had finished typing the report _____ her boss came back.
- _____ he was 15, he had decided to become a composer.
- Fruits must be washed _____ they are eaten.
- _____ Britain became an imperialistic country, the number of people speaking English as their first language, or mother tongue, has grown rapidly.
- _____ I go to Istanbul, I visit my uncle.
- The Russian Armenians joined the Russian army in preparing an attack on the Ottomans _____ World War I was declared.

EXERCISE 335

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki zarf içtümceviklerini bulunuz.

1. There were no weapons of mass destruction in Iraq when the USA attacked it.
2. No weapons of mass destruction will be found in Iraq before the USA plants them there.
3. North America probably had earth's greatest store of environmental wealth before it was plundered by the British and Americans.
4. When former General Dwight Eisenhower left the presidency in 1960, he warned Americans about the rise of a military industrial complex.
5. On summer nights when the breeze is blowing, I can still hear their cries, the little kids screaming. -U.S. Army machine-gunner at No Gun Ri
6. As soon as the last bell rang, students started packing to go home.
7. The slaves were required to be in the cotton field as soon as it was light in the morning.
8. The slaves were required to work in the cotton field until it was too dark to see.
9. Hardly had they started to fish when it began to rain.
10. By the time you finish reading this passage, two hundred acres will have been destroyed!
12. A false friend and a shadow attend only while the sun shines. - *Benjamin Franklin*
13. While grief is fresh, every attempt to divert only irritates. You must wait till it be digested, and then amusement will dissipate the remains of it. -*Samuel Johnson*
14. Some people make things happen, some watch while things happen, and some wonder 'What happened?'

EXERCISE 336

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizgili ilgeç öbekleri yerine zarf içtümcevikleri kullanarak tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

Before the invention of the telephone, letter writing was a popular art.

Before the telephone was invented, letter writing was a popular art.

1. After the completion of the course, the students are given certificates.
2. Everybody stayed indoors until the end of the storm.
3. Before bombing the Serbs, the NATO had warned them a million times that their violence could no longer be tolerated.
4. Today it is almost impossible to imagine the world as it was before the invention of the automobile.
5. Cowards die many times before their deaths, and the valiant never taste of death but once.
6. After the publication of his book on marital affairs, he was often consulted by married people on the verge of divorce.
7. Until the development of the airplane as a military weapon, the fort was considered impregnable.
8. Italy enjoyed a highly developed and specialized civilization from about 264 B.C. until the fall of the Roman Empire in 476 A.D.

ADVERBIAL CLAUSES OF PLACE



*"Wherever there is
wrongdoing, I'll be there."*

"I'll bank on that."

where

We prefer to live *where the sun shines all year*.

The true civilization is *where every man gives to every other every right that he claims for himself.* —Robert Green Ingersoll

He said he was happy *where he was*.

We hid the book *where nobody could think of looking*.

Where the tree stood last year, a rock now stood.

Where little is needed, hard work is unnecessary; *where much is needed*, it is absolutely essential.

Where there is poverty, there we find discontent and unrest. Nerede yokluk varsa orada huzursuzluk ve karışıklık vardır.

Where there is gold, there the devil dwells. Altın neredeyse, şeytan orada bulunur. Altının olduğu yerde şeytan da bulunur.

Where there is a will, there is a way.

It is unwise to leave lethal weapons *where children may find them*.

Where the corpse is, there the vultures gather.

whenever

Wherever there is a secret, there must be something wrong.

They went *wherever they could find work*.

Wherever there are great forests, modern methods of insect control threaten the fishes inhabiting the streams in the shelter of the trees.

Violent thunderstorms are impressive phenomena *wherever they occur*.

Wherever you go, I'll go with you.

We leave traces of ourselves *wherever we go*, on whatever we touch. —Thomas Jefferson

Wherever public spirit prevails, liberty is secure. –Noah Webster

A grave, wherever found, preaches a short and pithy sermon to the soul. –Nathaniel Hawthorne

The scientist is a lover of truth for the very love of truth itself, *wherever it may lead.* –Burbank

as far as

Let's walk as far as we can go.

as near as

The boat kept as near as it was possible to the coast.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF MANNER

as

Choose an author as you choose a friend.

Expect to be treated as you have treated others.

As is often said, knowledge is a double-edged tool which can be used for good or evil.

As many of us have seen, simply knowing a language does not mean we are always able to communicate with speakers of that language.

The fat-soluble vitamins - A, D, E, and K - are dissolved in fats, as their name implies.

The skull protects the brain, just as other bones of the body protect important organs.

as if

AS IF ve **AS THOUGH** hem gerçeğe uygun hem de gerçeğe aykırı durumları ifade edebilirler.

It looks as if it is going to snow. (Kar yağacağa benzıyor, belki de yağacak.)

She talks as if she knows all about you. (Seni iyi tanıyor gibi konuşuyor; belki de tanıyor.)

She talks as if she were rich. (Zenginmiş gibi konuşuyor. Olmadığını biliyoruz.)

He opened his mouth as if (he were) to speak.

You are talking as if you knew all about it.

He sank down in a chair, as if (he were) stunned by the news.

His illness disappeared as if (it was) by magic.

People sat impatient and frightened in the dark as if an unseen enemy had landed from Mars.

Pray as if everything depended on God, and work as if everything depended upon man. –Francis Spellman (Her şey Tanrı'ya bağılmış gibi dua et; her şey insana bağılmış gibi çalış.)

Some people pay a compliment *as if they expected a receipt*. –Elbert Hubbard

The house was shattered *as if a shell had exploded inside*.

The USA president treats Iraq *as if it were a child gone bad*, who has become the neighborhood bully and should be properly disciplined by the grown-ups.

A pilot who flew over the city after the earthquake had hit reported: "The city looks *as if a giant had stepped on it and crushed it flat*."



as though

A camel is an animal *as though it had been put together by a committee*.

Live *each day as though it were the last*.

The gluttonous guest gorged himself with food *as though he had not eaten for days*.

We act *as though comfort and luxury were the chief requirements of life*, when all that we need to make us really happy is something to be enthusiastic about.

Plan your life *as though you were going to live forever*, but live today *as if you were going to die tomorrow*.

We treat this world of ours *as though we had a spare in the trunk*. –Al Bernstein

EXERCISE 337

Ayraç içinde verilenlere dayalı olarak, yarım tümceleri *as if /as though* kullanarak tamamlayınız.

Aspirin is not candy.

Many people treat aspirin *as if it were candy*.

1. They had a serious problem.

She put on a very cheerful voice _____.

2. Animals are not Jack's brothers.

Jack treats all animals _____.

3. They have met several times before.
They looked at each other _____.
4. She is not going to cry.
She looked _____.
5. The man was not shot.
The man jumped _____.
6. She is not mad.
They were looking at her _____.
7. Your eyes cannot pop out of your head.
Your eyes looked _____.
8. A dog cannot speak.
His dog looked _____.

EXERCISE 338

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları **as** ya da **as if** ile doldurunuz.

1. Intelligent rich men work nearly as hard _____ they were poor.—*Russell*
2. _____ I was walking in the woods, I saw a strange animal.
3. They treat me _____ I were a member of the family.
4. _____ he approached, he smiled at me.
5. He is a billionaire, but he lives _____ he were poor.
6. Although a lot happened, he behaved _____ nothing had happened.
7. Mr. Wood went to work _____ he always does: on foot.
8. They all stared at me _____ they had never seen me before.
9. When the teacher died, all her students felt _____ their parents had died.
10. Some people sit in front of the television and treat life _____ it were a worthless span of time.



The USA kills people as if they were little bugs.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF CAUSE and REASON



"I don't think he will like it. He is in the hospital because he was attacked by a bear."

Neden gösteren zarf içtümcecikleri yapımında kullanılan bağlaçlar aşağıdaki kutuda gösterilmektedir.

as	inasmuch as	because of the fact that
because	for so much as	due to the fact that
since	seeing that	in view of the fact that,
now that		on account of the fact that
wheras		owing to the fact that

because of
due to
in view of
on account of
owing to
thanks to

Bu ilgeçler *the fact that* eklenderek zarf içtümceciği bağlacı haline getirilmektedir.

Many people are unhappy *due to the fact that they are greedy*.

Çoğu insanın mutsuz olması aç gözlü olmasındandır.

Çoğu insan mutsuzdur çünkü açgözlüdürler.

Çoğu insan aç gözlü olduğu için mutsuz olur.

Çoğu insan aç gözlü olması nedeniyle mutsuz olur.

Many people are unhappy *due to greed*.

Çoğu insanın mutsuz olması aç gözlülüklük yüzündendir.

as

His health now is far from promising *as he has been a chain smoker for years*.

As he was convinced that his wife was trying to poison him, he refused to eat anything.

Modern armies cannot afford the luxury of immobility, as they are vulnerable to attack while standing still.

because

Çoğu insan mutsuz olur çünkü aç gözüldür.	Many people are unhappy because they are greedy.
Çoğu insanın mutsuzluğun nedeni açgözlü olmalarıdır.	The reason why many people are unhappy is that they are greedy.

Because time is running out, we must hurry.

We were late for work because we missed the bus.

Because hypertension shortens life span, it should be treated.

Low-income families have a hard time buying meat because the prices have gone up considerably this year.

Many big cities all over the world face a crisis because they are running out of space to dump wastes.

Cars contribute to heart disease because we don't walk anywhere anymore.

We are fooled by propaganda chiefly because we don't recognize it when we see it.

Because winters are long and dark in Alaska, agriculture is impossible.

Frequently cancer goes unrecognized because the symptoms are so subtle and varying.

Many big cities all over the world face a crisis because they are running out of space to dump wastes.

Because the moon is an airless, waterless satellite with harsh extremes of temperature, no kind of life could possibly exist there.

Because sanitary conditions were so primitive, disease was rampant all throughout the poverty-stricken country.

A group of white South Africans recently killed a black lawyer simply because he was black.

It is not that pearls fetch a high price because men have dived for them; but on the contrary, men dive for them because they fetch a high price. – Bishop Richard Whately (1787-1863)

Despite the fact that the developed countries keep talking about human rights, they are number-one threat to human rights because they are the only nations making money selling deadly weapons.

Because the media is commercial, it is partially dominated by advertisers.

The USA overthrew Allende because his policies would hurt U.S. business interests.

because of the fact that

World figures for population changes are much more difficult to compile because of the fact that many underdeveloped countries do not keep complete records.

due to the fact that

The effectiveness of Japanese education is basically *due to the fact that students study science in early classes.*

Japan is an isolated country *due to the fact that she is surrounded by water on all sides.*

for so much as

Women are not altogether in the wrong when they refuse the rules of life prescribed in the world, *for so much as men have established them without their consent.* —*Michel de Montaigne*

inasmuch as

Inasmuch as no offer has been made to pay for the damage, our company will have to take this case to the court.

in view of the fact that

In view of the fact that in any future world war nuclear weapons will certainly be employed, we should urge our governments to find peaceful means for the settlement of all matters of dispute between them.

now that

Now that she has completed her book, she can enjoy her holiday.

We understand the issue better *now that we have learned the related problems.*

owing to the fact that

Owing to the fact that many seas have been polluted, many countries find it necessary to develop new strategies.

The demand for new housing schemes seems likely to spread to other parts of the country in the immediate future *owing to the fact that the population has been growing fast.*

seeing that

Seeing that each nation has its characteristic merits and demerits, we adjust our standard of values so as to make out that the merits possessed by our nation are the really important ones.

since

You should not taste poisonous mushrooms since the tiniest bit could kill you.

Since the costs of TV advertising are passed along to consumers in the price of the advertised goods, television programming is hardly free.

Fishing is of special importance to Scotland since the great fishing banks of the North Sea are close at hand.

Sprinkler-based irrigation systems are claimed to be more efficient than gravity systems since they use less water to irrigate the same amount of land.

Since water is the basis of life, the crucial problem of desert animals is to survive in a world where sources flowing water are rare.

Yeast is one of nature's most perfect foods since it contains more nutrients than any other food.

"CAUSE" İÇ TÜMCECİKLERİNİN KISALTILMIŞ ŞEKİLLERİ

Neden içtümcecikleri çeşitli şekillerde kısaltılır.

With meat being so expensive, we had better eat more vegetables.

(Because meat is so expensive, ...)

Having been punished so often, the child has been very stubborn.

(Because he has been punished so often)

Being very intelligent, he quickly understood what I was trying to explain. (Because he was very intelligent, ...)

Being a potential dangerous criminal, the man was guarded by three policemen when he was taken to another prison.

The buses being unreliable, Henry drove his car to work.

A very sick man, he died young. (Because he was a very sick man,...)

All his energy spent, he wished to retire. (Because all his energy had been spent,)

Being rather short of money, we decided not to go abroad.



BECAUSE olumsuz tümcelerde özel bir kullanım gösterir.

Olumsuz tümcelerde because doğrudan "çünkü" ile karşılaşmayan yargilar ifade eder.

You have not converted a man because you have silenced him.

Bir adamı susturmuş olmak onu ikna ettiğiniz anlamına gelmez.

Bir adamı susturdunuz diye onu ikna etmiş olmazsınız.

An idea is not necessarily true because a man dies for it. -Oscar Wilde

(Birisini uğrunda öldürdü diye bir fikrin doğru olması gerekmey.)

Sin is not harmful because it is forbidden, but it is forbidden because it is hurtful.- Benjamin Franklin

(Günah, yasak olduğu için zararlı değildir, zararlı olduğu için yasaktır.)

We do not stop playing because we are old; we grow old because we stop playing.

(Yaşlı olduğumuz için oyundan vazgeçmeyiz, oyundan vazgeçtiğimiz için yaşılanırız.)

Many a man never fails because he never tries. -Norman MacEwan

(Birçok insan hiç bir işi denemedikleri için hiç başarısızlığı ugramazlar.)



SO, sıralı tümcelerde kullanılan "bu nedenle" anlamında bir "coordination conjunction"tır. *Because*, çünkü anlamına geldiği için **SO** ve **BECAUSE** aynı yargıyı iki ayrı yolla ifade edebilmektedir

We decided not to go abroad because we were short of money.

Paramız az olduğu için yurtdışına gitmemeye karar verdik.

Yurtdışına gitmemeye karar verdik çünkü paramız azdı.

We were short of money, so we decided not to go abroad.

Paramız azdı, bu nedenle yurt dışına çıkmamaya karar verdik.

EXERCISE 339

Aşağıdaki boşluklara **BECAUSE** ya da **SO** yerleştiriniz.

1. No kind of life could possibly exist on the moon _____ it is an airless, waterless satellite.
2. The CIA overthrew the legitimately elected government of S. Allende _____ he refused to be robbed by the USA.
3. The USA commits war crimes unrestrainedly _____ it controls the international body that establishes war crimes tribunals. [www.mediamonitors.net]
4. Disease is rampant all throughout the poverty-stricken country _____ sanitary conditions are very primitive.
5. The river seemed to be polluted, _____ we didn't swim in it.
6. President Bush has told too many lies, _____ nobody trusts him.
7. Many American people are homeless _____ they are terribly poor.
8. Gelatin is beneficial to the consumer _____ it has high protein content.

EXERCISE 340

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **BECAUSE** kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

The prices have gone up considerably this year, so low-income families have a hard time buying meat.

Low-income families have a hard time buying meat because the prices have gone up considerably this year.

1. His suggestions seemed to be childish, so we ignored them.
2. She has quit her job, so she is looking for a new one now.
3. The teacher was too harsh with her students, so she was not well liked.
4. His car refused to work in the morning, so he had to take the bus.
5. Some people fear change, so they oppose innovations.

6. The snowstorm has completely blocked air traffic, so our flight has been cancelled.
7. There are millions of kangaroos in Australia, so the kangaroo has become the national animal.
8. Jack has not been feeling well for the past two weeks or so, so his wife wants him to see a doctor.

EXERCISE 341

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizgili ilgeç öbekleri yerine zarf içtümcecikleri kullanarak tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

The government has been vigorously criticized because of its neglect of working class areas.

The government has been vigorously criticized because it has neglected working class areas.

1. Because of the severe snow storm, the air force had to drop food and medical supplies close to the city.
2. Because of a decrease in income last year, our company is cutting expenditures.
3. Because of the continuous terrorist attacks, many people left their homes.
4. Because of the spread of terrorist groups in Europe, innocent people face a grim future.
5. The student was dismissed from school because of disrespectful conduct.
6. Because of the German support of Islamic terror organizations, Germany is no longer a safe country for Muslims.

EXERCISE 342

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. Wise men talk because they have something to say; fools talk because they have to say something. –Plato
2. The United States is actually decades behind Turkey in human rights because slavery in the USA is still alive in more than one way.
3. Boredom is a vital problem for the moralist, since at least half of the sins of mankind are caused by the fear of it. –Bertrand Russell
4. A poor reading ability can be dangerous since it exposes the reader to the wiles of the propagandist.
5. We cannot despair of humanity since we ourselves are human beings. –Albert Einstein
6. Opportunity is missed by most people because it is dressed in overalls and looks like work. –Thomas Alva Edison
7. His failure was supposed to be due to the fact that he had neglected to seek help.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF CONTRAST /CONCESSION

Yaygın Bağlaçlar	İlgeç öbekleri	Ceşitli Yapılar
although though even though even if whereas when while where	in spite of the fact that despite the fact that notwithstanding (the fact) that albeit that (archaic),	HOWEVER + ADJ / ADV NO MATTER + QW Clause ADJ AS HE IS ADJ AS IT MAY SEEM for all one's for every X, it has VERB AS SOMEONE MAY



in spite of
despite
notwithstanding
regardless of
for all
albeit

Bu sözcükler ilgeçtir; kendilerinden sonra zarf içümceciği değil, ad öbekleri kullanılır.

ZITLIK zarf içümceciklerinde although, though gibi yaygın bağlaçların kullanılmasının yanısıra belli öğelerin vurgulanması amacıyla çeşitli yapılar da kullanılmaktadır.

Coward as he was, he fought fiercely.

The doctors could not save her life, hard though they tried.

Hard as it may appear in individual cases, dependent poverty ought to be held disgraceful. – Thomas Robert Malthus

No matter who loses, the lawyer always wins.

Failure is failure, however close you come to the goal.

For all that she was a heavy woman, she danced with unusual grace.

Propose what they may, we are not going to accept their views on this issue.

Much as I respect you, I can't comply with this wish of yours.

With all his roughness, he has a heart of gold.

although

Although (he is) a poor man, he has great dignity.

Although the rich countries have only about 34% of the world's population, they earn about 90% of the world's income.

Although in recent years people frequent cinemas less and less, film making is still a major industry.

Although the death of Suleiman the Magnificent marks the beginning of the decline of the Ottoman Empire, the expansion went on until the end of the 16th century.

Although he wished to break the nicotine habit, he found himself impotent in resisting the craving for a cigarette.

Cosmetic counters are stocked with creams that remove wrinkles although every sensible person knows that wrinkles, once they appear, cannot be removed with creams.

Although obviously many auto-repair firms are competent and honest, mounting evidence suggests that many others are not.

though

THOUGH'un farklı kullanım biçimleri yaygın olarak kullanılmaktadır.

NORMAL KULLANIM

*Though many hands make work light , too many cooks spoil the broth.
Be yourself and speak your mind today, though it contradicts all you have said before. -Elbert Hubbard*

Write down the advice of him who loves you, though you like it not at present. -Proverb

Though they seem so varied, all these advertisements have one thing in common: they make strong appeals to our emotions.

DEVRİK KULLANIM

Old though he was, he continued to paint.

Tired though he was, he insisted on coming with us.

Much though I like her, I do find her a bit boring.

KISALTILMIŞ ZARF İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

An ass is an ass, though laden with gold. -Proverb

I still smoke around the house, though certainly less than previously.

Though violent, he is not capable of murder.

Though personally honest, Arthur's administration was marred by corrupt practices, and he was removed from office in 1878.

Though common in speech, "aint" should be avoided in writing.

The infant, though prematurely born, is viable and has a good chance to survive.

*In a democracy you can be respected though poor, but don't count on it.
-Smith Charles Merrill*

Though feeling rather excited, the girls tried not to show it.

We are now all aware that some new scientific or technological advance, though useful, may have unpleasant side effects.

even though

Even though it was raining, we still went out for a walk.

A crime is still a crime *even though it may be politically motivated.*

There is a certain relief in change, *even though it be from bad to worse!*

The actual DDT activity is not fully understood, *even though it has been studied for over thirty years.*

At the meeting, *even though he spoke well*, he was unable to persuade the other members.

no matter QW

No matter what you say, I will not believe you.

No matter where you go, you'll find people like him.

No matter under what specious term it may disguise itself, slavery is still hideous.—*Bertrand Russell*

No matter where you go, you can't escape from yourself.

No matter what anyone says, I shall give him the punishment he deserves.

No matter how old a mother is, she watches her middle-aged children for signs of improvement. —*Florida Scott-Maxwell*

Effective reading is certainly half the battle, *no matter what we are studying.*

when = although

Zaman zarf içtümceciklerinde yaygın olarak WHEN, "rağmen" anlamında da kullanılabilmektedir.

We too often love things and use people *when we should be using things and loving people.*—*Revel*

(Eşyaları kullanıp insanları sevmemiz gerek Kirken çoğu zaman insanları kullanıp eşyaları seviyoruz.)

We think caged birds sing, *when indeed they cry.*

(Kafesteki kuşların şarkı söylediğini sanırız, oysa onlar aslında ağlamaktadır.)

whereas

New Zealand is an island, *whereas Australia is a whole continent.*

Soccer is a popular spectator sport in England, *whereas in the United States it is football that attracts large audiences.*

Generally speaking, proteins that come from animal sources are complete *whereas those that come from other sources are incomplete proteins.*

Moderate exercise, relaxed life-style, and balanced diet tend to prolong life, *whereas smoking, excessive drinking, and mental stress shorten the life span.*

The expectation of life in England in the nineteenth century was only about 40 years *whereas today it is around 70 years.*

Good can exist without evil, *whereas evil cannot exist without good.*

— St. Thomas Aquinas (1225-1274) (İyilik kötülük olmadan var olabilir, ama kötülik iyilik olmadan var olamaz.)

while

Zaman zarf içtümceziklerinde yaygın olarak WHILE, "rağmen" anlamında da kullanılabilmektedir.

While traffic accidents are a major public concern, there seems to be no way to prevent deaths on the road.

One person experiencing a great deal of stress may function exceptionally well while another may be unable to function at all.

A clot that blocks an artery to the brain can cause a stroke, while one that blocks an artery to the heart can cause a coronary attack.

While formal schooling is an important advantage, it is not a guarantee of success, nor is its absence a fatal handicap.

While the forms of energy are constantly changing, energy itself can neither appear out of nowhere nor vanish into nowhere.

Several different factors can raise the level of cholesterol in your blood.

While you can't alter things like your genetic heritage, your age, or your sex, other factors can be controlled.

A gentleman blames himself, *while a common man blames others.*

ADJECTIVE as it may appear

Hard as it may appear in individual cases, dependent poverty ought to be held disgraceful. – Thomas Robert Malthus

ADJECTIVE +as

Fascinating and invaluable as they are, even the most advanced computers have less brain power than a three-year-old.

as+ADJECTIVE +as

As scarce as truth is, the supply has always been in excess of the demand. –Josh Billings

however+ADVERB

However high the eye may rise, it will find the eyebrow above it. Proverb

VERB + what they may

Propose what they may, we are not going to accept their views on this issue.

much as I +VERB

Much as I respect you, I can't comply with this wish of yours.

Much as I should like to believe that education will bring happiness to us, I am compelled to fear that it will do just the opposite.

ZİTLİK GÖSTEREN İLGEÇLER

despite

Despite growth in mass transportation, the most important means of transportation in many cities is still the ubiquitous automobile.

In the western United States, grasshoppers destroy several million dollars worth of crops every year, *despite efforts by farmers to control them with chemicals*.

in spite of

Victims of the starvation disease stop eating because, *in spite of all evidence to the contrary*, they believe they are too fat.

The demand for drugs for illegal purposes remains high *in spite of law-enforcement efforts*.

You must believe in God, *in spite of what the clergy say*. (Din adamları nedir desin, Tanrı'ya inanın / inanmaya bakın.) –*Benjamin Jowett*

Today *in spite of so much medical research*, many diseases, the causes of which are still unknown, threaten mankind.

notwithstanding

Modern computers, *notwithstanding thrashy software*, still process data far more efficiently than the human brain.

Technological advances notwithstanding, cookery today is basically what it has been since Neolithic times.

regardless of

Regardless of what the schools decide to do in the future concerning teaching students who speak Black English, the fact remains that at present a crisis exists.

A child learns to talk *regardless of whether or not his parents constantly pursue him, correct him, and put him through linguistic drills*.

Federal law guarantees the retarded the right to an education, *regardless of the severity of the condition*.

for all

For all her wealth, she was unhappy.

For every talent that poverty has stimulated, it has blighted a hundred.

Yoksulluk bir yeteneği kamçıladıysa, yüz tanesini söndürmüştür.

For all my encouragement, he has decided not to enter the contest.

For all the help a computer may provide, it should not be seen as a substitute for fundamental thinking and reasoning skills.



Günümüz İngilizcesinde ender olarak kullanılan bir zarf içtüm-ceciği bağlacı ve ilgeci: **albeit that, albeit**

albeit that

Albeit that he was sorely wounded, he remained cheerful in spirit.

albeit

Even if Canadian controls reduce pollution, the problem will continue, *albeit more slowly*, until the United States brings down its levels of pollutants.

ZİTLİK GÖSTEREN İÇTÜMCECİKLERİNİN KISALTILMIŞ ŞEKİLLERİ

Though very ill, she went on working.

Although (it was)built before the war, the engine is still in perfect condition.

Although (it is) rarely spoken about by society, child abuse is one of the most pressing problems today in the United States.

No matter how infinitesimal the flow (is) , movement is what distinguishes a glacier from a mere mass of ice.

We will always protect our country *no matter what (what happens).*

EXERCISE 343

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **although** kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

She is wealthy, but she lives as if she were penniless.

Although she is wealthy, she lives as if she were penniless.

1. Time is a great healer, but it is a very bad beauty doctor.
2. A joke never gains an enemy, but it often loses a friend.
3. Most Hollywood movies are foolish, but they are often great financial successes due to massive advertising.
4. He is fine when it comes to talking, but he has no practical skills.
5. He may be strong and handsome, but he has the intelligence of a child of two.
6. The United States has the power to destroy the world, but she does not have the power to save it alone. —*Margaret Mead*
7. Any fool can paint a picture, but it takes a wise person to be able to sell it.
8. An antibiotic is truly a wonder drug, but it is not a panacea.

EXERCISE 344

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda ***although*** ya da ***despite*** kullanınız.

1. _____ the great progress in fighting the disease, heart disease is still the number 1 cause of death in the United States.
2. _____ it was raining heavily, the football match was not cancelled.
3. _____ caffeine can offer a viable cure for momentary fatigue, health experts say that we should not drink too much coffee.
4. It's not really dangerous to swim in this part of the river _____ the strong current.
5. _____ its antiquity, the Great Pyramid of Giza is one of the truly great wonders of the world.
6. _____ he doesn't study hard, he is remarkably successful.
7. İsmet İnönü refused to enter the Second World War _____ the heavy pressure from many European countries.
8. _____ he tried with all his might, he could not lift the heavy box.

EXERCISE 345

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte gösterildiği gibi ADJECTIVE/ADVERB + THOUGH kalibini kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

Although they fought bravely, they had no chance of winning.

Bravely though they fought, they had no chance of winning.

She has never drunk coffee though this may seem incredible.

Incredible though this may seem, she has never drunk coffee.

1. Although they were powerful, they never dared to challenge the authority of the director.
2. Although he is very fat, he continues to eat starchy food.
3. Although some technological advance is useful, it may have unpleasant side effects.
4. Although we are fond of our friends, we may sometimes prefer to be alone.
5. Although he typed the letter carefully, he made several spelling mistakes.
6. Although it may seem unbelievable, our little town owns a huge museum.

EXERCISE 346

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte gösterildiği gibi ADJECTIVE + AS kalibini kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

The desert is very uncompromising, but it has not eliminated life.

Uncompromising as it is, the desert has not eliminated life.

1. Although he is rich, I don't envy him.
2. Although it may be useful, not many people learn a foreign language.
3. Although he was very rich, he couldn't have a happy life.

4. Although I am patient, I have no intention of waiting for three hours here.
5. Although the personal computer is a marvelous invention, it will not replace human skill.
6. Although she was very enthusiastic, she couldn't act well.

EXERCISE 347

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte gösterildiği gibi AS+ADJECTIVE+AS kalibini kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

*Although she is experienced, she still does nothing without asking her boss.
As experienced as she is, she still does nothing without asking her boss.*

1. Although the experiment was very dangerous, everybody was eager to participate.
2. Although the old man was very stingy, he helped his poor relatives.
3. Although he seems very docile today, that old lion was once a ferocious beast.
4. Although we were very ambitious, we couldn't succeed.
5. Although she was very talented, she could not display her talent.

EXERCISE 348

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte gösterildiği gibi however+adjective/adverb kalibini kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

*Even if some drugs may appear beneficial, they must be employed carefully.
However beneficial some drugs may appear, they must be employed carefully.*

*Even if she has a very tiring day, she never loses her good humour.
However tiring a day she has had, she never loses her good humour.*

1. Although the old man looks healthy, an operation is inevitable.
2. Although a man may be great, he cannot be free.
3. Although you drive carefully, you will have probably an accident eventually.
4. Although some people become very successful, they are never satisfied.
5. Although some people are brilliant, they can't be successful.

EXERCISE 349

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçe'ye çeviriniz.

1. An ass is an ass, though laden with gold. —*Proverb*
2. Short as life is, we make it still shorter by the careless waste of time.—*Victor Hugo*
3. While in some parts of the world it is jewelry that indicates high economic status, in others, it is fur coats.
4. Although few societies have ever wholly approved of gambling, none has been able to eradicate it completely.

5. No matter how hard we try, we cannot obviate all the danger from our lives.
6. She lived to a ripe age, notwithstanding the fact that she had a weak heart.
7. The morning air was still clear and fresh, in spite of all the traffic and the crowd.
8. For all their great diversity of shapes and sizes, glaciers can be divided into two essential types.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF CONDITION



"We wouldn't have traffic jams if
everybody rode horses like
Cowboy Bob."

Zarf içtümceciklerinin koşul gösterenleri, yani koşul içtümcecikleri, pek çok özellik taşıdığından, *Chapter 43 Conditional Clauses* bölümünde ayrıca ele alınmaktadır. Burada koşul içtümceciklerinde kullanılan bağlaçları sergilemekle ve koşul içtümceciklerinin temel kullanımlarını belirtmekle yetineceğiz.

KOŞUL İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ BAĞLAÇLARI

if	If nuclear weapons are employed in a world war, the world will be destroyed.
unless	No government can save the country unless the country is determined to save itself. –E. Heath
as long as	The world's population will continue to grow as long as the birth rate exceeds the death rate; it's as simple as that.
so long as	Modern artificial lighting is almost as good as daylight, so long as glare is avoided.
only if	Only if you study hard, can you be successful in the exam.
whether or not	He will start his own business whether or not his family helps him.
provided (that)	The pollution of the seas can only be prevented provided that many countries follow the same policy.
providing (that)	Making a lot of money is all right, providing you don't have to pay too much for it. – A. Lasker
on condition (that)	On condition that we receive full support, we can finish the job on time.

in case (that)	Some Americans have built bomb shelters in case there is a nuclear war.
in the event (that)	In the event that the problem of nuclear waste disposal is solved, the world will be a safer planet.
supposing (that)	Supposing that you won the national lottery, what would you do?
granted (that)	Granted that you were dealt with unjustly, you still should not have not left your job.

KOŞUL İÇTÜMCECİKLERİİN TEMEL KULLANIMLARI

Koşul tümcecikleri genel olarak 5 bölükte toplanmalıdır. İlk bölümde koşul tümceği bir genelleme ifade etmektedir. Bu kullanımda IF, when bağlacı gibi kullanılmaktadır. Bu nedenle bu bölümü (0) ile gösteriyoruz.

0	If I have nothing else to do, I watch TV. Başka yapacak başka bir işim yoksa televizyon izlerim. (<i>Genelleme; IF=WHEN</i>)
1	If I have nothing else to do, I will watch TV. Başka yapacak başka bir işim olmazsa televizyon izleyeceğim. (<i>Gerçek gelecek zaman</i>)
2	If I had nothing else to do, I would watch TV. Yapacak başka bir işim olmasa, televizyon seyredecektim. Ama yapacak işim var, televizyon seyretmeyeceğim. (<i>Gerçeğe aykırı şimdiki/gelecek zaman</i>)
3	If I had had nothing else to do, I would have watched TV. Başka yapacak başka bir işim olmasaydı, televizyon seyrederdim. Ama yapacak işim vardı; televizyon seyretmedim. (<i>Gerçeğe aykırı geçmiş zaman</i>)
4	If I had nothing to do, I watched TV. Başka yapacak bir işim yoksa televizyon seyrettim. (<i>Gerçek geçmiş zaman</i>)

ADVERB CLAUSES OF PURPOSE

AMAÇ İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

He studied hard	so that in order that	he could pass the test.
	so as to in order to	pass the test.

The bill was altered	so that in order that	the President would not veto it again.
----------------------	----------------------------------	--

Atatürk introduced sweeping reforms to modernize the nation	so that in order that	he could protect his country from Western imperialism.
---	----------------------------------	--

Amaç gösteren zarf içtümceciklerinin en yaygın iki bağlacı birbirlerinin yerine de kullanılabilen SO THAT ve IN ORDER THAT'dır. Amaç gösteren zarf içtümceciklerinde, *will, can, would, could, may, might* kip belirteçleri yaygın olarak kullanılır.

so that

Brush your teeth *so that they will not decay*.

They claim that they can renovate worn shoes *so that they look like new ones*.

People on bicycles should wear bright colours *so that drivers can see them in the dark*.

Some fish camouflage themselves on the ocean floor *so that predators can't spot them*.

Please anchor the boat here *so that we can dive from it*.

They went to the box office early *so that they might buy the best seats*.

Susan drove to Miami instead of flying *so that she could save money*.

To marry for the sake of children, *so that our name may not perish, or that we may have support in old age*, is the height of stupidity.

in order that

John is saving in order *that he may buy a new car*.

In order that he might learn about different people, he decided to take a trip around the world.

They wrote the notices in several languages *in order that foreign tourists could understand them*.

She spoke slowly *in order that the students might understand*.

Scientists are studying the brain *in order that they can understand more about learning*.

These cars were returned to the factory *in order that their drive-shafts should be replaced.*

We have two ears and only one tongue *in order that we may hear more and speak less.* § Diogenes

Men are born with two eyes, but with one tongue, *in order that they should see twice as much as they say.* § Charles Caleb Colton

In some societies a number of precautions have been taken *in order that unhappy marriages may less frequently result.*

In order to combat the rising energy costs, housing experts are trying to improve energy efficiency in new houses.

An enterprise has to incur certain costs and expenses *in order to stay in business.*

AMAÇ İFADE ETMEKTE KULLANILAN YAYGIN İKİ YAPI

She went on a diet	so that in order that	she could lose weight.
She went on a diet	in order to to	lose weight.

in order (not) to

In order to discover anything you must be looking for something. –Harvey Neville

The old man fought hard *in order to retain his psychological balance.*

The USA and Britain are more than willing to use state terrorism in order to achieve their aims. (<http://www.wpb.be/lalkar/lalkar9901/019901.htm>)

They were forced to skimp on necessities *in order to make their limited supplies last the winter.*

Economists study the causes of poverty *in order to find solutions to the problem.*

The farmers are simply trying to fatten the animals *in order to obtain a higher price on the market.*

I don't like these cold, precise, perfect people, who, *in order not to speak wrong*, never speak at all, and *in order not to do wrong*, never do anything. -- Henry Ward Beecher

(not) to

He is working hard *to achieve a better vocabulary.*

The people of Bosnia fought desperately *to retain their independence against an invading force.*

Many people lie on the beach *to absorb the sun's rays.*

Jack is working hard *to attain a physical fitness award.*

She kept quiet *not to disturb her parents.*

so as (not) to

I picked up the glass vase very carefully so as not to break it.

lest

The burglar moved very carefully in the room lest the family should wake up.
Lest I be misunderstood, I hastened to tell her I would help her.

for the purpose of

We meet only briefly for the purpose of exchanging ideas.

for someone to do something

They vacated the house for the new tenants to move in.

EXERCISE 350

Aşağıdaki tümceleri ***SO THAT*** ve ***TO*** kullanarak birleştiriniz.

They are fasting. They want to lose weight.

They are fasting so that they could lose weight.

They are fasting to lose weight.

1. I bought chains for my car tyres. I wanted to drive safely on the snow.
2. Atatürk started the Turkish War of Independence. He wanted to save Turks from total annihilation.
3. I am rearranging my schedule. I want to take new courses.
4. We're going to the coast. We want to get some photos of sea gulls.
5. We are going to drive slowly. We don't want to skid on the wet roads.
6. Some EU countries sponsor terrorist activities against Turkey. They want to impose the Sevres treaty on Turkey once again.
7. The CIA bought a number of Turkish journalists. The CIA wanted to block Rauf Denktaş's efforts for Turkish rights.
8. We are leaving early. We want to catch the early bus.
9. Farmers use chemical fertilizers and pesticides. They want to increase food crops.
10. The CIA funds political parties, NGO's and media in other countries. It wants to intervene in the elections of other countries.

EXERCISE 351

Aşağıdaki tümceleri ***SO THAT*** kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

We put up a fence to prevent the animals escaping. (would)

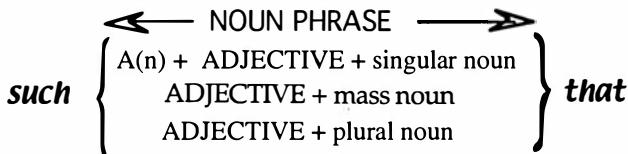
We put up a fence so that the animals would not escape.

1. We climbed the cliff to get good photos.
2. Harry left early not to miss the bus.
3. I saved up some money to buy a personal computer.
4. We go to war to have peace. —Aristotle
5. Oil-producing countries have raised the price of oil to share in the wealth of the industrialized countries.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF RESULT SONUÇ İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

so { adjective
 adverb } *that*

	SO	ADJECTIVE ADVERB	THAT	
The idea was	so	complicated	that	nobody could understand it.
He worked	so	hard	that	everybody praised him.
The stories are	so	long	that	nobody liked them.



	SUCH	NOUN PHRASE	THAT	
It was	SUCH	a complicated idea	THAT	nobody could understand it.
They were	SUCH	long stories	THAT	nobody liked them.

so { LITTLE
 MUCH } mass noun + *that* *so* { FEW
 MANY } plural noun + *that*

	SO	MUCH + uncountable noun	THAT	
The gambler lost	so	much money	that	he committed suicide.

	SUCH	A LOT OF + Noun	THAT	
The gambler lost	such	a lot of money	that	he committed suicide.

SO	ADJ ADV		THAT	
So	greedy	was Columbus	that	he killed many Indians for money.
So	greedily	did he act	that	he had no respect for human life.

SUCH		Noun Phrase	THAT	
Such	was	Columbus's greed	THAT	he killed many Indians for gold.

SO adjective THAT

It is so cold that the river has frozen.

The cake was so sweet that it made me feel sick.

Some people are so credulous that they even believe politicians.

Mosquitoes find the odor so repellent that they leave any spot where this liquid has been sprayed.

Some diseases are so contagious that travellers can pass them from country to country in a short time.

Some folks can look so busy doing nothing' that they seem indispensable. —*Kin Hubbard*

She is so emotional that everything upsets her.

Their natural sources are so limited that economically they are mostly dependent on international aid.

The mineral deposits in this area are so deep that it is not economical to mine them.

The crowd was so large that it overflowed the auditorium.

The change has been so gradual that the city dwellers have failed to notice it.

Some people are so credulous that they believe everything in ads.

The pea pod was so ripe that it was ready to burst.

Those cookies are so burnt tasting that they are almost inedible .

Fashion is a form of ugliness so intolerable that we have to alter it every six months. —*Oscar Wilde*

Alpine Saint Bernards are so good at following the scent of man, even in snow, that they are used by ski patrols as rescue dogs.

It is so easy to upset the fragile balance of nature in this lake that even small changes can wipe out the aquatic life.

SO adverb THAT

The rabbit ran so fast that it managed to elude the fox.

They were treated so cruelly that they still have nightmares.

Persons reported as missing often disappear so completely that not even a trace of them can be found.

He spoke so eloquently that he convinced everybody.

The soprano sang so well that she received a standing ovation.

He explained the problem so clearly that even the dullest students could solve it.

I met them so long ago I don't recollect their names.

The floor had not been mopped for so long that it was covered with a layer of grime.

The USA army attacked Iraq so violently that several hundred thousand civilians were killed.

The first people who were like ourselves lived so long ago that even their sagas, if they had any, are forgotten.

The world is moving so fast these days that a man who says something cannot be done is generally interrupted by someone doing it.

SO MUCH SO THAT

He hates his work, so much so that he is thinking of resigning.

Brains and computers can both be organized so as to solve problems and to communicate with other similar mechanisms, so much so that computers can now be designed to generate artificial human speech.

SO İLE ÇEŞİTLİ KULLANIMLAR

The cave was so dark that we could not see a thing.

It was so dark a cave that we could not see a thing.



So dark a cave was it that we could not see a thing.

He has so heavy a work load that it is difficult for him get enough sleep.

The light was so intense that it blinded everybody.

It was so intense a light as to blind everybody.

The light was so intense as to blind everybody.

The price of the book is so high as to be prohibitive.

The price of the book is so high that it is prohibitive.

He spoke so eloquently as to convince everybody.

She behaves so irresponsibly as to endanger the whole project.

SUCH (ARTICLE + ADJECTIVE +NOUN) THAT

Language is such a common and useful means of communication that it often escapes notice.

He is such a diligent person that he works for ten hours every day without a rest.

He shows such great diligence that he is bound to be promoted soon.

It was such a pretty dress that I couldn't resist it.

Mary is such an efficient secretary that she deserves to be promoted.

She was such a good swimmer that she could glide through the water like a fish.



Such a capable teacher is she that you can't find a better one.

The big dog looked like such a docile creature that it was hard to believe he was wild.

The fire spread in such an unusual manner that the fire department chiefs were certain that it had been set by an incendiary.

SUCH (ADJECTIVE +NOUN) THAT

They have such great confidence in their son's talent that they are sure that he will succeed.

Bill's shirt is such a vivid red that he stands out in the crowd.

He is such a diligent person that he works for ten hours every day without a rest.

He shows such great diligence that he is bound to be promoted soon.

Professor Sand gives such interesting lectures that his classes are never boring.

She showed such great enthusiasm that she won the admiration of everyone in the office.

SUCH + article + noun +THAT

A few years ago the anti-salt campaigners raised such a rumpus that salt was banned from baby food.

Often it does seem such a pity that Noah and his party did not miss the boat. –*Mark Twain*

He was such a fanatic that he frightened people with his views.

There was such a storm that nobody dared to go out.



TOO + adverb+ FOR SOMEONE TO DO kalıbı, **SO adverb THAT** kalıbinin kısaltılmış şeklidir.

The boy was running too fast for his mother to catch him.

The boy was running so fast that his mother couldn't catch him.

MİKTAR VE SAYI GÖSTEREN KULLANIMLAR

so few	I had so few job offers that it wasn't difficult to select one.
so much so little	Everybody gets so much information all day long that they lose their common sense. – <i>Gertrude Stein</i> There's a lot of people in this world who spend so much time watching their health that they haven't the time to enjoy it. – <i>Josh Billings</i> So much money had been spent on the project that we couldn't afford to give it up. Some African people earn so little money that they can barely save themselves from dying of hunger.
so many	Television watching has so many adverse effects that it is now considered a serious addiction. He had worked in the hospital for so many years that he was callous to the suffering in the wards. The CIA commits so many crimes that it is practically impossible to keep a record of them.
such a lot of	He has such a lot of friends that he will never feel lonely.

SO verb phrase THAT

The sewage system of the city so contaminated the water that swimming was forbidden.

 Aşağıdaki örnekte SO'nun nitelediği adverb gizli kalmış. SO sanki eylemi niteler gibi görünüyor.

Some people so treasure the truth that they use it with great economy.—

H. Ray Gloner (Kimi insanlar gerçeğe o kadar değer verirler ki onu cimrince kullanırlar.)

such that

Teaching should be such that what is offered is perceived as a valuable gift and not as a hard duty . —*Albert Einstein*

in such a way that

A compromise is the art of dividing a cake in such a way that everyone believes he has the biggest piece. —*Ludwig Erhard*

A diplomat is a person who tells you to go to hell in a such a way that you actually look forward to the trip. —*Caskie Stinnett* 1960

EXERCISE 352

Aşağıdaki tümceleri *so ... that* kullanarak birleştiriniz.

He put a lot of salt in the soup. Nobody could eat it.

~~He put so much salt in the soup that nobody could eat it.~~

I was terribly tired. I couldn't go to work.

~~I was so tired that I couldn't go to work.~~

1. There was too much noise. We couldn't hear the speech.
2. The police cordon was very tight. The criminals could not leave the area.
3. The room was very quiet. The ticking of the clock was easily audible.
4. The trunk of that tree was very slender. It bent with the wind.
5. This kitchen floor is very filthy. It needs to be scrubbed immediately.
6. I was very drowsy. I nearly fell asleep during the movie.
7. John was engrossed. He did not hear his mother call.
8. She found the movie very fascinating. She saw it three times.

EXERCISE 353

Aşağıdaki tümceleri *such (a) that* kullanarak birleştiriniz.

Fresh baked bread has a wonderful smell. I can't help eating two loaves.

~~Fresh baked bread has such a wonderful smell that I can't help eating two loaves.~~

1. Our town has a lot of tourist attractions. It will be a prosperous city soon.
2. The speaker gave a boring lecture. Some people fell asleep.

3. Our neighbours made a lot of noise. I couldn't go to sleep.
4. We had many cold days. Our little lake was frozen.
5. It's a very good opportunity. We shouldn't miss it.
6. The country has a lot of natural resources. She could be practically self-sufficient in the event of war.
7. We were having a good time. We didn't want to leave.
8. Tom has awful chest pains. He cannot even walk.



*Microsoft is too powerful for the USA government to control.
Microsoft is so powerful that the USA government cannot control it.*

EXERCISE 354

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **so ... that** kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

She was speaking too fast for me to understand her.

She was speaking so fast that I couldn't understand her.

1. The problem was too difficult for us to solve.
2. She was too tired to do any housework.
3. The meat was too expensive for low-income families to buy.
4. The old man was too weak to work for a living.
5. My friend was too conceited to ask anybody for help.

EXERCISE 355

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **such ... that** ya da **so ... that** kullanarak birleştiriniz.

1. There was a sudden increase in demand. Prices rose sharply
2. She is afraid of mice. She faints whenever she sees one.
3. The senator's health was poor. The senator was forced to retire from public office.
4. He gave me very good advice. I managed to do the task.
5. It was a very exciting movie. I saw it three times.
6. She likes many things. She is never bored.
7. The lecturer spoke very fast. I couldn't take any notes.
8. The lighting in the room was very dim. I couldn't read by it.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF DURATION

SÜREÇ İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

as

As his millions increased, Ron's boredom also grew, for nothing his money could buy excited him anymore.

American society is becoming less livable *as it becomes more affluent*... [Amerikan toplumu] ... zengin bir toplum oldukça, yaşanır bir toplum olmaktan çıkıyor. —John W. Gardner

As machines get to be more and more like men, men will come to be more like machines. —Joseph Wood Krutch (Makineler insana benzedikçe, insanlar makineye benzeyecektir.)

as/so long as

So long as America had atomic superiority, Western Europeans could see themselves as sheltering under an American umbrella.

So long as the current rate of oil production is maintained, world oil prices are not expected to rise significantly.

since

Since life began eons ago, thousands of creatures have come and gone.

ever since

Ever since humans have inhabited the earth, they have made use of various forms of communication.

till

We never know the worth of water *till the well is dry*. —Proverb
The fool that eats till he is sick must fast *till he is well*. —George W. Thornbury

Never trouble trouble *till trouble troubles you*. —Proverb
Health is not valued *till sickness comes*.

Consider the postage stamp: its usefulness consists in the ability to stick to one thing *till it gets there*. —Josh Billings

No race can prosper *till it learns that there is as much dignity in tilling a field as in writing a poem*. —T. Washington Booker

until

Please burnish the brass ornaments *until they shine*.

Please don't alight from the train *until it comes to a complete stop*.
Spaghetti is very brittle *until it is cooked*.

That is one mulish child; she won't stop crying *until she gets her way*.
The ailing teacher had to miss school *until the illness was over*.

We were having fun playing together *until he intruded and spoilt everything.*

A fire is never out *until the last spark is extinguished.*

Defeat never comes to any man *until he admits it.* –*Josephus Daniels*
Because what helps one person may not help another, different drug treatments often must be tried *until the right one is found.*

I won't talk to him *until he apologizes.*

Many responsible people feel that no more nuclear reactors should be built *until we know how to control their wastes.*

This will never be a civilized country *until we expend more money for books than we do for chewing gum.* –*Elbert Hubbard*

Any priest or shaman must be presumed guilty *until he is proved innocent.* –*Lazarus Long*

We had never seen such a tall building *until we moved to this city.*

Hold these for me *until I ask for them.*

I won't tell them anything *until I have spoken to my lawyer.*

He didn't wear glasses *until he was 20.*

They were quite worried *until they had heard about from their families.*

The English public takes no interest in a work of art *until it is told that the work in question is immoral.* –*Oscar Wilde*

All technology should be assumed guilty *until it is proven innocent.*
–*David Brower*

Until the automobile and the airplane were invented, the camel was the only means people had for crossing the deserts of Asia and Africa.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF CONTINGENCY

beklenti içtümcezikleri

in case that	
for fear that	{-mESİ} olasılığına karşıın
lest	

in case

I always use two alarm clocks *in case one of them doesn't go off.*

Castro was said to consider retaliation *in case the United States under Ronald Reagan invaded Nicaragua.*

He was worried *in case his wife found out where he had been.*

In case a robbery occurs in the hotel, the hotel management must be notified at once.

Some people have built bomb shelters *in case there is a nuclear war.*

A man must marry only a very pretty woman *in case he should ever want some other man to take her off his hands.* – Sacha Guitr

for fear that

For fear that any of the children should get lost, the camp forbade them to go beyond a certain point.

Information concerning national security is controlled by government, with particular severity in wartime, *for fear that its revelation may aid an enemy.*

For fear of, bir ilgectir.

The politician was afraid to denounce the law publicly, *for fear of not being reelected.*

She came home early *for fear of missing the party.*

Some writers "censor" themselves before putting words on paper, *for fear of failing to sell their work.*

lest

He told his wife as little as possible, *lest she (should) spread the news all over town.*

We must not promise what we ought not, *lest we be called on to perform what we cannot.* –Abraham Lincoln

Guard *lest the eyes be bigger than the belly.*

The newspaper did not print his name and address *lest he should be inundated with unwelcome callers.*

We tiptoed *lest the guard should hear us.*

We might prohibit the use of machines *lest they become our masters.*

The passion to get ahead is sometimes born of the fear *lest we be left behind.* –Eric Hoffer

He who fights with monsters might take care, *lest he thereby become a monster.* –Nietzsche, "Beyond Good and Evil"

We have a memorial service every year *lest we (should) forget our debt to those who died in battle.*

A fog horn is commonly sounded on board ships in a fog to warn other ships off *lest there be a collision.*



LEST içtümceğinde eylem çekimsiz olarak kullanılmaktadır. Günlük kullanımında eylem *SHOULD* kip belirteciyle birlikte kullanılıyor.

I avoided mentioning the subject lest he be offended.

While you glory in the past, be busy in the present lest you be caught unprepared in the future.

A spare tyre is always provided lest a puncture (should) occur.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF RESERVATION

uymazlık içtümcecikleri

except that

The house is just what we want, except that it is too expensive.

I know nothing about her except that she lives next door.

The party was very good except that there wasn't enough to eat.

I believe nothing except that television rots the brain.

I would almost say that my country is like a conquered province with foreign rulers, except that they are not foreigners and we are responsible for what they do. –*Paul Goodman*

Half the modern drugs could well be thrown out the window, except that the birds might eat them. –*Martin Henry Fischer*

except for the fact that

Except for the fact that her nose was a little long, she was beautiful.

Green tea is produced much like the others, except that the leaf is heated before rolling.

"RESERVATION" GÖSTEREN İLGEÇLER

except

I have never advocated war except as a means of peace. – *Ulysses S. Grant*
(Barışa gidecek bir yol olması dışında hiçbir zaman savaşı savunmadım.)

He doesn't do anything except sit and watch television.

Everyone except me has been late.

He demanded nothing of her except to be on time.

The public wishes itself to be managed like a woman; one must say nothing to it except what it likes to hear.

There is nothing permanent except change.

Nothing ever comes to one, that is worth having, except as a result of hard work. –*Booker T. Washington*, 1901

except for

Except for two old couples, the bus was empty.

Except for my brother, we were all willing to go to the beach.

I am quite well now, except for a slight headache.

Except for Britain and Germany, there were no countries with a predominantly urban population before the twentieth century.

The classroom was silent, except for the busy scratching of pens on paper.

Everything you read in the newspapers is absolutely true except for that rare story of which you happen to have firsthand knowledge. –*Erwin Knoll*

Except for promoting tooth decay, sugar presents no significant public health hazards when consumed at current levels.
Except for an occasional heart attack, I feel as young as I ever did.

save

All work is empty save when there is love. —*Kahlil Gibran*
 A life spent in constant labor is a life wasted, save a man be such a fool
 as to regard a fulsome obituary notice as ample reward.
 We hardly find any persons of good sense save those who agree with us.
 —*François de La Rochefoucauld*
 The diseases of the present have little in common with the diseases of the
 past save that we die of them. —*Agnes Repplier*
 The plan would have gone off very well save that one of the officials
 became very greedy.
 Man forgives woman anything save the wit to outwit him. —*Minna Antrim*
 There is no failure except in no longer trying. There is no defeat except
 from within, no really insurmountable barrier save our own
 inherent weakness of purpose. —*Kin Hubbard*
 It is hard to fail, but it is worse never to have tried to succeed. In this life
 we get nothing save by effort.

save for

Save for an occasional bark, the valley was utterly silent.
 He was motionless, save for his quivering knees.
 There is no defeat except from within, no really insurmountable barrier
 save our own inherent weakness of purpose. —*Kin Hubbard*

barring

Barring that natural expression of villainy which we all have, the man
 looked honest enough. —*Mark Twain*
 Barring another stock market crash, your money is safe.
 Barring any unforeseen delay, the space shuttle will be launched at noon.
 Nobody else, barring the author, knew the truth of the matter.
 His contributions to the text seldom improved it, but barring that detail
 he was a good reader. —*Mark Twain*
 It is hard to imagine anyone, barring an idiot, to do such a thing.

with the exception of

With the exception of man, monkeys and apes are the most active,
 inventive and social of all animals.
 I am very fond of reading useful old books, and modern ones as well,
 with the exception of everyday stories.
 With the exception of *Arms and the Man*, Shaw's plays remained largely
 unproduced in England.
 Americans are disliked everywhere in the world, with the exception of
 Canada.
 With the exception of the last two, all your sentences are wrong.

ADVERB CLAUSES OF COMPARISON KARŞILAŞTIRMA İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ

 Karşılaştırmalarda çok değişik yapılar kullanılmaktadır. Karşılaştırmalar ayrıntılı olarak COMPARISON bölümünde ele alınmaktadır.

REDUCTION OF ADVERBIAL CLAUSES ZARF İÇTÜMCECİKLERİNDE KISALTMA

Kısaltmalar REDUCTION bölümünde ele alınacağından burada zarf içtümceceği bağlaçlarının kısaltmalarda nasıl görüldüğünü gösteren bir tabloyla yetineceğiz.

CONJUNCTION	ACTIVE	PASSIVE
after before until	After eating it After having eaten	After being eaten After having been eaten,
because when whenever	Eating it, he Having eaten	Being eaten, Having been eaten, ..
where as once when		Eaten,
in order that	To eat, To have eaten,	To be eaten To have been eaten

ZARF İÇTÜMCECİKLERİNDE -EVER BAĞLAÇLARI



"Whatever it was, the world is better off without it."



"Whatever this stuff is, it needs ketchup."

-EVER soru sözcükleri, NO MATTER+QW anlamında kullanılabilmektedir.

You can't speak to me like that **NO MATTER WHO YOU ARE.**

You can't speak to me like that **WHOEVER YOU ARE.**

(Kim olursanız olunuz, benimle böyle konuşamazsınız.)



-EVER sözcüklerinin ad içtümceği oluşturduğunu anımsayınız.

Whatever is in that box belongs to me. (Noun Clause)

Kutudaki herşey bana ait.

Whatever is in that box, I won't buy it. (Adverb Clause)

İçinde ne olursa olsun, o kutuyu satın almayacağım.

Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyiniz. -EVER'lı tümceciklerin tümcenin öznesi ya da nesnesi olarak kullanıldığından ad içtümceği olduklarını biliyoruz. -EVER'lı tümcecikler, tümcenin eylemini nitelediklerinde zarf içtümceği olarak kullanmaktadır.

Whoever makes a mistake will be punished. (Tümcenin öznesi=noun clause) Yanlışlık yapan herkes cezalandırılacak.

I am not helping you, **whoever you are.** (Eylemi niteliyor=adverb clause) Kim olursanız olun, size yardım etmeyeceğim.

He eats **whatever he finds.**

I can't please my boss **whatever I do.**

You can buy **whichever (book) you like.**

You won't be pleased **whichever (book) you buy.**

Whoever wrote this book must be a great writer.

Whoever wrote this book, it is a lousy book.

Whatever happens, stay indoors.

She tells us **whatever happens.**



**Whoever you are and whatever you do,
do not trust the USA.**

Chapter 42

CONDITIONAL CLAUSES (IF-CLAUSES)

(Hypothetical Clauses) KOŞUL İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ



If there is a Santa Clause , he will bring me nice presents no matter what I do. If there isn't any Santa Claus, I haven't really lost anything.

Koşul tümcecikleri, yapıları gereği zarf içtümcecikleridir. Koşul bağlaçları da temel olarak diğer zarf içtümceciği bağlaçları gibi kullanılırlar.

Give me a call	if when whenever before after	the manager comes.
----------------	--	--------------------

Anlam açısından, koşul içtümceçikleri değişik işlevler üstlenmişlerdir. Bu iç tümceciklerin, koşul ifade etmenin yanı sıra, önemli bir işlevi de varsayımlı ifadeleri kurmasıdır. Varsayımların düşünme yeteneğimizin önemli bir ögesi olduğunu biliyoruz.

KOŞUL İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ TEMEL TABLOSU

	condition	result
0	<i>Genelleme bildiriliyor.</i>	
	If he is depressed, When he is depressed,	he plays the violin.
1	<i>Gerçeğe uygun bir koşul ve sonuç bildiriliyor.</i>	
	If he is depressed, If he is depressed today,	tell him to play the violin. he will play the violin.
2	<i>Gerçeğe aykırı şimdiki zaman ya da gelecek zaman bildiriliyor. Şimdi mutsuz olsa keman çalardı, ama mutsuz değil ve keman çalmıyor.</i>	
	If he were depressed now,	he would play the violin.
3	<i>Gerçeğe aykırı geçmiş zaman bildiriliyor. Dün mutsuz olsa keman çalardı, ama mutsuz değildi, keman da çalmadı.</i>	
	If he had been depressed yesterday,	he would have played the violin.

KOŞUL İÇTÜMCECİKLERİ BAĞLAÇLARI VE İLGECLERİ

Koşul tümcecikleri bağlaçları arasında en yaygın kullanımını olan bağlaç IF'tir. Bu nedenle koşul tümcecikleri If-clause diye de adlandırılmaktadır. Aşağıdaki tabloda koşul tümcecikleri bağlaçlarını gösteriyoruz.

if	providing (that)
unless	on condition (that)
even if	in case (that)
even though	in the event (that)
only if	so/as long as
whether or not	suppose/supposing (that)
provided (that)	granted (that)
if it weren't for	
if it hadn't been for	
but for	

KOŞUL İFADE EDEN BİR İLGEC: **but for**

Life would be tolerable but for its amusements. –George Bernard Shaw

Let us be thankful for the fools, but for them the rest of us could not succeed.

–Mark Twain

But for the bad weather, we would have had a wonderful time.

BUT FOR gibi kullanılan iki yapı:

if it weren't for

if it hadn't been for ...

If it weren't for his financial support, I could hardly survive.

If it hadn't been for the clever detective, we would never have arrested the murderer.

KOŞUL TÜMCELERİNİN YAPISI VE TÜRLERİ

Koşul tümceleri, bir if-içtümceciği (koşul içtümceciği) ile temel tümcecikten oluşur.



So is the USA a terrorist country?



"If I were a baby bird, I would be a vegetarian."

KOŞUL İÇTÜMCECİĞİ	TEMEL TÜMCECİK
If man could fly like birds,	life would be much easier.

Koşul içtümceciği ile temel tümcecikteki eylemlerin yapısı, koşul tümcesinin türüne göre değişiklik gösterir. Bu nedenle önce koşul tümcesi türlerini gösterelim.

0	Generalizations	If you work hard, you succeed. If money is not your servant, it will be your master.
1	Real Present & Future	If nitrogen and sulfur dioxide mix, they form an acid solution. If we continue to abuse the earth, we will destroy it.
2	Unreal Present & Future	If I were taller, I would join the basketball team. If there were a subway system in this city, fewer people would drive to work.
3	Unreal Past	The sun, the moon and the stars would have disappeared long ago, if they had happened to be within reach of predatory human hands. —Havelock Ellis
4	Real Past	If he had any spare time, we went fishing. If Jack found out that you had lied to him, he must have been very angry with you.
5	Mixed	If she had gone on a diet last year, she would be thinner now. If Einstein had not lived, we would have a much different world.



*If we can't sell it and we can't eat it,
then why did we make it?*

Koşul tümcelerindeki içtümceciklerde eylemlerin bulanabileceği şekiller aşağıdaki tabloda gösterilmektedir.

Type	KOŞUL TÜMCESİNİN ANLAMI	IF-TÜMCECİĞİNDE EYLEMİN YAPISI	TEMEL TÜMCECİKTE EYLEMİN YAPISI
0	GENERALIZATION	Simple Present Tense Modal + V	Simple Present Tense Modal + V
1	REAL PRESENT & FUTURE	Simple Present Tense Present Continuous Tense Modal + V Modal + BE + V-ing Present Perfect Tense	Imperative Form Simple Present Tense Present Continuous Tense Modal + V Modal + BE + V-ing Present Perfect Tense
2	UNREAL PRESENT & FUTURE	Simple Past Tense Past Continuous Modal + V Modal + BE + V-ing	Modal + V Modal + BE + V-ing
3	UNREAL PAST	Past Perfect Past Perfect Cont.	Modal + HAVE + V-EN Modal+HAVE+BEEN+V-ing
4	REAL PAST	Simple Past Tense Past Continuous	Simple Past Tense Past Continuous Tense

Şimdi bu türleri teker teker örnekleyelim.

0. Generalizations

IF bağılacı kimi zaman, bir genelleme göstermek için kullanılır. IF bu kullanımda *when*, *whenever* anlamındadır.

If water freezes, it turns into ice.

(*Su donarsa buz haline gelir.* Bir koşul değil, genelleme bildiriliyor.)

If you want to make an enemy, do someone a favor. –C. L. Geanangel

(*Düşman kazanmak istiyorsanız, birine iyilik yapın.* Birine iyilik yaparsanız düşman kazanırsınız.)

Aşağıdaki örneklerde de genellemeler ifade ediliyor.

Habit, if it is not resisted, soon becomes necessity. – *Saint Augustine*

(Önüne geçilmeyen alışkanlık, çabucak gereksinim haline gelir.)

If money is not your servant, it will be your master.

If the Devil finds a man idle, he'll set him to work. – *Chaucer*

If you raise the temperature of water to 100° C., it boils.

A man isn't poor if he can still laugh. – *Raymond Hitchcock*

If a blood clot blocks a major blood vessel in the brain, the result may be paralysis or even death.

You never will be the person you can be if pressure, tension, and discipline are taken out of your life. – *James G. Bilkey*

If an animal does something, we call it instinct; if we do the same thing for the same reason, we call it intelligence. – *Will Cuppy*

If the history of the past fifty years teaches us anything, it is that peace does not follow disarmament—disarmament follows peace. – *Baruch*

If you want to be in the sunshine, you have to move to where the sunshine is. – *George Lakoff*

An ox with long horns, even if he does not butt, will be accused of butting. – *Malay proverb*

If you are poor today you will always be poor. Only the rich now acquire riches. – *Martial* (?AD40-?104)



*"If this is about a broken window, please hang up.
If it is not, stay on the line."*

EXERCISE 356

Aşağıdaki tümceleri IF kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

- When I have breakfast, I feel more energetic.
- When we open the door, the flies come in.
- When you hear a quick beep on the telephone, it is the busy signal.
- When people make less money, prices of luxury goods fall.
- When it snows, we stay home.
- When demand increases, prices go up.
- When you boil water, it vaporizes.
- When oil is mixed with water, it floats.

1. Real present / Gerçekçe uygun geniş ve şimdiki zaman

Bu türde, olması bir koşula bağlı olan işler anlatılmaktadır. A tümcesinde bir genellemeye yaptığılığını (*Whenever it is cold, we stay home*), B tümcesinde ise bir koşul verildiğini görüyoruz: *Hava soğuk olursa bugün evde duracağız.*

- | | |
|----|---|
| A. | If it is cold, we stay home. |
| B. | If it is cold, we will stay home today. |

If we get the parts on time, we will win; if not, we will lose.

If the doctor's prognosis is correct, the patient will be in a coma for at least twenty-four hours.

She will go to college if you say so.

I don't know if there are men on the moon, but if there are, they must be using the earth as their lunatic asylum. – *George Bernard Shaw*

If computers take over (which seems to be their natural tendency), it will serve us right .–*Alistair Cooke*



"Dolly won't learn anything if she does all the talking."

If you steal from one author, it's plagiarism. If you steal from two, it's research. –*Wilson Minzer* (Bir tek yazardan çalarsan hırsızlık olur; iki [ya da 'birçok'] yazardan çalarsan, araştırma.)

The forces of a capitalist society, if they are left unchecked, tend to make the rich richer and the poor poorer. –*Jawaharlal Nehru*

If you see a man approaching you with the obvious intent of doing you good, you should run for your life. –*Henry David Thoreau*

(Birisinin size iyilik yapmak istediği belli bir şekilde yaklaştığını görürseniz, yaşamınızı kurtarmak için kaçmanız gereklidir.)

If we encounter a man of rare intellect, we should ask him what books he reads.

If Europe should ever be ruined, it will be by its warriors.. –*Charles Louis Montesquieu*

If we are to live together in peace, we must come to know each other better.
– *Lyndon Baines Johnson*

 Bu türde PRESENT PERFECT TENSE te kullanılabılır.

If Jack has heard about you, he will surely come to visit you.

If she has finished her report, she must be home now.

If I have ever made any valuable discoveries, it has been owing more to patient attention, than to any other talent. *-Isaac Newton*

EXERCISE 357

TYPE 1 koşul tümceleri kurunuz.

Try to catch the 8:15 train. You will get to the meeting on time.

If you catch the 8:15 train, you will get to the meeting on time.

1. The weather may be fine tomorrow. Then we will go for a walk.
2. Have you got lost? Then you should ask a policeman to help you find the way to your hotel.
3. Read this book. Then you will find all the answers you want.
4. Do you want good accommodation in Bodrum? Then you should book well in advance.
5. Do you want your son to succeed? Then you shouldn't criticize him all the time.
6. Don't you want your neighbours to complain about you? Then do not play loud music.
7. Stop eating so much starchy food. You will be slimmer.
8. Be more tolerant towards your brother. You will quarrel less.
9. Haven't you signed the check? Then I can't cash it.
10. Do you want to enter this building? Then you have to show an identity card.



*"If I knew a secret, I could write it
in my diary and lock it."*

2. Unreal Present / Gerçek'e aykırı geniş ve şimdiki zaman

If man could fly like birds, life would be much easier.

Koşul tümcesinin bu türünde varsayıma dayalı yargılardır.

IF I KNEW A SECRET, (Bir sırlı bilsem, ama bilmiyorum)

I COULD WRITE IT IN MY DIARY. (Anı defterine yazardım=ama bir sırlı bilmediğime göre, yazamam)

If she smoked less, her sore throat would get better.

(Daha az sigara içse, boğazı iyileşebilirdi; ama sigarayı azaltmıyor, boğazı da iyileşmiyor.)

Bu tür, varsayımlara dayalı düşünmeye olanak sağlar.

If there were a subway system in this city, fewer people would drive to work.

If I were taller, I would join the basketball team.

If I had more time, I would write a shorter letter.—*Blaise Pascal*

If Graham Bell were alive today, he would be happy to see the latest developments in communication.

There would be no poor people if the poor were to get even half of the money that is spent in studying them.—*Bill Vaughan*

(Yoksulları incelemek için harcanan paranın yarısı yoksullara verilse yoksul kalmazdı.)

If the best man's faults were written on his forehead, he would draw his hat over his eyes. —*Thomas Gray*

(Eğer en iyi insanın (bile) kusurları alnına yazılısaydı, şapkasını kaşlarına kadar indirirdi.)

The measure of a man's real character is what he would do if he knew he never would be found out.—*Thomas B. Macaulay*

If death did not exist, it would be necessary to invent it. —*J. B. Milhaud*

If you could sell your experience for what it cost you, you would have a fortune.

It would be nice if the Food and Drug Administration stopped issuing warnings about toxic substances and just gave me the names of one or two things still safe to eat. —*Robert Fuoss*

If man could have half his wishes he would double his troubles. —*Benjamin Franklin*

If men talked only about what they understood, the silence would be unbearable.

(İnsanlar sadece anladıkları şeylerden söz etselerdi sessizlik dayanılmaz hale gelirdi.)

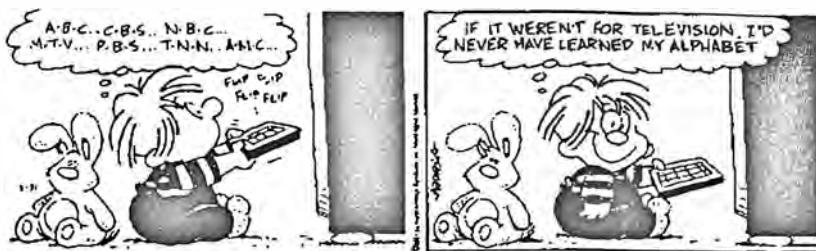
There are some politicians who, if their constituents were cannibals, would promise them missionaries for dinner.—*Henry L. Mencken*

(Öyle politikacılar vardır ki, seçmenleri yamyam olsa, onlara akşam yemeği için misyonerleri sunmaya söz verirlerdi.)

I firmly believe that if the whole *materia medica* could be sunk to the bottom of the sea, it would be all the better for mankind, and all the worse for the fishes. —*Oliver Wendell Holmes*

If a bee didn't have a sting, he couldn't keep his honey.—*Lily*.

Luxury may possibly contribute to give bread to the poor; but if there were no luxury, there would be no poor. —*Henry Home*



If All the Seas Were One Sea

*If all the seas were one sea,
What a great sea that would be!
And if all the trees were one tree,
What a great tree that would be!*

*And if all the axes were one ax,
What a great ax that would be!
And if all the men were one man,
What a great man he would be!*

*And if the great man took the great ax,
And cut down the great tree,
And let it fall into the great sea,
What a splash splash that would be!*



EXERCISE 358

Aşağıdaki parça UNREAL PRESENT tümcelerin altını çiziniz.

Poverty, hunger, disease and war are man's greatest enemies. The world would be an infinitely better place if the powerful nations devoted half as much money and effort to these problems as they do to the space race. For the first time in his history, man has the overwhelming technological resources to combat human suffering, yet he squanders them on meaningless pursuits.

If a man deprived himself and his family of food in order to buy and run a car, we would consider him mad. Individuals with limited budgets usually get their priorities right : they provide themselves with necessities before trying to obtain luxuries. Why can't great nations act in the same sensible way? Let us put our house in order first and let space look after itself.

EXERCISE 359

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. We would often be sorry if our wishes were gratified. —*Aesop*
2. If we all said to people's faces what we say behind one another's backs, society would be impossible. —*Balzac*
3. If Christian nations were nations of Christians, there would be no wars. —*Soame Jenyns*
4. Luxury may possibly contribute to give bread to the poor; but if there were no luxury, there would be no poor. —*Henry Home*
5. If Napoleon were alive today, he would be fighting against corruption in French politics.
6. If an economist were any good at business, he would be a rich businessman instead of an adviser to a rich businessman. —*Kirk Kerkorian*

EXERCISE 360

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The world is a sad place because developed nations do not spend enough money on aid programs.

The world would not be a sad place if developed nations spent enough money on aid programs.

1. He is overweight because he eats too much sugar.
2. He is tense because he worries about his grades.
3. He feels ill because he leads an unhealthy life.
4. He coughs too much because he always drink ice-cold water.
5. He is not fit because he doesn't practice any sport.
6. This restaurant does not have many customers because the food is not good.
7. She doesn't spend much money on clothes because she can't afford it.
8. I can't telephone my friend because I don't know her telephone number.

EXERCISE 361

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

type fast/be able to find a better job/Harriet

If Harriet could type fast, she would be able to find a better job.

1. sew / make all her own clothes/my sister

2. find his glasses / watch TV/my grandfather
3. fix his car himself / save a lot of money/Mr. Todd
4. talk / want more chocolate/ a one-year-old baby
5. speak well / be a better salesman/you
6. exercise enough / be in good physical condition/you
7. sleep well / feel more energetic/the manager
8. be less greedy / be happier / you
9. not support terrorism / be safer / Europe
10. import less / have a strong economy / Turkey

EXERCISE 362

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

The telephone is not ringing. She won't answer it.

If the telephone were ringing, she would answer it.

1. The thief is not telling the truth. The detective is angry with him.
2. The French Parliament is being nasty. The Turkish people hate it.
3. It is raining. I will not wash my car.
4. Nobody is listening. I won't make my speech.
5. Jack is not watching TV. I will ask him to help me.

EXERCISE 363

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Mary can't find a good job because she doesn't know how to use a computer.

Mary could find a good job if she knew how to use a computer.

1. Helen can't marry Jim because her parents do not approve of her marriage.
2. Helen can't lose weight because she keeps eating apple pies.
3. Tom can't get a promotion because he is always late for work.
4. I can't sleep well because I have too much coffee during the day.
5. She can't write good books because she is too lazy to work hard.



"If I were you, Mrs. Pinkly, I would go to the fruit festival."

EXERCISE 364

Örnektekine benzer tavsiyede bulunan tümceler kurunuz.

You should eat less starchy food.

If I were you, I would eat less starchy food.

1. You should drive more carefully.
2. You should spend less time watching TV.
3. You should listen to your father's advice.
4. You should get to work on time.
5. You should buy a smaller car.

3. Unreal Past / Gerçek'e aykırı geçmiş zaman

Bu türde, geçmişle ilgili varsayımlar ifade edilmektedir.



*"I'll bet you'd treat me differently
IF I HAD FOUND BURIED TREASURE."*

Why doesn't his mother treat Dennis differently? Because **he had not found buried treasure.**

If you had helped us	we would have repaired the car. we could have repaired the car. we would have been able to repair the car. we might have been able to repair the car.
Bize yardım etseydiniz, (ama etmediniz)	arabayı tamir edecektik/tamir edebilirdik (ama tamir etmedik/edemedik)

If the Greeks had not massacred the Turkish Cypriots, the Turkish army would not have done the Peace Operation.

If the European countries had not supported PKK, 30,000 lives would not have been lost.

Every time the government attempts to handle our affairs, it costs more and the results are worse than if we had handled them ourselves.—*Benjamin Constant* (1767-1830)

Had Cleopatra's nose been shorter, the whole history of world would have been different.—*Pascal*

If it hadn't been for the clever detective, we would never have arrested the murderer.

If it hadn't been for the success of Turing's top-secret wartime mission, the Allies might have lost World War II.

But for the bad weather, we would have had a wonderful time.



"You are lucky. If you had been one of those clever, efficient young men who would have been able to take my place, I would have fired you long ago."

☞ Aşağıdaki parçada "unreal past" ifade eden yapılar italik dizilmişdir.

LOS ANGELES THEN AND NOW

At the beginning of this century, Los Angeles was a sleepy little town, and even as recently as the 1950s and early 1960s, there were farms and orchards close to our house. Gardens thrived here, and you could find an incredible variety of exotic plants and shrubs. Of course there weren't any freeways, and there used to be a good system of electric trains. The air was crystal clear, and as a young child I could see the mountains to the north and east almost every day.

Now we get freeways, traffic and pollution. What a shame! *If you had seen Los Angles thirty years ago, you would have been amazed.*

If only the city had known what was going to happen... If Los Angeles had kept its train system, we might have avoided some of the traffic problems. If city planners had only thought more about the future, they could have put more money into public transportation. If fewer people had moved to Southern California, the population wouldn't have grown so fast. If L.A. hadn't grown so fast, we might not have so many problems today. No one anticipated these things; otherwise, we might have been a lot more careful. I certainly wish that we had.

EXERCISE 365

Örnektekine benzer şekilde TYPE 3 tümceleri kurunuz.

The fisherman wasn't wearing a life jacket. He drowned.

If the fisherman had had a life jacket, he wouldn't have drowned.

1. Robert was smoking in bed and fell asleep. He caused a fire.
2. The burglar wasn't wearing a mask. The witness recognized him.
3. He wasn't wearing a coat in the rain. He got an awful cold.
4. Tom was wearing his headphones. He didn't hear the alarm.
5. She was not watching her baby in the garden. The baby picked up a worm and ate it.



*If Picasso had been a cartoonist,
he probably would have drawn
cartoons like this.*

(Picasso karikatürist olsaydı herhalde böyle karikatürler çizerdi.)

If Picasso had been a cartoonist ..

EXERCISE 366

Örnektekine benzer şekilde TYPE 3 tümceleri kurunuz.

We didn't have the right tools. We didn't repair the computer.

If we had had the right tools, we would have repaired the computer.

1. The weather was cold yesterday. We didn't go to the beach.
2. They missed the bus. They were late for the meeting.
3. We didn't have enough money. We couldn't eat out.
4. It rained all morning. We couldn't work in the garden.
5. He was careless. He made a terrible mistake.
6. The hikers didn't have a map. They got lost.

EXERCISE 367

Örnektekine benzer şekilde **would have** ile tümceler kurunuz.

I didn't ask him to help me because he looked tired.

I would have asked him to help me if he hadn't looked tired.

1. Helen didn't take photographs of the view because she didn't have her camera with her.
2. The police did not arrest the terrorist because they did not identify him.
3. The plane was destroyed because the pilot had to make a crash landing.
4. She yelled at her husband because she lost her temper.
5. She lost her job because she lost an important contract.
6. They couldn't go abroad because all their money was stolen.

4. Real Past / Gerçeğe uygun geçmiş zaman

Bu bölümdeki koşul tümceleri gerçek geçmiş durumları ifade eder. Kimi örneklerde TYPE 0'da olduğu gibi IF, WHEN anlamında olabilir.

Örnekleri inceleyelim:

If they watched television last night, they had a good time.

(Dün gece televizyon seyredip seyretmediklerini bilmiyoruz ama eğer seyretmişlerse hoş vakit geçirmiştirlerdir.)

If he found an apartment, we didn't hear about it.

(Eğer bir daire bulmuşsa bizim haberimiz olmadı.)

If a person was suspected of witchcraft in the Middle Ages, he had no chance to save his life.

(Orta Çağda birisinin büyülüyü yaptığından kuşkulandırsa, yaşamını kurtarma şansı sıfırıydı.)

If all the children were home, the grandfather was happy.

(Bütün çocuklar evdeyken büyük baba mutlu oluyordu.)

The salesman was often in a bad mood at home if he had not been able to sell anything.

(Pazarlamacı bir şey satamamışsa evde aksi biri oluyordu.)

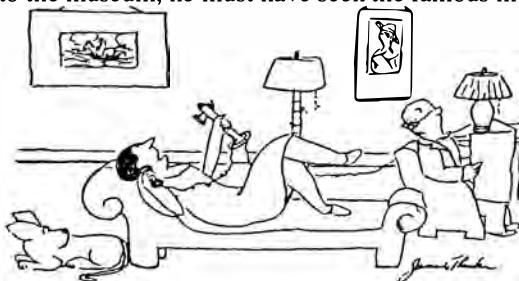
If she was home yesterday, she definitely helped her mother do the dishes.

If she was home yesterday, she must have helped her mother do the dishes.

(Dün evdeyse, annesine bulaşıkları yıkamakta mutlaka yardımcı olmuştur.)

If he went to the museum, he saw the famous painting.

If he went to the museum, he must have seen the famous museum.



"Well, if I called the wrong number, why did you answer the phone?"

5. Mixed Type

Koşul tümcelerde kimi zaman anlamın gerektirdiği şekilde koşul içtüm-ceciği ile temel tümcecik ayrı "unreal" zamanlar gösterebilir. Karikatürdeki iş adamının krala söylediği böyle bir durumun örneği.

Unreal past	Unreal Present
If I had started sooner,	I would be a rich man now.
Daha önceden başlasaydım	şimdi zengin bir adamdım.



Yandaki karikatürde Basri'nin söylediğine dikkat ediniz:

*If Graham Bell had a teenage daughter, (Type 2)
he would never have invented the telephone. (Type 3)*



Aşağıdaki tabloda hangi "unreal" durumların birlikte kullanılabileceği görülmüyor.

<i>If it had rained yesterday, I wouldn't have to water the garden today</i>	
TYPE III	TYPE II
Dün yağmur yağışydı	bugün bahçeyi sulamak zorunda kalmazdım.
2.	
<i>If he didn't gamble too much, he could have been rich.</i>	
TYPE II	TYPE III
Cok fazla kumar oynamasa,	zengin olabilirdi (geçmişte).

EXERCISE 368

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi birleştiriniz. Koşul içtümceciğinin TYPE 2 ve temel tümceciğin TYPE 3 şeklinde olmasına dikkat ediniz.

She didn't take her medicine last night. She has a terrible headache now.

If she had taken her medicine last night, she wouldn't have a terrible headache now.

1. She lost all her money in the stock market. She is depressed now.
2. Jack didn't listen to his father's advice. He is in prison now.
3. The USA became an imperialistic country. We can't have peace now.
4. The white man massacred the Indians. There are not many Indians today.
5. The USA did not really abolish slavery. There is slavery in various forms today.

EXERCISE 369

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. If you had studied English, you would understand this now.
2. You'd be feeling stronger now if you had followed your doctor's advice.
3. John would easily find a job if he had not been in prison last year.
4. If we had become butchers, we might be making more money now.
5. If she had been watching her diet, she would be less than 60 kilos now.
6. Poor Mr. Brown would be alive today if the doctor had arrived sooner last night.
7. This house would have been sold long ago if it were not far from the centre of the town.
8. I would come to your party tomorrow if I had not been ill all last week.
9. If Sir Walter Raleigh had not taken tobacco from the New World to England, probably people wouldn't smoke now.

KOŞUL İÇTÜMCECİKLERİNDEN KULLANILAN DİĞER BAĞLAÇLAR

only if

ONLY IF, istek, ümit ve pişmanlık ifade etmekte kullanılır.

A . Real Present

If only we can get there, we'll be all right.

B . Unreal Present

If only she wouldn't play the violin in the middle of the night, she would be an ideal neighbour.

I could read more if only there weren't so much noise.

If only there weren't so many pollutants in the atmosphere, the ozone layer wouldn't be in danger of being depleted.

C . Unreal Past

If only you hadn't done that, everything would have been okay.

If only you hadn't broken your promise, we would all have been happier.

ONLY IF içtümcecikleri, güçlü istek bildirdiklerinde temel tümcecik olmak-sızın da kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımda **WISH** tümcecikleri ile aynı anlamı paylaşır.

If only he comes in time. = We (hope) he will come in time. (hope)

If only he didn't drive so fast. = We wish he didn't drive so fast. (wish)

If only I hadn't said that. = I wish I hadn't said that. (regret)

IF ONLY güçlü dilek ve istek bildirdiği için ünlem tümceleri de kurabilir.

If only she didn't tell so many lies! (Keşke bu kadar yalan söylemese!)

If only you would work carefully! (Bir dikkatli çalışsan!)

EXERCISE 370

Örnektekine benzer şekilde **IF ONLY** ve **I WISH** ile tümceler kurunuz.

Life is so difficult.

I wish life were not so difficult.

If only life would not be so difficult.

1. I can't speak an Indian language.
2. I can't concentrate on my work.
3. We haven't got any friends.
4. My boss speaks too much.
5. I can't cook.
6. My son loves loud music.

EXERCISE 371

Örnektekine benzer ekilde IF ONLY ile tümceler kurunuz.

Unfortunately I didn't listen to my father's advice.

If only I had listened to my father's advice.

1. I broke my arm playing basketball.
2. It is a shame we missed the last bus.
3. It is too bad she failed to come.
4. It is too bad I spent my holiday in Spain.
5. I regret that I have sold my car.



ONLY IF

ONLY IF, *if only* ile anlam ve kullanım açısından farklıdır. *Only if*, koşul içtümceğinin vurgulanmasını sağlamaktadır.

Cucumbers and peppers can be canned only if they are first pickled and then cooked at very low temperatures.

Yet we can maintain a free society only if we recognize that in a free society no one can win all the time. No one can have his own way all the time, and no one is right all the time. —Richard M. Nixon

(Herkesin her zaman üstün gelemeyeceğini anlaysak eğer, özgür bir toplum kurabiliriz. Hiç kimsenin her zaman dediği olmaz ve hiç kimse her zaman haklı olmaz.)

Only if you have been in the deepest valley, can you ever know how magnificent it is to be on the highest mountain. - *Richard Nixon*

Only if you study hard, can you be successful in the exam.



Sitting Bull:

**IF WE MUST DIE, WE DIE
DEFENDING OUR RIGHTS.**

as long as

As long as	you eat a well-balanced diet,	you will be all right.
If		

As long as we receive full support, we can finish the job on time.

Go wherever you like as long as you don't get lost.

A man is not old as long as he is seeking something.—*Jean Rostand*

As long as there are rich people in the world, they will be eager to distinguish themselves from the poor. —*J. J. Rousseau* (1712-78)

As long as they are back in the dormitory by midnight, students may go wherever they like.

Until recently most reviews of teaching methods concluded that as long as the relevant content is covered, one method is as good as another.

You can choose or change your beliefs as you desire as long as they do not unduly restrict the freedom of others to do the same.

I don't care what is written about me so long as it isn't true. —*D. Parker*

I don't mind what language an opera is sung in so long as it is a language I don't understand. —*Sir Edward Appleton*

So long as we have enough people in this country willing to fight for their rights, we'll be called a democracy.—*Roger Baldwin*

The world will not live in harmony as long as two-thirds of its inhabitants find difficulty in living at all. —*U Thant* (1909-74)

As long as art is the beauty parlor of civilization, neither art nor civilization is secure.—*Dewey* (Sanat, uygarlığın güzellik salonu olduğu sürece, ne sanat ne de uygarlık güvenliktedir.)

EXERCISE 372

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. It does not matter how slowly you go so long as you do not stop.
—Confucius
2. So long as America had atomic superiority, Western Europeans could see themselves as sheltering under an American umbrella.
3. The public will believe anything, so long as it is not founded on truth.
—Edith Sitwell
4. So long as we can't find his fingerprints on the safe, we have to accept that he is innocent.
5. So long as the current rate of oil production is maintained, world oil prices are not expected to rise significantly.

even if/though —sa bile

Even if his account is true, the police are not likely to believe him.

(Söyledikleri doğru bile olsa, polis ona inanacağa benzemiyor.)

Even if you help me, I don't think I can finish the report on time.

I wouldn't go to the party even if they begged me.

Even if I had inspected the documents last week, I wouldn't have found anything suspicious.

Even if we wanted to return to pre-technology days, it would be impossible.

not until

Not until the potato was introduced into Ireland, was it recognized for its great food value rather than as a curiosity.

Not until we dare to regard ourselves as a nation, not until we respect ourselves, can we gain the esteem of others, or rather only then will it come of its own accord. -Albert Einstein (1879-1955)

provided (that)

I will lend you my tools	provided that	you promise to bring them back.
	if	

Helen would have come to the meeting provided (that) her husband had come with her.

Provided that the use of new technological developments is monitored carefully, there will be fewer harmful side effects.

People can be induced to swallow anything, provided it is sufficiently seasoned with praise. —Jean Baptiste Molière

Making a lot of money is all right, provided you don't have to pay too much for it. —Albert Yasker

A clever theft was praiseworthy amongst the Spartans; and it is equally so amongst Christians, provided it to be on a sufficiently large scale.

-Herbert Spencer

providing (that)

Fashion designers are only interested in outward appearance and they take advantage of the fact that women will put up with any amount of discomfort, providing they look right.

The future can be anything we want it to be, providing we have the faith and that we realize that peace, no less than war, required "blood and sweat and tears." – *Charles F. Kettering*

when = if

Except for promoting tooth decay, sugar presents no significant public health hazards when consumed at current levels.

Moon rocks are OK when everyone is eating. (Herkesin karnının doyduğu bir dünyada ay taşlarına para harcamaya göz yumulabilir.)

unless = if ... not

They will arrive on time	unless	their plane is delayed.
They will arrive on time	if	their plane is NOT delayed.

You can't lose weight	IF you do NOT UNLESS you	watch your diet.
-----------------------	-------------------------------------	------------------

It is impossible to enjoy idling thoroughly unless one has plenty of work to do. –*Jerome K. Jerome*

(Yapılacak çok iş olmadıkça, insan aylaklılığın tam tadını çıkaramaz.)

Men do less than they ought, unless they do all that they can. –*Thomas Carlyle*

No man is entitled to the blessings of freedom unless he be vigilant in its preservation. –*Douglas MacArthur*

A man of genius is unbearable, unless he possesses at least two things besides: gratitude and purity.

Unless you try to do something beyond what you have already mastered, you will never grow.

The seas will, it seems, continue to be polluted unless this agreement is accepted by a majority of the countries.

Unless a man has been taught what to do with success after getting it, the achievement of it must inevitably leave him a prey to boredom.

EXERCISE 373

Aşağıdaki tümceleri UNLESS kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

If you don't help me, I won't be able to repair the car.

Unless you help me, I won't be able to repair the car.

1. This law will make life difficult for farmers if it is not changed.
2. About 30 countries can expect serious problems in the next decade if they do not reduce population growth.
3. No government can save the country if the country is not determined to save itself. – *Edward Heath*
4. Old people should avoid strenuous sports if they do not have a specific go-ahead from their doctors.
5. Do not speak of my debts if you do not mean to pay them. -*George Herbert*
6. There is no joy in anything if we do not share it.

granting/granted that

Granting his figures to be true, what conclusions can be drawn?

(If we take it that his figures are true,)

suppose/supposing that

Supposing there were no water, what would the world be like?

Supposing that he had been found guilty, he would have gone to prison.

in the event that

In the event the plane arrived late, we would miss all our appointments.

In the event that you have an accident, call your insurance company immediately.

In the event that the Greeks attempt to annihilate the Turkish Cypriots a third time, the Turkish army must intervene at once.



what if

What if it is true? *Doğru olsa bile ne farkeder? / Ya doğru ise?*

What if she gets home before us? She doesn't have the key.

What if the fantastic problems of reaching and colonizing the other planets of the solar system, such as Jupiter and Uranus, can be solved? It would take only about 200 years to fill them. *—Isaac Asimov*

where = if

Where there is poverty, there we find discontent and unrest.

Where monarchy is firmly established, kings are of a higher race than their subjects.

Where there is fear, there is no religion. *—Mahatma Gandhi*

Where ignorance is our master, there is no possibility of real peace. *—Dalai Lama*

Where there were people without protection, the British killed them. Where there were valuable minerals, the British stole them.

Where secrecy or mystery begins, vice or roguery is not far off. *—Samuel Johnson*

Where there was trouble, there he was sure to be.

Where there is gold, there the devil dwells.

Where the corpse is, there the vultures gather.

Where there is a will, there is a way.

in case

In case	you have any trouble,	come and see me.
If		

You'll need some identification in case you open a bank account.

Some people have built bomb shelters in case there is a nuclear war.

on condition that

The company will agree to arbitration on condition that the strike is called off at once.

On condition that we receive full support, we can finish the job on time.

On condition that the government approves the plan, the nuclear power plant will be built.

whether

Whether they agree or not, people pay attention when an expert speaks.

Many investigators have tried to find out whether fat people have an especially sweet tooth.

IF IT WEREN'T FOR IF IT HADN'T BEEN FOR

Bu iki yapı “OLMASAYDI” anlamını taşır.

TYPE 2:	If it weren't for European imperialism, the world could have peace. Avrupa emperyalizmi olmasa, dünyada barı olabilirdi. If it weren't for his talent, he would never be popular. Insects would devour all our crops and kill our flocks and herds, if it were not for the protection we get from insect-eating animals. If it were not for Hope, the heart would break. If it weren't for the last minute, nothing would get done.
TYPE 3:	If it hadn't been for the European support of PKK, we wouldn't have lost so many Turkish lives. If it hadn't been for the clever detective, we would never have arrested the murderer. If it hadn't been for the success of Turing's top-secret wartime mission, the Allies might have lost World War II.

but for

BUT FOR, *if it weren't for* ve *if it hadn't been for* yapılarının kısaltılmış şeklidir.

<i>If it weren't for</i>	<i>European imperialism, the world could have peace.</i>
<i>But for</i>	

The city lay enveloped in darkness but for the dim light of the moon.
We should have had socialism already, but for the socialists.-G. B.Shaw
(Sosyalistler olmasaydı şimdije kadar sosyalizme sahip olurduk.)
But for the European support, terrorism would never be as deadly as it is today.

EXERCISE 374

Aşağıdaki tümceleri *if it weren't for*, ya da *if it hadn't been for* kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

But for the rain, we could sit in the park.
If it weren't for the rain, we could sit in the park.

1. But for his wife, he would never have been a popular artist.
2. But for the bad weather, we would have had a wonderful time.
3. But for Germany, Turkey would not have taken part in World War I.
4. But for his extra income, the family would starve.
5. Mist, fog, and clouds would never occur but for the pressure of dust particles in the air.
6. But for the hope of being free, the slave would have killed himself.

GİZLİ KOŞUL TÜMCECİKLERİ

Kimi yapılarda koşul tümceciği bağlacı kullanılmadan koşul ifade edilebilmektedir.

Eat it and you are dead! = If you eat it, you will die.



TO- INFINITIVE

To hear him talk, you would think he was the boss.
(Onu konuşurken duysan, patron oymuş sanırdın.)

IMPERATIVE



Please all, and you will please none. —Aesop
(Herkesi memnun etmeye çalışırsanız, kimseyi memnun edemezsiniz.)

Ask no questions, and you will be told no lies. (Soru sormazsan, sana yalan söylemez. Soru sormazsan yalan da duymazsin.)

Lose an hour in the morning, and you will spend all day looking for it. —Richard Whately

(Sabahleyin bir tek saat yitirmeye görün, bütün gün onu arar durursunuz.)

Tell me what you desire, and I will tell you what you are.
—Henri Frédéric

Speak when you are angry and you will make the best speech you will ever regret.
—Ambrose Bierce

Give a man a fish, and you feed him for one day. Teach a man how to fish, and you feed him for a lifetime. —Chinese Proverb

Let advertisers spend the same amount of money improving their product that they do on advertising and they wouldn't have to advertise it. —Will Rogers

Throw a lucky man into the sea, and he will come up with a fish in his mouth. —Arab proverb

Eat an apple going to bed, and make the doctor beg his bread.

Keep a secret, it is your slave. Tell it, and it is your master. —Earl Wilson

Buy what you do not need and you will soon need what you cannot buy. —Benjamin Franklin

AND

I will not keep a dog and bark myself. (Köpeğim varsa kendim havlamam.)

You cannot sell the cow and sup the milk. (Ineğini satarsan süütünü sağımazsin.)

AND ve OR (ELSE) ile KOŞUL TÜMCELERİ

Do that again, and they will fire you. = If you do that again, they will fire you.

Stop making that noise, or else I'll call the police. = If you don't stop making that noise, I'll call the police.

BUT, OR, OTHERWISE

If I had time, I would help you.

I would help you, but I don't have time.

I don't have time, or I would help you.

I don't have time; otherwise, I would help you.

If I had had time, I would have helped you.

I would have helped you, but I didn't have time.

I didn't have time, or I would have helped you.

I didn't have times; otherwise, I would have helped you.

absolute construction

☞ Temel içtümceciğe bir bağlaç olmaksızın (NP+V-ING/V-EN) yapılarıyla bağlanan öbeklere "absolute construction" adı verilmektedir.(NP+V-ING) yapısı koşul ifade edebilir.

Weather permitting, we will go for a picnic tomorrow. (Hava iyi olursa, yarın pikniğe gideceğiz.)

without

☞ **Without** ilgeci if it weren't for /if it hadn't been for yapılarının kısaltılmış şekli olarak kullanılabilir.

<i>Without your help,</i> <i>But for your help</i>	<i>we couldn't have succeeded.</i>
---	------------------------------------

EXERCISE 375

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

If you come to work late again, I'll fire you.

Come to work late again, and I'll fire you.

Don't come to work late again, or else I'll fire you..

1. If you don't listen to my advice, you will lose all your friends.
2. If you eat that mushroom, you will get poisoned.
3. If you don't watch your diet, you'll put on too much weight.
4. If you leave the fire unattended, you will cause a forest fire.
5. If you don't take your medicine, you will get serious health problems.

EXERCISE 376

IF-içtümceciğini BUT ile örnekteki gibi ifade ediniz.

I would buy the car if it were white.

I would buy the car, but it is white.

1. The world would be a better place to live if European nations were not so greedy.
2. European countries would not be so rich if they did not exploit other countries.
3. International terrorism would not be so effective if European countries did not support it.
4. I would not hate the British if they were not so dishonest.
5. We would have built this hospital long ago if the government had helped us.
6. If developed countries had not polluted the seas, there would be more fish now.



"If we had all waited for Mr. Right to come along, the human race would be extinct by now."

KOŞUL TÜMCELERİİNDE ÖZEL DURUMLAR

- I. Devrik Yapılar**
- II. Koşul tümceciğinde BE TO kullanımı**
- III. Temel Tümcecikte SHOULD kullanımı**
- IV. IF tümceciğinde WILL ve WOULD kullanımı**
- V. IF tümceciğinde SOME ve ANY kullanımı**
- VI. Koşul tümcelerinin dolaylı anlatımda özel kullanımı**

I. DEVRIK (INVERTED) KOŞUL TÜMCELERİ

A. REAL PRESENT

SHOULD devrik koşul tümcelerde olasılığın zayıf olduğunu vurgulamak için kullanılır.

If our military becomes weak, Should our military become weak,	Greeks will immediately attack us.
---	------------------------------------

Should you run into any difficulties, call me immediately.

Should you not wish our agent to call, please let us know.

B. UNREAL PRESENT**1. WERE**

Were a war to start with the Greeks, all the European countries would support Greece.

Were Turkey to fall prey to terrorism again, all the European countries would be more than happy.

Were it left to me to decide whether we should have a government without newspapers or newspapers without government, I should not hesitate a moment to prefer the latter. –*Thomas Jefferson*

Many people would be more truthful were it not for their uncontrollable desire to talk. –*Edgar Watson Howe*

Were Isaac Asimov not a scientist, he might not be able to write such good science fiction stories.

Were the government to cut Value Added Tax, the prices would fall.

Were it not for your help, we wouldn't succeed.

2. DID

If he thought for a moment, he would find a good solution.

Did he but think for a moment, he would find a good solution.

Weep not that the world changes –did it keep a stable, changeless state, it were a cause indeed to weep. –*William Cullen Bryant*

3. HAD

Had we not faults of our own, we should take less pleasure in complaining of others. –*Fénelon*

4. COULD

There is a remedy for everything, could men find it.

C. UNREAL PAST: HAD ve COULD

Had the management acted sooner, the strike would not have happened.

The sun, the moon and the stars would have disappeared long ago, had they happened to be within reach of predatory human hands. –*Havelock Ellis*

Could the dead man have spoken, he would have identified the murderer.

EXERCISE 377

Aşağıdaki tümceleri devrik yapıya çeviriniz.

1. If you want to contact me, send me an e-mail. (should)
2. If she bought anything, her husband would be furious.
3. If it weren't for his help, we would still be living in poverty.
4. We would have a good harvest if it hadn't been for the storm.
5. If you had tried harder, you could have certainly done better.

6. If their loan had not been approved by the bank, they would not have been able to buy their house.
7. Just give me a call if you have any difficulty starting the computer.
8. If human beings lived for ever, the world would have been uninhabitable long ago.
9. If Napoleon had been a bit more intelligent, world history would have been greatly different.
10. If it hadn't been for the smog, we would have been able to save the victims.
11. If the house had been big enough, we would have bought it.
12. He would be furious with his daughter if he knew the truth.

II. Koşul tümceciğinde BE TO kullanımı

A. BE TO, "ummak, beklemek" anlamında kullanılıyor.

I fear that I have to bore you with these details if you are to understand the situation.

These facts must not be misinterpreted by you if you are to remain free from harm.

B. BE TO, söz konusu varsayımin bütünüyle olanaksız olduğunu ya da çok arzulandığını vurgulamaktadır.

If the price of the car were to fall, I would buy it.

If all mankind were suddenly to practice honesty, many thousands of people would be sure to starve.—*Georg C. Lichtenberg*

If we were to wake up some morning and find that everyone was the same race, creed, and color, we would find some other causes for prejudice by noon. —*Aiken*

Five great enemies to peace inhabit with us: viz. , avarice, ambition, envy, anger and pride. If those enemies were to be banished, we should infallibly enjoy perpetual peace. —*Petrarch*

If those two people were to leave, the whole firm would probably collapse.

EXERCISE 378

Aşağıdaki tümceleri SHOULD kullanarak devrik yapıya çeviriniz.

If by any chance you have any difficulty with this equipment, do not hesitate to contact the manufacturers.

Should you have any difficulty with this equipment, do not hesitate to contact the manufacturers.

1. If by any chance you need any further information, telephone me at once.
2. If you happen to change your mind, please let me know.
3. If by any chance your father has unusual symptoms, send for a doctor at once.

4. I will call at four o'clock in the afternoon, and if you happen to have any other engagement at that time, please postpone it.
5. If you happen to come across an antique pistol at the flea market, please buy it for me.

III. Temel Tümcecikte SHOULD kullanımı

Resmi dilde, iş mektuplarında I ve WE özneleriyle kullanılır.

We should appreciate it very much if you would let us know when we may expect a cheque in settlement of your account.

Birine öğüt verirken kullanılabilir.

You look tired. If I were you, I should go to bed early.

IV. Koşul içtümceciğinde WILL ve WOULD

Genel kural olarak, koşul içtümceciğinde de diğer zarf içtümceciklerinde olduğu gibi, gelecek zaman ifade eden WILL ve WOULD kullanılmaz. WILL ve WOULD koşul içtümceciklerinde aşağıdaki anlamları üslenebilirler.

WILL:	1. rıza	2. rica	3. alışkanlık	4. ısrar	5. sonuç
WOULD:	1. rıza	2. rica	3. alışkanlık		

If you won't stop smoking, you can only expect to have a bad cough.

If we will not have adequate food supplies at reasonable prices, the poor babies will die of malnutrition before they reach school age.

If you will listen to me, I can explain the situation.

We shall be grateful if you will deliver the spare part immediately.

If you will take too many risks, you may get bankrupt.

If it will make everybody happy, I will resign from my job.

If France won't act sensibly, she will have to face the consequences.

If you would give us a hand, we would clean the basement.

If you would give me two more days, I could pay all by debts.

If you would back me up now, I should be most grateful.

If you would abolish avarice, you must abolish its mother, luxury.

-Marcus Tullius Cicero

EXERCISE 379

Aşağıdaki tümcelere dayalı olarak örnektekine benzer şekilde WOULD ile tümceler kurunuz.

Send this e-mail for me.

Would you send this e-mail for me?

I'd be grateful if you'd send this e-mail for me.

1. Format this hard disk.
2. Copy these files onto my disk.
3. Help me to erase these files.

-
4. Show me how to send an e-mail.
 5. Find me the password.

V. IF-TÜMCECİĞİNDE ANY ve SOME

Genel kural olarak SOME olumlu tümcelerde ANY ise olumsuz tümcelerde kullanılmaktadır. Koşul içtümceciklerinde olumlu yapılarda hem SOME hem de ANY kullanılmaktadır.

If I can help you in any way, don't hesitate to let me know.

If you want to kill any idea in the world today, get a committee working on it. – Charles F. Kettering

If-tümceciklerinde olumlu olmalarına karşın ANY kullanılmaktadır. SOME yerini alan ANY olasılığın belirsizliğini vurgular.

If we catch any fish, we will have them for dinner.

Burada ANY, balık yakalama olasılığının zayıflığını vurgulamaktadır.

If you have any free time, complete the report. (Boş zaman var mı yok mu bilinmiyor.)

If you have some free time, complete the report. (Boş zamanının olacağını tahmin ediyorum.)

VI. DOLAYLI ANLATIM (INDIRECT SPEECH) İLE KOŞUL TÜMCELERİ

Dolaylı anlatımda giriş eylemi "past" ise, dolaylı anlatıma sokulacak tümce bir derece "past" yapılmaktadır. Koşul tümcelerinin TYPE I' i bu kurala uyar ama TYPE II ve TYPE III herhangi bir "tense" değişikliğine uğramaz.

TYPE I: Tense değişikliği var

The doctor said , "If you take the pill, you will get rid of your headache."

He said that if I took the pill I would getrid of my headache.

Holmes said to Dr. Watson, "If we drive to Baker Street, we shall just be in time for breakfast."

Holmes told Dr. Watson that if they drove to Baker Street, they would just be in time for breakfast.

TYPE II ve III: Tense değişikliği yok.

He said, "If they offered the vacant position to me, I would accept it."

He said that if they offered the vacant position to him, he would accept it.

The speaker said, "If we didn't pollute the air, we would all be healthier."

The speaker said that if we didn't pollute the air, we would all be healthier.

The detective said, "If I had known that, I would have solved the mystery long ago."

The detective said that if he had known that, he would have solved the mystery long ago.

Çeşitli *IF* Kullanımları

1	<i>If you can give your son only one gift, let it be enthusiasm.</i> —Bruce Barton Oğlunuza verebileceğiniz bir tek armağan varsa, coşku olsun bu.
2	<i>If you do not get what you like, like what you get.</i> Sevdiklerinizi elde edemiyorsanız, elde ettiklerinizle yetinin.
3	<i>We will finish this report if it kills us.</i> Öldürse de raporu tamamlayacağız. (even if)
4	<i>As if I care! = I don't care at all. Umurumda bile değil.</i> As if it matters/mattered! It doesn't matter!
5	<i>I would like to go back to school so that I can become economically independent, support myself, and, if need be, support those dependent on me. (if need be = gerekirse)</i>
6	<i>He wants to know if he can stay for dinner.</i> (if=whether)
7	<i>His house, if small, is very comfortable.</i> Evi küçük olsa da rahat.
8	<i>I can keep a roof over my family, if I do nothing.</i> Başka bir şey yapamıysam da hiç olmazsa aileme başlarını sokacak bir yuva sağlayabiliyorum.

if so, if not

Koşul tümcecikleri belli bir metin içinde açıkça söylenmeden de anlaşılılabilecekse, olumlu olanlar için IF SO, olumsuz olanlar için de IF NOT kullanılarak ifade edilebilir.

Have they arrived?

If	they have arrived,	take them to their hotel
If	so,	
If	they haven't arrived,	wait at the airport until they come.
If	not,	

IF ... THEN

Özellikle konuşma dilinde IF koşul tümcelerde temel tümcecikte THEN kullanma yaygın bir eğilimdir. Dilbilgisi kitapları bu kullanımın yanlış olduğunu belirtmekle birlikte *if ... then* kullanımı çok yaygındır. Aşağıda Confucius'den dilin doğru kullanılması gerektiğini belirttiği metinden yapılan çeviride IF .. THEN yapısının kullanıldığına dikkat ediniz.

If language is not correct, **then** what is said is not what is meant. **If** what is said is not what is meant, **then** what must

undone, **then** morals and art will deteriorate. If morals and art deteriorates, then justice will go astray. **If** justice goes astray, **then** the people will stand about in helpless confusion.
—*Confucious*



Plundered Earth

He treats his mother, the earth, and his brother, the sky, as things to be bought, plundered, sold like sheep or bright beads. **If** man does not learn, he will destroy the earth and leave behind only a desert.

You must teach your children that the ground beneath their feet is the ashes of our grandfathers. **If** you tell your children that the earth is rich with the lives of our kin, they will respect the land. Teach your children that the earth is our mother. Whatever befalls the earth, befalls the sons of the earth. **If** men spit upon the ground, they spit upon themselves.

—*Chief Seattle*, 1854



If the United States had not been an imperialistic state, the World Trade Center would still be standing today.

Chapter 43

COMPARISON and CONTRAST

KARŞILAŞTIRMA

İngilizcede karşılaştırma, çok çeşitli ve karmaşık yapıların kullanılmasıyla ifade edilmektedir. *Comparison* yapıları benzerlikleri, *contrast*' yapıları da farklılıklarını göstermek için kullanılır.

Karşılaştırma yapıları kullanımları açısından anadili İngilizce olanlar arasında da yapısal farklılıklar görülmektedir. Biz bu bölümde karşılaştırma yapılarının genel kabul gören şekillerini sunacağız.

Mr. Short's car is cheaper than Mr. Taylor's (car is).



	The Sparrow	The Eagle	The Hawk
Price	\$7,000	\$15,000	\$35,000
Length	3.12 m.	4.13 m.	3.12 m.
Height	1.55 m.	1.99 m.	1.55 m.
Weight	839 kg.	1700 kg.	900 kg.
Mileage	16 miles per gallon	12 miles per gallon	9 miles per gallon
Maximum Speed	90 miles per hour	120 miles per hour	200 miles per hour

Karşılaştırma yapılarında temel olarak sıfatlar ve zarflar kullanılmaktadır.

The Sparrow is shorter than the Eagle.

The Eagle is more expensive than the Sparrow.

The Hawk is the most expensive of all.

The Hawk is as long as the Sparrow.

The Hawk is the same length as the Sparrow.

The Eagle can go faster than the Sparrow.

The Hawk can go the fastest of all.

KARŞILAŞTIRMANIN 4 BİÇİMİ

1	EN ÜSTÜNLÜK • SUPERLATIVE DEGREE
	She is the best student in class. She works the hardest of all. The Hawk can go the fastest of all.
2	ÜSTÜNLÜK • COMPARATIVE DEGREE
	The Sparrow is shorter than the Eagle. She works harder than a slave does.
3	EŞİTLİK • EQUALITY
	The Hawk is as long as the Sparrow. She is working as hard as a slave.
4	BENZERLİK • SIMILARITY
	The Sparrow is like a harmless bird. The Hawk is moving like a bullet. She is working like a slave.

EXERCISE 380

Aşağıdaki parçada kullanılan karşılaştırma yapılarını belirleyiniz.

BUYING A SECOND-HAND CAR

Yesterday Robert went to Larry Sharp's Magic Car Lot to buy a new car. He drove there in his old car. He was planning to use it as a trade-in on the new one.

SHARP: Good afternoon, sir. Judging from the car you are driving, you should want a new car

ROBERT: You bet I do. Could you show me a car that will last as long as my old Sparrow, but that will not give me as much trouble as it has given?

SHARP: Here look at this big car. It shouldn't give you any trouble. It will drive much better than yours and will last twice as long.

ROBERT: But it is too big. My sparrow used to get thirty miles to the gallon when it was new. I think my sparrow still doesn't use as much gas as this big car.

SHARP: Well, this car may not be as economical as yours, but it certainly can go much faster than yours.

ROBERT: To tell you the truth, I really don't want a car that goes too fast. I probably drive more dangerously than most people do.

- SHARP: Well, sir, in that case, how about this one. It is much smaller than the big car. What is more, it isn't as expensive as the big car. And surely it's as practical as your old car ever was. It will certainly drive better than yours.
- ROBERT: Well, I like it better than the big car. Could you start the engine for me?
- SHARP: There. Do you like the sound of this engine as well as yours?
- ROBERT: To be honest, there's no comparison. Mine sounds like a sick dog and this one sounds like a happy cat. I like it
- SHARP: But let me warn you. This small car will drive more slowly than even yours, while the big one . . . "
- ROBERT: Forget about the big car. I like the price of this one better than the big one.
- SHARP: But don't you think this car is too small for a man as big as you are? I really think you should get the big car.
- ROBERT: Forget about the big car, I say. I'll take this one. How much will you give me for my old car in trade for this one?
- SHARP: Well, your car probably isn't as valuable as you think it is. It's certainly worth more to you than it is to me. I'll give you a hundred dollars for it.
- ROBERT: What! Only a hundred dollars for my best friend? A friend I've known as long as I have been driving? A friend that I know as well as I know myself? A friend that has been a true friend no matter badly I treat it?
- SHARP: But, sir, ...
- ROBERT: No, thank you for your offer. But I can't do that to my best friend. Thank you and good-bye.

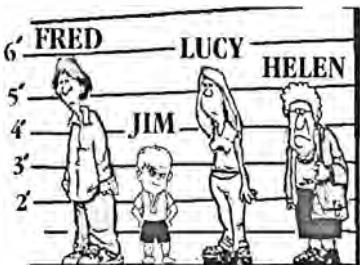
THEN Robert got in his best friend, started up its loud engine, and drove down the street as fast as the best friend could go.



SİFATLARIN VE ZARFLARIN ÜSTÜNLÜK VE EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECELERİNİN YAPILARI

Karşılaştırma yapılarının büyük çoğunluğunda sıfatlar ve zarflar yer almaktadır. Sıfatlar ve zarfların üstünlük ve en üstünlük dereceleri ekler ve sözcükler yardımıyla gösterilir. Üstünlük derecesi için tek heceli ve kimi iki heceli sıfatlar için {-er} eki, diğer sıfatlar için de MORE sözcüğü kullanılmaktadır. En üstünlük derecesi için {-est} eki ile MOST sözcüğü kullanılmaktadır.

THE FOUR SUSPECTS

*Fred is taller than Lucy.**Fred is the tallest of the suspects.**Jim is the shortest and the youngest of the suspects.*

SIFAT	ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ	EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ
old	older	the oldest
young	younger	the youngest
hot	hotter	the hottest
big	bigger	the biggest
dusty	dustier	the dustiest
easy	easier	the easiest

Hot, dusty, big gibi sıfatların üstünlük ve en üstünlük derecelerinde yazılışlarındaki değişikliğe dikkat ediniz.

1. *HOT* ve *BIG* gibi tek heceli sıfatlarda ünsüz-ünlü-ünsüz (H-O-T) dizilişi varsa son ünsüz yinelenir: H-O-T-T-E-R, H-O-T-T-E-S-T.

2. Sıfat (Y) ile bitiyor ve bir önceki harf de ünsüz ise (Y), (I)'ye dönüşür:

dust-~~X~~-i-er dust-~~X~~-i-est

hot	hot +t+er	hot +t+est
big	big+g+er	big+g+est
dusty	dusti+er	dusti+est

SIFAT	ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ	EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ
expensive	more expensive	the most expensive
difficult	more difficult	the most difficult

1. Bazı sıfatlar hem {-er / -est} hem de *MORE/MOST* ile kullanılır.

clever	common	narrow	polite
simple	quiet	stupid	

2. *Bored, tired, boring, amusing, annoying, hurt* gibi present ve past participle sıfatlar tek heceli de olsa *MORE* ve *MOST* ile kullanılır.

3. *ELDER* sıfatının karşılaştırma şekli yoktur.

- ☞ 4. Bazı sıfatların anamları nedeniyle karşılaştırma şekilleri kullanılmaz.
- | | | | | |
|----------------|--------------|---------------|------------------|-------------|
| <i>dad</i> | <i>empty</i> | <i>false</i> | <i>favourite</i> | <i>main</i> |
| <i>perfect</i> | <i>right</i> | <i>unique</i> | <i>wrong</i> | |

- ☞ 5. Sıfatların kendileri karşılaştırılıyorsa MORE yapısı kullanılır.
I was more angry than sad. (*Üzgün olmaktan daha çok öfkeliydim.*)

ZARF	ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ	EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ
hard	harder	the hardest

ZARF	ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ	EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ
slowly frequently	more slowly more frequently	the most slowly the most frequently

EXERCISE 381

Aşağıda verilenlerle the Sparrow ve the Eagle modellerini karşılaştırın tümceler kurunuz.

light / heavy	<i>The Sparrow is lighter than the Eagle.</i> <i>The Eagle is heavier than the Sparrow.</i>
----------------------	--

1. short / long 3. cheap / expensive 5. small / big
 2. expensive / economical 4. fast / slow 6. safe / dangerous

EXERCISE 382

Aşağıda verilenlerle Sparrow ve Eagle modellerini karşılaştırın örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

economical	<i>The Sparrow is more economical than the Hawk.</i> <i>The Hawk is less economical than the Sparrow.</i>
-------------------	--

1. comfortable 3. powerful 5. expensive
 2. elegant 4. spacious 6. attractive

EXERCISE 383

Aşağıda verilen özelliklere göre Sparrow, Eagle ve Hawk arasında karşılaştırmalar yapınız.

expensive	<i>The Hawk is the most expensive of the three cars.</i>
spacious	<i>The Eagle is the most spacious of all.</i>

1. comfortable 3. expensive 5. fast
 2. economical 4. heavy 6. attractive

ÜSTÜNLÜK VE EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECELERİ DÜZENSİZ OLAN SİFATLAR



"Well, I have been gooder than Billy."

Kimi sıfatların üstünlük ve en üstünlük dereceleri genel kurala uymayan şekillerde yapılmaktadır. Yukarıdaki karikatürdeki küçük çocuğun GOOD'un karşılaştırma şemlinin düzensiz olduğunu bilmemiş anlaşılmıyor.

SİFAT	Üstünlük Derecesi	En üstünlük Derecesi
good well	better	the best
bad	worse	the worst
little	less	the least
many	more	the most
much	more	the most
far	farther	the farthest
-----	further	the furthest



Well, sağlık açısından "iyilik" ifade etmektedir.

How are you today?

I am very well, thank you.

I feel better today. Yesterday I had a terrible headache.

ÜSTÜNLÜK VE EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECELERİ DÜZENSİZ OLAN ZARFLAR

ZARF	Üstünlük Derecesi	En üstünlük Derecesi
well	better	the best
badly	worse	the worst
little	less	the least
much a lot	more	the most
(a) little	less	the least
far	farther	the farthest
-----	further	the furthest

 Hem **FARTHER** hem de **FURTHER** mesafe gösterebilir.

To find a comfortable spot for picnicking, we had to drive **FARTHER/FURTHER** than I expected.

Sadece **FURTHER** soyut anlam üstlenebilir. Ayrıca "additional" anlamında da kullanılabilir.

Isaac Asimov went *further* into the question of population explosion.
There won't be any *further* delay.

KARŞILAŞTIRMA YAPILARINA TOPLU BAKIŞ



President Bush's shadow is more sensible than he is.

President Bush's shadow may think more sensibly than he does.

This car is bigger than Robert's car.

This car can go faster than Robert's car.

Robert drives more dangerously than his friends do.

SİFATLAR			ZARFLAR	
adjective + -ER	THAN	1	adverb + -ER	THAN
{ more } adjective less			{ more } adverb less	

President Bush's lies are worse than Clinton's
A Mac is always more efficient than a PC.
A PC is always less satisfying than a Macintosh.
Work is less boring than amusing oneself.
—Baudelaire
Money is better than credit in buying goods.

President Bush told lies more outrageously than Clinton.
A Mac always works faster than a PC.
A Mac works more efficiently than a PC.
A PC works less efficiently than a Mac.
He spends his time more enjoyably while working.
Money works better than credit in buying goods.

Robert is the youngest teacher in the school.

Robert is the most careless driver in town.

Robert drives the most dangerously of all.

SİFATLAR			ZARFLAR	
THE adjective -EST		2	THE adverb -EST	
the { most least } adjective			the { most least } adverb	

Man is still the most extraordinary computer of all. –*J. F. Kennedy*
 Selfishness is the greatest curse of the human race. –*Gladstone*
 Of all noises, I think music is the least disagreeable. –*S. Johnson*

She works the hardest of all.
 The dancer moved the most gracefully of all the performers.

She is as rich as I am.

She is as rich as me. (Günlük kullanım)

This car is not so old as Robert's car.

Robert should drive as carefully as his friends do.

SİFATLAR		
{ AS } SO	adjective	AS

3

ZARFLAR		
{ AS } SO	adverb	AS

She is as clever as you are.
 An honest man's word is as good as his bond.

She works as hard as you do.
 We need your support as badly as you need ours.



President Bush is as heartless as Usame bin Laden.

The US soldiers killed Iraqi children as violently as Hitler's army (did).

President Bush is as every bit as degraded as Adolf Hitler, as far as callous indifference to innocent human lives is concerned.

Peter is as cruel as he is intelligent.

A man is as old as he feels; a woman is as old as she looks.

The trip was not so expensive as we had expected,

Her stories are not so interesting as they used to be.

Your own faults look as big to the other fellow as his do to you.

4	<i>verb</i>	<i>adjective + -ER</i>	<i>noun</i>	THAN
		{ MORE } LESS adjective		

We have made faster progress than expected.

Zebras and asses have shorter hair than do horses.

Skunks have more powerful scent glands than do their relatives in the weasel family.



5

{ AS }
SO

adjective + { A } + noun

AS

He was not so cruel a man as one might think.

A thousand words will not leave so deep an impression as one deed.

—Henrik Ibsen

6

{ AS }
SOMANY + countable noun
MUCH + uncountable noun

AS

They have as many children as us. (INFORMAL)

They have as many children as us we do. (FORMAL)

We have as many children as them/they do.

John eats as much food as Peter (does).

Peter eats as much food as John.

A spider does not have as many legs as an insect.

Take as much time as you want.

There were almost as many people outside the stadium as there were inside.

7

MOREcountable noun
uncountable noun**THAN****LESS**

uncountable noun

Tom has more money than George.

George has less money than Tom.

We certainly have less money than you do.

You paid more (money) for your house than I did.

Even the most advanced computers have less brain power than a three-year-old.

Tea is different from coffee in that it contains much less caffeine than coffee.

All other hoofed mammals have more toes than do horses.

8	FEWER	<i>countable noun</i>	THAN
	MORE	<i>countable noun</i> <i>uncountable noun</i>	

A spider has fewer legs than an insect.

9	THE MOST	<i>countable noun</i> <i>uncountable noun</i>	<i>(prepositional phrase)</i>
	THE LEAST	<i>uncountable noun</i>	

I have got the most money around here.

She has got the most books of all.

10	AS + <i>adjective</i> + AS	⇒	THE SAME + <i>noun</i> + AS
----	----------------------------	---	-----------------------------

Ali is as heavy as Veli. = Ali is the same weight as Veli.

A lion cannot run at the same speed as a cheetah can.

Lions run more slowly than cheetahs do.

THE SAME noun AS kalıbıyla **AS adjective AS** kalıbında kullanılan adlar ve sıfatlar arasında anlam ilişkisi olmak zorundadır.

THE SAME noun AS	⇒	AS adjective AS
age	⇒	old, young
depth	⇒	deep, shallow
length	⇒	long, short
price	⇒	expensive, cheap
size	⇒	big, small, large, tiny, huge
speed	⇒	fast, slow
strength	⇒	strong, weak
weight	⇒	heavy, light, fat, thin
width	⇒	wide, narrow

EXERCISE 384

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi **AS ... AS** yapısını kullanarak yeniden yazınız

Jack is the same age as Tom.

Jack is as old as Tom.

1. The Sparrow is the same price as the Mini.
2. An elephant is not the same weight as a camel.
3. The Hawk is the same length as the Sparrow.
4. Our garden is the same size as yours.
5. This laptop computer is not the same weight as yours.

SİFATLARLA VE ZARFLARLA ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ

Sıfatlar ve zarflarla üstünlük derecesi ifade edilmesinde karşılaşırmanın kiminle ya da neyle yapıldığını göstermek için THAN sözcüğü kullanılmaktadır.

SİFATLARIN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECELERİNDE **THAN** SÖZCÜĞÜNÜ İZLEYEN YAPILAR

She is younger	THAN	I am. (ME=informal)
Their house is bigger		ours (is).
She is actually younger		she looks.
Unemployment is higher now		it was under the last government.
Soya beans are cheaper		meat to produce .
TV's harm is greater		generally admitted.
TV now is more harmful		it has ever been.
The new system is faster		the old one.
Life in the country is less stressful		that in the city.
It is easier to fight for principles		to live up to them.
You don't look older		your brother.
Housing in some places is cheaper		it is in others.
All other hooved mammals have more toes		do horses.

ÖRNEKLER

adjective +ER THAN

Some remedies are worse than the diseases. — *Publilius Syrus* (Bazı ilaçlar hastalığın kendisinden daha kötüdür.)

Every fish that escapes seems greater than it is. (Kaçan her balık olduğundan daha büyük görünür.)



"Can I get out now, Mom? I am cleaner than the water."

A courageous enemy is better than a cowardly friend. (Cesur bir düşman korkak bir arkadaştan daha iyidir.)

History proves that war is better at abolishing nations than nations are at abolishing wars. (Tarih, savaşların ulusları yok etmeyecektir, ulusların savaşları yok etmesinden daha başarılı olduğunu kanıtlıyor.)

A few books well chosen are of greater use than a library.

No wonder I feel so tired -- I'm older now than I've ever been before.
 The unfortunate thing about this world is that the good habits are much easier to give up than the bad ones.— *W. Somerset Maugham*

MORE adjective THAN

Life in the country is more stressful than that in the city.
 Kemal Tahir's books are certainly more interesting than Yaşar Kemal's.
 A much more interesting book than we had expected won the prize.
 The ink of the scholar is more sacred than the blood of the martyr.—
Mohammed (Bilimadamının mürekkebi, şehitlerin kanından daha kutsaldır.)
 Any discovery is more likely to be exploited by the wicked than applied by the virtuous. —*Marion J. Levy, Jr.* (Bir keşfin kötüler tarafından kullanılması olasılığı iyiler tarafından uygulanması şansından daha yüksektir.)

LESS adjective THAN

Helen's proposal was less attractive than the one made by her mother.
 It proves, on close examination, that work is less boring than amusing oneself. —*Charles Baudelaire* (Dikkatle incelenince görülür ki çalışmak, kendini eğlendirmekten daha az sıkıcıdır.)

LESS THAN

Organized crime constitutes nothing less than a guerrilla war against society.—*Lyndon Johnson*
 The art of translation lies less in knowing the other language than in knowing your own.
 The human brain weighs considerably less in old age than it does in the middle years.
 Generosity is giving more than you can, and pride is taking less than you need. —*Kahlil Gibran*

LESS adverb THAN

He reacted less kindly than (he did) yesterday.
 He spoke less enthusiastically about the country life after he had visited a farm.

LESS noun THAN

History has seen wars which used up less ammunition than a cease-fire today. —*Morrie Brickman*
 (Tarih, günümüzdeki ateşkes dönemlerinden daha az cephe tüketen savaşlar görmüştür.)
 The book contained less information than we had expected.

ZARFLARIN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECELERİNDE THAN SÖZCÜĞÜNÜ İZLEYEN YAPILAR

She speaks Turkish better	THAN	I do.
She is now working harder		ever.
We do more to decimate our population in traffic accidents		we do in war.
This sort of accident seems to occur more frequently		than in the past.

adverb +-ER THAN

A man who gives his children habits of industry provides for them better than by giving them a fortune. –Richard Whately
A blow with a word strikes deeper than a blow with a sword. –Robert Burton (1577-1640)
Content is oftener found in the cottage than in the palace.

MORE adverb THAN

Helen plays the saxophone more expertly than Tom.
Helen plays the saxophone more expertly than the tuba.
The train used to run more often than every two hours.
The world supply of oil, coal, and natural gas is diminishing more rapidly than scientists ever expected.

 Zarflarla yapılan üstünlük gösteren karşılaştırma tümcelerinde günlük kullanımda anlam karışıklığına yol açabilen kısaltmalar kullanılmaktadır.

Nancy likes poetry more than I do. Nancy likes poetry more than me.	Nancy, şiri benim sevdigimden fazla seviyor.
Nancy likes poetry more than music. Nancy likes poetry more than I do.	Nancy, şiri, müzikten çok seviyor. Nancy, şiri, benim sevdigimden çok seviyor.
Nancy likes poetry more than me.	Nancy, şiri, beni sevdiginden çok seviyor. / Nancy, şiri, benim sevdigimden çok seviyor.

Helen plays the saxophone more expertly than Tom.
(Helen, saksafonu Tom'dan daha ustaca çalıyor.)
Helen plays the saxophone more expertly than the guitar.
(Helen saksafonu, gitarı çaldığından daha ustaca çalıyor.)
She likes the new computer more than her husband.
I admire the president more than my teacher.

KARŞILAŞTIRMA YAPILARINDA KULLANILAN PEKİŞTİRICİLER

INTENSIFIERS WITH COMPARATIVES

Karşılaştırma yapılarında, karşılaştırmanın niteliğini belirten pekiştirciler (intensifiers) kullanılabilmektedir.

no	far	a lot	a bit	a great deal
much	slightly	a little	somewhat	even

Jack is younger than his brother. (Jack, kardeşinden daha genç.)

Jack is MUCH younger than his brother. (Jack, kardeşinden ÇOK daha genç.)

The damage is no worse than they expected.

Jack is	— no much a lot a little a bit slightly somewhat even	younger	than I am.
---------	---	---------	------------

Turkish people are	even no far much a lot a little a bit slightly somewhat even	more creative	than European people.
--------------------	---	---------------	-----------------------

My son devotes	even no far much a lot a little a bit slightly somewhat	more attention	to his car than I do to mine.
----------------	---	----------------	-------------------------------

This book is a lot more expensive than mine.

Jack can swim a lot better than I can.

My car uses fuel much more economically than yours does.

It is much more difficult to develop a city than to send a man to the moon. —*Prof. Colin Buchanan*

(Bir kenti geliştirmek, aya insan yollamaktan çok daha zordur.)

Our house is no smaller than yours.

Our progress as a nation can be no swifter than our progress in education. —*John F. Kennedy*

Priests are no more necessary to religion than politicians to patriotism.
—*John Haynes Holmes*

Some media bosses are much more vicious than crooked politicians.

European governments have discovered that propaganda is much more effective when it is combined with terror.

(Papazların din için gerekliliği, politikacıların yurt sevgisi için gerekliliğinden hiç te fazla değildir. /Yurt severlik için nasıl papazlara gerek yoksa, din için de papazlara gerek yoktur. /Vatanseverlik için politikacı ne kadar gerekliyse din için de papazlar o kadar gereklidir.)



"The bad news is, you work less than anyone in this office. The good news is, you make the fewest mistakes."

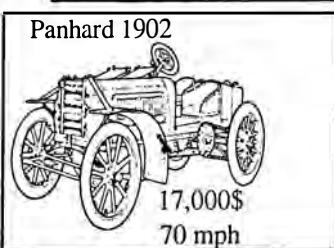
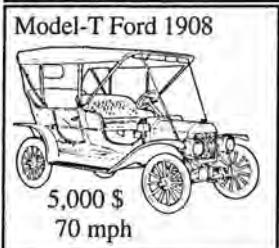
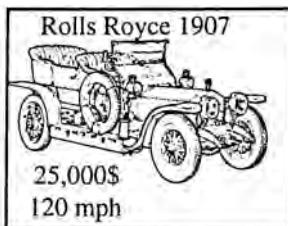
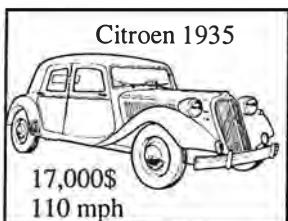
EXERCISE 385

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda uygun pekiştiriciler kullanmaya çalışınız.

1. Boxing is ____ more tiring than walking.
2. Playing in the garden is ____ more fun than playing in the room.
3. Eating too much is ____ more dangerous than eating too little.
4. Both houses are cheap. This one is ____ cheaper.
5. Our cars are almost the same price. Mine is ____ more expensive.
6. A hydrogen bomb, which is ____ more powerful than an atomic bomb, will cause unimaginable damage.
7. An asbestos worker is ____ more likely to contract lung cancer if he or she is also a cigarette smoker. Therefore, he must quit smoking.
8. The human heart is a small organ. It is ____ larger than a clenched fist.

EXERCISE 386

Aşağıdaki araba modellerini karşılaştıran tümceleri tamamlayınız.



1. ____ is the most expensive of all.
2. ____ is as expensive as ____.
3. ____ is a lot cheaper than the Citroen.
4. The oldest car of all is ____.
5. The cheapest of all is ____.
6. The most beautiful of all is ____.
7. ____ is fast as ____.
8. The fastest of all is ____.
9. The Citroen is ____ slower than the Rolls Royce.
10. The Rolls Royce is much more expensive than ____.
11. The Panhard is no cheaper than ____.
12. The Model-T Ford is _____. cheaper than the Rolls Royce.

KARŞILAŞTIRMA YAPILARININ ÇESİTLİ KULLANIMLARI

1. -ER and -ER /MORE AND MORE

Karşılaştırma sözcüklerinin AND ile yinelenmesiyle vurgulanma sağlanmaktadır.

The lake is getting smaller. Göl küçülüyor.

The lake is getting smaller and smaller. Göl giderek daha da küçülüyor.

Computers are becoming more and more important in our lives.

Bilgisayarlar yaşamımızda giderek daha önemli oluyorlar.

EXERCISE 387

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **more and more** yapısını kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

- 1 The world's population is getting big.
- 2 The problem of feeding all the people in the world is getting bad.
- 3 Many of the world's seas, rivers and lakes are becoming polluted.
- 4 Life is becoming automated.
- 5 Good houses are becoming more difficult to find.

2. AS MANY AS + NUMBER

A 30-second commercial on network television can be seen and heard by as many as 25 million viewers.

In the United States alone, as many as 31 million persons suffer from some form of arthritis.

The Viking warriors, sometimes as many as fifty, sat in two long rows along each side of the boat.

3. AS MUCH AS + QUANTITY

She spends as much as \$10,000 on clothes every year.

One must eat as much as 6 ounces of meat, fish or poultry every day.

Smoking may hasten a heart attack by as much as 10 years.

4. IT IS WITH AS WITH

It is with our passions as it is with fire and water; they are good servants, but bad masters.

It is with ideas as with pieces of money; those with the least value generally circulate the most.

5. AS ...SO

As empty vessels make the loudest sound, so those who have the least wit talk the most. –Plato

As in law so in war, the longest purse finally wins. –Mahatma Gandhi

(Mahkemedede olduğu gibi savaşta da sonunda en dolgun cüzdan kazanır.)

As I would not be a slave, so I would not be a master. This expresses my idea of democracy. –Abraham Lincoln (Nasıl köle olmayı reddediyorsam, efendi olmayı da reddediyorum. Bu benim demokrasi anlayışımı açıklıyor.)

As you sow, so shall you reap. – English proverb

(Ne ekersen, onu biçersin. /Ektığını biçersin.)

As the master is, so is his dog. (Sahibi nasılsa köpeği de öyle.)

As the twig is bent, so goes the tree. As the twig is bent, so it will grow.

(Dal nasıl şekillendirilirse, ağaç öyle büyür.)

6. JUST AS

Just as fertile soil produces large crops, a fertile imagination produces many ideas.

Just as our eyes need light in order to see, our minds need ideas in order to conceive. - *Nicolas Malebranche*

There are well-dressed foolish ideas just as there are well-dressed fools.—
Nicholas Champort (Aynen iyi giyimli aptallar olduğu gibi, iyi sunulmuş aptalca fikirler de vardır.)

The worker who leaves a hole in the ground endangers public safety.
This kind of negligence should be punished just as crimes are punished.

Just as printing standardized spelling, one result of the latest communications breakthrough has been a leveling of differences in the pronunciation of English.

7. Something Is To Someone What Something Else Is To Someone Else

Grammar is to a writer what anatomy is to a sculptor, or the scales to a musician.

Politeness is to human nature what warmth is to wax. —*Schopenhauer*

What soap is for the body, tears are for the soul. —*Jewish proverb*

Reading is to the mind, what exercise is to the body. (Beden eğitimi insan gövdesi için ne ise, okumak da insan kafası için odur.)

Politeness is to human nature what warmth is to wax. —*Schopenhauer*
(Sıcaklık balmumu için neyse, kibarlık da insan doğası için odur.)

Absence is to love what wind is to fire: it extinguishes the small, it enkindles the great. —*Rochefoucauld* 1618-1693 (Rüzgar ateş için neyse, hasret de aşk için odur: küçükleri söndürür, büyükleri daha da alevlendirir.)

Personality is to a man what perfume is to a flower. —*Charles M. Schwab* (Koku çiçek için neyse, kişilik de insan için odur.)

What light is to the eyes—what air is to the lungs—what love is to the heart, liberty is to the soul of man. —*Robert Green Ingersoll*

8. A S

Invention is the talent of youth, as judgment is of age. —*Jonathan Swift*

(Nasıl doğru kararlar vermek yaşlılığın yeteneğiyse, yeni buluşlar yapmak da gençliğin yeteneğidir./Doğru kararlar vermek yaşlılığın yeteneği, buluşlar yapmak da gençliğin.)

Birds are adapted in their body structure, as are no other creatures, to life in the air.

Difficulties strengthen the mind, as labor does the body. —*Seneca*

9. THE MORE ... THE MORE (Ne kadar ... o kadar)

Bu yapı çeşitli karşılaştırmaların yapılmasına olanak sağlamaktadır. Yaygın şekilde kullanılmaktadır.

The more lies President Bush tells, the longer his nose gets.

The taller a basketball player is, the better it is.

The shorter a report is, the better it is. (The shorter, the better)

The more you work, the luckier you get.

The smaller the head (is) , the bigger the dream (is). –*O'Malley*

The bigger a man's head (is) , the worse his headache (is). –*Proverb*

The richer a relative is, the less he bothers you.

The more you do, the less thanks you get.

The more arguments you win, the fewer friends you will have.

The less money you have, the less you worry. –*George Orwell*

The more we study, the more we discover our ignorance. –*Shelley*

A woman, the more careful she is about her face, is commonly the more careless about her house. –*Ben Jonson*, 1640

Bu kalıpta kullanılan tümceler çoğu zaman eylemleri atılmış bir şekilde kullanılırlar.

The nearer the dawn, the darker the night. –*Longfellow*

The blacker the berry, the sweeter the juice.

The more the help, the lighter the work.

The darker the night, the brighter the candle.

The narrower the mind, the broader the statement. – *Ted Cook*

The harder the battle, the sweeter the victory.

EXERCISE 388

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi **THE MORE ... THE MORE** yapısını kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

When you are young, you are stronger.

The younger you are, the stronger you are.

If the income gets larger, it becomes more difficult within it.

The larger the income is, the more difficult it is to live within it.

1. When you practice more, you become luckier.
2. If the life is long, pains get sharper.
3. If you say more, people remember less.
4. When you get richer, you get more friends.
5. When you make more money, you spend more money.
6. If you drive faster, you use more petrol.
7. When the crowd waited long, they became less patient.
8. If the soldiers had to carry less, they could move faster.
9. When we study more, we discover our ignorance (more).
10. As the United States became more powerful, she grew more avaricious.

10. SLOT-FILLING IT YAPILARI

IT IS + adjective-ER +TO-INF + THAN + TO-INF

Infinitive öbeklerin özne olduğu karşılaştırma yapılarında çoğu zaman SLOT-FILLING IT kullanılmaktadır.

It is easier to fight for principles than to live up to them.—*Alfred Adler*

It is better to be a mouse in a cats' mouth than a man in a lawyers' hands.
—*Spanish proverb*

It is always better to light a candle than to curse the darkness.

(Kararığa küfretmekense bir mum yakmak her zaman daha iyidir.)

It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God. —*The Bible*

It is much easier to repent of sins that we have committed than to repent of those that we intend to commit. —*Josh Billings*

(İşlediğimiz günahlar için tövbe etmek, işlemeye niyet ettiğimiz günahlara için tövbe etmekten çok daha zordur.)

It is easier to say what we believe than be what we believe.—*R. Anthony*
(İnandığımız şeyi söylemek, inandığımız şey olmaktan kolaydır.)

EXERCISE 389

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi **SLOT-FILLING IT** yapısını kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

To catch flies with honey is easier than with vinegar.

It is easier to catch flies with honey than with vinegar. —*Proverb*

1. To prevent bad habits is easier than to break them. —*B. Franklin*
2. To forgive an enemy is easier than a friend.
3. To live as a good man is more difficult than to live as a wicked man.
4. To have too much to do is better than to have too little to do.
5. To have tried and failed is better than to do nothing.
6. To keep silent is much better than to say the wrong thing.
7. To teach somebody something is more difficult than to learn something.
8. To consume wisely is far more difficult than to produce wisely.

11. MORE noun THAN

Men govern nothing with more difficulty than their tongues.—*Spinoza*

There are more fools among buyers than among sellers.—*Proverb*

Riches have made more covetous men than covetousness has made rich men. —*Thomas Fuller* (1654-1734)

The income tax has made more liars out of the American people than gold has.—*Will Rogers*

(Gelir vergisi, altının yaptıgından çok daha fazla Amerikalıyı hırsız yapmıştır.)

12. NO MORE noun THAN

We have no more right to consume happiness without producing it than to consume wealth without producing it. –*George Bernard Shaw*
 (Nasıl zenginliği yaratmadan kullanma hakkımız yoksa, mutluluğu da yaratmadan sahip olma hakkımız yoktur.)

There is no more independence in politics than there is in jail. –*Will Rogers*

(Politikada, hapistekinden hiç de daha fazla özgürlük yoktur.)

There is no more reason to believe that man descended from some inferior animal than there is to believe that a stately mansion has descended from a small cottage. –*William Jennings Bryan*

(İnsanın aşağı bir canlıdan geldiğine inanması için, göz alıcı bir sarayın kırk dökkir kuliübeden geldiğine inanmaktan daha fazla neden yok.)

Those who make their dress a principal part of themselves will, in general, become of no more value than their dress. –*W. Hazlitt*

Having children makes you no more a parent than having a piano makes you a pianist. –*Michael Levine*

13. SHORTENED COMPARISONS

IT IS BETTER ile başlayan karşılaştırma yapıları kısaltılabilir.

It is better to have an empty purse than to have an empty head. =Better an empty purse than an empty head. (Boş bir kafaya sahip olmaktansa boş bir cüzdana sahip olmak daha iyidir.)

Better bend than break.

Better be born lucky than rich.

Better be alone than in ill company.

Better late than never.

Better pointed bullets than pointed speeches. –*Bismarck*

EXERCISE 390

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi yeniden yazınız.

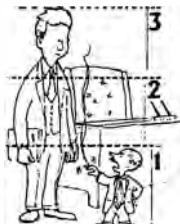
Better be alone than in ill company.

It is better to be alone than to be in ill company.

1. Better an ugly face than an ugly mind. –*James Ellis*
2. Better mad with the rest of the world than wise alone.
3. Better be a dog than a dead lion.
4. Better a known enemy than a forced ally. –*Napoleon*
5. Better do it than wish it done. –Proverb
6. Better to light a candle than to curse the darkness. –*Chinese Proverb*
7. Better to die ten thousand deaths than wound my honor. –*J. Addison*
8. Better be a living beggar than a buried emperor. –*La Fontaine*
9. Better live in poverty than in shame.
10. Better fight an unbeatable enemy than be a slave.

14. Graded Comparison

Karşılaştırmalarda, üstünlüğün dereceleri ya da katları da ifade edilebilir.



Tom is three times as tall as his boss.

To write simply is TWICE as difficult as to be good. —W. S. Maugham

Railroads are FOUR TIMES as fuel-efficient as trucks in transporting intercity freight.

She spends TWICE as much money as I do.

A wise man listens TWICE as much as he says.

He usually performs TWICE as well as others.

A holiday is a day when father works TWICE as hard as he does at the office. We have to spend THREE TIMES more money on food than we did last month.

This suitcase weighs ONE-THIRD as heavy as yours.

Mr. Lee has driven TWICE as far as Mr. Brown has.

It is A THOUSAND TIMES better to have common sense without education than to have education without common sense. —Robert G. Ingersoll

15. ANY + ADJECTIVE-ER

Has your brother grown any taller?

This tree does not look any bigger to me.

16. ÇEŞİTLİ ÖRNEKLER

Consumers all over the world are paying more than ever for petroleum products.

A dwarf on a giant's shoulder sees more than the giant.

In all countries where nature does the most, man does the least. —Charles Caleb Colton

A good word costs no more than a bad one. (1692)

The ass that brags the most eats the least. (1611)

He who knows the most speaks the least. (1563)

Falling hurts the least those who fly low.

Nothing is so firmly believed as what we least know. —Montaigne

There is nothing so useless as doing efficiently that which should not be done at all. —Peter Drucker

There is no faculty of the human soul so persistent and universal as that of hatred. —Henry Ward Beecher

A man is usually more careful of his money than he is of his principles. —Edgar Watson Howe

Cameras are so simple to operate now that taking pictures is much easier than getting friends to look at them. —Hugh Allen

The great thing in this world is not so much where we stand as in what direction we are moving. —Oliver Wendel Holmes

The man who can keep a secret may be wise, but he is not half as wise as the man with no secrets to keep. —Edgar Watson Howe

Wendy works twice as hard as I do.

Books are not made for furniture, but there is nothing else that so beautifully furnishes a house.—*Henry Ward Beecher*

There are few wild beasts more to be dreaded than a communicative man having nothing o communicate.—*Christian Nestell Bovee*

It's so much easier to suggest solutions when you don't know too much about the problem.—*Malcolm Forbes*

The economy depends about as much on economists as the weather does on weather forecasters. —*Jean-Paul Kauffmann*

The habitual slow driver on the highways today is as much a menace to the safety of the average driver as the man who breaks the speed laws.

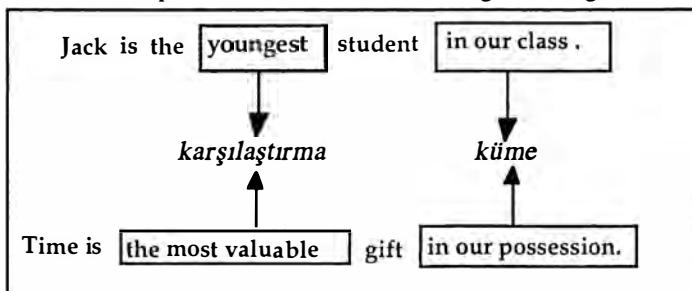
We do more to decimate our population in automobile accidents than we do in war.

Physicians kill more than they cure. (Said in 1634)

More die in the United States of too much food than too little. —*John Kenneth Galbraith*

EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ

En üstünlük derecesi, ikiden fazla ögenin ya da kişinin karşılaşılmasında kullanılmaktadır. Verilen bir öbek içinde belli bir özellik açısından en önde gelen öğe belirlenmektedir. Çoğu zaman karşılaştırmanın dayandırıldığı küme belirtilir. Aşağıdaki örneklerde görüldüğü gibi, Jack, sınıfımız içindeki en genç öğrenci, TIME da sahip olduklarımız arasındaki en değerli armağandır.



(Jack, sınıfımızdaki/sınıfımızın en genç öğrencisidir.)

Karşılaştırma	Küme
Everest is the highest mountain	in the world.
Gold is the most malleable metal	of all.
Earthquakes are the most lethal	of all natural disasters.
She is the youngest manager	that I have ever met.
She dances the most gracefully	of all the dancers.

Time is the most precious gift in our possession, for it is the most irrevocable. —*Dietrich Bonhoeffer*

Tom is lazier than Bob, but Jack is the laziest person I have ever seen.
Martha runs less than Bob, but Helen runs the least of the three.

The worst-tempered people I've ever met were people who knew they were wrong. —*Wilson Mizner*

(Tanıdığım en öfkeli kişiler, haksız olduklarının farkında olanlardı.)

The most common complaint of all is that so few Americans can speak any language but English.

The diamonds found in Australia are among the most valuable in the world.

The books that help you the most are those which make you think the most.

(Bize en çok yardımcı dokunan kitaplar, bizi en çok düşündürenlerdir.)

Every survey ever held has shown that the image of an attractive woman is the most effective advertising gimmick.

The most generally used drugs are the most generally abused.

Gold is known to be the most malleable metal of all.

To be prepared for war is one of the most effectual means of preserving peace. —*George Washington*

The advertisement is the most truthful part of a newspaper. —*Thomas Jefferson*

Words are, of course, the most powerful drug used by mankind.—*Kipling*

Advice is seldom welcome, and those who need it the most, like it the least.—*Lord Chesterfield*

The child was diseased at birth, stricken with a hereditary ill that only the most vital men are able to shake off. I mean poverty—the most deadly and prevalent of all diseases. —*Eugene O'Neill* (Çocuk hastalıklı doğdu; ancak en güçlü insanların altından kalkabileceği kalıtsımsal bir hastalıktı onunki: Demem o ki yoksulluk, hastalıkların en öldürücü ve en yaygını.)

EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİYLE KULLANILAN PEKİŞTİRİCİLER

not .. at all	by no means
much	by far

This is not the best computer here at all.

She is by no means the most talented artist we have here.

Sharing a room with a friend is much the best solution.

The British Empire is by far the most pitiless in world history.

EXERCISE 391

Ayraç içindeki sözcüklerin doğru şekillerini kullanınız.

What is the _____ (dangerous) weapon in the world?
What is the most dangerous weapon in the world?

1. He has (fast) computer of all.
2. This is (delicious) bread I have ever tasted.
3. She is (trustworthy) politician we have ever seen.
4. Columbus is one of (greedy) men history has ever seen.
5. She picked (pretty) flowers in the garden.
6. Of all the speakers, Tom spoke (entertainingly).
7. (old) university of Turkey is Istanbul University.
8. Jack works (efficiently) of all the workers.
9. Their machine works (well) of all.

EŞİTLİK • EQUALITY

as ... as

**SIFATLARIN EŞİTLİK DERECELERİNDE AS
SÖZCÜĞÜNÜ İZLEYEN YAPILAR**

Karşılaştırılan öğeler, karşılaştırma konusu olan özellik açısından benzer olabilirler. Bu durumda AS ... AS yapısı kullanılır. AS ... AS'in olumlu ve SO ... AS'in olumsuz tümcelerde kullanıldığına dikkat ediniz.

She is	as	rich	as	her husband.
They are		Innocent		they look.
Columbus was		cruel		greedy.
She is		intelligent		she is beautiful.

She is not	so	Innocent	as	she looks.
No enemy is		terrible		a man of genius.
Columbus was not		harmless		Indians thought.
USA has never been		harmless		she looks.

AS adjective AS

Adrian is as intelligent as any of us here.

Christopher Columbus was as cruel as greedy.

Christopher Columbus açgözlü olduğu kadar acımasızdı da.

The trip was as expensive as we had expected.

The buffalo isn't as dangerous as everyone makes him out to be.

Statistics prove that in the United States more Americans are killed in automobile accidents than are killed by buffalo.—*Art Buchwald*

 Espiriyi açıklayabilir misiniz?

A good politician is quite as unthinkable as an honest burglar.

—*H.L.Mencken*, Newsweek Sept. 12, 1955

(İyi bir politikacının olması, hemen hemen “dürüst bir hırsız olması kadar zordur.)

A fit of anger is as fatal to dignity as a dose of arsenic to life. —*Josiah Gilbert Holland*

(Öfke krizi, ağırbaşılık için, bir doz arsenik kadar öldürür.)

Your own faults look as big to the other fellow as his do to you.

(Sizin kendi kusurlarınız, karşınızdaki adama, onun kusurlarının size göründüğü kadar büyük görünür.)

The little child can be as intensively afraid of imaginary danger as of real danger.

AS adjective article noun AS

He proved to be as cruel a man as his late brother.

President Bush is certainly as dangerous a leader as Saddam.

SO adjective AS

Her stories are not so interesting as they used to be.

There's nothing so foolish as to marry some one you don't love.

The human brain is not as complicated and mysterious as has usually been thought.

There is no faculty of the human soul so persistent and universal as that of hatred. —*Henry Ward Beecher*

Nothing is so pleasing to Christian fanatics as the butchery of Turkish people all over the world.

No furniture is so charming as books. —*Sydney Smith*

Illnesses like pneumonia, scarlet fever, and syphilis were no longer so terrifying as they once had been.

There is nothing so universally intelligible as truth.

There is no personal charm so great as the charm of a cheerful temperament. —*Henry Van Dyke*

Nothing in education is so astonishing as the amount of ignorance it accumulates in the form of inert facts. —*Henry Adams*

SO adjective article noun AS

A thousand words will not leave so deep an impression as one deed.

–Henrik Ibsen

(Bin sözcük, bir tek eylemin etkisi kadar etki bırakmaz.)

According to Noam Chomsky, history has never seen so cruel an empire as the British Empire.

(Chomsky'e göre, tarih İngiliz imparatorluğu kadar zalim bir imparatorluk hiç görmemiştir.)

SUCH article adjective noun AS

I've never been to such a good party as that one.

He is not nearly such a bad cook as I had supposed.

American Indians were not such violent people as they were shown in Hollywood movies.

AS MUCH AS

He loves his wife as much as he did 25 years ago.

Europeans differ genetically from one another almost as much as a European person differs from an Asian person or an African person.

AS MUCH noun AS

What we think does not cause as much trouble as what we say.

You can spend as much time as you like working on the computer.

AS MANY noun AS

There are as many opinions as there are experts. –*F. D. Roosevelt*

There are as many crooked politicians in the USA as in Turkey.

SO MUCH noun AS

There is nothing which we receive with so much reluctance as advice. –*Joseph Addison* (1672-1719) (Öğüt kadar isteksizce aldığımız başka bir şey yoktur.)

Nothing gives an author so much pleasure as to find his works respectfully quoted by other learned authors. –*Benjamin Franklin*

AS adverb AS

We need your support as badly as you need ours.

The book was published as recently as last week.

This sort of accident seems to occur more frequently than in the past..

The train used to run more often than every two hours.

I work as hard as any one of you, but I don't earn as much as you do.

ZAKFLARIN EŞİTLİK DERECELERİNDE AS, SÖZCÜĞÜNÜ İZLEYEN YAPILAR

Jack works	as	hard	as	Tom (does).
Jack plays the guitar		well		the violin.
Things never turn out		badly		one feared.
I work		carefully		anybody else.

SO adverb AS

A man never discloses his own character so clearly as when he describes another's.— *Jean Paul Richter* (İnsan, kendi karakterini hiç bir zaman, bir başkasının karakterini betimlediğinde olduğu kadar açık bir şekilde göstermez./Kişiliğimizi en çok bir başkasının kini anlatırken açığa vururuz.)

SO MUCH AS

No man needs a vacation so much as the man who has just had one.

—*Elbert Hubbard*

If a little knowledge is dangerous, where is the man who has so much as to be out of danger? —*Thomas Huxley* (Eğer az bilgi tehlikeliyse, tehlkeyi savuşturabilecek kadar bilgisi olanı nereden bulalım?)

The true use of speech is not so much to express our wants as to conceal them. —*Oliver Goldsmith*

People never lie so much as after a hunt, during a war or before an election. —*Bismarck* (İnsanlar hiçbir zaman bir avdan sonraki, savaş sırasındaki ya da seçimden önceki kadar yalan söylemezler.)

Nothing is so much to be feared as fear itself. —*Henry David Thoreau*



Farther, Further, Most, Best

İLE ÖZEL KULLANIMLAR

1. **FARTHER** ve **FURTHER** mesafe gösterdiklerinde aynı anlamda kullanılırlar. **FURTHER**, “ek olarak, daha ileri, daha fazla” anlamında da kullanılır.
I can't really advise you any further. (Meaning more)
How much further/farther do we have to go?
2. **MOST** bazen, **very** anlamında kullanılmaktadır.
She behaved most politely.
It was most kind of you to offer to help me.
3. **BEST** kalıplışı kullanımları göstermektedir.
Sorry, but this is the best I can do.
I tried my best. (Elimden geleni yaptım.)
May the best one win. (En iyi olan kazansın.)

EXERCISE 392

Aşağıdaki tümceleri ÜSTÜNLÜK derecesini kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

Bill Gates is not so clever as Steve Jobs is.

Steve Jobs is more clever than Bill Gates is.

Her computer is not nearly so fast as mine.

My computer is much faster than hers.

1. Our library doesn't have as many books as theirs.
2. He isn't so lonely as you think.
3. The house next door isn't so well built as our house.
4. We didn't arrive as early as we expected to.
5. It isn't nearly as noisy here as it was at the airport.
6. We don't live as near the town as we'd like to.
7. We haven't done as much homework as we should have.
8. Amsterdam isn't such a big city as İstanbul.
9. The Atlantic isn't as salty as the Mediterranean.
10. Canada is not so densely populated as Turkey.
11. Turkish isn't such a hard language as Chinese.
12. We're not so good at swimming as you are.
13. Jupiter's not so far from the sun as Saturn.
14. Andy isn't such a rich person as his relatives think.
15. People aren't so wealthy here as they are in the north of England.
16. There isn't as little petrol in the tank now as we thought there was.
17. Flies are not such a nuisance as mosquitoes.
18. Salmon weren't nearly so scarce twenty years ago as they are now.
19. Inflation's not so bad this year as last.
20. Being a talented writer isn't such a great advantage as people think.

EXERCISE 393

Aşağıdaki boşlukları kutudaki sözcüklerle doldurunuz.

and	as	less	more	much	so	than
-----	----	------	------	------	----	------

1. My sister is two years older ____ me.
2. The trip there can take just ____ long as last trip.
3. I've never heard such ridiculous claims ____ these.
4. I thought the second hotel we stayed in was ____ more comfortable
5. Unfortunately we are ____ well-off than we used to be.
6. Helen doesn't feel ____ happy here as she did at first.
7. These exercises seem to be getting harder ____ harder.
8. We do not need as much help ____ you do.
9. It's 48° C degrees today! It must be the hottest ____ far this year.
10. I'll have to wait more ____ two months before I get my promotion.
11. Tea contains ____ less caffeine than coffee.
12. What the poor need is ____ advise and ____ helping hands.

EXERCISE 394

Aşağıdaki tümcelerle aynı anlama gelecek şekilde verilen öğeleri tamamlayarak tümceler kurunuz.

That's the best computer I've ever used.

I've never used a better computer before.

1. This is the most foolish story I have ever heard.
I have never heard _____.
2. Home computers used to be much more expensive.
Home computers aren't as _____.
Home computers are less _____.
3. I thought learning to use a computer was difficult, but it is not.
Learning to use a computer is not so _____.
4. Your car is cheaper than mine.
Your car costs _____.
5. I am not as good at math as you are.
You are better at math _____.
6. I have never driven along such bumpy road before.
This is the bumpiest road _____.
7. Fish and meat are the same price in some countries.
Fish costs as _____.

**EXERCISE 395**

Aşağıdaki tümceleri verilen öğeleri kullanarak anımları değiştmeyecek şekilde yeniden yazınız.

1. My parents worked harder than I do. (*so ... as*)
2. Canadians have a higher standard of living than the Dutch have. (*so ... as*)
3. They have less money than we have. (*more*)
4. She has less self-confidence than I expected. (*so ... as*)
5. We have more confidence in the future than they have. (*so...as*)
6. Young people are a lot more aggressive than old people. (*less*)
7. We have fewer responsibilities than they have. (*so ... as*)
8. Children are more of a responsibility than pets. (*less*)
9. Dogs are more of a nuisance than cats. (*less*)
10. German has a more complicated grammar than Turkish. (*so ...as*)

EXERCISE 396

Aşağıdaki kutuyu inceleyiniz ve verilen tümceleri ***S0/AS ... AS*** kalıbıyla yeniden yazınız.

The Sparrow is much more economical than the Eagle.	The Eagle is not nearly as economical as the Sparrow.
I thought her novel would be more of a flop than it is.	Her novel isn't such a flop as I thought it would be.
She spoke more convincingly than we did.	We did not speak as convincingly as she did.

1. Our friends worked more enthusiastically than we do.
2. Holland harbours more terrorists than Italy.
3. The military budget of the USA is more than six times that of Russia.
4. The structure of the human brain is more complex than that of the computer.
5. The US has a higher standard of living than most European countries.
6. They have less money than we have.
7. I earn less money in a month than you spend in a day.
8. Skiing is more dangerous than skating.
9. Young people are a lot more pessimistic than old people.
10. She should eat more fish than she does.
11. We see them more often than we used to.
12. We behaved worse in our youth than the present generation does.
13. The CIA assassinated more politicians than any criminal organization.
14. There are more homeless people in the US than in Turkey.
15. The American Empire may reign shorter than the Ottoman Empire.

EXERCISE 397

Doğru seçenekin bulunuz.

1. Of the two books he has read, the one on Africa is _____. (*better / the best*)
2. Robert F. Kennedy was one of ____ presidents of the United States. (*more popular / the most popular*)
3. I am earning ____ money than I was a year ago. (*less / fewer*)
4. The ____ suspension bridge in North America is the Verrazano Narrows Bridge in New York City. (*longer / longest*)
5. The İş Bank Towers have as ____ floors as the Akbank Towers. (*many / much*)
6. Some feel that silver is inherently ____ than gold. (*more attractive / the most attractive*)
7. Of all the countries in Europe, Vatican is _____. (*smaller/the smallest*)
8. The harder she studied, the ____ she learned. (*more/most*)

9. His last painting was much ____ valuable than the first one. (*less / least*)
10. Of her two paintings, the second was definitely the _____. (*better / best*)
11. The more she scolded her son, the ____ he got. (*nastier / nastiest*)
12. Going through the British customs was the ____ experience in his life. (*worse, worst*)
13. The Aztecs were vastly ____ civilized than the Spaniards. (*more / most*)
14. African slaves were ____ expensive than Native American slaves. (*far more / as much as*)

EXERCISE 398

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. The dining room hasn't as many chairs in it as the sitting room.
2. Upstairs the ceilings aren't as high as they are downstairs.
3. The house next door isn't so well built as this one.
4. We didn't arrive as early as we expected to.
5. It isn't nearly as noisy here as it was at the airport.
6. We don't live as near the town as we'd like to.
7. We haven't done as much homework as we should have.
8. London isn't such a big city as Tokyo.
9. The Atlantic isn't as salty as the Mediterranean.
10. Russia is not so densely populated as India.
11. Arabic isn't such a hard language as Chinese.
12. We're not so good at judo as the Japanese are.
13. Jupiter's not so far from the sun as Saturn.
14. No nation has ever been as violent and merciless as the white Americans killing millions of native Americans.
15. People aren't so friendly here as they are in the north of England.
16. There isn't as little petrol in the tank as you thought there was.
17. Flies are not such a nuisance as mosquitoes.
18. Salmon weren't nearly so scarce twenty years ago as they are now.
19. Inflation's not so bad this year as last.
20. Being rich isn't such an advantage as people think.

BENZERLİK • SIMILARITY

like, similar to, the same as

A cafeteria is like a restaurant.

She sings like an angel.

He was sleeping like a child.

Old minds are like old horses; you must exercise them if you wish to keep them in working order. —John Quincy

(Yaşlı kafalar, yaşlı atlara benzer; eğer iyi iş görmesini istiyorsanız, sık sık çalıştmalısınız/çalıştırmanız gereklidir.)

Mary's computer and Tom's computer	are	alike.
		similar.
		the same.

Mary's computer	is	like	Tom's (computer).
		similar to	
		the same as	

A teacher is like a diplomat in one respect: both must possess a pleasant personality.

A weak mind is like a microscope, which magnifies trifling things but cannot receive great ones. —*Lord Chesterfield*

(Zayıf bir beyin mikroskopa benzer; küçük şeyleri büyütür, büyükleri ise göremez.)

Advice is like snow; the softer it falls, the deeper it sinks into the mind.
—*Samuel Taylor Coleridge*

Native ability without education is like a tree without fruit.—*Aristippus*

There is no cosmetic for beauty like happiness. —*Countess of Blessington*

Cruelty, like every other vice, requires no motive outside of itself; it only requires opportunity.—*George Eliot*

It is not merely cruelty that leads men to love war. The grim fact is that we prepare for war like precocious giants, and for peace like retarded pygmies. —*Lester Bowles Pearson*

Borrowed thoughts, like borrowed money, only show the poverty of the borrower.—*Marguerite Gardiner*

A countryman between two lawyers is like a fish between two cats. --
Benjamin Franklin

İki öğe arasındaki benzerlikler başka yapılarla da ifade edilmektedir.

A surgeon and a dentist are **alike in that** both need manual dexterity.

A secret agent and a salesman are **similar in that** they must have an ability to mix with people.

A judge and a pilot have one thing in common: they both need good judgment.

Like Japan, Turkey has become one of the biggest markets for the trashy English teaching books.

Like Britain, the USA has always been willing to commit any crime for economic gains.

“CONTRAST” GÖSTEREN YAPILAR

İki öğe ya da kişi aralarındaki farklılıklar gösterilerek de karşılaştırılabilir. Karşılaştırmalarda çeşitli yapılar kullanılmaktadır.

COORDINATING CONJUNCTIONS

but Patience is bitter, but its fruit is sweet. – *Rousseau*

yet She had no experience, yet she succeeded in getting the job.

SUBORDINATING CONJUNCTIONS

<i>although</i>	Although it was snowing, it wasn't very cold.
<i>despite the fact that</i>	Despite the fact that prices have gone up recently, there is still considerable demand for luxury items.
<i>even</i>	Everything bows to success, even grammar. – <i>V. Hugo</i>
<i>even if</i>	Try and look happy, even if you don't feel it!
<i>even though</i>	My sister still has nightmares from Dracula movies, even though she is 12 years old.
<i>in spite of the fact that</i>	In spite of the fact that he had very little money, he managed to get a college education.
<i>though</i>	Though many hands make light work, too many cooks spoil the broth. –Proverb
<i>whereas</i>	Turkish people are friendly whereas the Britons are rather selfish.
<i>while</i>	While most Turkish people support the policy, the Turkish parliament is opposed to it.

Aşağıda ünlü İngiliz yazar George Orwell ile Türk düşmanlığıyla tanınan İngiliz devlet adamı Churchill İngiliz sömürgeciliğine karşı tutumları açısından karşılaştırılmaktadır.

George Orwell has condemned British imperialism, **but** Churchill has done his best to strengthen it.

George Orwell has condemned British imperialism; **however**, Churchill has done his best to strengthen it.

George Orwell has condemned British imperialism; **in contrast**, Churchill has done his best to strengthen it.

George Orwell has condemned British imperialism **whereas** Churchill has done his best to strengthen it.

While George Orwell has condemned British imperialism, Churchill has done his best to strengthen it.

Unlike Churchill, who has done his best to strengthen British imperialism, George Orwell has condemned it.

SENTENCE CONNECTORS

<i>all the same</i>	He gives us a lot of trouble, but we like him all the same.
<i>however</i>	This car is very old; however, it runs well.
<i>nevertheless</i>	He is not young at all; nevertheless, he is a man of action.
<i>on the contrary</i>	I don't think that he is stupid. On the contrary, I find him very intelligent.
<i>on the one hand</i> <i>on the other hand</i>	On the one hand we must fight inflation, but on the other hand, new jobs have to be created.
<i>still</i>	I know you don't get on very well. Still, he is your brother, and you ought to make the effort.

PREPOSITIONS

<i>in spite of</i>	In spite of his illness, he managed to take care of his family.
<i>despite</i>	Pollution of all types continues to grow despite all government efforts.

STYLISTIC VARIATIONS

Zıtlık göstermek üzere farklı yapılar kullanılmaktadır.

<i>ADJ/ADV THOUGH</i>	Powerful though they were, they never dared to challenge the authority of the King.
<i>However ADJ/ADV</i>	However careful she is, she keeps making mistakes. However hard he worked, he never seemed to have any money.
<i>no matter QW</i>	No matter where you go, they will find you. No matter how much he earns, he can't please his wife.
<i>there again</i>	She is not very beautiful, but there again she has a very nice personality.

EVER' LI BİRLEŞİK SÖZCÜKLER

<i>whatever</i>	Whatever you do, do not leave him alone. (Even if you have a lot to do)
<i>wherever</i>	Wherever you go, they will follow you. Even if you go to places far away ...)
<i>whoever</i>	I can't trust him whoever he is. (Even if he is an important man ...)
<i>whenever</i>	Don't hesitate to call me whenever you need anything. (Even if it is very late ...)
<i>whichever</i>	Whichever computer he is given, he will complain. (Even if he is given the best computer, ...)

however However you do it, he will find some fault with it.

(Even if you do it very well, ...)

However foolish she is, she won't believe that lie of yours.

(Even if she is very foolish,)

EXERCISE 399

Aşağıdaki boşlukları kutu içindeki uygun öğelerle doldurunuz.

though	even though	however
wheras	while	

1. He still wants to be a writer, ____ everyone has told him he's not cut out for it.
2. English is an Indo-European language, ____ Turkish is an Altaic language.
3. They decided to postpone the match ____ the weather conditions were better than they had been for weeks.
4. ____ aspirin produces fewer side effects, it offers little relief in cases of severe headache.
5. There is evidence that light drinking may reduce risk of stroke in men. ____ , heavy drinking increases the risk of stroke fourfold.
6. ____ the farmers worked hard, the harvest was far from satisfactory.
7. He went ahead with his plan ____ all the experts advised him against it.
8. ____ you may love art and want to be an artist, if you have no talent, you will not be successful in that profession.
9. The doctors could not save her life, hard ____ they tried.
10. He still didn't understand, even ____ I had explained it three times.
11. New Zealand is an island, ____ Australia is a whole continent.
12. ____ most desert animals will drink water if they find it, for many of them the opportunity never comes.
13. ____ tiring a day she has had, she never loses her good humour.
14. The family wanted to buy a new car, so they added up their money. ____ , they found that they couldn't afford a new one.
15. A gentleman blames himself, ____ a common man blames others.
—Confucius

EXERCISE 400

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda **despite** ya da **despite the fact that** kullanınız.

1. ____ the island is lacking in natural resources, it has a booming economy.
2. Most doctors and nurses are friendly and good-natured ____ of their stressful jobs.
3. He does a full day's work ____ his failing health.

5. Tom held to this view _____ nearly every one else believed the contrary.
6. Grasshoppers destroy several million dollars worth of crops every year, _____ farmers do their best to control them with chemicals.
7. Britain, Holland, Germany, France, Italy, Belgium and Greece openly sponsor the PKK terrorists _____ the harsh protests of Turkey.
8. _____ growth in mass transportation, the most important means of transportation in many cities is still the ubiquitous automobile.

Facts to Surprise You

	Each year, people in the U.S. spend about four times as much on pet food than they do on baby food.
	In some countries, more people die from traffic pollution than from auto accidents.
	The total wealth of the world's three richest individuals is greater than the combined gross domestic product of the 48 poorest countries - a quarter of all the world's states.
	Americans are 7 to 10 times at risk from violent death as most European countries. Americans are 4 to 10 times at risk from robbery as European countries. Americans are 7 times more likely to be raped than are people in Europe.
	The destruction of the Indians of the Americas was, far and away, the most massive act of genocide in the history of the world. -David E. Stannard
	The overall death rate of middle-aged people who smoke more than twenty cigarettes a day is more than twice that of non-smokers.
	Churchill and Roosevelt proved themselves to be every bit as degraded as Adolf Hitler and Benito Mussolini, as far as callous indifference to innocent human lives is concerned. http://free.freespeech.org/
	No other animal is so deliberately cruel as man.
	The USA has the largest prison population per capita in the world.
	Americans are the most pain-conscious people on the face of the earth.
	What AIDS does to the body, American popular culture does to the mind."-Ozzy Osbourne

PART SIX

THE PASSIVE VOICE

E

THE CAUSATIVE

CHAPTER 44 The Passive Voice
CHAPTER 45 The Causative

665
705

Chapter 44

THE PASSIVE VOICE

Edilgen Çatı



I. EDİLGEN ÇATININ YAPISI

NEWS*NEWS*NEWS*NEWS*NEWS*NEWS*NEWS*NEWS*N

FAMOUS PAINTING STOLEN FROM NATIONAL MUSEUM

Police are investigating the theft of a valuable Picasso painting from the National Museum last night. The robbery was discovered last night. There were no signs that the museum had been broken into. Employees of the museum are being interviewed, and police are anxious to know if anyone saw someone enter a storage room on the third floor, at the time the museum was being closed. Police believe that the thief or thieves can't have left the city.

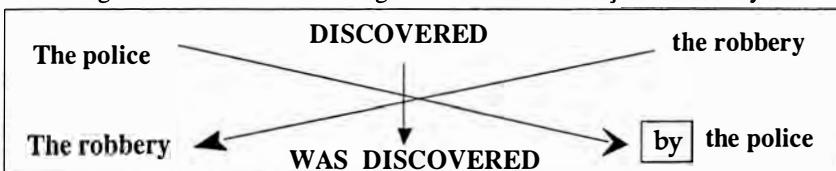
Yukarıdaki gazete haberinde yer alan *The robbery was discovered last night* tümcesi edilgen bir tümcedir. Tümçenin etken şekliyle ilişkisi aşağıdaki tabloda görülmektedir. Görüldüğü gibi, edilgen yapı, etken yapıdan çıkarılmaktadır.

	Noun Phrase (Özne)	Verb	Noun Phrase (Nesne)
Etken Çatı	The police <i>Polis</i>	discovered <i>keşfetti</i>	the robbery soygunu
Edilgen Çatı	The robbery <i>Soygun</i>	was discovered <i>keşfedildi</i>	(by the police) (<i>polis tarafından</i>)

EDİLGEN YAPIYA DÖNÜŞMENİN 3 BASAMAĞI

1. Etken tümcenin nesnesi, edilgen tümcenin öznesi durumuna getiriliyor.
- The police → the robbery
- The robbery ← by the police

2. Tümcenin eylemi BE +V3 şecline sokuluyor. Tümce simple past olduğundan ve özne tekil olduğundan BE'nin WAS şekli kullanılıyor.



3. Etken çatının öznesi, edilgen çatıda eylemden sonra BY-öbeği olarak yer alıyor ya da bütünüyle kullanım dışı kalıyor.



Edilgen yapılar sadece geçişli eylemler için söz konusudur. Fakat sit, sleep, come, arrive, walk, run eylemleri edilgen yapıda kullanılabilir.

Someone has sat on my hat. → *My hat has been sat on.*

Tom hasn't slept in his bed. → *His bed hasn't been slept in.*

They came to no conclusion. → *No conclusion was come to.*

They arrived at no conclusion. → *No conclusion was arrived at.*

Nobody has ever walked this distance under five minutes before. → *This distance has never been walked under five minutes before.*



AŞAĞIDAKİ eylemler edilgen çatıda kullanılamazlar.

have (=possess)	belong to	resemble
suit , fit (=be the right size for).		

Aşağıdaki parça da edilgen çatılı tümceler italik olarak dizilmiştir.

MISFORTUNES NEVER COME SINGLY

Jack got up very early yesterday because he wanted to go to school earlier than usual. He did not want to be late for the English examination. But things did not turn out as he had planned.

Just as he was leaving his apartment building *he was hit on the head by something*. It was nothing but the flowerpot *which had been put on a windowsill*. Then he remembered that it was theirs and he himself had left it on the windowsill.

He came to the bus stop with his head hurting badly. He could not get on the first two buses because each *was already packed with people*. Just as he was getting on the third bus, *he was stung by a bee*, and his upper lip got swollen.

When he got off the bus, *he was almost run over by a speeding car*. Then he noticed that one of his books was gone- probably on the bus.

As he was running into the school building, *he was knocked down by one of the janitors sweeping the floor*.

When he entered the classroom, the examination had already started and *he was yelled at by the teacher for being late*.

When Jack told her teacher all that happened to him, she regretted having yelled at her. "Poor Jack," she said. "*You have been given more than a fair share of bad luck today.*"

Richard, *who was known to be a lover of proverbs, was heard to say, "Misfortunes never come singly."*

II. EDİLGEN ÇATININ KULLANILMA NEDENLERİ

Edilgen çatı belli durumlarda kullanılmaktadır.

1. Bilimsel metinlerde çoğu zaman işi kimin ya da neyin yaptığı bütünüyle konu dışıdır.

Aşağıdaki parça da tütünün işlenişi anlatılmaktadır. İşlemlerin kimin tarafından yapıldığı konu dışı olduğundan tümceler edilgen çatıda kurulmaktadır.

When tobacco leaves are a ripe, yellowish green, they are **picked** and the curing process **is begun**. The leaves are **first hung** in sheds to dry to a rich golden color, a **process** artificially encouraged in nontropical regions by charcoal fires or gas burners. The leaves **are then piled up** to form huge 'bulks' weighing thousands of pounds each. The pressure of the leaves on each other

and the temperatures of up to 100 degrees that are generated set up a fermentation process that develops the natural aroma and flavor of the leaf.

Next, the leaves are packed into bales and go through a second fermentation under controlled atmospheric conditions. The stacked bales are rotated and the leaves are checked regularly until they are fully cured. The entire process from harvesting through aging takes from six months to three or more years, depending on the area where the tobacco is grown, on the curing techniques, and on the quality of the leaf.

2. Etken tümcenin nesnesi, öznesinden daha önemli ise edilgen çatı kullanılır.

The detective was murdered by a waiter.

The house was bought by an old man.

3. İşi yapan, yani özne bilinmiyorsa edilgen çatı kullanılır.

Her diamonds were stolen last night.

The victim was identified as the son of the mayor.

Harnessing the tides has been considered as a possible source of electrical energy.

4. Kimi durumlarda metindeki fikir akışını sağlamak için edilgen çatı gereklidir. Fikir akışını sağlamak için bir şeyin ya da kimsenin işi yapan durumunda olmadan özne olması gerekebilir.

Ernest Hemingway wrote very interesting short stories. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for literature in 1952.

(Hakkında konuşulan Ernest Hemingway olduğu için, ikinci tümcede işi yapan Hemingway olmamasına rağmen, özne olarak kullanılıyor.

5. Kimi durumlarda, doğru anlamı belirtmek için edilgen çatının kullanılması gereklidir.

While studying English, a barking dog disturbed me.

Tümce böyle kurulduğunda, İngilizce çalışan kimsenin "dog" olduğu anlaşılmaktadır. Bu yanlış anlamayı önlemek için tümce

While I was studying English, a barking dog disturbed me.

şeklinde söylenebilir. Ya da kısaltılmış tümce şeklini koruyarak,

While studying English, I was disturbed by a barking dog.

şeklinde yazılabilir.

6. Kimi durumlarda, işi yapan gizlenilmek istenir.

Ronald Reagan Irangate skandalı sırasında şöyle söylemişti:

Mistakes were made.

Reagan, böylelikle *I made some mistakes* demekten kurtulmuştu.

7. *Doğal afetlerin ve kazaların yol açtığı felaketlerde önemli olan kaybedilen varlıklardır.*

Five million tons of grain have been destroyed in flood waters.
 Many people are killed in road accidents every year.
 Between sixty and seventy people were injured in the crash.

EDİLGEN TÜMCELERDE **BY**-ÖBEĞİNİN KULLANIMI VE YERİ

I bought a book yesterday.

Bu tümce aşağıdaki gibi edilgen çatıya dönüştürülür.

A book was bought by me yesterday.

Ne var ki bu tümcede bir tuhaftır var gibi görünmektedir. Bunun nedeni de uygun bir durum yaratılmamış olmasıdır. Özne belli olduğuna göre, üstelik de nesneden daha önemli göründüğüne göre, etken çatı kullanılması uygundur.

Diğer yandan, belli durumlarda da edilgen çatı doğal görünecektir

Tea is grown in Rize.

A lot of rice is eaten in China.

Bu tümcelerde öznel konuya ilgili bile değildir. Bu nedenle de etken şekilleri tuhaftır.

Kimi durumlarda edilgen çatılarda öznenin belirtilmesi de gerekebilir. Bu durumlarda özne **BY**-öbeği ile gösterilir ve bu öbek genellikle hemen eylemden sonra yer alır.

She cleans the house every day.

The house is cleaned by her every day.

Edilgen bir tümcede bir hal zarfı yer alırsa genellikle hemen eylemden önce kullanılır.

The door was slowly opened.

The wall had been secretly painted white.

BY vs. **WITH** in passive sentences



Edilgen tümcelerde işi yapan kişi ya da şeyin BY-öbeği ile ifade edildiğini biliyoruz. BY-öbeğinin işi yapanın belirtilmesine gerek olmadığı durumlarda kullanılmadığını da biliyoruz. Kimi edilgen tümcelerde eylem WITH öbeği gerektirebilir. Bu durumda BY-öbeği yerine WITH-öbeği kullanılmış gibi görünürse de gerçekte böyle bir durum söz konusu değildir. Örneğin, *The path was covered with leaves* tümcesinde COVER işini yapan yapraklar değildir; bir başka şey örneğin rüzgar patikanın yapraklarla kaplanması neden olmuştur: *The wind covered the path with leaves.*

The walls of the room **were adorned with** paintings.

Our rivers **are polluted with** industrial waste.

Somnambulism (sleep walking) **is grouped with** a number of other conditions.

The sinuses **are lined with** a tissue that produces a thick mucous when allergies or a common cold strikes.

The ground, as far as the eye can reach, **was covered with** white hail.

The water in the can **was mixed with** turpentine.

These tiny creatures **can only be seen with** a microscope.

All these chemicals **have been closely linked with** cancers in humans.

Every day we **are bombarded with** thousands of advertisement.

U.S. television **is obsessed with** lifestyles of the rich and famous.

The pipes **were clogged with** mud.

We **are faced with** more problems now.

Richard Outcault **is credited with** the creation of the first newspaper comic strip superstar.



1

Kızılderili Soykırımı Müzesi, 1492'den bu yana sürdürmeye olan kızılderili trajedisini anlatıyor.

NATIVE AMERICAN HOLOCAUST MUSEUM

Over 300 million Indigenous Peoples were brutally tortured and murdered by an invasion of foreign forces in an act to exterminate Indigenous Peoples so as to steal their land and resources. Those who were not exterminated were forcefully removed from their lands (either at gunpoint or at the point of a bayonet or by forged treaties) and driven off to FEDERAL PRISON CAMPS called RESERVATIONS.

12 TENSE İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

"Guess what? You are being replaced."



The dog was tied up.

Simple Present	They grow a lot of tea in Rize. A lot of tea is grown in Rize.
Present Continuous	They are watering the garden now. The garden is being watered now.
Simple Past	They built the first digital computer in 1946. The first digital computer was built in 1946.
Past Continuous	They were repairing the car when I went there. The car was being repaired when I went there.
Future	They will revise the defense budget next month. The defense budget will be revised next month.
Future Continuous	They will be painting the house tomorrow. KULLANILMIYOR
Present Perfect	Computers have changed our lives. Our lives have been changed by computers.
Present Perfect Con.	We have been investigating the case for a week. NADİREN KULLANILIYOR.
Past Perfect	The storm had devastated the whole city. The whole city had been devastated by the storm.
Past Perfect Con.	He had been growing tea for ten years when he decided to retire. KULLANILMIYOR
Future Perfect	Thousands of people will have seen the art exhibit by the time it closes. The art exhibit will have been seen by thousands of people by the time it closes..
Future Perfect Con.	She will have been training swimmers for ten years by the time she retires. KULLANILMIYOR

EXERCISE 401

Aşağıdaki tümceleri edilgen çatıya çeviriniz.

1. Nowadays, enormous bakeries bake millions of loaves of bread every day.
2. They import these melons from Turkey.
3. Millions of tourists visit Turkey ever year.
4. These strawberries are fresh. They have picked them this morning.
5. A Turkish TV reporter interviewed Bill Gates.
6. Nobody used dynamite until the second half of the nineteenth century.
7. Farmers do not use some insecticides any more today because they are too dangerous.
8. Today Japan exports more cars than any other country.
9. A well-known art collector is donating several paintings to the museum.
10. The policeman pushed the crowd back so that the film star could enter the hall.
11. People in Britain keep cage birds as pets.
12. People did not eat potatoes in Britain before the discovery of America.
13. People spend too much every year on useless things.
14. People speak four different languages in Britain today.
15. Irish people hate British greed.
16. Dissatisfied customers will soon telephone you.
17. They are preparing the dinner right now.
18. Before 1975 nobody had heard the word "ecology".
19. They have passed a new, stricter law to protect natural life.
20. They have increased the prices for fuel oil considerably this year.

NEIGHBOURHOOD CRIME WATCH

 Karikatürdeki adam *Neighbourhood Crime Watch* terimini doğru anlamış mı?



KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ (MODALS) İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

ACTIVE FORM			PASSIVE FORM			
They	can could would will must have to had to ought to should may might are able to are going to are to used to had better had rather would rather	learn chess.	Chess	can could would will must has to had to ought to should may might -- is going to is to used to had better -- --	be learned.	
They	can could should must ought to may might would were to	have	learned chess.	Chess	can could should must ought to may might would was to	have been learned.

EXERCISE 402

Aşağıdaki tümceleri edilgen çatıya çeviriniz.

Our neighbours may look after the children.

The children may be looked after by our neighbours.

They must design the robot specially for the king.

The robot must be designed specially for the king.

1. The police couldn't find the missing money.
2. Some day they may make all our clothes from artificial products.
3. We can't start the engine as long as the safety device is not in position.

4. We shouldn't waste our petroleum.
5. We ought to build more public transportation.
6. They had to put metal ladders across the breaks in the ice.
7. Someone must have taken it while I was out.
8. They used to treat prisoners very cruelly years ago.
9. Two detectives were questioning the suspects last night.
10. They are going to charge the film star with importing cocaine.
11. You can buy stamps at any post office.
12. We should really see animals in their natural habitat.
13. We used to do all these things by hand.
14. They should give us fish for dinner.
15. The doctor may examine you soon.

TÜMCE KALIPLARI İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

Tümce kalıplarında farklı öğelerin bulunması, farklı edilgen çatı yapılarının kurulmasına da yol açmaktadır. Farklı edilgen çatı yapılarına sahip olan tümce kalıplarını aşağıda inceliyoruz.

İKİ NESNESİ OLAN 8. TÜMCE KALIBİ İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

	Her husband	gave	her	a diamond ring
FORM 1:	She	was given		a diamond ring
FORM 2:	A diamond ring	was given	(to) her	

İki nesnesi olan 8. tümce kalibi, iki ayrı edilgen tümce verebilmektedir. FORM 1'de dolaylı nesne olan HER, FORM 2'de dolaysız nesne olan A DIAMOND RING, edilgen çatının öznesi olmaktadır. 8. tümce kalibinde belli eylemlerin kullanıldığını anımsayınız.

allow	deny	leave	pass	show
ask	feed	lend	pay	teach
award	find	make	promise	tell
bring	give	mail	refuse	throw
buy	grant	offer	send	
charge	hand	owe	sell	

EXERCISE 403

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden ikişer edilgen çatılı tümce kurunuz.

She send her husband a telegram.

Her husband was sent a telegram.

A telegram was sent to her husband.

They had brought me some warm clothes.

I had been brought some warm clothes.

Some warm clothes had been brought for me.

1. The nurse gave the patient a sleeping pill.
2. They awarded the patient \$100,000 damages.
3. The University has granted me leave of absence.
4. They have promised John a good job.
5. His parents left John a small fortune.
6. TV reporters have asked the new president many questions.
7. They gave the new president a warm welcome.
8. Someone lent a copy of the report to me.
9. They didn't offer Clara any money for her painting.
10. No one will tell us the answers until tomorrow.

9. TÜMCE KALIBİ İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

*"But, what are plants called
before you plant them?"*

Active	His friends	call	him	Shark.
Passive	He	is called		Shark.

Dokuzuncu tümce kalibinde az sayıda eylem kullanılmaktadır. Bu tümce kalibinden sadece bir edilgen tümce yapılabilir.

<i>appoint</i>	<i>elect</i>	<i>leave</i>	<i>regard</i>
<i>call</i>	<i>find</i>	<i>make</i>	<i>see</i>
<i>consider</i>	<i>hail</i>	<i>name</i>	



1. CONSIDER, (to be) ile kullanılabilir.

He is considered (to be) a great author.

2. REGARD, KNOW, SEE ile AS ilgeci kullanılmaktadır.

He was known as one of the most audacious stuntmen in Hollywood.

EXERCISE 404

Aşağıdaki tümceleri edilgen yapıya çeviriniz.

People call these flowers stink weeds.

These flowers are called stink weeds

- Some philosophers consider the media the greatest threat to free thinking.
- We may call that putting the cart before the horse.
- The Archbishop crowned the young prince king.
- Most statesmen of our age have hailed Atatürk as the greatest leader of the twentieth century.
- Scientist call this decline in vigour with the passing of time ageing.
- Americans elected J. F. Kennedy President of the United States in 1959.
- Some people regard Saussure as the founder of modern linguistics.
- Some people regard exhibitions as unnecessary luxuries.
- Scientists consider a cactus a succulent plant because it stores water.
- People have always found our city beautiful.

10. TÜMCE KALIBİ İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

ACTIVE:	The sun	will keep	us	warm.
PASSIVE :	We	will be kept		warm.

10. Tümce Kalbında da az sayıda eylem kullanılabilir.

<i>denounce</i>	<i>keep</i>	<i>leave</i>	<i>make</i>
<i>find</i>	<i>label</i>	<i>lick</i>	



- FIND, (to be) ile kullanılabilir.

He is found to be quite efficient.

No human disease has been found to be caused by a deficiency of Vitamin B6.

EXERCISE 405

Aşağıdaki tümceleri edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

They pushed the door open.

The door was pushed open.

The jury found the loan shark guilty of usury.

The loan shark was found guilty of usury.

1. We found all the boxes empty.
2. You should keep the team ready.
3. The computer has made most jobs easier.
4. Doctors should not keep terminally ill people artificially alive.
5. The hungry travellers found the Turkish meal indescribably delicious.
6. They found the new computer defective.
7. We can never make paying taxes palatable.
8. They labeled the fabric imperfect because it had flaws in the weaving.
9. They left all machines idle during the strike of the workers.
10. We have denounced every advance in civilization as unnatural while it was recent.— *Bertrand Russell*

11. TÜMCE KALIBİ İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

ACTIVE:	They	saw	the car	stop.
PASSIVE:	The car	was seen		to stop.

Az sayıda eylemin kullanıldığı 11. Tümce Kalibi da sadece bir edilgen tümcenin kurulmasına olanak sağlar. Edilgen çatıda stop eylemligidenden sonra to getirilişine dikkat ediniz. Bu kalıpta yer alan eylemler içinde sadece let edilgen çatıda to'suz kullanılır.

They let us go. → **We were let go.**

ACTIVE:	I	had	the mechanic	repair	my car .
PASSIVE:	I	had	my car	repaired	

11. Tümce Kalıbında kullanılan HAVE eyleminin ettipen tümceler oluşturmağuna dikkat ediniz.

make let	see know	have
-------------	-------------	------

EXERCISE 406

Aşağıdaki tümceleri edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

They saw Bob crash into a lamppost.

Bob was seen to crash into a lamppost.

1. She let her husband go hunting with his friends.
2. His men saw Columbus kill many Indians.
3. You can't make an old dog to learn new tricks.
4. We have never known George do such foolish things.
5. Everybody saw the lovers to embrace and plunge together into the sea.
6. They made him do everything he did not want to do.
7. Constant scolding makes a child feel he is good for nothing.
8. In later days they have seen two mighty swans fly from the nest.

12. TÜMCE KALIBİ İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

"I'll say this about winter: It doesn't hurt to be dragged through the snow."

12. Tümce kalibinde belli eylemlerin kullanıldığını biliyoruz. Bu eylemlerden kimileri anlamları gereği edilgen çatıda kullanılmazlar. **WANT** ve **EXPECT** gibi kimi eylemler ise oldukça karmaşık kullanımılara olanak sağlarlar.

<i>advise</i>	<i>challenge</i>	<i>forbid</i>	<i>order</i>	<i>teach</i>
<i>allow</i>	<i>compel</i>	<i>force</i>	<i>permit</i>	<i>tell</i>
<i>appoint</i>	<i>convince</i>	<i>instruct</i>	<i>persuade</i>	<i>urge</i>
<i>ask</i>	<i>direct</i>	<i>invite</i>	<i>recommend</i>	<i>want</i>
<i>assist</i>	<i>encourage</i>	<i>lead</i>	<i>remind</i>	<i>warn</i>
<i>beg</i>	<i>expect</i>	<i>mean</i>	<i>request</i>	

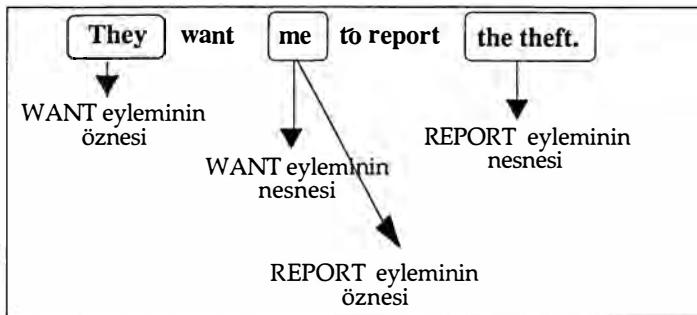


Bu tümce kalıbında karmaşık özne-nesne ilişkileri bulunmaktadır. *They want me to report the theft* tümcesinin derin yapısında

THEY WANT IT. / I REPORT THE THEFT.
tümcelerinin olduğunu söyleyebiliriz.

<i>THEY WANT ME TO REPORT THE THEFT.</i>
<i>I AM WANTED TO REPORT THE THEFT.</i>
<i>THEY WANT THE THEFT TO BE REPORTED.</i>
<i>THEY WANT THE THEFT REPORTED.</i>

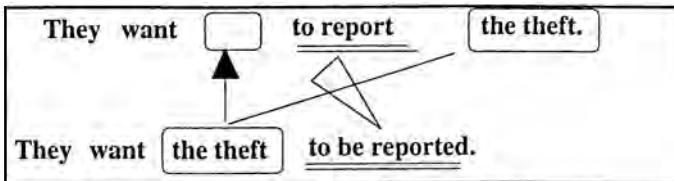
Aşağıdaki tabloda tümcedeki özne-nesne ilişkilerini gösterelim.



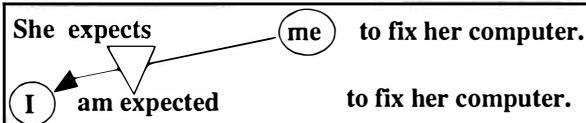
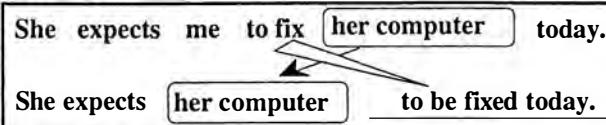
1. *THEY WANT ME TO REPORT THE THEFT* tümcesinden çıkarılan edilen tümceler.

A. *WANT eyleminin nesnesi edilen tümcenin öznesi*

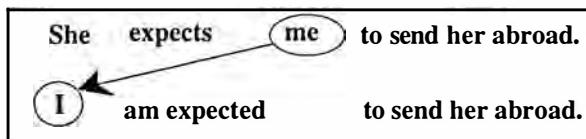
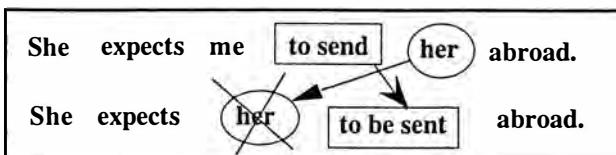
They	want	me	to report the theft.
I	am wanted		to report the theft.

B. *THEFT, REPORT ve WANT* eylemlerinin nesnesi

2. **SHE EXPECTS ME TO SEND HER HUSBAND ABROAD** tümcesinden çıkarılan edilgen tümceler.

A. *ME*, edilgen tümcenin öznesiB. *HER HUSBAND, SEND* eyleminin nesnesi

3. **SHE EXPECTS ME TO SEND HER ABROAD** tümcesinden çıkarılan edilgen tümceler. (**SHE** ile **HER** aynı kimseyi göstermektedir.)

A. *ME*, edilgen tümcenin öznesi.B. *HER, EXPECT* eyleminin nesnesi. **SHE** ile **HER** aynı kimseyi gösteriyorlarsa **HER**'in atılması gerekecektir.

4. **I GOT THE MECHANIC TO REPAIR MY CAR** tümcesi GET eylemi nedeniyle ettiğen bir tümcedir.

ACTIVE:	I	got	the mechanic	to repair	my car.
PASSIVE:	I	got	my car	repaired	

EXERCISE 407

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerde gösterildiği gibi edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

They advise athletes to eat a nutritious meal before game.

Athletes are advised to eat a nutritious meal before game .

As children they taught us to revere our country's flag.

As children we were taught to revere our country's flag.

I wanted the park attendant to wash my car.

The park attendant was wanted to wash my car.

I wanted my car to be washed.

1. Many people have expected Esperanto to become the universal language.
2. We cannot expect young people to go to universities for the general good of mankind.
3. She wanted the doctor to tell her some good news.
4. The cook wanted me to wash all the wine glasses.
5. They expect you to be an expert on educational software.
6. They required all the participants in the contest to be at the TV studio at 6 o'clock.
7. The teacher asked her to give the gist of the essay in two sentences.
8. As a result of our friendly relations between the two countries we expect a large market to develop.
9. They had taught the sailor not to be laggard in carrying out orders.
10. When the explorer returned home, they asked him to tell about his discoveries.
11. They told me not to expect much from college education.
12. The wealthy people considered food to be the greatest source of pleasure throughout the Roman Empire.
13. His doctor warned him not to drink too much coffee.
14. The villagers reported the ghost of the murdered woman to be in the old mansion.
15. They instructed her to keep quiet about the issue.
16. As a result of the boy's bad behavior, his father did not allow him to go out.
17. The imperialistic powers of Europe and the USA force Third World countries to give up their sovereignty rights.

EXERCISE 408

Aşağıdaki **WANT** ve **LIKE** eylemleri ile kurulmuş tümceleri örneklerle benzer şekilde edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

She wants somebody to tell her the news.

She wants to be told the news.

She would like someone to tell her the truth.

She would like to be told the truth.

1. A politician wants people to trust him.
2. We all like people to respect us.
2. An author wants people to understand him.
4. I would like a friend to take me to the hospital.
5. Our dog always wants us to give him sweet things.

13. TÜMCE KALIBİ İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

ACTIVE:	Jack	saw	Helen	crying.
PASSIVE:	Helen	was seen		crying.

Bu tümce kalibi bir edilgen tümce kurulmasına olanak sağlamaktadır. Bu kalıpta çoğunlukla duyu eylemlerinin kullanıldığını anımsayınız: *feel, hear, listen to, look at, observe, perceive, smell, watch*.

Duyu eylemleri dışında bu kalıpta yaygın olarak kullanılan eylemleri de sıralayalım:

<i>catch</i>	<i>imagine</i>	<i>leave</i>	<i>start</i>
<i>find</i>	<i>keep</i>	<i>set</i>	

EXERCISE 409

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerdeki gibi edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

We found him sleeping under an oak tree.

He was found sleeping under an oak tree.

They may keep us working under terrible conditions.

We may be kept working under terrible conditions.

1. All the neighbours heard him shouting at his wife.
2. The policeman saw the burglar climbing the tree.
3. She usually keeps her husband cutting the grass on Sundays.
4. We found our dog playing with baby dolls.
5. They have left us wondering what will happen next.
6. The gentleman caught his servant smoking his expensive cigars.



*"Some words were just not meant
to be processed!"*

EYLEMSİLERLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

Gerund ve Infinitive öbeklerle edilgen çatı yapıları aşağıdaki tabloda gösterilmektedir.

	ACTIVE	PASSIVE
Infinitive	to send	to be sent
Perfect infinitive	to have sent	to have been sent
Gerund	sending	being sent
Perfect gerund	have been sending	having been sent

Gerund ve Infinitive öbekler özne ve nesne olarak kullanılabilirler.

birine yardım etmek	gerekli olabilir
to help someone	may be necessary
helping someone	
to have helped someone	
having helped someone	
yardım edilmek	herkesi memnun eder
to be helped	pleases everybody
being helped	
to have been helped	
having been helped	

Gerund ve Infinitive öbekler belli eylemlerin nesnesi olabilirler.

istiyorum	birine yardım etmek
I want	to help someone
	to have helped someone

seviyorum	birine yardım etmek
I enjoy	helping someone
	having helped someone

Infinitive öbekler gecikmiş özne (*delayed subject*) olarak da kullanılabilir.

Not to be invited to the party offended Paul.

It offended Paul *not to be invited to the party*.

To be forced for economic reasons to take an uninteresting job is unfortunate.

It is unfortunate *to be forced for economic reasons to take an uninteresting job*.

GERUND'Lİ TÜMCE KALIBINDA EDİLGEN ÇATI

ACTIVE:	I	remember	Jack	taking	you	to the hospital.
PASSIVE:	I	remember	your	being taken		to the hospital.
ACTIVE:	I	remember	Jack	taking	me	to the hospital.
PASSIVE:	I	remember	(my)	being taken		to the hospital.

EXERCISE 410

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde, bulabildiğiniz edilgen 'gerund' yapılarının altlarını çiziniz.

- She tries to avoid being seen by her mother when smoking.
- She likes being taken out to dinner.
- I enjoy being given presents like everybody else.
- She resents having been punished for nothing.
- We remember her being taken to the hospital.
- Being searched by customs officers is rather unpleasant.
- The government tried to stop the book being published.
- She was afraid of being laughed at.
- Let's not risk being caught in a traffic jam.
- No one enjoys being told lies.
- They are complaining about being treated rudely.
- His being treated like that will certainly lead to enmity.
- Knowledge is a two-edged weapon which can be used equally for good or evil. It is now being used indifferently for both.
- Faith in controlled nuclear fission is now being shown by the construction of atomic power stations.
- Little research is being carried out on the costs of alternative types of packaging.

INFINITIVE'Lİ TÜMCE KALIBINDA EDİLGEN ÇATI

ACTIVE:	I	expect	Jack	to take	me	to the hospital.
PASSIVE:	I	expect	(myself)	to be taken		to the hospital.

ACTIVE:	I	would like	you	to clear away	this rubbish.
PASSIVE:	I	would like	this rubbish	to be cleared away.	

EXERCISE 411

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerdeki gibi edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

For customs to search us is rather unpleasant.

To be searched by customs is rather unpleasant.

Being searched by customs is rather unpleasant.

We remember them watering the garden.

We remember the garden being watered.

She resents that they have punished her for no good reason.

She resents having being punished for no good reason.

1. I expect them to invite me to their wedding.
2. We remember Jack giving you the keys to the door.
3. She is afraid that they will criticize her.
4. They expect me to take the children to the zoo.
5. She may resent that they have assigned her too many tasks.
6. I am afraid that they may leave me here.
7. Everybody remembers the mayor giving you the award.
8. For anybody to tell us the news will be nice.

GİZLİ EDİLGENLİK HIDDEN PASSIVE

1. *Kimi eylemler, edilgen çatıya dönüştürülmeden edilgenlik ifade edebilirler.*

This book has sold a million copies.

Bu kitaptan bir milyon satıldı.

This story reads well.

His book is selling badly.

This dress doesn't wash.

My car drives comfortably.

<i>change</i>	<i>clean</i>	<i>close</i>	<i>drive</i>
<i>open</i>	<i>read</i>	<i>sell</i>	<i>wash</i>

We read some books very slowly.	Some textbooks read very slowly.
We can clean our oven easily.	Our oven cleans easily.
They close the library at 9.	The library closes at 9.
They change the menu every week.	The menu changes every week.

2. *NEED, WANT, REQUIRE* eylemlerini V-ING izlediğinde edilgenlik ifade edilebilir.

The furniture needs polishing.
 The car wants washing.
 The room requires cleaning.

3. *HAVE, HAVE GOT, GET* eylemleri ve *THERE BE*yapıları gizli edilgenlik kullanımına olanak sağlayabilir.

I have got a book to read/to be read.
 There are a lot of letters to type/to be typed

İKİ SÖZCÜKLÜ EYLEMLERDE EDİLGEN ÇATI

Genel olarak iki sözcüklü eylemlerin edilgen yapıları kuruluş olarak herhangi bir farklılık göstermez.

<i>They are looking after our children.</i>	<i>Our children are being looked after.</i>
<i>We agreed to the proposal.</i>	<i>The proposal was agreed to.</i>
<i>They called in the police because of the riot.</i>	<i>The police were called in because of the riot.</i>
<i>We can't put any of his plans into practice.</i>	<i>None of his plans can be put into practice.</i>

EXERCISE 412

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

We will have to pay for the broken vase.

The broken vase will have to be paid for.

1. We must listen to children with problems.
2. Nobody can carry out a plan like this.
3. Two famous doctors operated on the film star.
4. Everybody laughed at the silly girls.

5. She has already turned down our request.
6. We are going to look into the matter soon.
7. They cut down all the trees along the road.
8. Astronauts have brought back photographs of the moon.
9. The British Empire has carried out horrendous acts to achieve her goals.
10. Most companies now rely on computers for various tasks.

GET EYLEMİ İLE EDİLGEN ÇATI



BE yardımcı eyleminin uygun bir şekli edilgen tümcelerin kurulmasında mutlaka kullanılma durumundadır. Özellikle günlük kullanımda kimi zaman edilgen çatayı kurmakta kullanılan BE yerine GET eylemi kullanılmaktadır.

Active Form:	She yelled at me.
Passive Form:	I was yelled at.
GET-Passive:	I got yelled at.

EXERCISE 413

Aşağıdaki tümceleri GET ile kurulan edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

Many people are killed on the roads every year.

Many people get killed on the roads every year.

1. We are paid monthly.
2. If you don't lock your car, it may be stolen.
3. How often are these offices cleaned?
4. Nobody helps me.
5. We must punish you.
6. He was arrested yesterday.
7. The explorer was killed in a hunting accident.
8. The shell was broken by the force of the waves.
9. Don't stand up or you may be hit by a stray bullet!
10. I ended up with a terrible cold, after we were caught in the rain last weekend.
11. My new shirt was torn when I caught it on a bush.
12. Allens' house was burned down when it was struck by lightning.

13. Somebody is watering the garden.
14. Boys have painted the whole building in a week.
15. They should pay for everything they have bought.



Aşağıdakiler günlük kullanımda yaygın olarak kullanılmaktadır.
*get started get married get lost get divorced
 get engaged get shaved get washed get involved*

EDİLGEN TÜMCELERDE TARZ ZARFLARI

Edilgen tümcelerde tarz zarfları çoğunlukla BE ile EYLEM arasında yer alırlar. Tümcede bir kip belirteci bulunuyorsa tarz zarfı bu kip belirtecinden hemen sonra da kullanılabilir. Tarz zarfları eylemden sonra da kullanılabilir.

Active Form:	She told the story <i>cleverly</i> .
Passive Form:	The story WAS <i>cleverly</i> TOLD.

Active Form:	Our ability to control inflation will <i>largely</i> determine our economic success.
Passive Form:	Our economic success will <i>largely</i> be determined by our ability to control inflation.

Many a truism is **well** expressed in a proverb.

Improvements in the health services are **urgently** required.

There is no such thing as a moral or an immoral book. Books are **well** written, or **badly** written. That is all. –Oscar Wilde

Good writing is **carefully** organized around an important idea.

We all are **slowly** being poisoned by our new chemical environment.

Some books should be read **quickly** and **effortlessly** while some should be read **slowly** and even **laboriously**.

EXERCISE 414

Aşağıdaki tümceleri edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

They have counted the books carefully.

The books have been carefully counted.

1. Depression hit the firm **badly**.
2. They lit the room **dimly**.
3. They have fenced the fields **badly**.
4. They furnished their new house **heavily**.
5. The international corporations **carefully** and **systematically** lead the TV audience to a particular set of beliefs.
6. They stored the chemicals **carelessly**.

7. More than 100 scientists in the United States have scrutinized the results carefully.
8. The English government carefully, prudently and peacefully slew a million and half Irish men, women and children in 1840's.
9. We should select the advertising company carefully.
10. The hungry children greedily devoured the boiled rice.

DÜŞÜNCE VE BELİRTME EYLEMLERİYLE EDİLGEN ÇATI

Düşünce ve belirtme eylemleri farklı edilgen yapıların kurulmasına olanak sağlarlar. KNOW eylemi ile bir örnek verelim:

Özne	Eylem	Nesne
Everybody	knows	that smoking causes cancer.

1. That smoking causes cancer is known.
2. *It is known* that smoking causes cancer.
3. *Smoking is known* to cause cancer.

Göründüğü gibi KNOW eylemi bir ad içtümcecikini nesne olarak alındığında üç ayrı edilgen tümce kurulmasına olanak sağlamaktadır.

1. THAT SMOKING CAUSES CANCER IS KNOWN yapısında kullanılabilen eylemler

admit	declare	know	report	state
agree	discover	notice	reveal	suggest
announce	establish	observe	say	understand
claim	find	prove	show	

 THAT-ad içtümcecikleri ile başlayan tümcelerin kullanımı yaygın değildir. "Slot-filling IT" yapısı yaygın olarak kullanılır.

That noise is a serious health hazard has been proved.

It has been proved that noise is a serious health hazard.

That smoking causes cancer is admitted.

It is admitted that smoking causes cancer.

2. IT IS KNOWN THAT SMOKING CAUSES CANCER yapısında kullanılabilen eylemler:

admit	declare	hope	propose	show
agree	discover	intend	prove	state
allege	establish	know	recommend	suggest
announce	estimate	mention	regret	suppose

assume	expect	notice	report	think
believe	explain	object	request	understand
claim	fear	observe	reveal	
consider	feed	presume	say	
decide	find	promise	see	

It has been reported that half a million children have died in Iraq because of American cruelty.

It has been reported that a new oil-field has been discovered in the south of the country.

EXERCISE 415

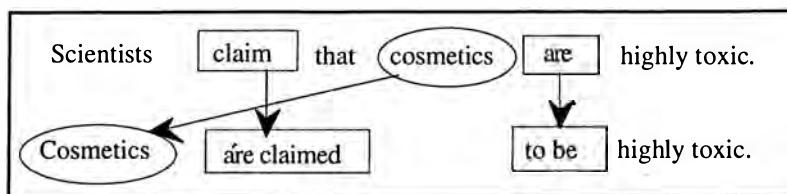
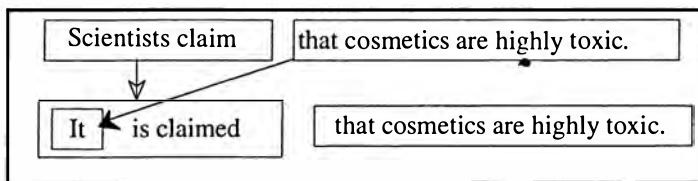
Aşağıdaki tümceleri edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

1. In the fifteenth century people did not know that the earth revolved around the sun.
2. Someone suggested that taxes should be reduced.
3. People do not think that prices will go down.
4. We will assume that you have read the basic texts.
5. After long discussions they agreed that the UN headquarters should be in New York.
6. They found that people disapproved of the government's decision.
7. They say that a rolling stone gathers no moss.
8. During the investigation they discovered that some confidential files had been stolen.
9. Even his enemies acknowledged that Atatürk was a brilliant politician.
10. The situation is very difficult at the moment, and they fear that there will be more bloodshed.
11. Some people suggested that we should turn back, but the leader of the expedition rejected the idea.
12. People will assume that there has been a cover-up.
13. The author explains in the passage that the efficiency of the computer depends on the speed with which the data are fed.
14. Herbalist widely believed that a plant or part of a plant that resembled an internal organ would cure ailments of that organ.
15. They considered it a mistake that he had resigned from his job.
16. Experts claim that there is no danger to be associated with atomic power stations because they are being sited away from populous centres.
17. Many political commentators expect that the Prime Minister will call an early general election.
18. They found that most of the pipes had rusted.

3. **IT IS KNOWN THAT SMOKING CAUSES CANCER ve SMOKING IS KNOWN TO CAUSE CANCER.** yapılarında kullanılabilen eylemler:

allege	declare	find	presume	see
assume	discover	intend	prove	show
believe	estimate	know	report	suppose
claim	expect	mean	reveal	think
consider	feel	observe	say	understand

Bu eylemler, aynı tümceden iki ayrı edilgen tümcenin çıkarılmasına olanak vermektedir.



We know that Columbus killed many Indians.

It is known that Columbus killed many Indians.

Columbus is known to have killed many Indians.

The government now admits that a mistake has been made.

It is now admitted that a mistake has been made.

They said that the actor committed suicide.

It is said that the actor committed suicide.

The actor is said to have committed suicide.

They claim that Noam Chomsky is a CIA agent.

It is claimed that Noam Chomsky is a CIA agent.

Noam Chomsky is claimed to be a CIA agent.

The rose is believed to have been the first flower cultivated by man.

Although existing today only in fragments, his first novel is believed to have been a delightful novel.

Christopher Columbus is claimed to have been responsible for starting the intercontinental slave trade and beginning the systematic execution of the local island populations.

Eagles and hawks are believed to have the keenest sight of all birds.

In fact, it is rumoured that a large sum of money has been embezzled.

Cosmetics are claimed to be generally safe if used according to the instructions on the label.

Bill Gates is reported to be the richest man in the world.

The Federal Bureau of Indian Affairs is believed to be responsible for the deaths of hundreds of thousands of Indians.

EXERCISE 416

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

Everybody says that necessity is the mother of invention. (2)

It is said that necessity is the mother of invention.

Necessity is said to be the mother of invention.

1. They say that thousands of people die of hunger every day as a direct consequence of globalization. (2)
2. They say that the British have killed thousands of Irish people. (2)
3. Everybody knows that uncontrolled inflation is dangerous. (3)
4. They reported that the bridge had been repainted. (3)
5. We assume that Jack has embezzled a million dollars. (2)
6. Mark Twain said that familiarity breeds contempt. (2)
7. People have always known that teaching is an art. (2)
8. Some people believe that success depends on luck. (2)
9. Benjamin Franklin claims that hard work is the key to happiness. (2)
10. They think that too much work is better than too little work. (2)
11. Some people hold that prevention is easier than cure. (2)
12. Many people believe that there will be no learning without motivation.
13. People feel that good eating habits is the key to good health. (2)
14. One expects that good managers are always polite.
15. Most health scientists claim that chemicals are the major cause of most diseases. (2)

ÇEŞİTLİ EDİLGEN YAPI ÖRNEKLERİ

1. KNOW, SAY, TELL, THINK, REPORT eylemleriley

Philosophers know that greed brings about misery.

- a. *That greed brings about misery is known.*
- b. *It is known that greed brings about misery.*
- c. *Misery is known to be brought about by greed.*
- d. *Greed is known to bring about misery.*

They told me that Columbus was a ruthless treasure hunter.

- a. *That Columbus was a ruthless treasure hunter was told (to) me.*
- b. *I was told that Columbus was a ruthless treasure hunter*
- c. *Columbus was said to be a ruthless treasure hunter.*

Most people think that the government behaved irresponsibly.

- It is thought that the government behaved irresponsibly.*
- The government is thought to have behaved irresponsibly.*

Several newspapers report that the prime minister is retiring next year.

- It is reported that the prime minister is retiring next year.*
- The prime minister is reported to be retiring next year.*

2. Ad içtümceciklerinde edilgenlik yapısı

I don't know WHAT I CAN DO about this.

I don't know WHAT CAN BE DONE about this.

I don't know WHO CAN CLEAN THE HOUSE.

I don't know WHO THE HOUSE CAN BE CLEANED BY.

SORU TÜMCİELERİNDE EDİLGEN YAPı

1. Yardımcı Eylemler ve Kip Belirteçleri ile Yapılan Sorular

DID HE REPAIR THE DISK?

1. Düz tümceye çevirme	He repaired the disk.
2. Edilgen çatıya çevirme	The disk was repaired (by him).
3. Soruya çevirme	Was the disk repaired (by him)?
4. BY-öbeği atma (seçmeli)	Was the disk repaired?

2. Soru Sözcükleriyle Yapılan Sorular

Bu tür sorularda soru sözcükleri üç değişik görevde bulunabilir.



- Tümcenin öznesi olabilir: *Who repaired the disk?*
- Tümcenin nesnesi olabilir: *What did he repair?*
- Tümcenin bir zarfı olabilir: *When did he repair the disk?*

WHO REPAIRED THE DISK?

1. Edilgen çatıya çevirme	<i>The disk was repaired by whom</i>
2. Kip belirteciyle soru	<i>Was the disk repaired by whom</i>
3. BY-öbeğini başa alma	<i>By whom was the disk repaired?</i>
4. BY tümce sonuna (seçmeli)	<i>Who was the disk repaired by?</i>

WHAT DID HE REPAIR?

1. Düz tümceye çevirme	<i>he repaired what</i>
2. Edilgen çatıya çevirme	<i>What was repaired by him?</i>
3. BY-öbeği atma (seçmeli)	<i>What was repaired?</i>

WHEN DID HE REPAIR THE DISK?

1. Düz tümceye çevirme	<i>he repaired the disk when</i>
2. Edilgen çatıya çevirme	<i>the disk was repaired by him when</i>
3. Soruya çevirme	<i>was the disk repaired by him when</i>
4. Soru sözcüğünü başa alma	<i>When was the disk repaired by him?</i>
5. BY-öbeği atma (seçmeli)	<i>When was the disk repaired ?</i>

EXERCISE 417

Aşağıdaki soru tümcelerini edilgen çatıya dönüştürünüz.

1. When will the court try the case ?
2. How often do they paint the house?
3. Are the heavy rains ruining the crops?
4. Who recognized the suspected killer?
5. Did the company give Mr. Jackson a notice of dismissal?
6. Has the fire entirely destroyed the house?
7. What will the store deliver next week?
8. Who do all the students respect ?
9. Did they ever ask you your opinion?
10. Can you trust Bill to do the job right?

EXERCISE 418

Aşağıdaki sorulara verilen ipuçlarını kullanarak edilgen tümcelerle yanıt veriniz.

1. When will they announce their engagement? (*next month*)
2. What had an expert taught Helen? (*judo*)
3. How can you arrange all that? (*If I put my mind on it*)
4. Why should they blame you? (*I have been careless*)
5. Where should they try him? (*in a court of law*)
6. In whose name have they opened a charge account? (*in Jack's name*)
7. Why did they tell Harry to keep out of trouble? (*Harry had a short temper*)
8. Where have you reserved rooms for them? (*At Sunville Hotel*)
9. What must have astonished the detective? (*the cook's extensive knowledge of precious stones*)
10. Who has reported the details of the accident? (*a witness*)



*African American
being burned
by a lynch mob*

Omaha, Nebraska - 1919

YALANCI EDİLGENLİK

(Semi-passives / Pseudo-passives)



*"They are not all mud pies. Some are filled
with the strawberries you bought this morning."*

Kimi tümcelerde edilgen yapı kuruluşu olmasına karşın tümceler edilgen tümce değildirler.

1. **GONE, FINISH, PREPARE, FIND, LIMIT, FOUND, BASE, FILL** gibi eylemler edilgen yapıyla fakat etken anlaşılmabilir.

Lake Van is located in the east of Turkey.

The Taurus Mountains are situated along the Mediterranean coast of Turkey.

He is gone.

Are you finished?

How much are you prepared to pay?

Lava, pumice, and other igneous rocks are found in great abundance around Mount Vesuvius near Naples.

The grasshopper is an insect found in all but the most frigid parts of the world.

Earthquakes are not limited geographically, but some areas are particularly vulnerable to them, such as the islands of Japan, California, Turkey, and Iran.

The public will believe anything, so long as it is not founded on truth.-E. Sitwell

Western Europe was not exposed to any of the infectious diseases during the war.

Our friendship is based on mutual interests.

She was dressed in black.

His face is covered with chocolate.

The book is composed of ten units.

He is dedicated to his work.

2. Kimi eylemlerin "past participle" şekilleri sıfat öbekleri yapar. Yapı edilgen gibi görünmesine karşın sadece sıfat olarak kullanılmaktadır.

I am interested in pop music.

She is tired of life in the city.

She is bored with country life.

She is disappointed with her husband.

Americans have been worried about the effects of family breakdown for decades.

Doctors without Borders are particularly concerned about the spread of disease.

He is well acquainted with the vices of politics.

Many people have been disgusted by the atrocities committed by the Serbs.

Scurvy is the classic disease related to deficiency in Vitamin C.

Smoking is also related to cancers of the mouth, pharynx, larynx, esophagus, and urinary bladder.

The graduate was delighted to have been chosen for the job from among many applicants.

Donkeys are reputed to be the most recalcitrant of animals.

The passage is concerned with the question of what measures are to be taken against the supply of dangerous substances.

These symptoms are associated with cluster headaches.

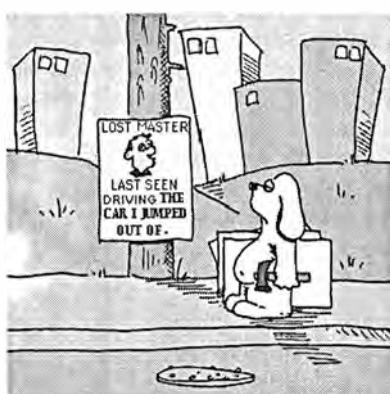
He is never satisfied with anything he does.

Depression is linked with certain conditions.

Once the countryside was dotted with mills beside rivers and streams.

TO BE BORN, "doğmak" anlamıyla edilgen bir tümce değildir.

She was born in a small town.



BİLİMSEL METİNLERDE EDİLGEN ÇATI



Bilimsel metinlerde edilgen yapının yaygın olarak kullanıldığını belirtmiştık. Aşağıda bilimsel metinlere özgü kullanımlarda edilgen yapının kullanımlarına örnekler sunuyoruz.

BİLGİ (Information)	The effort to achieve a certain weight through diet, exercise, or both is known as weight control. One of the earliest cultivated fruits, the banana is known for its high nutritional value. Little is known about the nature of sleep.
SINIFLANDIRMA (Classification)	American Indian languages are usually classified into five families. The most commonly misused drugs may be roughly classified into three groups. Bows are classified according to bow weight. To be classified as obese, a person must be 20 percent or more over their ideal body weight. Along with the viruses, bacteria are classified as the lowest forms of plant life.
BETİMLEME (Description)	The city is described as a living thing. Sculpture has been described as the most difficult of all arts.
TANIMLAMA (Definition)	Democracy may be defined as government of the people for the people by the people. Obesity is defined as a 20 percent excess of body fat over ideal weight. Citizen rights should be defined in terms of income, education, housing and health care. Death is defined as that point at which both the heart and the brain have ceased to function.

EXERCISE 419

Aşağıdaki sorulara örneklerdeki git i edilgen çatılı tümcelerle yanıt vermeye çalışınız.

When will they hold the wedding? (next month)

The wedding will be held next month.

Who invited the Watsons to the picnic? (the manager)

The Watsons were invited to the picnic by the manager.

Do you think they can find a solution to the problem?

Yes, I think a solution to the problem can be found.

1. Where are they going to build the new shopping center? (downtown)
2. Have they been able to identify the body of the dead man?
3. What language do they speak in Ireland?
4. Do you think Jack broke his arm when he fell down?
5. Which team do you think will win the game? (Fenerbahçe)
6. How soon will they complete the project? (soon)
7. Have they caught the thief yet?
8. Is it true that he spent all his money on luxuries?
9. When will you have to make your first payment on the car?
10. Are you sure she didn't lose her ring in the restaurant?

EXERCISE 420

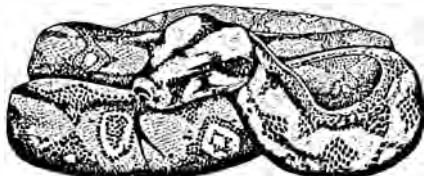
Aşağıdaki parçadaki tümceleri mümkünse edilgen yapıya çeviriniz.

The whale is the largest animal that has ever lived. Some species grow to a length of over 30 meters and weigh up to 90 metric tons, or 90,000 kilos. It could never have grown to so large a size if it had remained a land mammal. Millions of years ago whales lived on land and walked on four legs. Before recorded history, however, they went into the sea. It was really a return to the sea; the remote ancestors of all animals had originated in the sea. The remains of the whale's hind legs still exist inside its body, and there is other evidence that it was once a land mammal. It is warm blooded, for example, and has respiratory, digestive, and reproductive systems somewhat like those of other mammals.

For hundreds of years people have killed some whale species for their blubber or whalebone. In recent years it has become evident that the great sperm whale is especially in danger of becoming extinct. Unless we stop killing them, the species will soon disappear. Before the end of the twentieth century, some believe we will have destroyed this interesting and valuable animal.

EXERCISE 421

Aşağıdaki metinde bulunan bütün edilgen yapıların altını çiziniz.



**THERE IS A HIDDEN INGREDIENT
IN YOUR FAST-FOOD HAMBURGER.**

Millions of acres of Central American rainforest are destroyed so U.S. hamburger chains and pet food companies can get cheap meat.

It's called rainforest beef. Which means it comes from marginal grazing land in what used to be rainforest.

Before the rainforest was bulldozed and burned, it was home to thousands of rare and exotic species. After the cattle have come and gone, it's an eroded wasteland practically empty of life.

Burger Empire is one of the biggest fast-food buyers of rainforest beef, a driving force behind this environmental disaster. So we're calling for a nationwide boycott.

Fifty thousand acres of rainforest are being lost worldwide every day. At that rate, the last refuge for half the plant and animal species on earth will vanish in a single human lifespan.

Activists in more than a dozen nations are fighting back—for the jaguars, orchids and howler monkeys. And for the millions of human beings in the Third World who directly depend on the living rainforests for physical and cultural survival.

You can do your part by boycotting Burger Empire. And by telling others the rainforests must be saved.

**BOYCOTT
BURGER
EMPIRE.**

EXERCISE 422

Aşağıdaki parçayı mümkün olan tümceleri edilgen yapıya çevirerek yeniden yazınız.

ENERGY

In his millions of years on earth, man has used many resources to produce energy. In the last 80 years, however, petroleum has become the number-one source. Accounting for over 50 percent of all energy we

consume, petroleum is so important that if it were to disappear overnight all our industry would collapse.

There is no denying that petroleum will disappear sooner than most people are willing to admit. No one knows how much petroleum is left, but at the current rate of use, we will use up all of the world supply within thirty years.

We should have taken measures decades ago to decrease our dependence on oil. Surprisingly, people are still debating such measures. Some people believe that we will soon find new petroleum fields and assume that we will eventually discover a new source of energy. Nevertheless, only this much is certain: we are using more and more of this irreplaceable source and doing very little to conserve it.



"The heck with Volvo and Jaguar. I only drive Ford products made right here in the USA."

EXERCISE 423

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçe çeviriniz.

1. Some things have to be believed to be seen. —Ralph Hodgson
2. Foods that were previously seasonal may now be eaten at any time, and strange foods are available far from the countries where they are grown.
3. More than 30,000 drivers and front seat passengers are killed or seriously injured each year.
4. Up to the 1970's, not enough had been done to protect nature anywhere in the world.
5. High sugar intake has often been blamed for increasing the rates of such serious conditions as heart disease and diabetes.
6. Sometimes you have to be silent to be heard. —Stanislav Lee
7. A steadily accumulating body of evidence supports the view that cancers are caused by things that we eat, drink, breathe, touch or otherwise we are exposed to.
8. Accidents seldom "just happen," and many can be prevented.
9. Airborne asbestos fibers have been shown in the laboratory to trigger cancer.
10. There are normally more births than deaths, and this is known as a natural increase in population.

EXERCISE 424

Aşağıdaki parçayı Türkçe'ye çeviriniz.

Until 1845 and the invention of the telegraph, all communication was carried from place to place by individuals or their messengers. In other words, before the telegraph, the speed of communication was limited by the speed of transportation.

History is filled with examples of efforts to communicate news quickly, such as Pheidippides' twenty-two mile run to bring the news of Greek victory at Marathon.

Until 1876, most day-to-day information was communicated by letter, newspapers or conversation. The telephone was invented in 1876, only a little more than one hundred years ago. Today the telephone is taken for granted by much of the world. The telephone began as a novelty, became a necessity, and is now considered as an absolute right.

EXERCISE 425

Aşağıdaki parçada bulunan bütün edilgen yapıların altını çiziniz.

COMPUTERS

(1) In 1944, the first general-purpose computer, Mark I, was put into operation. (2) The first computer was electromechanical; it was very slow and very large. (3) In fact, all early computers were so large that several floors of a building were needed to house them.

(4) By the end of 1950s, computers were being designed to use transistors. (5) Transistors made them smaller, less expensive, more powerful, and more reliable. (6) Today, these are known as second-generation computers.

(7) Third-generation computers used "chips" to store the memory of the computer, but it wasn't until the silicon chip was designed that computers became truly small and affordable. (8) Computers with silicon chips are known as fourth-generation computers.

(9) Today all aspects of our lives are affected by computers. (10) Our phone calls are being directed by computers, our cars are being designed by computers, our mail is being sorted by computers, our bank balance is being calculated by computers, and our children are being taught by computers.

(11) All of these functions are performed by fourth-generation computers. (12) Fifth-generation computers, with artificial intelligence, are being developed and perfected now. (13) It remains to be seen how the fifth generation will affect our lives.

EXERCISE 426

Aşağıdaki tümceleri etken çatıya dönüştürünüz.

1. Food should always be kept in sanitary containers.
2. Much of the world's media are controlled by a handful of international companies.
3. Four thousand Vietnamese villagers were burned alive by the US soldiers.
4. World oil prices are not expected to rise significantly.
5. They have been hired to cater the food for the party Saturday night.
6. Population growth can be reduced by family planning programmes.
7. An intensive search was made to find the lost children.
8. His innocuous remark was mistaken for an insult.
9. A man's greatness can be measured by his enemies. —*Don Piatt*
10. The senator was known for very forceful rhetoric.
11. We were overpowered by the showy rhetoric of the speech.
12. If the workmanship is shoddy, the merchandise is likely to be returned.
13. Nothing great was ever achieved without enthusiasm. —*Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803-1882)*
14. The bearings don't have to be lubricated. They only have to be cleaned every few days.
15. Bad officials are elected by good citizens who do not vote.—*George Jean Nathan*
16. His laudable deeds will be remembered by all whom he aided.
17. The eclipse of the moon was seen in many parts of the United States.
18. The two agents were accused of espionage against the United States.
19. Everyone realizes that the world is inhabited by countless species of living organisms.
20. Urgent measures must be taken immediately to prevent an epidemic in the earthquake area.
21. Her books became less and less popular and after a time they were forgotten altogether.
22. Bosnian men were killed in front of their family, their wives, and their children.
23. Native Americans were pushed off their land and massacred.
24. It was found that the government's decision was disapproved by the people.
25. All the patients had been evacuated from the hospital by the time the enemy forces reached the area.

EXERCISE 427

Aşağıdaki tümceleri etken çatıya dönüştürünüz.

1. It has been known for over 40 years that active smoking is a cause of disease in the smoker.
2. Our environment is being polluted and poisoned by many artificial products and waste of all kinds.

3. Various measures to overcome the epidemic in the earthquake area have already been taken.
4. The recession of the troops from the combat area was completed in an orderly manner.
5. The house was built on a hilly site.
6. Unless the water reservoirs are purified, they are not fit for home use.
7. The building was erected in 1453 and has been restored three times since then.
8. The toothache was caused by an abscess in the gum.
9. The cause of the hotel fire is not known, but arson is suspected.
10. Knowledge can be acquired from different sources.
11. George Washington's august mansion is visited by millions of Americans every year.
12. He is held in high esteem by his peers.
13. That remark was meant to be facetious; don't take it seriously.
14. By the time a cure is found for AIDS, thousands of people will have died.
15. Only when the trees began to die in the area, was the problem of environmental pollution taken seriously.
16. The 100-year-old man was often asked for the secret to his longevity.
17. Education cannot be discussed without reference to the objectives and values of the community.
18. The serenity of the sleepy town was shattered by a tremendous explosion.
19. Whole Indian tribes were killed off by the USA army; nobody was left alive in these tribes.
20. During the first few years of the Space Age, hundreds of satellites were launched by Russia and the United States.
21. To date, no storage method for radioactive nuclear wastes has been found that is absolutely infallible.
22. After the earthquake, temporary shelters had to be provided for the residents.
23. He was caught with the stolen money.
24. Whatever chances of a settlement there are will be affected by the crisis.
25. The whole nation of Iraqi people are now being terrorized and murdered under imperial American military occupation.

"Let me guess ... You are Iraqi civilians
who have just been liberated by the US
Army. Welcome to heaven."





Aşağıdaki şiirde edilgen yapılara dikkat ediniz.

What's in a name?

by Peter D. Wilson

In the name of progress

Jews were ejected from their homes and exterminated
Africans were stolen from their homeland and enslaved
Native Americans were pushed off their land and massacred

In the name of conservation

Feral animals are ejected from our homes and exterminated
Endangered species are stolen from their homeland and enslaved
Predators are pushed off the land and massacred

In the name of freedom

Dissenters were beaten into submission
Japanese Americans were imprisoned in concentration camps
Soldiers were trained to kill on command

In the name of entertainment

Orangs and elephants are beaten into submission
Dolphins and seals are imprisoned in sea aquariums
Dogs and roosters are taught to lust for blood

In the name of religion

Witches were burned at the stake
Infidels were tortured on the rack
Virgins were sacrificed on the altar

In the name of science

The bodies of pigs are inflicted with severe burns
The eyes of rabbits are filled with caustic chemicals
The eyelids of newborn monkeys are sewn shut

In the name of arrogance

Humans have put their desires over the needs of others
Crimes of cruelty have been perpetrated ad nauseam
Suffering has been inflicted against human and animal, alike

ad nauseam= To a disgusting or ridiculous degree; to the point of nausea.



Chapter 45

THE CAUSATIVE

ETTİRGEN ÇATI



"It is my Dad's idea. He said Mr. Wilson should have his head examined."

Ettirgen çatı, bir işin başkasına yaptırdığını anlatmak için kullanılır. Aslında İngilizce'de ettirgen çatı için özel bir yapı kullanılmamaktadır. Tümçenin ettirgenliği doğrudan doğruya ettirgenlik anlamı üstlenen eylemlere dayanmaktadır. GET ve HAVE ettirgen eylemlerin en yaygın olanlarıdır.

ETTİRGEN ÇATININ KULLANILDIĞI TÜMCE KALIPLARI

Ettirgen çatıda kullanılan eylemler 3 tümce kalıbında kullanılmaktadır.

11

NP ¹	TR. VERB	NP ²	BARE INF
<i>They</i>	<i>will have</i>	<i>a mechanic</i>	<i>repair the car.</i>

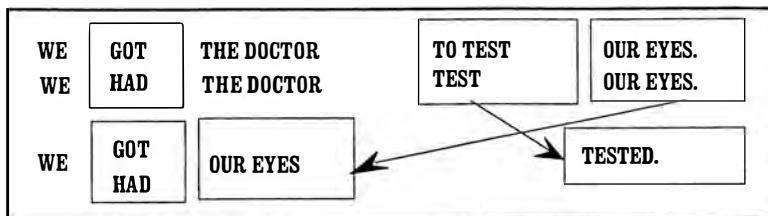
12

NP ¹	TR. VERB	NP ²	TO-INF
<i>They</i>	<i>will get</i>	<i>a mechanic</i>	<i>to repair the car.</i>

14

NP ¹	TR. VERB	NP ²	V-EN
<i>They</i>	<i>will get</i>	<i>the car</i>	<i>repaired.</i>
<i>They</i>	<i>will have</i>	<i>the car</i>	<i>repaired.</i>

Gerçekte 14. tümce kalibinin 11. ve 12. tümce kalıplarının edilgen şekli olduğunu göstermiştir.



Bu tümce kalıplarında kullanılan her eylem ettirgen eylem değildir.

<i>Everybody</i>	<i>saw</i>	<i>the old man</i>	<i>beaten up.</i>
<i>We</i>	<i>found</i>	<i>ourselves</i>	<i>surrounded by dogs.</i>



“Debbie is getting married again. We’re taking up a collection to have her head examined.”

ETTİRGEN ÇATININ 5 EYLEMİ

have	PATTERN 11	I had the barber cut my hair.
	PATTERN 14	I had my hair cut.
get	PATTERN 12	I got my son to repair the bicycle.
	PATTERN 14	I got the bicyle repaired.
make	PATTERN 11	She made her husband do the dishes.
	PATTERN 14	She made her complaints listened to.
want	PATTERN 12	I want you to do this job immediately.
	PATTERN 14	I want this job done immediately.
let	PATTERN 11	She let me go fishing with my friends.



MAKE eylemi bir zorlama göstermektedir.

I had my son clean his room.

I made my son clean his room.

ÖRNEKLERİ İNCELEYİNİZ.

He has his eyes checked twice a year. Yılda iki kez gözlerini muayene ettirir.

Her husband's gifts and endearments could not make her forget his earlier insolence. Eşinin armağanları ve güzel sözleri ona daha önceki kötü sözlerini unutturamadı.

They will have the businessman arrested for forgery. İşadamını sahtekarlıktan tutuklattıracaklar.

The Spanish had the Aztec children's ears or nose cut off to send to their families. İspanyollar, ailelerine göndermek üzere, Aztekli çocukların kulaklarını ve burunlarını kes蒂yorlardı.

The new Medicare project will have the poorest Americans pay more than before. Yeni Medicare projesi, en yoksul Amerikalıların eskisinden daha çok para ödemelerine yol açacak.

Jim is helping his family make ends meet by working as a waiter after school. Jack, okuldan sonra çalışarak, ailesinin bütçesini denkleştirmesine yardımcı oluyor.

His father lets him have his way in everything. Babası her konuda istedigini yapmasına izin veriyor.

All adults over the age of 20 should have their blood cholesterol tested every five years. Yirmi yaşın üstündeki yetişkinler beş yılda bir kolesterol düzeylerini kontrol ettermelidir.



EXERCISE 428**AFTER THE TRAFFIC ACCIDENT**

Jack had a minor traffic accident yesterday. He had been having a lot of trouble with his car anyway, so he decided to take it to Mike's Auto Repair Shop. Jim gave Mike a list of repairs to be done.

Örneği inceleyerek benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Change the oil.

Jim wants Mike to change the oil.

Jim wants to have the oil changed.

- | | |
|------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. Change the wipers. | 6. Replace the broken headlights. |
| 2. Tune the engine. | 7. Repaint the hood. |
| 3. Charge the battery. | 8. Check the tires. |
| 4. Adjust the brakes. | 9. Fix the broken rear window. |
| 5. Repair the heater. | 10. Fix the door locks. |

**EXERCISE 429**

Ayraç içinde verilenleri kullanarak ettirgen tümceler yapınız.

Mr. Taylor likes to read the morning paper while he is having breakfast. (*deliver his apartment every morning*)

He is going to have the paper delivered to his apartment every morning.

1. Betty has a terrible toothache. (*pull the first thing tomorrow*)
2. His computer freezes almost every day. (*repair*)
3. Jack's car broke down the last time he went on a trip! (*check*)
4. My typing is awful - and my handwriting is even worse. (*type the report*)
5. Your hair is much too long. (*cut*)
6. Those curtains are very dirty. Your mother will be upset when she arrives. (*wash*)
7. My driver's license runs out next week. (*renew*)
8. That dress is badly wrinkled, and I don't have an iron at home. (*press*)
9. Tim broke my favorite table. (*repair*)
10. I can't possibly figure out my income tax by myself! (*do*)

11. Unfortunately, central heating is very expensive to install and John doesn't have much money. (*John can't afford ...*)
12. Helen's tonsils have been causing her a lot of trouble. Tomorrow she's going to hospital for an operation. (*Tomorrow Helen ... remove*)
13. The label on my trousers says *dry clean only* so I never put them in the washing-machine. (*always ... have*)
14. Tommy is a keen photographer. He finished a roll of film and took it to the chemist's yesterday. (*develop*)
15. Jack has been suffering from eye strain recently, so he made an appointment to see an optician. (*examine*)

EXERCISE 430

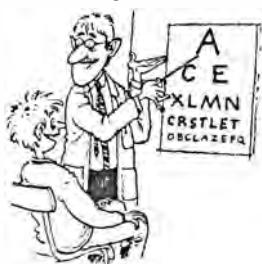
Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerde gösterildiği şekilde ettiğen yapıya dönüşürünüz.

My father had an expert teach me martial arts.

My father had me taught martial arts by an expert.

Why don't you get your mother to pull out that tooth?

Why don't you get that tooth pulled out?



Ali had his eyes tested.

1. Teddy got his father to repair his electric train.
2. We are going to have the gardener plant roses beside the porch.
3. My mother plans to have the electrician put in a new air-conditioner in the living room.
4. The president promised to have someone make the announcement at the next meeting.
5. We'll try to get the manager to sign the agreement this afternoon.
6. Why don't you get the carpenter to put in a couple of shelves over the kitchen sink?
7. I'll have my son adjust your machine tomorrow.
8. Never forget to have someone check the gas and oil before you start on your trip!
9. The shop promised to have someone deliver the computer the next morning.
10. The mayor decided to have some workmen tear down the old building.
11. You'd better get the mechanic to repair your car the next time you're downtown!
12. We'll have someone drive you to the airport in time for your plane.

EXERCISE 431

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları uygun bir anlam gözeterek *make*, *get*, *let*, ya da *have* ile doldurunuz.

I don't know why you are angry with me! I didn't make you lose your job!

1. One of these days he's going to have a bad accident! Can't you ____ him drive more sensibly?
2. I can't pick you up at the airport myself, but I'll try to ____ someone do that.
3. I'm no good at typing. Can't you ____ someone to help me?
4. The boy said he had a stomachache, so his mother ____ him to take some medicine.
5. You can't carry all those things by yourself. Wait just a minute , and I'll ____ someone to help you.
6. You have worked hard all this week, so I will ____ you have a day off tomorrow.
7. Your garden looks terrible. Why don't you ____ your lawn mowed?
8. Some mothers cannot tolerate children's going without food. They ____ their children eat no matter what.
9. He has been suffering from eyestrain for a long time, so he has finally decided to ____ his eyes checked.
10. If you ____ your furniture rearranged, your office might look more spacious.



"Valerie! I have hardly recognized you— now that
you have had your nose changed."

EXERCISE 432

Aşağıdaki tümceleri dikkatle okuyunuz ve *HAVE* eylemiyle örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Mrs. Taylor wanted the porters to remove the piano into the hall.

Mr. Taylor had the piano removed into the hall.

1. The captain wanted his men to shoot the wounded lion.
2. Mr. Taylor asked his secretary to put the document in the safe.

3. I wanted the builder to build a garage beside the house.
4. I had to authorize the surgeon to remove my appendix.
5. The knives would not cut, so Mrs. Taylor asked her husband to sharpen them.
6. Applicants for marriage licenses want a lab to test their blood for syphilis.
7. Jack takes his car to the garage for a service every six weeks.

EXERCISE 433

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **GET** veya **HAVE** eylemlerini kullanarak ettiğen yapıya dönüşüreniz.

His hair still needs cutting.

He hasn't had his hair cut yet.

1. The carpenter is going to fit a new lock on our front door this afternoon.
2. Jacklin usually has the supermarket deliver her groceries.
3. Simon's knee was X-rayed after the accident.
4. Brenda's eyes have never been tested before.
5. The Clean Company cleaned all our carpets for only 25 dollars.
6. We're having the plumber install a new shower tomorrow.



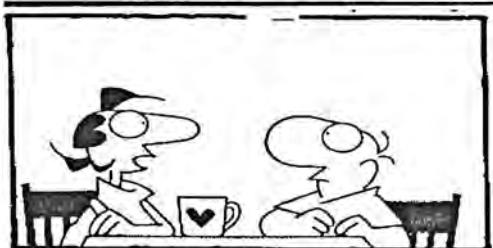
EXERCISE 434

GET eylemini kullanarak örnektekine benzer tümceler yapınız.

The mechanic adjusted the brakes for me.

I got the brakes adjusted.

1. The mechanic tuned the engine for me.
2. The beautician pierced her ears.
3. The shopkeeper developed my last roll of film.
4. My wife packed my bags for me.
5. My secretary sent the letter to my attorney for me.
6. She typed the contract for me.
7. My brother took care of the details for me.
8. She picked up my suit at the dry cleaner's for me.
9. My secretary made two hotel reservations for me.
10. She rearranged my furniture for me.



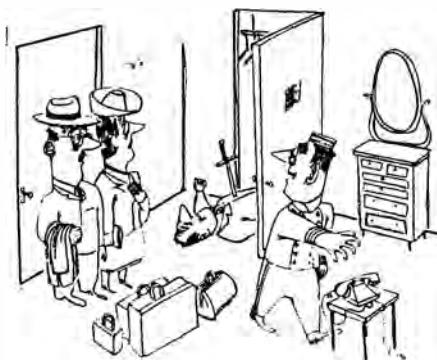
*When I die, I want my ashes scattered
wherever they will most annoy
your next wife.*

EXERCISE 435

Örneği inceleyerek verilen eylemlerle benzer tümceler yapınız.

*We had the chemist test a sample of the chemical. (have)
we had the chemical tested.*

1. The king had his men bring him the thief. (have)
2. The pop singer had his doctor perform an operation on his dog. (have)
3. Some women have their beauticians lift their faces. (have)
4. The old man had his guide take him to a watery place. (have)
5. The rich man had some craftsmen design a special crown. (have)
6. The manager told him to erase the faulty files. (want)
7. The scientist told the butcher to remove the thyroid gland of the animal and to pack it in ice. (want)
8. Women have beauticians do all sorts of things to them just to look beautiful. (have)



**"It is quite all right. We'll just
have him switched to another room."**

HAVE'in 3 Biçimi ve 4 İşlevi

	NP ¹	TR. VERB	NP ²	
PATTERN11	I	will have	someone	repair the car.
PATTERN13	I	won't have	you	yelling like that.
PATTERN14	I	had	my radio	stolen.



"And if you order now, I can have our product delivered to your room in five seconds."

1. ETTIRGEN ÇATI

HAVE'in kullanıldığı her üç kalıp ta ettipgenlik ifade edebilir.

Have someone fix the lights.

We can have that machine working.

Somebody must have the place cleaned.

2. İZİN VERME, GÖZ YUMMA, TAHAMMÜL ETME

Sadece 13. kalıp bu anlamda kullanılabilir. İzin verilmediğini göstermek üzere WILL NOT/WON'T kip belirteci kullanılabilir.

I won't have anybody treating me like that.

(Kimsenin bana böyle davranışına izin vermem.)

We won't have our experts abusing their privileges.

(Uzmanlarımızın ayrıcalıklarını kötüye kullanmalarına göz yummayız.)

I won't have my office turned into a bar.

I won't have insulting remarks.

(Hakaretlere göz yummam.)

3. NEDEN OLMA

Bu kullanımda HAVE, "neden olma" anlamındadır. GET eylemi de benzer bir anlamda kullanılabilir.

He soon had everybody laughing.

Don't get him talking about his new car. He will never stop.

4. BAŞINDAN GEÇME

HAVE, 14. tümce kalıbında, "başından geçme, başına gelme" anlamıyla da kullanılabilir.

She had all her money stolen.

(Bütün parası çalındı.)

One would not have his house burgled easily if he kept a good watchdog.

(İyi bir köpeğiniz olursa evinizin soyulması başınıza gelmez.)

She had her licence endorsed for reckless driving.

(Tehlikeli araba kullandığı için ehliyetine el konuldu.)

Several English kings had their heads cut off.

(Birkaç İngiliz kralınının kellesi uçurulmuştur.)

We had a number of officials assassinated by blood-thirsty Armenians.

(Gözlerini kan bürümüş Ermeniler birçok görevlimizi katletti.)



EXERCISE 436

Aşağıdaki soruları örnekte gösterildiği şekilde yanıtlayınız.

Jack had his tank filled up, didn't he? (mechanic)

Yes, he had the mechanic fill up his tank.

1. Fred had his pants ironed, didn't he? (*his wife*)
2. Mr. Taylor had his teeth checked, didn't he? (*Dr. Smith*)
3. He had some letters typed, didn't he? (*Barbara*)
4. She had her apartment fixed up, didn't she? (*her mother*)
5. Mabel got the bedroom painted, didn't she? (*her husband*)
6. Maria got her dress shortened, didn't she? (*tailor*)
7. He had a hole in his tooth and had it filled, didn't he? (*dentist*)
8. She had beautiful flowers planted in her garden, didn't she? (*gardener*)
9. He had his eyes examined, didn't he? (*Dr. Smith*)
10. He had some flowers sent to Barbara at the hospital, didn't he? (*florist*)

PART SEVEN

VERBALS

CHAPTER 46	Verbals	717
CHAPTER 47	Gerunds	724
CHAPTER 48	Infinitives	749
CHAPTER 49	Participles	771
CHAPTER 50	Comparison of Verbals	787

Chapter 46

VERBALS

EYLEMSİLER



☞ Eylemsiler, içtümceciklerin kısaltılmış şekillerini oluşturmaktadır.

To see is to believe.

Seeing is believing.

gerunds	ulaçlar
infinitives	eylemlilikler
participles	ortaçlar

Eylemsiler, İngilizce dilbilgisininin en sorunlu öğeleri olarak görülmektedir. Doğrusu eylemsilerin zorluğu, kendi özelliklerinden çok, onları açıklamakta kullanılan yaklaşımardan kaynaklanmaktadır.

EYLEMSİLER İLE İLGİLİ YANILGI

Eylemsileri, sözcük türleri ile karıştırmamak gereklidir. Dilbilgi kitaplarında verilen aşağıdaki tanımlar yanlıltıcı olabilir.

GERUND:	Eylemin ad olarak kullanılan -ing şekli
INFINITIVE:	Eylemin ad ya da sıfat olarak kullanılan to- 'lu veya yalnız şekli
PARTICIPLE:	Eylemin sıfat olarak kullanılan -ing ve -en şekli.

EYLEMSİLERLE İLGİLİ DİL GERÇEĞİ

VERBAL sözcüğü "eylem gibi kullanılan" anlamına gelmektedir. Bu nedenle de Türkçe karşılığının "eylemsi" olması uygun düşmektedir.

Eski dilciler eylemsileri, zaman gösterme özelliğini yitirmiş, fakat diğer özelliklerini koruyan eylemler olarak tanımlıyorlardı, yani, kimi "modern" dilcilerin aksine eylemsilerle ilgili gerçeğe yakın duruyorlardı. Eylemler biliindiği gibi, özne ve nesne alabilen, zarflarla nitelenebilen sözcüklerdir.

Yukarıdaki karikatürde erkek çocuğun söylediği tümçeye bakalım:

Falling out of the bed didn't hurt.

Bu tümçenin gerçekte iki ayrı "derin" tümçenin birleşmesinden oluştuğunu görebiliriz.

I fell out of the bed.

It didn't hurt.

Bir tümçenin, bir başka tümçenin öznesi olmak üzere eylemsi öbegine dönüşürlmesinin iki yolu vardır.

My falling out of the bed didn't hurt.

For me to fall out of the bed didn't hurt.



MY (*falling out of the bed*) öbeginin öznesidir.

FOR ME (*to fall out of the bed*) öbeginin öznesidir.

Bağlamdan anlaşılan MY ve FOR ME özneleri atılabilir.

Falling out of the bed didn't hurt.

To fall out of the bed didn't hurt.

Bu nedenle

TO SEE IS TO BELIEVE.

SEEING IS BELIEVING.

tümceleri aynı anlama gelmektedir.

BİR ÖRNEK DAHA

Driving an old car is dangerous.

Bu tümçenin öznesi nedir? **driving an old car**

Yani, özne olarak kullanılan eylemsinin kendisi değil, kısaltılmış iç tümçeciğin tamamıdır. "Travelling is fun", "Smoking is dangerous" gibi tümceleri örnek göstererek "gerund"ların ad gibi kullanıldığını söylemek yaniltıcı olacaktır. Bu tümceleri "Travelling in Turkey is fun" ve "Smoking expensive cigars is what he likes most" şeklinde getirdiğimizde, açıklamaların yanlış olduğu hemen görülüyor.

Oysa gerçek, kısaltılmış bir içtümceciğin özne olarak kullanılmasıdır. İşte açıklaması:

Someone drives an old car. It is dangerous.
For someone to drive an old car is dangerous.
Someone's driving an old car is dangerous.

Gördüğü gibi, DRIVE eyleminin öznesi SOMEONE'dır. Belirsiz zamir olan SOMEONE atılabilir.

To drive an old car is dangerous.
Driving an old car is dangerous.

EYLEMSİLERİN ÜÇ TÜRÜ VARDIR.

1. Gerunds	Ulaçlar
2. Infinitives	Eylemlikler
3. Participles	Ortaçlar

GERUND ve INFINITIVE ÖBEKLERİN "SIMPLE" VE "PERFECT" ŞEKİLLERİ VARDIR

	SIMPLE	PERFECT
GERUND	punishing someone	having punished someone
INFINITIVE	to punish someone to be punishing someone	to have punished someone to have been punishing someone

"Perfect" eylemsiler gösterilen işin tamamlandığını ifade ederler. Aşağıdaki örneklerde "Perfect" eylemsilerin nasıl kullanılabildiğini görüyoruz.

A classic is a book that everybody wants to have read but nobody wants to read. –Mark Twain

(Bir klasik herkesin OKUMUŞ OLMA Yİ istediği fakat kimsenin OKUMAK İSTEMEDİĞİ bir kitaptır.)

It is better to have loved and lost than never to have loved at all. – Alfred Tennyson

(Sevip de kaybetmiş olmak hiç sevmemiş olmaktan daha iyidir.)

Aşağıdaki örneği de inceleyelim.

Never to sin is the unpardonable sin.	Hiç günah işlememek bağışlanmaz bir günahdır.
Never to have sinned is the unpar-donable sin.	Hiç günah işlememiş olmak bağışlanmaz bir günahdır.

GERUND VE INFINITIVE ÖBEKLER EDİLGEN YAPIDA KULLANILABİRLER

	SIMPLE	PERFECT
GERUND	<i>being punished</i>	<i>having been punished</i>
INFINITIVE	<i>to be punished</i>	<i>to have been punished</i>

GERUND ÖBEKLERİNİN ÖZNELERİ "OBJECT PRONOUN" YA DA "POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVE" OLARAK GÖRÜLEBİLİR

GERUNDS			
		having trusted	someone
		having been trusted	by someone
(his) (him)	(not)	TRUSTING	someone
		being trusted	by someone

INIFINITIVE ÖBEKLERİNİN ÖZNELERİ "OF/FOR+OBJECT PRONOUN" OLARAK GÖRÜLEBİLİR

INFINITIVES					
(of) (for)	him	(not) TO	have trusted	someone	
			have been trusted	by someone	
TRUST	SOMEONE				
		be trusting		someone	
		be trusted		by someone	

BİRKAÇ ÖRNEK DAHA

Gerund ve infinitive öbekleri yukarıdaki örneklerde tümcelerin özneleri olarak kullandık. Şimdi tümcenin nesnesi olarak kullanıldığı örnekler verelim.

We will watch all the events of the Olympics. We have planned *it*.
We have planned to watch all the events of the Olympics.

We watch the athletes perform. We always enjoy *it*.
We enjoy watching the athletes perform.

Watching the athletes perform öbeğinin tümcenin öznesi olarak kullanıldığı bir bağlam düşünelim.

We watch the athletes perform. It is always a great thrill.
Watching the athletes perform is always a great thrill.

Edilgen bir kullanım örneği verelim.

To be chosen as an Olympian must be the biggest thrill in any athlete's life.

Edilgen ve "perfect" infinitive örneği verelim.

To have been chosen as an Olympian must be the biggest thrill in any athlete's life.

To have been working for a big company at his young age was quite an accomplishment.

Gerund öbegi bir ilgicin de nesnesi olabilir.

She was thrilled about having been chosen as an Olympian.

GERUND ÖBEKLERİNİN İLGİNÇ KULLANIMI

1. **Having been chosen as an Olympian** greatly pleased her.
(Olimpiyat yarışmacısı olarak seçilmek onu çok memnun etti.)
2. **Having been chosen as an Olympian**, she decided to exercise even more.
(Olimpiyat yarışmacısı olarak seçilince daha da fazla antrenman yapmaya karar verdi.)

Bu örnekler, gerundlerin eylemin ad olarak kullanılan şekli olarak tanımlanmasının ne kadar yaniltıcı olabileceğini bir kez daha kanıtlıyor.

EXERCISE 437

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte görüldüğü gibi yeniden yazınız.

Everyone should exercise. It is advisable.

For everyone to exercise is advisable.

To exercise is advisable.

Everyone's exercising is advisable.

Exercising is advisable.

1. People watch TV. It is a waste of time.
2. Someone may live in such a big house. It doesn't make sense.
3. Someone may come to the meeting in pajamas. It would be indecent.
4. Someone may marry at a very young age. It would be a mistake.
5. Someone may give her son too much pocket money. It is unwise.
6. Some people may trust the media. It is foolish.
7. Some people may consider the CIA a good organization. It is a fatal mistake.
8. Some people may consider the British Empire a blood-sucking power. It is completely justified.
9. Some officials may take bribes. It is immoral.
10. Untrained people may play with guns. It is dangerous.
11. Some people skate on thin ice. It may be dangerous.
12. We will take the short cut. It will save us five miles.

EXERCISE 438

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde verbal (eylemci) öbeklerini bulunuz.

1. Building a house is a complicated process.
2. Living through a crisis can teach a person to have more courage.
3. Swimming in a crowded pool may be dangerous.
4. Most Americans do not favour the U.S.'s influencing the outcomes of elections in other countries.
5. For her to change her job would be a good idea.
6. For governments to prevent corruption is almost impossible.
7. Buying a computer may change all your life.
8. For her to argue with her husband will make matters only worse.
9. The brain is used for controlling the body.
10. Being in a good state of health includes mental as well as physical health.
11. Water is necessary for transporting the other food materials to the tissues and for the removal of wastes.
12. Shopping early in the day, before the supply has been picked over, is a good idea.
13. Planning what you are going to buy before going to the store is a good habit.
14. Buying bulk food rather than packaged food is more economical.
15. Serving raw apples with the skins on is advisable because without the skin apples darken quickly.

PARTICLES

Participle'lar gerçekle sıfat içtümceciğinin kısa şekilleridir.

SIFAT İÇTÜMCECİĞİNDE KULLANILAN EYLEM TÜRÜ PARTICIPLE'LARIN YAPISINI BELİRLER

- I. **Sıfat içtümceciğinin eylem öbeği BE+SIFAT şeklinde.**
 People may make discoveries every year.
 These discoveries may be fascinating.
 People make *discoveries which are fascinating*.
 People make *fascinating discoveries*.
Fascinating discoveries are made every year.
- II. **Sıfat içtümceciği edilgen yapıda. Dolayısıyla eylem öbeği BE+V3 şeklinde.**
 Homeowners were devastated by the earthquake.
 Homeowners clung together for support.
Homeowners who were devastated by the earthquake clung together for support.
Devastated homeowners clung together for support.

III. Sıfat içtümceciğinde eylem öbeği VERB + ADVERB yapısında

The woman is talking loudly.

She is my aunt.

The woman *who is talking loudly* is my aunt.

The woman *talking loudly* is my aunt.

IV. Sıfat içtümceciğinde eylem öbeği VERB + OBJECT yapısında

A file seems to be missing.

It contains important information.

A file *which contains important information* seems to be missing.

A file *containing important information* seems to be missing.

EXERCISE 439

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde participle'i bulun ve içtümceciğin özgün şeklini yazınız.

The pouring rain halted all traffic.

The rain which was pouring halted all traffic.

1. Gossiping housewives cause a lot of unrest in the neighbourhood.
2. The pen is mightier than the spoken word.
3. The car was highly polished, but it had a cracked block.
4. The carefully labeled package was missent to Ankara.
5. The old man holding the keys was the manager.
6. You cannot expect a good grade for this poorly planned composition..
7. Statistics released by the Census Bureau affect many aspects of business and politics.
8. Clothes designed in İstanbul are now affecting the fashion industry.
9. Unnoticed before, this detail changed the entire interpretation of the experiment.
10. Packages returned after holidays are a headache for store clerks.

**Hollywood's
ROMANTICIZED OBJECTS**



Chapter 47

GERUNDS

ulaçlar



Is running good for your health?

Yukarıdaki tümcenin öznesi RUNNING'dir. Bu nedenle birçok dilbilgisi kitabının, gerund'ları "eylemin adı gibi kullanılan -ing" şekli olarak tanımladığını söylemişik. Bu tanımın aşağıdaki gibi tümceler için geçerli olmadığını da belirtmişik.

Running early in the morning is good for your health

Gerund'lar, diğer eylemsiler gibi, derin yapıdaki bir tümcenin yüzey yapıda başka tümcenin bir öğesi olarak kullanılan şeklidir. Bu özelliği EMBEDDING bölümünde göstermeye çalışmıştık.

Aslında, tümcelerin öznesi ya da nesnesi olan GERUND değil, GERUND PHRASE'dır.

Eylemsileri doğru anlamak, onların kullanımlarını kolayca öğrenmek için yukarıdaki yargıyı anlamak gerekiyor. Yargıyı açıklayacak örnekler verelim.

Something	makes you healthy.
You eat well-balanced meals Your eating well-balanced meals	makes you healthy.

Göründüğü gibi, tümcenin öznesi olan SOMETHING yerine bir tümce koyduğumuzda aşağıdaki değişiklikler oluşuyor.

You eat well-balanced meals.

It makes you healthy.



YOUR EATING WELL-BALANCED MEALS makes you healthy.

YOU belirsiz zamirse, yani "herhangi birisi"
anlamında ise atılabilir.

~~YOUR EATING WELL-BALANCED MEALS~~ makes you healthy.

Running is good for your health tümcesinin yapısını aynı şekilde açıklayalım.

1	Something	is good for your health.
2	You run.	It is good for your health.
3	YOUR RUNNING	is good for your health.
4	RUNNING	is good for your health.

GOOD FOR YOUR HEALTH öbeğindeki *your*, *YOU RUN* tümcesiyle uyum gösteriyor. Buradaki *YOU* aslında belirsiz bir adılı gösterdiginden atılabilir.

RUNNING

is good for health.



"No, opening and closing your refrigerator door 50 times a day does not qualify as exercise."

Benefit of Knowing Another Language

Two mice sat in their hole watching Cat lurk outside. "I know how to make Cat go away," said the first mouse. "How?" the second mouse asked in surprise.

"Watch! Bow, wow!!!" barked the first mouse. Peering through their hole in the wall, they saw Cat running away in fear.

"Ah, I see the benefit of knowing another language!" said the second mouse.

Ulaçların yapısal görünüşleri aşağıdaki çizelgede gösterilmektedir.

GERUNDS

SIMPLE

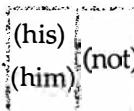
ACTIVE
PASSIVE

hearing someone
being heard

PERFECT

having heard someone
having been heard

Gerund öbeklerinin özneleri iyelik sıfatı ya da nesne zamiri şeklinde görülebilir. Gerund öbeği şeklinde dönüştürülen özgün tümce olumsuz ise, gerund öbeğinde *NOT* kullanılır. Aşağıdaki çizelgede gerund öbekleriyle ilgisi olan bütün yapılar gösterilmektedir.

GERUNDS			
PERFECT			having punished someone having been punished
	SIMPLE	punishing someone being punished	
SIMPLE			

SIMPLE VE PERFECT GERUNDS

- A. Perfect gerunds her durumda söz konusu eylemin gerçekleştiğini ifade eder.

(Öğrenmeye çalışıyor.)	He appreciates <i>learning</i> how to use a computer.
------------------------	---

(Öğrenmiş.)	He appreciates <i>having learned</i> how to use a computer.
-------------	---

- B. Simple gerunds kimi durumlarda perfect gerunds gibi tamamlanmış işleri ifade edebilir.

He recalls *taking computer courses*.

He recalls *having taken computer courses*.

Being selected to receive the scholarship was an honour.

Having being selected to receive the scholarship was an honour.

- C. İyelik sıfatları ve NOT hem simple hem de perfect gerund phrase'lerde kullanılır.

Your not applying to college on time can jeopardize your chance of being admitted.

We recall her not being very enthusiastic about being a teacher.

Ali's having being nominated treasurer was a surprise to everyone.

We appreciate Dağlarca's having been cited as an outstanding poet.

EXERCISE 440

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerde gösterildiği gibi gerund öbekler kullanarak birleştiriniz.

The Belgium company dumps toxic waste in our town. It does not count as "giving something back to the community".

The Belgium company's dumping toxic waste in our town does not count as "giving something back to the community".

Holland openly supports Turkish terrorists. It irritates most Turks.

Holland's openly supporting Turkish terrorists irritates most Turks.

1. The old man lives a luxurious life. It surprises some people.
2. He obtained a college degree. It surprised everybody including himself.
3. John was selected to receive the scholarship. It pleased his parents.
4. The student has been cited as an outstanding student. He appreciates it.
5. Some people eat raw oysters. It is disgusting.
6. She repeated the whole story. It took more than an hour.
7. Jack helped all his neighbours. It won him many friends.
8. Helen kept talking to her friends. This angered her teacher.
9. He restricted the intake of cholesterol. This prevented a heart attack.
10. Tom asked for a raise. This made things even worse.

GERUND'LAR TÜMCE İÇİNDE ÇEŞİTLİ İŞLEVLER ÜSTLENMEKTEDİR

Gerundlerin kullanımını ayrıntılı bir şekilde gözden geçirmeden önce en yaygın kullanımlarını gösterelim.

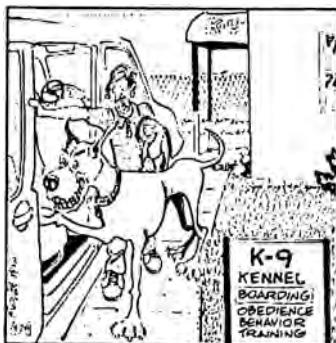
Tümce Öznesi	Collecting rare books is his only interest in life. Being given a rare book makes him the happiest man in the world. My going to college was quite expensive for my parents. America's bombing civilians in Afghanistan is simply indefensible.
BE Tümleci	His only interest in life is collecting rare books.
Tümce nesnesi	He enjoys collecting rare books. He enjoys being asked about rare books.
İlgeç nesnesi	He only talks about collecting rare books. He only talks about being asked to give talks about rare books.
Appositive	His only interest in life, collecting rare books, keeps him busy all the time. Germany's long-lived flirtation with terrorism, supporting terrorists of all kinds, has borne fruit in the form of destruction of the Twin Towers in New York.

GERUNDS

1	<p>Tümcenin öznesi olabilir.</p> <p><i>Learning English is enjoyable.</i></p> <p><i>Playing with guns is dangerous.</i></p> <p>Gerund öbeginin kendi öznesi bulunabilir.</p> <p><i>Her cleaning the house every other day is not necessary.</i></p> <p>Gerund öbegi olumsuz olabilir.</p> <p><i>Not eating properly is risking your health.</i></p>
2	<p>Tümcenin nesnesi olabilir.</p> <p><i>She enjoys learning English.</i></p> <p><i>He denied breaking the window.</i></p> <p>Gerund öbeginin kendi öznesi bulunabilir.</p> <p><i>We don't understand his/him living in a house like that.</i></p> <p>Gerund öbegi olumsuz olabilir.</p> <p><i>We don't understand his/him not accepting the job offer.</i></p>
3	<p>BE eyleminin tamamlayıcısı olabilir.</p> <p><i>Seeing is believing.</i></p> <p><i>Happiness is getting what you want.</i></p> <p><i>Happiness is not having anything to worry about.</i></p>
4	<p>Tümce Kalbi 13 ile kullanılır.</p> <p><i>We watched them dancing.</i></p>
5	<p>İlgeçlerin nesnesi olarak kullanılabilir.</p> <p><i>Accidents are usually caused by driving carelessly.</i></p> <p><i>Thank you for helping me.</i></p> <p><i>We believe in eating well.</i></p> <p><i>He is afraid of losing his job.</i></p>
6	<p>USE/GOOD/WORTH ile kullanılır.</p> <p><i>It is no good crying over spilt milk.</i></p> <p><i>It is no use trying to persuade her.</i></p> <p><i>This book is not worth reading.</i></p>
7	<p>Have fun / difficulty/ trouble ile kullanılır.</p> <p><i>She had trouble explaining the problem.</i></p> <p><i>We had great fun playing chess.</i></p>
8	<p>THERE IS NO ile kullanılır.</p> <p><i>There is no stopping him.</i></p> <p><i>There is no denying the fact that we have failed.</i></p>
9	<p>BUSY sıfatından sonra kullanılır.</p> <p><i>She is busy doing the spring cleaning.</i></p>
10	<p>WANT ve NEED eylemleriyle edilgenlik ifade edebilir.</p> <p><i>Our apartment badly needs painting.</i></p>
11	<p>Adverbial Clause'ların kısa şekli olarak kullanılır.</p> <p><i>Having very little money, Jack found life hard and monotonous.</i></p> <p><i>After considering the matter carefully, we have decided to abandon the project.</i></p>

1 2	BYile bir işin nasıl yapıldığını belirtir. <i>He became a millionaire by selling his paintings.</i>
1 3	AND 'li tümce kısaltması olarak kullanılır. <i>She was in the kitchen preparing breakfast. He walked towards home singing</i>
1 4	Absolute phrase olarak kullanılır. <i>The river being in danger of flooding, all the residents were evacuated to higher ground.</i>
1 5	Tümce niteleyicisi olarak kullanılabilir. <i>Putting it mildly, his remarks are not very interesting.</i>
1 6	Belli öbeklerde ilgeç olarak kullanılan TO'yu izleyebilir. <i>I am looking forward to playing chess with you.</i>
1 7	OF ve BY öbeklerinde adlaşmış olarak kullanılabilir. <i>The shooting of the rare birds has outraged the community. The broadcasting by our station comes from the top of a building.</i>
1 8	Adlaşmış olarak kullanılabilir. <i>Reading is to the mind, what exercise is to the body. –Francis Bacon Teaching should be such that what is offered is perceived as a valuable gift and not as a hard duty . –Albert Einstein</i>
1 9	Birleşik adların yapımında kullanılır. <i>I bought my son a pair of running shoes.</i>

1. Tümcenin öznesi olarak



“Making a trainer cry is nothing to be proud of.”

Taking vitamins prevents illness.

Buying a house requires careful planning.

Jogging on a regular basis works most of the major muscle groups.

Having a tiger for a pet will obviously cause problems.

Going to work today took all my energy.

Fighting for a losing cause is depressing.

Gliding is flying without engine power.

Having written a good book is something to boast about.
Preparing for a debate can be both difficult and enjoyable.
Winning a debate depends on good preparation and strong delivery.
Putting off an easy thing makes it hard, and *putting off a hard one* makes it impossible. —George H. Lonmer

EXERCISE 441

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde özne olarak kullanılmış gerund öbeklerini bulunuz.

1. Gambling compulsively is the child of avarice and the father of despair.
2. Going to school does not make a person educated.
3. Giving money and power to government is like giving whiskey and car keys to teenage boys. —P.J. O'Rourke
4. Giving one's heart away to a person who does not appreciate it can cause great sorrow.
5. Examining the ingredients of processed foods before buying can help protect consumers and their families.
6. Reading books is sometimes an ingenious device for avoiding thought.— A. Helps
7. Using biological weapons must be prevented at all costs.
8. Saying that you are sorry won't help you this time.
9. Blowing out the other fellow's candle won't make yours shine any brighter.
10. Reading mystery stories is his favorite entertainment.
11. Wearing headphones for just an hour will increase the bacteria in your ear by 700 times.
12. Hitler's attacking Poland on September 1, 1939, launched World War II.

EXERCISE 442

Aşağıdaki tümceleri gerund öbekleri kullanarak birleştiriniz.

Some people drive recklessly. It can get them into trouble with the law.

Driving recklessly can get people into trouble with the Law.

1. Dr. Kimble treats poor people free. It is a very good idea.
2. Some people write good essays. It requires concentration and skill.
3. He works hard every day. It keeps him happy.
4. Some people live in London. It is expensive.
5. Some people have only one door key. It is a bit risky.
6. Some people travel by plane. It is faster than any other forms of travel.
7. We climbed the hill. It left us out of breath.
8. Some people go hiking. It is an enjoyable form of exercise.
9. They use less hot water. It will lower the gas bill.
10. She won the national championship. That was her most important achievement.
11. He took a poorly paid job. It was a mistake.
12. They are breeding dogs. It may turn out to be a profitable business.

2. Tümcenin nesnesi olarak



"And **STOP** telling everybody
that you only cost me ten pence."

Gerund Phrase'leri nesne olarak alabilen belli eylemler vardır.

The teacher **recommended** studying hard.

The student did not even **consider** taking a course in statistics.

We **resented** Lilian's not inviting us to the party.

The Third World countries **resent** the US's interfering with their internal affairs.

The new legislation **outlawed** driving a car without a seatbelt.

Everybody in our village **avoids** passing the cemetery at night.

A critic is a legless man who **teaches** running. —Channing Pollock

GERUND'LARI NESNE OLARAK ALABİLEN EYLEMLER

admit	deny	include	practice	save
advocate	detest*	intend*	prefer*	spend time
advise*	dislike*	involve	prevent	can't stand
allow*	dread	justify	quit	stop**
anticipate	enjoy	keep	recall*	suggest
appreciate	escape	like*	recollect	teach
avoid	excuse	mention	recommend	tolerate
can't help	fancy	mind	remember**	try**
complete	finish	miss	represent	understand
consider	forget**	permit*	resent	
defer	forgive	plan	resist	
delay	imagine	postpone	risk	



* ve ** işaretli eylemler kendilerine özgü özelliklerile Chapter 50'de incelenmektedir.



Bu eylemler sadece gerund'larla kullanılır.

admit, appreciate, avoid, can't help, consider, delay, deny, detest, dislike, enjoy, finish, fond of, give up, keep, keep on, mind, miss, postpone, practice, put off, quit, recall, recommend, regret, resist, risk, stop (to quit), suggest, tolerate.

ÖRNEKLER

admit	The thief admitted stealing the money.
anticipate	I don't anticipate having any difficulty.
appreciate	Mary would appreciate hearing from you.
advise	We don't advise working alone.
avoid	After their quarrel, she has avoided meeting him.
advocate	The plan advocates widening this road.
can't help	We couldn't help admiring her.
consider	John has already considered continuing his studies.
continue	He will continue studying.
defer	Please defer paying the bill until after January.
delay	He delayed writing the letter until the last minute.
deny	When questioned, the boy denied cheating on the exam.
detest	How I detest studying! How I detest her singing.
enjoy	After a hectic week they enjoyed spending a day at home.
escape	By some miracle George escaped being hurt in the fight.
fancy	I don't fancy watching any show tonight.
finish	He had barely finished putting his room in order when the lights went out.
forgive	I cannot forgive your not writing to me.
imagine	I cannot imagine doing that again!
keep (continue)	Jennie is so homesick she keeps hoping for a letter from home.
mind (dislike)	I do not mind working this summer.
miss	Due to the traffic jam, she missed catching her usual bus.
postpone	Jack had to postpone leaving for college.
practice	Please practice writing that exercise again.
prevent	Nothing can prevent John's talking in class.
quit	Quit chatting and carry on with your work.
resent	Joan resents working so hard.
resist	She cannot resist buying every dress she sees.
risk	I would not risk cheating during an exam.
stop	Mr. Miller stopped explaining the lesson when the students got too noisy.
suggest	I suggest having a cup of coffee before we leave.
try (experiment)	Please try solving the problem by yourself.
understand	I really cannot understand his doing something like that.

NESNE DURUMUNDAN BULUNAN GERUND ÖBEKLERİNİN ÖZNELERİ

You pay too much attention to details. We don't like it.
We don't like your paying too much attention to details.

Your paying too much attention to details öbeği, LIKE eyleminin nesnesi olarak kullanılmaktadır.



"Mr. Winslow! we don't
mind **you** browsing, but..."

Gerçekte *Your eating well-balanced meals will make you healthy* tümcesini incelerken, iyelik sıfatlarının gerund phrase'lerin doğal ögesi olduğunu, iyelik sıfıtı, belirsiz bir kişiyi gösteriyorsa doğal olarak atıldığını söylemiştık. Burada çoğu zaman iyelik sıfatını gerektiren eylemleri gösteriyoruz.

Iyelik sıfıtı yerine nesne zamiri de kullanılabilir.

I can't understand **his** doing that.
I can't understand **him** doing that.

He tried to stop **my** hitting her.
I can't stand **your** doing that.

can't bear can't prevent can't stand	don't like dislike excuse forgive	imagine insist on mind	object to resent stop understand
--	--	------------------------------	---

I dislike him/his saying that, but it is useless trying to stop him.



Özne ile iyelik sıfıtı aynı kimseyi gösteriyorsa iyelik sıfıtı doğal olarak atılmak zorundadır.
I can't stand her singing
I can't stand singing.

3. BE eyleminin tamamlayıcısı olarak

The worst crime is *murdering a human being*.

Visiting Istanbul in spring is *seeing Turkey at its best*.

The most surprising thing was *John being elected chairman*.

Speaking without thinking is *shooting without taking an aim*.

The successful speaker's secret is *knowing how to manipulate the audience's response.*

Absent-mindedness is *searching for the horse you are riding.* –Russian proverb

Seeking to know is only too often *learning to doubt.* –A. Deshoulières

Burial is *being put to bed with a shovel.*

Loneliness is *knowing the television schedules by heart.* –Bill Vaughan

Frustration is *not having anyone to blame but yourself.*

The most important single ingredient in the formula of success is *knowing how to get along with people.* –T. Roosevelt

Kindness is *loving people more than they deserve.* –Joseph Joubert

What really matters to me is *breaking the local club records.*



"The best thing about running away from home is running back home again."

4. 13. Tümce Kalıbü ile

Duyu eylemleri 13. tümce kalıbında gerundlarla ve 11. Tümce Kalıbında "bare infinitive"lerle kullanılmaktadır.

feel	hear	notice	observe	overhear	see	watch
We	saw		Jack	eat the cake. eating the cake.		

GERUND yapısı, işin yapılmışken görüldüğünü bildirir, *BARE INFITIVE* ise işin tamamlandığını gösterir.

We saw Jack *eating the cake.* Pastayı yerken gördük.

We saw Jack *eat the cake.* Pastayı yediğini (bitirdiğini) gördük.

13. Tümce Kalıbında kullanılan başka eylemler de bulunmaktadır.

Do you remember him saying that?

We could not stop him getting into mischief.

This news will start him thinking.

I cannot stand him making such silly remarks.

We may call that putting the cart before the horse.

That may be called putting the cart before the horse.

5. İlgeçlerin nesnesi olarak

İlgeçler kendilerinden sonra ad kullanılmasını gereklili kılan sözcüklerdir. Bu nedenle ilgeçleri bir eylemsi izlemek durumundaysa, bunun ulaşması gerekmektedir. İlgeçler, 4 ayrı şekilde görülmektedir.

- A. Bağımsız ilgeçler, bir başka sözcüğe bağlı olmadan tümce içinde belli ilişkileri belirlemek üzere bulunmaktadır. *After* ve *before*'un gerçekten zarf içtümiceklerinin kısaltılmış biçimlerini gerçekleştirdiğine dikkat ediniz.

after	<i>After putting the country's finances in order, the minister turned his attention to foreign affairs.</i>
before	<i>Before coming to an agreement, they had a long discussion.</i>
despite	<i>Despite having more arable land per person than the USA, some developing countries are unable to feed themselves.</i>
for	<i>Reading is sometimes an ingenious device for avoiding thought.</i> —Arthur Helps <i>There are three rules for writing a novel. Unfortunately, no one knows what they are.</i> —W. Somerset Maugham
from	<i>I'll learn more from listening.</i>
in	<i>I think he is making a big mistake in putting it off until next week.</i> <i>In helping the poor countries of the world, the rich ones are discharging a moral duty.</i>
in spite of	<i>The earnings of women are well below those of men in spite of diminishing educational differences between men and women.</i>
instead of	<i>Live truth instead of professing it.</i> —Elbert Hubbard
like	<i>To read without reflecting is like eating without digesting.</i> —Bacon
through	<i>He caught a cold through going out without a raincoat.</i>
without	<i>He who accepts evil without protesting against it is really cooperating with it.</i> — Henry David Thoreau

B. EYLEM + İLGEÇ öbeklerini de ulaşlar izler.

Aşağıda eylem+ilgeç öbeklerine örnekler sunuyoruz.

<i>complain</i>	<i>about</i>
<i>grumble</i>	
<i>rant</i>	
<i>talk</i>	
<i>think</i>	
<i>warn s.o.</i>	
<i>worry</i>	

<i>apologize</i>	<i>for</i>
<i>compensate</i>	
<i>punish s.o.</i>	
<i>reward s.o.</i>	
<i>not care</i>	

<i>prevent s.o.</i>	<i>from</i>
<i>stop s.o.</i>	

<i>believe</i>	i n
<i>persist</i>	
<i>succeed</i>	

<i>accuse s.o.</i>	o f
<i>talk</i>	
<i>think</i>	

<i>congratulate s.o.</i>	o n
<i>insist</i>	

<i>object</i>	t o
<i>look forward to</i>	

<i>warn</i>	a gainst

<i>benefit</i>	b y

She *benefits* by exercising every day.

We *believe* in eating well.

Her husband *insists on* her cleaning the house every other day.

People who *talk of* outlawing the atomic bomb are mistaken—what needs to be outlawed is war. —Leslie Richard Groves

C. SIFAT+İLGEÇ öbeklerini ulaşırız.

angry	a b o u t
anxious	
crazy	
depressed	
enthusiastic	
happy	
pessimistic	
puzzled	
serious	
worried	

good	a t
bad	
lucky	
unlucky	

responsible	f o r
sorry	

afraid	o f
ashamed	
aware	
capable	
envious	
fond	
proud	
sick	
suspicious	
tired	

interested	i n

keen	o n

He is afraid of losing his job.

He who is afraid of doing too much always does too little.

He is sorry for being late.

He is worried about getting into trouble.

D. AD+OF öbeklerini ulaşırız.

the difficulty of finding an honest politician

the problem of feeding the world's hungry peoples

the value of learning self-defense

the necessity of learning how to survive in the business world
the effects of polluting our seas

A budget is just *a method of worrying* before you spend money, as well as afterward.

Culture is *the habit of being pleased with the best and knowing why.*

—Henry Van Dyke

A diploma saves the employer *the cost of screening candidates.*

EXERCISE 443

Verilen seçeneklerden uygun olanını seçiniz.

1. (*Creating/The creation*) of new jobs in this community has greatly helped the economy.
2. (*To explain/The explanation*) my position would take a great deal of time.
3. (*Eliminating/The elimination*) toxic wastes from the environment is crucial to the future health of our children.
4. (*To consume/The consumption*) electrical energy without replenishing it is dangerous.
5. (*To generate/The generation*) of some new ideas by new people will greatly enhance our marketing strategy.
6. Your teacher's (*recommendation/recommending*) was mailed to the college yesterday.

6. USE, GOOD, WORTH, DRAG adlarından sonra

It is no	good use	trying to help him.
It is not	worth	trying to help him.
It is	a drag	having to make new friends again.

Only a life lived for others is worth living. —Albert Einstein

No point harm in kalıplasmaşmış olarak kullanılır.

There is no point in discussing the question any further.

There is no harm in drinking a little coffee.

It is no use yapısı **it is useless** yapısı ile de karşılanabilir.

It is useless trying to help him.

- HAVE eylemini izleyen FUN, TROUBLE, DIFFICULTY adlarıyla ve SPEND TIME yapısından sonra

have fun	We had fun <u>playing</u> in the garden.
have trouble	I wish people who have trouble communicating would just shut up. —Tom Lehrer
have difficulty	The problem is that the student had <u>difficulty reading</u> .

Modern medicine is so advanced that even doctors have difficulty keeping up with their own profession.

One who is accustomed to city noise might have trouble sleeping on vacation in the mountains without the background sounds of traffic.

Half our life is spent trying to find something to do with the time we have rushed through life trying to save. —*William Rogers*

GO eyleminden sonra da çeşitli etkinlikleri göstermek üzere ulaşır kullanmaktadır.

GO	boating bowling camping dancing fishing	fishing hiking hunting hunting ice-skating	jogging sailing shopping sightseeing skating	skiing swimming swimming wind-surfing
-----------	---	--	--	--



*"Now don't go bleeding all over the place.
I just finished mopping the floor."*

8. **THERE IS NO** ile

Once he begins talking, there is no stopping him.

9. **BUSY** sıfatı ile

A philosopher will not believe what he sees because he is too busy speculating about what he does not see. —*Fontenella*

10. **WANT** ve **NEED** eylemleriyle edilgenlik ifade edebilir.

The whole matter of the inheritance *wants looking into*.
Most of the house will *need rebuilding*.

11. Adverbial Clause'ların kısaltılmış şekli olarak kullanılabilir.

Ulaç öbeklerinin ad öbeği olarak kullanıldığını belirtmiştik. Ulaçların bir diğer kullanımı da zarf içtümceciklerinin kısaltılmış şekilleri olarak kullanılmasıdır.

1. Neden içtümcecikleri

Because he had very little money , Jack found life hard and monotonous.

Having very little money

Jack, because he had very little money, found life hard and monotonous.

having very little money

Having known him, I was distressed to hear of his death.

Needing money, Howard decided to write home to his parents.

Not graduating from college, Nick gave up looking for a job in the city.

Being aware of ever-present European hypocrisy, experienced politicians tend to believe that Turkey will never be admitted to the European Union.

2. Zaman içtümcecikleri

When using this machine, you must remember safety regulations.

When	working on the computer,	give me a call.
While		
Before		
After		

Having eaten his dinner, he rushed out of the house.

*To say nothing, especially when speaking, is half the art of diplomacy.
—Will Durant*

Before entering a mosque, Moslems remove their shoes.

3. Koşul içtümcecikleri

*Granting this to be true, what conclusions can be drawn?
Weather permitting, we will go for a picnic tomorrow.*

4. Tarz içtümcecikleri

Panting and sweating, we lifted the logs on the lorry.

EXERCISE 444

Aşağıdaki tümceleri gerund öbekler kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

1. Because he didn't know the answer, Jim felt quite embarrassed.
2. Because I thought she might be hurt, I felt very anxious.
3. Since she came to this country, she had made many friends.
4. Because they wished to encourage him, they praised Tom.
5. While he was driving back home from work yesterday, Jim had an accident.
6. Because he didn't know what to do, he applied to me for advice.
7. Before she came to class, she had a cup of coffee and a sandwich.
8. After she had completed her shopping, she had lunch with a friend.
9. While he was chopping wood, the old man hurt his back.
10. After they had tested it, they put the engine into immediate service.

12. BY ilgeci ile

BY ilgeci ile kullanılan gerund öbekleri bir işin nasıl yapıldığını gösterebilir.

The conjurer amused the children enormously by producing rabbits out of a hat, by swallowing needles, by making smoke out of his ears.

Few people think more than two or three times a year; I have made an international reputation for myself by thinking once or twice a week.
—Bernard Shaw

We cannot become what we need to be by remaining what we are.

—Mohammed Ali

We learn to do neither by thinking nor by doing; we learn to do by thinking about what we are doing. —George D. Stoddard

He finished his talk on road safety by reminding the listeners that 7000 people lose their lives on the roads each year.

The USA routinely intervenes in the elections of other countries by funding political parties, NGO's and media.

EXERCISE 445

Aşağıdaki tümcelerden önektekine benzer tümceler yapınız.

Drive smaller cars and save energy.

Driving smaller cars can save energy.

By driving small cars you can save energy.

1. Eat well and stay healthy.
2. Put a new roof on your house and prevent water damage to the ceiling.
3. Insulate the wall and attic and save money on the gas bill.
4. Restrict the intake of cholesterol and prevent heart attacks.
5. Take good care of your car and avoid expensive repairs.
6. Wear the proper equipment and avoid injury while playing football.
7. Wash the dishes in extremely hot water and prevent the spread of the germs.
8. Withhold the wheat from the market and the price of bread increases.

9. Do not complete your education and damage your chances for future success.
10. Eat an apple every day and make the doctor beg for his bread.



Mr. Grabb made a fortune selling shoe polish.

EXERCISE 446

Ayraç içindeki doğru seçenek bulunuz.

1. (By using) (Using) less water can lower our gas bill.
2. (By travelling) (Travelling) might be an enjoyable experience.
3. (By drinking) (Drinking) Coca-Cola every day will increase your chance of poor health.
4. (By finding) (Finding) an honest politician is more difficult than finding a needle in a haystack.
5. This politician's only election tactic has been (by lying) (lying) to people.
6. We won the game (by scoring) (our scoring) during the overtime period.
7. The college recommends (by sending) (our sending) applications early.
8. Our favorite form of exercise is (by jogging) (jogging).
9. (By listening) (Listening) to the news on TV really depresses most Turkish people.
10. We should never forgive the USA (for killing) (by killing) a million Iraqi children.

EXERCISE 447

Aşağıdaki örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Mr. Young caught his train. (he took a taxi.)

Mr. Young caught his train by taking a taxi.

1. He communicates with other businessmen. (*He uses the telephone.*)
2. He learnt German quickly. (*He took private lessons.*)
3. Mary passed her examination. (*She worked hard.*)
4. Mrs. West passed her driving test. (*She practiced a little every day.*)
5. John surprised his parents. (*He came first in arithmetic.*)
6. Mrs. Stout lost weight. (*She ate less.*)
7. She amused her guests. (*She gave them some interesting problems to solve.*)
8. He supplemented his income. (*He worked part-time at the bingo hall.*)
9. He became actively involved in science. (*He read science-fiction stories.*)
10. She was infected by tapeworms. (*She ate undercooked beef, pork, and fish.*)

13. AND ile birleştirilecek iki tümcenin kısaltılmış şekli olarak

They'll probably be at home all day. They will be packing their suitcases.

They'll probably be at home all day, *packing their suitcases*.

EXERCISE 448

Aşağıdaki örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

She left the room. Tears were streaming down her face.

She left the room, tears streaming down her face.

1. Mrs. Smith has been sewing all day. She is making a dress for the party.
2. The children walked through the store. They were looking at the toys.
3. He stood on the porch. He was looking at the sky.
4. She sat in the big chair. She was thinking about her vacation.
5. The food cooked slowly. It filled the room with good smells and made us hungry.
6. Mike is standing outside the terminal. He is waiting for a taxi.
7. The farmers are working in the field. They're planting vegetable seeds.
8. The researchers are in the lab. They're examining the dead rat.

14. Absolute phrase olarak kullanılır.

The river being in danger of flooding, all the residents were evacuated to higher ground.

15. Tümce niteliyicisi olarak kullanılabilir.

Putting it mildly, his remarks are not very interesting.

16. Belli öbeklerde ilgeç olarak kullanılan TO'y'u izleyebilir.

I am looking forward to *playing chess with you*.



be accustomed to	They are accustomed to living in comfort; they cannot be happy in a village.
be agreeable to	She was agreeable to staying with us.
be akin to	Calling PKK militants freedom fighters is akin to calling the Klu Klux Klan a cultural group.

be averse to	These animals are averse to working in hot climates.
be given to	She was given to making nasty remarks.
be opposed to	All the villagers are opposed to a motorway being built near the village.
be used to	He is used to looking after himself.
devote time to	She has devoted her time to improving working conditions for women.
get used to	She got used to getting up as early as others in the family.
look forward to	She is looking forward to visiting her hometown.
object to	Some students object to being judged entirely on the basis of their test scores.

17. *OF* ve *BY* öbeklerinde adlaşmış olarak kullanılabilir.

The *shooting* of the rare birds has outraged the community.

The *broadcasting* by our station comes from the top of a building.

It is the duty of the forest guards to stop shooting rare birds.

It is the duty of the forest guards to stop the *shooting* of rare birds.

18. Adlaşmış olarak

Aşağıdaki örneklerde *reading* ve *teaching* ad olarak kullanılmaktadır.

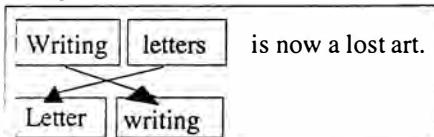
Few people in our village posses the fundamental skills as reading, writing and arithmetic,

Just what the original teaching of the Buddha was is a matter of some debate.



Aşağıdaki örneklerde dikkat ediniz.

Writing letters is now a lost art. *Letter writing* is now a lost art.



My mother hates cleaning for the spring.

My mother hates *spring cleaning*.

News of the couple's separating quickly spread through the town.

During the period of westward moving, pioneers suffered many hardships.

19. Birleşik adların yapımında kullanılır.

I bought my son a pair of running shoes.

A stick for walking is a walking stick.

A tissue for cleaning is cleaning tissue.

EXERCISE 449

Örnektekine benzer tümceler kurunuz.

Hunting treasures can be very dangerous.

Treasure hunting can be very dangerous.

1. Binding books is very difficult.
2. Collecting stamps can grow into a lucrative business.
3. Watching birds has become a popular pastime.
4. Diving in the deep sea has its rewards for the adventure seeker.
5. Flying kites is an ancient art.

EXERCISE 450

Aşağıdaki parçada bulunan gerund öbeklerinin altlarını çiziniz.

LEISURE TIME IS IMPORTANT

Many doctors believe that learning to relax in order to relieve day-to-day tension could one day save your life.

In our fast-paced world, it is almost impossible to avoid building up tension from stress. All of us confront stress daily; anything that places an extra demand on us is stress. We encounter stress on the job, and we face it at home.

The body responds to stress by "mobilizing its defenses." Blood pressure rises and muscles get ready to act. If our tension is not relieved, it can start numerous reactions, both physical and psychological. Yet, we can learn to cope with stress effectively and to avoid its consequences. We can cope with stress by relaxing in the face of stress. According to researchers, the effects of stress depend not on what happens to us, but on the way we react. In times of stress, taking a few moments to sit quietly and relax can make anyone feel better.

EXERCISE 451

Örnektekine benzer tümceler yapınız.

He wants to go to a movie. (feel like)

He feels like going to a movie.

They are supposed to take care of the dog. (responsible for)

They are responsible for taking care of the dog.

1. We can't wait to meet our new manager. (*excited about*)
2. They want to stay here for a week. (*plan on*)
3. We like to have visitors. (*fond of*)
4. I'm going to see the art exhibition this weekend. (*look forward to*)
5. My sister might come with me. (*think about*)
6. We don't like to take the bus. (*tired of*)

7. My father thinks it's necessary to plan for the future. (*believe in*)
8. Most Turkish people want to learn more about economics. (*interested in*)
9. They have to see the manager. (*insist on*)
10. He says they can make their own decisions. (*capable of*)
11. He doesn't like to give free advice. (*complain about*)
12. He doesn't think he will be sea-sick. The sea is as calm as a lake. (*worry about*)

EXERCISE 452

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. Success depends on having the right connections just as much as working hard.
2. Education is not the filling of a pail, but the lighting of a fire. –W. Butler Yeats
3. David taught us some handy tips for improving our tennis game.
4. Natural abilities are like natural plants, that need pruning by study. –Francis Bacon
5. Some students object to being judged entirely on the basis of their test scores.
6. He finished his talk on road safety by reminding the listeners that 7000 people lose their lives on the roads each year.

NOUNS OR GERUNDS? AD MI, ULAÇ MI?

A. the _____ of the noun yapısı

Adların kullanıldığı yapılardan biri de the _____ of the noun yapısıdır.

The president resigned.

It was a shock to his supporters.

Bu kişi tümceyi bir gerund öbeği kullanarak birleştirebiliriz.

The president's resigning was a shock to his supporters.

RESIGN eyleminden türetilen bir ad varsa (resignation), tümcenin öznesinde the _____ of the noun yapısı kullanılabilir.

The resignation of the president was a shock to his supporters.

Eylemden türetme ekleriyle bir ad türetilmeyorsa V-ING yapısı da the _____ of the noun yapısında kullanılabilir.

- a. The little boy cried constantly.
- b. It disturbed his mother.
- c. *The little boy's constant crying* disturbed his mother.
- d. *The constant crying of the little boy* disturbed his mother.

Türetilmiş ad şekilleri olan *RESIGN* gibi eylemlerin *V-ING* şekli de **the _____ of the noun** yapısında kullanılabilmektedir

The *resigning* of the president shocked his supporters.
resignation

B. V-ING + ADVERB ⇒ ADJECTIVE + V-ING / NOUN

Aşağıdaki örneklerde V-ING'in hem zarflar hem de sıfatlarla kullanılabilğini görüyoruz. *CONSUMPTION* gibi eylemden türetilen bir ad varsa, sıfatla birlikte bu ad kullanılır.

V-ING	Adverb	
<i>Pressing</i>	<i>firmly</i>	<i>on a wound can prevent severe bleeding.</i>
<i>Consuming</i>	<i>wastefully</i>	<i>will lead to poverty.</i>

Adjective	V-ING/ NOUN	
<i>Firm</i>	<i>pressing</i>	<i>on a wound can prevent severe bleeding.</i>
<i>Wasteful</i>	<i>consumption</i>	<i>will lead to poverty.</i>

EXERCISE 453

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerde gösterildiği gibi birleştirmeye çalışınız.

The city council failed to fund new parks. Citizens were angry at it.
Citizens were angry at the failing of the city council to fund new parks.

Citizens were angry at the failure of the city council to fund new parks

They discovered gold in California. This caused many people to travel west in hope of becoming rich.

Their discovering of gold in California caused many people to travel west in hope of becoming rich.

The discovery of gold in California caused many people to travel west in hope of becoming rich.

1. The woman believed in God. This was a source of strength during her long illness.
2. They arrange the chairs. This permits maximum seating.
3. Doctors prevent and treat infectious diseases. It is a major part of pediatric practice.
4. Teachers may repeat a difficult lesson. It can help weaker students.
5. Our consuming natural resources at this speed may lead to disasters.

EXERCISE 454

Verilen tümceleri örnektekine benzer şekilde yeniden kurunuz.

Planning carefully is a must in every task.

Careful planning is a must in every task.

1. Complaining constantly is no way to achieve your goals.
2. Driving recklessly is a short cut to die young.
3. Following fashions blindly is a sure sign of idiocy.
4. Eating sensibly is the key to good health.
5. Storing chemicals carelessly is a common of cause of household deaths.

EXERCISE 455

Aşağıdaki soruların yanıtlarını örneklerde gösterildiği gibi tamamlayınız.

Can I borrow some money from you?

I don't approve of *your borrowing* money from anybody!

Bill ran away from home when he was twelve, didn't he?

Yes, I'll never forget how much excitement *his running away* caused at the time.

1. Do you know that man? He's staring at you.
No, I don't know him, and I don't like _____ at me at all.
2. Do you think I should stop by their house this evening?
Yes, I'm sure they'd appreciate _____.
3. Bill loves to dance with Ellen, doesn't he?
Yes, but her parents don't approve of _____ every dance with her.
4. Does Mary often fall asleep in the middle of concert?
Yes, _____ is very embarrassing to her friends.
5. Why do you keep smoking all the time?
I'm sorry. Does _____ bother you?
6. Can Jack borrow your car this weekend?
I don't mind _____ it, as long as he drives carefully.
7. They spent a small fortune on their new house, didn't they?
Yes, and unfortunately the house is really not worth _____ so much money on.
8. Shall I explain the problem to you?
I'd appreciate _____ very much.
9. Do you mean to say that Fred turned down the job?
Yes, I simply can't understand _____ such a wonderful offer.
10. Is Betty getting married in June?
No, her parents won't hear of _____ until she has finished college.
11. Do you think Tom will ever settle down?
Somehow I can't imagine _____!
12. Has Alice given up smoking?
Yes. Her mother objected to _____, so she finally gave it up.

EXERCISE 456

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örneklerdeki gibi verilen eylemlerle ulaş yapıları kullanarak birleştiriniz.

I saw him so miserable. I can't stand it. (CAN'T STAND)

I can't stand seeing him so miserable.

Please wait until I have finished the report. (MIND?)

Would you mind waiting until I have finished the report?

1. I didn't want to meet my boss last night. (DREAD)
2. They fell silent as soon as I came into the room. (STOP)
3. Tom has invited us to dinner. (MENTION)
4. He didn't answer the letter for a long time. (DELAY)
5. He said it would be better if we used a new software. (SUGGEST)
6. You said exactly the same thing. (RECALL)
7. He never eats at MacDonald's. (DISLIKE)
8. I wish I had never met my boss. (CAN'T HELP)
9. You shouldn't catch cold. (AVOID)
10. She talked during the performance. (KEEP ON)
11. We can't buy a new computer until after the holidays. (POSTPONE)
12. Don't ask your boss for a raise now. (RISK)
13. You'd better not buy those expensive jeans right now. (TOLERATE)
14. He might ask his boss for a raise. (CONSIDER)
15. She said she had misplaced the report. (ADMIT)
16. He bought a second-hand computer. (REGRET)
17. Because of his job Mr. Smith has to eat out very often. (INVOLVE)
18. Helen answers the phones and makes tea and coffee as part of her job. (INCLUDE)
19. I am sorry, but I had to use your mobile phone. (EXCUSE)
20. A lot of men watch magazine programs on TV, but they say they never do. (DENY)



Chapter 48

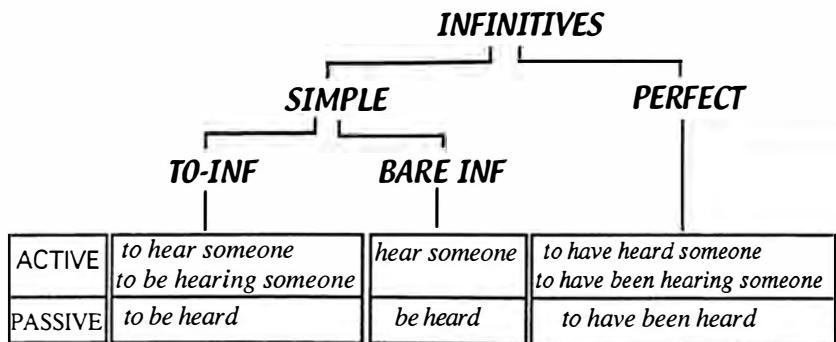
INFINITIVES

Eylemlikler



"The foxes in this area seem to have adapted well to urban life."

Eylemlikler, eylemsiler içinde en fazla farklı kullanıma sahip olandır. Eylemliklerin yapısal görünüşlerini aşağıdaki çizelgede gösteriyoruz.



Diğer eylemsiler gibi eylemlikler de bir içtümceciğin kısaltılmış şeklidir.

Some countries rely on the IMF. It is foolish.

For any country to rely on the IMF is foolish.

The US will not leave the world alone. It is unthinkable.

For the US to leave the world alone is unthinkable.

INFINITIVE							
SIMPLE	Active					punish	someone
	Passive	(of)	(him)	(not)	TO	be punished	
PERFECT	Active	(for)				have punished	someone
	Passive					have been punished	

INFINITIVE ÖBEKLER TÜMCE İÇİNDE ÇEŞİTLİ İŞLEVLER ÜSTLENMEKTEDİR

Infinitive'lerin kullanımını ayrıntılı bir şekilde gözden geçirmeden önce en yaygın kullanımlarını gösterelim.

Tümce Öznesi	To collect rare books is his only interest in life. To be given a rare book makes him the happiest man in the world. To watch too much TV rots one's brain.
BE Tümleci	His only interest in life is to collect rare books.
Tümce nesnesi	He hopes to collect rare books. He hopes to be given rare books. Many people like to live dangerously.
Tümce Kalıcı 11	She let me use her telephone. He had us wait in the line.
Tümce Kalıcı 12	She wants me to work harder. My doctor advised me to take a long vacation.
ENOUGH kalıpları	Pure gold is not hard enough to use in jewelry. She is good enough to trust you. She is honest enough to trust.
TOO kalıpları	Pure gold is too soft to use in jewelry. She is too old to play basketball. This coffee is too strong for me to drink.
Sifat Kalıpları	It was nice to do it. I was happy to do it. It was kind of you to do it. The team is ready to play. The meat is ready to eat.
QW+TO INF	I don't know how to play chess. We have finally decided where to stay for the night.
THERE	There is nothing to eat. There is a chair to paint.
Kısaltılmış IF tümceceği	To hear him talk, you would think that he was a saint.

INFINITIVES

1	Tümcenin öznesi olarak kullanılır. <i>To learn English</i> is enjoyable. <i>For Ali to speak German</i> is difficult.
2	Gecikmiş özne olarak kullanılır. It is enjoyable <i>to learn English</i> . It is difficult <i>for Ali to speak German</i> .
3	Tümcenin nesnesi olarak kullanılır. She wants <i>to learn English</i> .
4	BE eyleminin tümleci olarak kullanılır. Her aim is <i>to learn English</i> . <i>To see</i> is to believe. What she did was <i>go out and buy sandwiches</i> .
5	Tümce Kalıbı 11'de kullanılır. A drop of ink may make millions <i>think</i> .
6	Tümce Kalıbı 12'de kullanılır. The doctor told me <i>to go on a diet</i> .
7	Noun Clause kısaltması olarak kullanılır. I don't know <i>what to say</i> . Tell me <i>where to go</i> .
8	Adjective Clause kısaltması olarak kullanılır. The first man <i>to come</i> was a Turk. This is the book <i>to read</i> .
9	Belirli sıfatlardan sonra kullanılır. I am happy <i>to be here</i> . He is quick <i>to get angry</i> . I am pleased <i>to meet you</i> .
10	Belirli adollarla kullanılır. I have no desire <i>to live here</i> . He has got the ability <i>to do this</i> .
11	TOO/ENOUGH kalıplarında kullanılır. She is <i>too young to marry</i> . You are <i>old enough to drive a car</i> .
12	ADJECTIVE OF Someone kalıbında kullanılır. It is foolish <i>of you to smoke</i> . It is very kind <i>of you to help me</i> .
13	AND'lı tümce kısaltması olarak kullanılır. He came home <i>to find (=and found) his wife lying dead on the bed</i> .
14	HAVE ile zorunluluk bildirir. I have got a report <i>to type</i> . I have a book <i>to read</i> .

15	BEDen sonra yargı, kararlılık, planlama, buyruk gibi anımlar üstlenebilir. He is to see me at once. The highway is to be completed by 2005. I was to see him yesterday. (But I didn't.) The bridge was to have been completed by 1999. (But it wasn't.) I am not to blame for what has happened.
16	IN ORDER TO'nun kısaltması olarak amaç gösterir. To be rich, one must work hard. He stopped to say something to me.
17	Tümce betimleyicisi olarak kullanılabilir. To tell you the truth, she is quite careless.



TO GET PEOPLE TO UNDERSTAND OUR POINT OF VIEW, WE MUST FIRST TRY TO UNDERSTAND THEIRS.

"Four dollars a pound. I just can't understand why she won't eat it."

1. Tümcenin öznesi olarak

To find a good job has long been the primary goal of university students.

To be a university student requires an inquiring personality.

To compromise appears advisable.

To eat nothing but junk food jeopardizes your health.

To save money and to buy a house now seems impossible.

To know what is right and not to do it is the worst cowardice.— Confucius

To say nothing, especially when speaking, is half the art of diplomacy.— Will Durant



Eylemlik öbeginin öznesi **FOR+AD ÖBEĞİ** yapısıyla belirtilmektedir.

For the US to leave the world alone is unthinkable.

2. Özne olan eylemlik öbekleri, "slot-filling IT" ile gecikmiş özne olarak kullanılabilir.

Slot-filling IT, belli eylemler, sıfatlar ve adlarla özne olan eylemlik öbekleri yerine kullanılabilir.

It	amuses	me	to watch children.
	annoys		to receive poor service.
	saddens		to have lost my dog.

It requires an inquiring personality to be a university student .

It appears advisable to compromise.

It jeopardizes your health to eat nothing but junk food .



TAKE eylemi özel bir kullanıma sahiptir.

It takes her two hours to prepare a good meal.

It	is	sheer madness	to sacrifice health for anything.
		a tragedy	to lose one's ambition.

It	is	impossible	(for someone)	to introduce changes in the tax system.
		easy		
		difficult		
		necessary		
		disastrous		
		foolish		
		advisable		

It is easier to catch flies with honey than with vinegar. *—English proverb*

It has long been the primary goal of university students to find a good job.

It now seems impossible to save money and to buy a house .

It was obviously dangerous for the President to mix with the crowd as he did.

What good can it do to an ass to be called a lion?

EXERCISE 457

Aşağıdaki tümceleri SLOT-FILLING IT kullanarak örnekte gösterildiği şekilde yeniden yazınız.

To criticize the USA government in public can be very risky.

It can be very risky to criticize the USA government in public.

1. To answer letters promptly is polite.
2. To go out without a coat on a bitterly cold day is not sensible.
3. To give a tip in a restaurant is a common practice.
4. To win the contest seemed impossible.
5. To say that you are sorry won't help you.
6. To fight for principles is easier than to live up to them. *—Alfred Adler*
7. For elderly people to watch their diet is important.
8. To make anything foolproof is impossible because fools are so ingenious.—*Edsel Murphy*
9. To live at peace with our neighbors has always been our main concern.
10. For a poor man to be happy is difficult.

EXERCISE 458

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnektekine benzer şekilde yeniden yazınız.

It has always been difficult for Nancy to get up early.

For Nancy to get up early has always been difficult.

1. It is good for everyone to exercise regularly.
2. It would be impossible for George to get promoted.
3. It was a waste of time for me to talk to Harry.
4. It doesn't make sense for a single person to rent such a big flat.
5. It is immoral for a governor to accept a bribe.
6. It will be indecent for you to dress like that.
7. It is a mistake for a couple to marry at a very young age.
8. It has been unwise for her to marry Mark.
9. It is wrong for you to give him so much money.
10. It is unproductive and impractical for you to do that.
11. It will be unfair for us to accuse him without listening to him.
12. It is very dangerous for untrained people to play with guns.

3. BE eyleminin tümleci olarak

To live is *to die*.

His only goal in life is *to be a published author*.

Culture is *to know the best that has been said and thought in the world*.

—Matthew Arnold

The aim of education should be *to teach the child to think*, not what to think. —John Dewey

4. Tümcenin nesnesi olarak

Belli eylemler, eylemlik öbeklerini nesne olarak alabilir.

afford	deserve	neglect	seem
agree	endeavor	offer	serve
appear	fail	plan	start
arrange	forget**	prepare	struggle
care	happen	pretend	swear
claim	hesitate	proceed	tend
come	hope	promise	threaten
consent	intend*	prove	try**
continue*	learn	refuse	volunteer
decide	manage	regret	wait
demand	mean**	remember**	wish



- * Bu eylemler gerund'larla da anlam değişikliği olmaksızın kullanılabilir.
- ** Bu eylemler, infinitive ve gerund'larla kullanıldıklarında farklı anlamlar ifade ederler



ÖRNEKLER

afford	I can't afford to buy it.
agree	I cannot agree to do that.
agree	They agreed to help us.
aim	I aim to apply for a job at the university.
appear	She appears to be tired.
arrange	The committee has arranged to meet once a week. I'll arrange to meet you at the airport.
attempt	Some of the crowd attempted to break through police cordon.
care	I don't care to see that show. / Would you care to join our club?
claims	She claims to know a famous movie star.
consent	He has consented to join our club. She finally consented to marry him.
decide	Have you decided to answer the letter yet? I have decided to leave on Monday. / I decided to punish him.
demand	I demand to know who is responsible. He demanded to be given a new desk.
deserve	She deserves to win the prize. She does not deserve to pass the course.
determine	He now determined to become commander-in-chief of the forces. They are determined to have the picnic as scheduled.
endeavor	She has endeavored to do her best.
fail	Do not fail to visit the museum. She failed to return the book to the library on time.
happen	If you happen to see Jane, ask her to phone me. There happened to be a policeman on the corner.
hesitate	Do not hesitate to call on me for help. Don't hesitate to ask for my help.
hope	I hope to hear from you soon. Jack hopes to arrive next week.
like	I would like to meet her.
learn	He learned to play the piano. / She learned to control her temper.
long	They are longing to see you. // I have always longed to make my career.
manage	She managed to finish her work early.
mean	She meant to give me the book, but she forgot.
neglect	I neglected to bring a gift.
offer	They offered to help us.

plan	I am planning to have a party.
prepare	We prepared to welcome them.
pretend	He pretends not to understand.
promise	I promise not to be late.
prove	He promised to come at 9:00.
refuse	He proved to be correct.
regret	I refuse to believe his story.
resolve	Jane refused to answer the telephone.
seem	We regret to tell you that we must cancel our last order.
struggle	He resolved to be a good author.
swear	That cat seems to be friendly.
swore	The class seemed to understand everything he said.
tend	We struggled to keep inflation down.
threaten	She swore never to do that again.
undertake	Hamlet swore to have revenge on his enemies.
volunteer	She swore to tell the truth.
wish	I tend to wake up early in the morning.
	Shopping lists on old envelops tend to get lost.
	I tend to think that it is not a good solution.
	She threatens to tell my parents.
	I undertake to preserve a strictly neutral position.
	Most shareholders have undertaken to accept to offer.
	The committee undertook to telephone all the members.
	He volunteered to help us.
	She wishes to come with us.

Kimi eylemlerden sonra **HOW TO** kullanılmaktadır.



describe
explain
know
learn
show
understand

how to make Turkish coffee

EXERCISE 459

Aşağıdaki sorulara verilen eylemleri kullanarak yanıt veriniz.

Will you see your uncle tomorrow? (expect)

I expect to see him tomorrow.

- Was your teacher very upset? (*seem*)
- Did the Johnsons go to Europe? (*intend*)
- Did Jack lend you his computer? (*refuse*)
- Were they astonished by his behavior? (*pretend*)
- Did Tom cook the meal? (*try*)
- Did you cash my check? (*neglect*)
- Will you retire soon? (*plan*)

8. Did your brother catch the early train? (*manage*)
9. Did the driver tell the truth? (*swear*)
10. Did you invite them to dinner? (*mean*)
11. Did Helen buy the sweater? (*want*)
12. Did you send him the message yesterday? (*forget*)

5. 11. Tümce Kalibi

	Verb	Noun /Pronoun	BARE INFINITIVE
The nurse	made	the patient me	take the horrible medicine.

Bu kalıpta az sayıda eylem kullanılmaktadır.

Duyu eylemleri *see, watch, observe, notice, feel, hear, notice,
observe, see, smell, taste, watch*

Ettirgen eylemler: *make, let, have*



HELP, 12. kalıpta da kullanılır.

6. 12. Tümce Kalibi

	Verb	Noun /Pronoun	TO-INFINITIVE
He	wanted	Jack me	to paint the kitchen.

advise	compel	instruct	show . . . how
allow	enable	invite	teach
appoint	encourage	motivate	tell
believe	direct	oblige	urge
cause	forbid	order	use
caution	force	permit	warn
challenge	get	remind	
convince	hire	request	
command	implore	require	

ÖRNEKLER

advise	He advised us to review for the examination. She advised me to wait until tomorrow.
allow	She allowed me to use her car. We don't allow anyone to smoke here.
authorize	The company authorized me to approve payments from the fund.
cause	Her laziness caused her to fail. The flowers will cause her to sneeze.
challenge	She challenged me to race her to the corner.

command	She commanded the man to lie down and relax. The officer commanded the soldiers to leave at once.
compel	The British government compelled the Indians to work in the mines. // Such harsh dilemmas compel us to face facts and make a choice. // Her remarks compelled him to intervene in the dispute.
convince	I couldn't convince him to accept the money.
enable	The law is intended to enable the society to live in peace.
encourage	The teacher encouraged the students to study.
forbid	I forbid you to talk in class.
force	She forced him to accept the invitation to the dance. The court forced him to tell the truth.
get	The manager got him to resign.
help	I cannot help you to pass the exam.
hire	She hired a boy to mow the lawn.
instruct	He instructed them to be careful. She instructed him to complete the work before he left.
invite	Harry invited the Johnsons to come to his party. The committee invited all the members to participate.
motivate	The teacher motivated the children to read the story.
oblige	Her appearance obliged me to give up the quarrel. Illness obliged him to leave school.
order	The umpire ordered the player to leave the game.
permit	I cannot permit you to do that. The father permitted the children to stay up late.
persuade	Gladys finally persuaded him to go to the dance.
remind	Please remind me to pay this bill. She reminded me to lock the door.
request	His friends requested him to join their club.
require	Our teacher requires us to be on time. The boss required the secretary to type all the letters.
teach	My father taught me to swim. The teacher taught us to draw houses on the board.
tell	The class told her to make all the arrangements. The doctor told me to take these blue pills.
tempt	His success tempted many others to try the same route. The offer of a good job tempted him to leave school.
urge	I urged her to apply for the job. The doctor urged him to rest.
warn	I warn you not to drive too fast. The teacher warned the students not to cheat during the exam.

TEACH eyleminden sonra HOW TO da kullanabilir.



teach me | how to make Turkish coffee



Belli sayıda eylem nesneden önce FOR ilgicini gerektirir.

<i>arrange</i>	<i>mean</i>	<i>plead</i>	<i>wait</i>
<i>long</i>	<i>plan</i>	<i>pray</i>	

He waited **for us** to finish the report.

He arranged **for a taxi** to pick us at the airport.

EXERCISE 460

Aşağıdaki soruları verilen ipuçlarını kullanarak yanıtlayınız.

Who(m) did you expect to help you with the report? (my teacher)
I expected my teacher to help me with the report.

1. Who(m) did you tell to keep an eye on the dog? (my brother)
2. Who(m) did the doctor encourage to take up jogging? (the fat patient)
3. Who(m) did the teacher permit to borrow his computer? (a student of his)
4. Who(m) did you remind to stop talking? (my brother)
5. Who(m) did the audience want to explain the problem? (the geologist)
6. Who(m) did you allow to stay with you after the show? (Jane)
7. Who(m) did the lawyer instruct to cash the check? (my assistant)
8. Who(m) did you invite to play golf with you? (Betty).
9. Who(m) did you ask to pick up the medicine? (my brother)
10. Who(m) did the nurse advise to go back to bed? (the old patient)
11. Who(m) did they persuade to donate a large sum to the fund? (Bill Gates)
12. Who(m) did you urge to go to the show? (my sister)
13. Who(m) did the lady order to polish the silverware? (the maid)
14. Who(m) did you teach to cook mantı? (my brother)

HEM VERB+TO-INFITIVE HEM DE VERB+OBJECT+TO-INFITIVE KALIBINDA KULLANILABİLEN EYLEMLER

ask	dare	intend	promise	wish
beg	expect	need	want	would like
choose	help	prefer		

ÖRNEKLER

- ask** The professor asked to attend the meeting.
 The professor asked us to attend the meeting.
- beg** They begged us to come.
 He begged to join our gang.
- choose** He chooses to ignore her impertinence. The party chose him to organize the meeting.
- dare** He dared me to do better than he had done. The little girl dared to talk to the old man who lives by the lake.
- expect** Mary expected to go away for the weekend.
 Mary expected her mother to go away for the weekend.
- help** The boy helped the old lady to cross the road. The girl helped to prepare the dinner.

need	I need to have your opinion.
intend	The man intends to be a doctor. The man intends his son to be a doctor
like	I would like to win the game. I would like you to win the game.
mean	I didn't mean to hurt your feelings. // I didn't mean to be rude. // I meant to ring you, but I'm afraid I forgot it. // I meant to be there tonight.
prefer	The class prefers to sing. The class prefers you to sing.
train	This guy trains the police dogs to bite the demonstrators.
want	I want to break free. I wanted the girl to wash the dishes.
wish	I wish to meet the new teacher. I wish Martha to meet the new teacher.



"Mr. Hobbs, a sales thing is here to see you."



HELP hem 11. hem de 12. tümce kalıbında kullanılır.

I help my mother to clean the house.

I help my mother clean the house.



STOP eylemi VERB + INFINITIVE yapısında kullanılmaz. STOP + TO INFINITIVE yapısı gerçekte IN ORDER TO yapısının kısa şeklidir.

The student stopped to buy the paper. (He stopped in order to buy the paper).

The student stopped buying the paper. (He doesn't buy the paper anymore).



Duyu eylemleri hem 11. hem de 13. tümce kalıplarında kullanılır.
feel, hear, notice, observe, see, smell, taste, watch

8. Sıfat içtümceciklerinin kısaltılmış şekli olarak kullanılır.

He hasn't got any books which he can/may/must read.

He has got any books to read.

He hasn't got a word to say.

There wasn't a soul to be seen.

There is nothing to lose.

There isn't a bite to eat at home.

EXERCISE 461

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde italik dizilmiş olan bölümleri infinitive öbeği olarak kısaltınız.

1. There is nothing *which we shall fear*.
 2. The most important thing *that we must do* is to protect our environment.
 3. Find someone *who will listen to you*.
 4. Success is something *that we must work for*.
 5. Some people have nothing *which they will boast of*.
 6. Success is not a thing *that we should wait for*; it is a thing *that must be achieved*.
 7. Everybody needs someone *who will help him*.
 8. A slave has nothing *which he may lose* but his chains.
 9. The hardest thing *that we will learn in life* is which bridge *we should cross* and which *we should burn*. –David Russell
 10. All we need to make us really happy is something *that we can be enthusiastic about*. –Charles Kingsley
-
- 9. Gelecek, tutum ve duygular gösteren sıfatlarla ADJECTIVE + TO INF kalıbında kullanılır.**

GELECEK GÖSTEREN SİFATLAR

She is *certain* to come here.

She is *likely* to win the contest.

A politician is *liable* to tell lies.

TUTUM GÖSTEREN SİFATLAR

She	was	polite	to help us.
He	is	right	to watch his diet.

brave clever	foolish kind	right stupid	wise wrong
-----------------	-----------------	-----------------	---------------

DUYGU GÖSTEREN SİFATLAR

She	was	happy	to live here.
He	is	eager	to find a job.

afraid	disappointed	interested	sorry
annoyed	fortunate	keen	surprised
amazed	eager	overjoyed	thrilled
anxious	excited	overwhelmed	upset
concerned	glad	pleased	
delighted	happy	shocked	

We are overjoyed to succeed so easily.

I am pleased to receive the invitation.

I am delighted to be here.

The eye sees only what the mind is prepared to comprehend. —Hengry Bergson



Jack is happy to talk to you.

Jack is easy to talk to.

Sıfatlar, anımları gereği benzer gibi görünen iki ayrı yapıda kullanılırlar. *Jack is happy to talk to you* tümcesinde HAPPY olan Jack'tır. Oysa *Jack is easy to talk to* tümcesinde EASY olan Jack değildir.

Jack is easy to talk to.

For someone to talk to Jack is easy.

To talk to Jack is easy.

It is easy to talk to Jack.

Jack is easy to talk to.

EASY gibi kullanılan sıfatlar aşağıdaki tabloda gösterilmektedir.

She	is	nice hard convenient easy good wonderful all right impossible fun difficult	to talk to.
-----	----	--	-------------

Kind words can be short and easy to speak, but their echoes are truly endless.



“How loud do we have to pray for God to hear us?”

EXERCISE 462

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnektekine benzer şekilde yeniden yazınız.

It is wonderful to listen to her.

She is wonderful to listen to.

1. It is easy to convince her.
2. It is not easy to live with a miser.
3. It is very difficult to correct some mistakes.
4. It is impossible to enslave freedom-lovers.
5. It is quite difficult to write a flawless letter.
6. It is wonderful to read a novel by Agatha Christie.
7. It is good to lean on a wall when you are tired.
8. It may be very hard to recognize big ideas.
9. It is nice to play with children.
10. It will be fascinating to travel in Turkey.
11. It was amusing to perform that play.
12. It has been interesting to solve these puzzles.

10. Bazı adlarla kullanılır.

<i>ability</i>	<i>chance</i>	<i>opportunity</i>	<i>way</i>
<i>ambition</i>	<i>desire</i>	<i>refusal</i>	<i>willingness</i>
<i>attempt</i>	<i>effort</i>	<i>right</i>	<i>wish</i>
<i>capacity</i>	<i>need</i>	<i>system</i>	

The ability to speak or write two languages well is called bilingualism.
 Happiness comes of the capacity to feel deeply, to enjoy simply, to think freely, to risk life, to be needed.” –*Storm Jameson*

He has got no desire to be famous.

This was our chance to win the match.

Tim's request to postpone the game was denied.

Our need to express ourselves takes many different forms.

He disguised his ambition to control.

His efforts to be understanding won him many friends.

Researchers have designed several systems to improve public transportation.

I can't think of any way to convince her.

Programs to explore space have provoked controversy.

His refusal to eat mustard was surprising.

His willingness to help has won him many friends.

11. TOO ve ENOUGH yapılarında kullanılır.**ENOUGH**

She is smart enough to give good advice.

No man is rich enough to buy back his past.

This room is comfortable enough for us to work in.

No man has a good enough memory to be a successful liar. —*Lincoln*



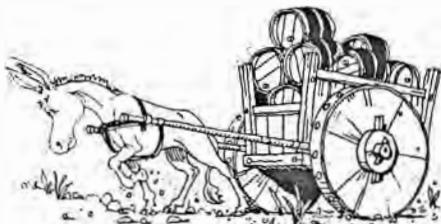
"I wasn't tall enough to build him standing up."

You are not young enough to take up boxing.

You are too old to take up boxing.

No kitchen is large enough to hold two women.

Power will intoxicate the best hearts, as wine the strongest heads. No man is wise enough, nor good enough to be trusted with unlimited power. — *Charles Caleb Colton*

TOO

The donkey is not strong enough to draw the cart.

The donkey is too weak to draw the cart.

The cart is too heavy for the donkey to draw.

He is too old to start a new life.

He drives too dangerously to be a good driver.

She spoke too carelessly to make a good impression on the audience.

She is too shy to talk to him.

Politics is too important to be left to politicians.

This house is too expensive for me to buy.

A loser is always too busy to do what is necessary.
He got up too late to catch the early train.

ENOUGH vs. TOO

She is too old to marry.
She is old enough to marry.

TOO+ADJECTIVE+TO INFINITIVE yapısı olumsuzluk, **ADJECTIVE+ENOUGH+TO INFINITIVE** yapısı da olumluluk ifade etmektedir.

EXERCISE 463

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi ENOUGH kullanarak tekrar yazınız.

Helen is too short to play basketball. (tall)
Helen is not tall enough to play basketball.

1. The house is too small for my family. (*big*)
2. The boxer is too sick to practice. (*well*)
3. We were too far away to see what was happening. (*close*)
4. These books are too expensive for us to buy. (*cheap*).
5. This book is too difficult for me to read. (*easy*)
6. This material is too short to cover the front window. (*long*)
7. My grandmother is too weak to live by herself. (*strong*)
8. Those problems are too complicated for Ali to solve. (*easy*)



**It is never too late for a dog
to learn new tricks.**



EXERCISE 464

Aşağıdaki tümceleri **enough** ya da **too** kullanarak birleştiriniz.

1. Mr. Lamb is getting very fat. He can't wear the trousers he bought last year.
2. The dog is quite small. It can't be dangerous.
3. The doctor said that David was well. He could go back to work.
4. These apples are very green. We can't eat them yet.
5. My eyesight is not good. I can't read such small print without glasses.
6. The weather is very cold. The children mustn't go out without their heavy coats.
7. The rates at this hotel are very high. We can't stay here for more than two or three days.
8. His mother is strong. She is able to do the work of a man.
9. That road is very narrow. The bus can't go along it.

10. The rent of that house is very high. We can't pay it.
11. The exercise was very long. I couldn't finish it in an hour.
12. The road is very muddy. We won't be able to drive to the village.
13. His handwriting is very untidy. I can't read it.
14. She was very young. She wasn't allowed to get married.
15. My aunt is very pessimistic. She cannot enjoy herself anywhere anytime.

EXERCISE 465

Aşağıdaki tümceleri *enough* ya da *too* kullanarak örneklerdeki gibi yeniden yazınız.

My brother is quite strong and can lift a piano alone.

My brother is strong enough to lift a piano alone.

The bread was so stale that we couldn't eat it.

The bread was too stale for us to eat.

1. He has made so many mistakes that he won't pass the exam.
2. His desk is so untidy that he can't work at it.
3. The British are so greedy that they will do anything for money.
4. Their lies are so foolish that even a child will not believe them.
5. He was very foolish and agreed to the high price the trader demanded.
6. He is now quite old and could retire.
7. The coffee I was given was so hot that I couldn't drink it.
8. That book is so dear that I can't afford to buy it.
9. Belgium is so shameless that she can harbour terrorists feeling no sense of guilt.
10. She was very ill and couldn't go to work.
11. His car is quite big and can carry eight people.
12. He put the radio on so loud that everybody in the street heard it.
13. The explanation of the meaning of the word was so difficult that I couldn't understand it.
14. This small radio is powerful and can pick up stations thousands of miles away.
15. Radio reception was so poor that we didn't hear the announcement.
16. The book was so long that I couldn't finish it last night.
17. His mother is quite young and may marry again.
18. The lecturer spoke so softly that people at the back of the hall couldn't hear him.
19. There were so many people in front of me that I couldn't see the procession.
20. The sun shone for quite a long time and dried up the pools of water in the streets.

12. ADJECTIVE+OF+Someone kalibunda kullanılır.

She was clever to agree to the plan.

It was clever of her to agree to the plan.

It	is	kind brave	of you	to help me.
----	----	---------------	--------	-------------

brave	foolish	polite	unwise
careless	honest	right	wise
clever	impolite	silly	wise
courageous	kind	stupid	wrong
cruel	nice	sweet	

13. AND'lı tümce kısaltması olarak kullanılır.

He came home and found his wife gone.

He came home to find his wife gone.

14. HAVE (GOT) ile zorunluluk bildirir.

I have got a report to type.

She has got two houses to take care of.

15. BE'den sonra kararlılık, zorunluluk, yargı, planlama, buyruk gibi anımlar üstlenebilir.

zorunluluk	If curiosity is to be fruitful, it must be associated with a certain technique for the acquisition of knowledge, patience, and industry.
plan	The prisoner was told that he was to be set free next day.
kaçınılmazlık	Fleming, who discovered penicillin, was unaware that this chance discovery was to have tremendous consequences.
buyruk	Each state, whatever its size, was to have only one vote. Each state, by taxing itself, was to contribute to the common expenses of all states. Jack is to prepare the new contract.

16. IN ORDER TO'nun kısaltması olarak amaç gösterir.

WE use language (in order) to communicate with one another,
Fasting (in order) to lose weight is a particularly dangerous practice.

A nation does not have to be cruel (in order) to be tough. -F. D. Roosevelt

It is sheer madness to live in want in order to be wealthy when you die.
—Juvenal

We demonstrated to get attention for our demands.

(In order) to bring much more land under its control, the new state needed millions of farmers, miners, railroad builders, and factory workers.

17. Tümce betimleyicisi olarak kullanılabilir.

To be frank, I don't like your new suit.

The accident occurred, to be exact, at 1:13.

To speak frankly, you don't have what it takes to be a leader.

To put it bluntly, we can't trust anybody to do that.

To begin with, our world is facing a serious energy crisis.

To be honest,

To be candid,

To cut a long story short,

To tell you the truth,

To put it in a nutshell,

18. APPEAR ve SEEM eylemleriyle kullanılır.

You seem *to have been making* a lot of mistakes lately.

The points that he has pointed to do not seem *to be important*.

A file containing important information seems *to be missing*.

Most of the world's developed countries now appear *to be approaching* zero population growth.

The tendency to contract certain diseases appears *to run* in families.

EXERCISE 466

Aşağıdaki parça da ayraç içinde verilen eylemlerin doğru şekillerini saptayınız.

Before she went to Turkey, Helen said she needed (1 brush up) her Turkish, so I gave her a few lessons.

'Why not (2 stay) for a few days after your work is over and (3 practise) the language?' I suggested.

On her return Helen was made (4 open) all her bags at the British customs. They must have been very suspicious of her, for they finally made her (5 turn) out all her pockets. It hardly helped matters when she said in a loud voice: 'How dare you (6 suspect) me of smuggling?' She then turned to me, who happened (7 travel) with her, and said: 'How can you stand there and let me (8 accuse) of something you know I haven't done?'

Although I knew Helen was innocent of smuggling, I dared not (9 interfere), as I didn't want my bags (10 search) like hers.

EXERCISE 467

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ayraç içinde verilen eylemlerin doğru şekillerini saptayınız.

1. Things appear (*go*) from bad to worse on the stock market at the moment.
2. "I don't want there (*be*) any secrets between us when we're married," said Jack to Helen.
3. Ken's a versatile athlete; I've known him (*compete*) in four events at a sports meeting and (*win*) two of them.
4. It's a pity Willie can't find more time for sport; he seems always (*work*).
5. He and Mary seem (*have*) a very happy marriage so far, don't they?
6. Jack pretended (*injure*) in a cycle accident that had never taken place.

EXERCISE 468

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki infinitive öbeklerini gösteriniz.

1. The main purpose of the display is to attract customers.
2. We are always getting ready to live, but we never start living. *-Emerson*
3. Live as if your were to die tomorrow. Learn as if you were to live forever.
-*Mahatma Gandhi*
4. The Curies hoped to isolate pure radium and polonium.
5. This new ambition of Dave's, to become a novelist, changed his life.
6. We must eat foods rich in Vitamin A to prevent night blindness.
7. Mr. Cook went back to the office to phone for a reservation.
8. Clifford's motives were not hard to understand.
9. To make the two changes in the design took only five minutes.
10. Nancy's next suggestion, to charge the candy to her mother's account, horrified Kay.
11. Here is the test to find whether your mission on Earth is finished: if you're alive, it isn't. *-Richard Bach*
12. My first thought was to deny being at the movie.
13. John, of course, will think of a way to get out of doing his share of the work.
14. Jerry paused at the door to catch his breath and to straighten his tie.
15. It is hard to determine what the US is up to at any given time.
16. Mr. Lodge arrived early to confer with the superintendent.
17. To avoid being questioned by the reporters, Mr. Lodge pretended to be ill.
18. Mom turned to Al to give him a chance to explain his side.
19. To talk about people behind their backs is not the best way to keep friends.
20. Diet-related illnesses like cardiovascular diseases are considered to be a major public health problem in rich countries.
21. To know that the USA sponsors some terrorists is disturbing.
22. In 2001, many Massachusetts families struggled to put food on the table.
23. It is possible to build a nuclear reactor in ten years.
24. The president wants to use atomic energy for peaceful purposes.
25. The Third World countries should join forces to resist European and USA imperialism.
26. Packaging of foods has become so complex that an entire industry has developed to satisfy the need.
27. There is really enough food produced to feed each person in the world; the real problem is access to food.
28. To be great is to be true to yourself and the highest principles.
29. Some people claim that the world is running out of enough food to feed our growing population.
30. The USA's only ambition is to rob Third World countries of their natural resources.

EXERCISE 469

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekteki gibi TOO + ADJECTIVE +TO INF kalibini kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

He had been so excited that he had been unable to eat.
He had been too excited to eat.

1. It was so late that he couldn't correct the lie.
2. He was so angry that he didn't care what he told them.
3. His explanation was so complicated that we couldn't follow it.
4. He is so intelligent that he can't put up with such nonsense.
5. The light was so dim that I wasn't able to read her letter.
6. His father is so absent-minded that he never notices what is going on.
7. I am so tired that I can't stay awake any longer.
8. Jack is so stubborn that he won't listen to reason.
9. Mr. Mathew is so proud that he will never admit he was wrong.
10. The pain was so bad that I couldn't ignore it.
11. The whole affair was so ridiculous that we couldn't take it seriously.
12. The cottage was so expensive that we couldn't afford it.

EXERCISE 470

Aşağıdaki tümceleri Türkçeye çeviriniz.

1. The secret of man's being is not only to live but to have something to live for. *-Fedor Dostoevsky*
2. To be absolutely certain about something, one must know everything or nothing about it. *-Olin Miller*
3. The secret of business is to know something nobody else knows. *-Aristotle Onassis*
4. The right to do something does not mean that doing it is right. *-William Safire*
5. Bad habits are like a comfortable bed, easy to get into, but hard to get out of.
6. Noah Webster's goal in life was to promote the adoption of an American language.
7. A child learns to talk in about two years, but it takes about sixty years for him to learn to keep his mouth shut.
8. A man who is too busy to worry in the daytime and too sleepy to worry at night is a happy man.
9. Politics is too serious a matter to be left to the politicians.
10. To educate a man in mind and not in morals is to educate a menace to society. *-T. Roosevelt*

Chapter 49

PARTICLES

ortaçlar



Ortaç öbekleri sıfat içtümceciklerin kısaltılmış şekilleridir. Sıfat içtümcecikleri çok çeşitli kısaltmalara olanak sağladığından ortaç öbekleri pek çok değişik görünüm kazanırlar. Değişik görünümlerinin ortak noktası hiç kuşkusuz bütün ortaç öbeklerinin bir adı nitelermeleridir.

The car was speeding. The car crushed into a truck.

The car which was speeding crushed into a truck.

The car was speeding on the highway. The car crushed into a truck.

The car which was speeding on the highway crushed into a truck.

Which was speeding sıfat içtümceciğidir. İngilizce'nin temel eğilimlerinden biri, relative pronoun, BE tarafından izleniyorsa her ikisini birden atmaktadır.

The car ~~which was~~ speeding crushed into a truck.

İlk tümcede *WHICH WAS* atılında geriye tek bir sözcük kalmıştır. Bu tek sözcük nitelenen adın önüne getirilir.

The ↑ car ~~which was~~ speeding crushed into a truck.

SPEEDING, **car** adını niteleyen bir sözcük olarak görüldüğünde "participle" adı verilmektedir. *Speeding on the highway*, **car** adını nitelemekte ve *participle phrase* adını almaktadır. *Speeding on the highway* öbeğinin adım önüne gelebilmesi mümkün değildir. Bütün participle yapılarının sıfat içtümceciklerinin kısaltılmış şekilleri olduğunu unutmamak gereklidir.

Aşağıda yaygın participle öbek yapılarını örnekliyoruz.

1. The woman ducked behind the wall.
She was frightened.
The woman **who was frightened** ducked behind the wall.
The **frightened** woman ducked behind the wall.

2. The gangster was driving the Nissan.
He swerved to the left.
The gangster **driving the Nissan** swerved to the left.

3. The film star called the police.
She was terrified by the threats on the phone.
The film star, **who was terrified by the threats on the phone**, called the police.
Terrified by the threats on the phone, the film star called the police.

4. Tom went to open the door. He was muttering to himself.
Tom, **who was muttering to himself**, went to open the door.
Muttering to himself, Tom went to open the door.

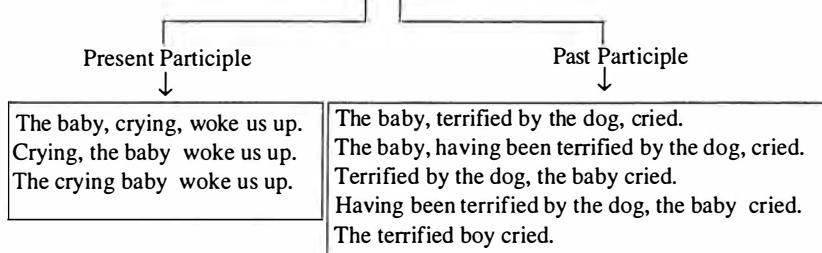
5. Jack was sitting in his chair. He was listening to every word carefully.
Jack, **who was listening to every word carefully**, was sitting in his chair.
Jack was sitting in his chair, **listening to every word carefully**.

6. The new tenants came prepared with traps and poison. They had been warned of the mice.
The new tenants, **who had been warned of the mice**, came prepared with traps and poison.
The new tenants, **having been warned of the mice**, came prepared with traps and poison.
Having been warned of the mice, the new tenants came prepared with traps and poison.

PARTICIPLE'LAR

**PRESENT (-ING) VE PAST (-EN) OLARAK
İKİ GENEL BÖLÜĞE AYRILIR.**

PARTICIPLES



EXERCISE 471

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki "participle"ları bulunuz.

1. We soon lost our way in the blinding snow.
2. Blinded by his greed, Mr. Maxwell agreed to their schemes.
3. The whole town was searching for the buried treasure.
4. My father has never forgotten the doctor's inspiring words.
5. An old car well used may outlast a new one abused.
6. Being the youngest in a family of eight, Emily always wore dresses discarded by her sisters.
7. Her penetrating voice disturbed me more than her dyed hair.
8. Jeremy was just standing there, paralyzed with fear.
9. This book reveals the shocking facts about the CIA crimes.
10. Dressed in his skiing outfit, the little boy looked like a stuffed bear.
11. His greatest dream has been to be a published writer.
12. Pleased with his performance, Miss Compton stayed to compliment the young violinist.
13. A cool refreshing breeze from the mountains blew over the orange gardens.
14. Ed, looking out the window at that moment, did not notice me.
15. He was accused of using stolen credit cards.
16. Strangely, Karen Fogg's insulting rhetoric against Turkey seemed to please some Turkish journalists.
17. Uncle Henry, shocked by the size of the dinner check, yelled for the manager.
18. To the thinking minds, it is obvious that the EU and US are waging an undeclared war against Turkey.
19. All the cars parked on the west side of the street were covered with the insect spray.
20. The European Union has only given Turkey a string of broken promises.

PARTICIPLES

1	Participle phrases (present), Relative Clause kısaltması olarak kullanılır. Tümce başına ve sonuna alınabilir. <i>The baby, crying loudly, woke up everybody.</i> <i>Crying loudly, the baby woke up everybody.</i> <i>The baby woke us, crying loudly.</i>
2	Participle phrases (past), Relative Clause kısaltması olarak kullanılır. Tümce başına ve sonuna alınabilir <i>The old man, beaten up badly, was taken to hospital.</i> <i>Beaten up badly, the old man was taken to hospital.</i>
3	Participle phrases (past), HAVING + (BEEN) +V3 yapısında olabilir. <i>Having typed the last letter, the secretary left the office.</i> <i>Having been beaten up badly, the old man was taken to hospital.</i>
4	Participles sıfat olarak kullanılır. <i>The crying baby woke her up.</i> <i>People ride on flying carpets in folk tales.</i> <i>He is a very spoiled child.</i> <i>A broken chair is of no use.</i> Bazı eylemlerin hem V-ING hem de V-EN şekilleri sifatlaşmıştır. <i>annoy= annoying, annoyed alarm=alarming, alarmed</i> <i>bore= boring, bored confuse=confusing, confused</i>
5	Past participle sıfatların bazıları VERY ile kullanılamaz. Pekiştirici olarak WELL, BADLY, GREATLY, HIGHLY vb. kullanılabilir. <i>He is a highly-qualified engineer.</i> <i>They are rebuilding the badly-damaged buildings.</i>
6	Past participles WELL, BADLY ve HALF ile bileşik sıfatlar kurar. <i>He is a well-known painter.</i> <i>He presented a badly-written paper.</i> <i>She ate the half-cooked meat.</i>
7	-ed kimi adlara eklenerek sıfatlar oluşturur. <i>a blue-eyed man</i> <i>a bearded man</i> <i>a four-legged animal</i> <i>a fair-haired girl</i>
8	Absolute phrase'lerde kullanılabilir. <i>The man being wounded, we had to help him.</i>
9	Past participles zarf içtümceçiklerinin kısaltılmış şekli olabilir. <i>He sank down in a chair, as if stunned by the news.</i>
10	Eylem öbekleri özneyi niteleyen participle öbekleri şeklinde sokula-bılır. <i>The monkey smoked a pipe.</i> <i>The pipe-smoking monkey amused us.</i>

11

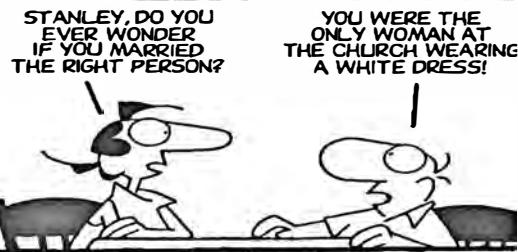
Bazı {-ED} sıfatlarında, {-ED} genel söyleş kurallarına uymaksızın /-Id/ olarak telaffuz edilir.

*crooked
wicked*

*naked
wretched*

ragged

- Present Participle Phrases, sıfat içtümceciklerinin kısaltılmış şekli olabilirler.



Hank, who was watching the movie, fell asleep.

watching the movie

Participle phrase, tümce başına alınabilir.

Hank, watching the movie, fell asleep.
Watching the movie, Hank fell asleep.

Singing very softly, the boy lulled his baby brother to sleep.

Arriving at the store, I forgot what to buy.

Washing and polishing the car, I developed sore muscles.

The local residents often saw Ken wandering among the ruins.

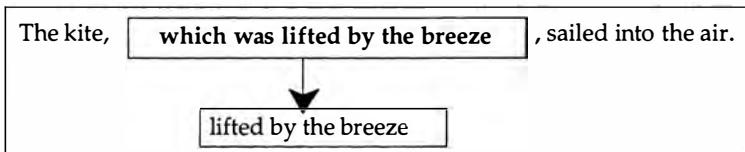
EXERCISE 472

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde participle öbeklerinin altlarını çiziniz ve hangi adları nitelendiklerini belirleyiniz.

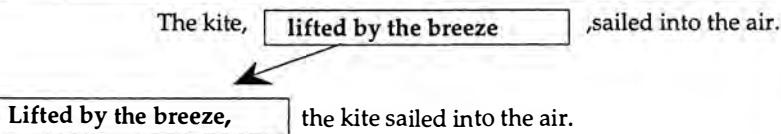
- Getting up at five, we got an early start.
- Facing college standards, the graduates realize that they did not work hard enough in high school.

3. Gathering speed rapidly, the car soon disappeared.
4. Gathering my courage, I mentioned my need for a car.
5. Being an army officer, Karen's father was frequently transferred.
6. Mrs. Sears, showing more bravery than wisdom, invited thirty boys and girls to a party.
7. Screaming, Matt jumped away from the spider.

2. *Past Participle Phrases, sıfat içtümceviklerinin kısaltılmış şekli olabilirler.*



Participle phrase, tümce başına alınabilir.



Chosen simply for his looks, the film star lacks brains.

The girls, frightened by the police car's headlights, quickly came down from the school's roof.

Tom nervously watched the woman, alarmed by her silence.

Weakened by successive storms, the bridge was no longer safe.

The church, destroyed by fire, was never rebuilt.

EXERCISE 473

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde participle öbeklerinin altlarını çiziniz ve hangi adları nitelendiklerini belirleyiniz.

1. Statistics, reported by the National Education Association, revealed that seventy percent of American colleges offer remedial English classes emphasizing composition.
2. Left in charge of the class, a student had a hard time keeping order.
3. Modern scientists still accept certain theories developed in ancient times.
4. Alcohol, abused for a long time, turns out to be an unforgiving killer.
5. The cooler temperatures brought about by nuclear war might end all life on earth.
6. The plant, shut down last year, left the entire area an economic disaster.
7. The crowd, cheering wildly, applauded the performance.

8. Recently published, this book is not yet available in paperback.
9. A bear, standing in the road, stopped traffic.
10. The heavy rains predicted by the weather bureau did not come.

3. Participle phrases (*past*), (*HAVING*) + (*BEEN*) + V3 yapısında olabilir.

Washed overboard by an enormous wave, the skipper was rescued by the crew.

Having been deceived before, Jessica decided to proceed cautiously.

4. Participle phrase'ler tek sözcük şeklinde sıfatlaşabilirler.

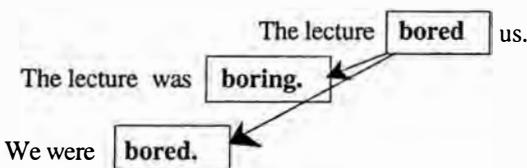
People ride on *flying carpets* in folk tales.

He is a very *spoiled* child.

A *broken* chair is of no use.

An *unwanted* child may have no future.

Kimi eylemlerin hem present hem past participle şekilleri sıfatlaşmıştır.



amazing	amazed	fascinating	fascinated
amusing	amused	frightening	frightened
annoying	annoyed	frustrating	frustrated
appalling	appalled	horrifying	horrified
bewildering	bewildered	interesting	interested
bewitching	bewitched	moving	moved
boring	bored	perplexing	perplexed
confusing	confused	pleasing	pleased
convincing	convinced	refreshing	refreshed
damaging	damaged	relaxing	relaxed
dazzling	dazzled	satisfying	satisfied
delighting	delighted	shocking	shocked
developing	developed	spoiling	spoiled
depressing	depressed	surprising	surprised
disappointing	disappointed	terrifying	terrified
disgusting	disgusted	thrilling	thrilled
disturbing	disturbed	tiring	tired
embarrassing	embarrassed	unchanging	unchanged
exciting	excited	unconvincing	unconvinced
exhausting	exhausted	worrying	worried

EXERCISE 474

Tümceleri örnektekine benzer şekilde tamamlayınız.

Horror movies frighten children.

Horror movies are *frightening*. Children are *frightened*.

1. The speech bored the audience.
The speech was _____. The audience was _____.
2. The clowns amused the spectators.
The spectators were _____. The clown was _____.
3. The ten-mile walk exhausted the campers.
The ten-mile walk was _____. The campers were _____.
4. The test grades disappointed the teacher.
The teacher was _____. The test grades were _____.
5. The gift surprised the youngster.
The gift was _____. The youngster was _____.
6. The three-hour class tired the students.
The students were _____. The three-hour class was _____.
7. The math problem confused the class.
The math problem _____. The class was _____.
8. The review disgusted the artist.
The artist was _____. The review _____.
9. The lawyer's argument convinced the jury.
The lawyer's argument _____. The jury was _____.
10. The Twin Towers attack alarmed Americans.
The attack was _____. Americans were _____.



a boring teacher and bored students

EXERCISE 475

Ayraç içinde verilen eylemlerin uygun şekillerini boşluklarda kullanınız.

1. The streets bustled with activity. We made our way through the _____ streets. (*bustle*)
2. The _____ farmer sat down to rest under the shade of a tree. (*exhaust*)
3. A _____ earthquake happened recently. (*damage*)
4. The dragon was a _____ sight for villagers. (*terrify*)
5. The _____ villagers ran for their lives. (*terrify*)

6. The ____ child sought comfort from her father. (*frighten*)
7. Success in one's work is a ____ experience. (*satisfy*)
8. The ____ jewelry was recovered. (*steal*)
9. I elbowed my way through the ____ room. (*crowd*)
10. The value endures. A gift given in love has ____ value. (*endure*)
11. No one lives in that ____ house except maybe a few ghosts. (*desert*)
12. The thief tried to pry open the ____ cabinet. (*lock*)
13. Parents have a ____ effect on their children. (*last*)
14. The ____ woman was put into an ambulance. (*injure*)
15. I had better buy some ____ vegetables at the supermarket. (*freeze*)
16. That ____ buzz is coming from the fluorescent light. (*annoy*)
17. Use the ____ words in the ____ sentences. (*give, follow*)
18. The teacher gave us a ____ assignment, but we all enjoyed doing it. (*challenge*)
19. The ____ event did not happen. (*expect*)
20. A ____ child needs a ____ diet. (*grow, balance*)
21. There is an old saying: Let ____ dogs lie. (*sleep*)
22. No one appreciates ____ children. (*spoil*)
23. At present, the ____ candidate in the senatorial race is Dan Stone. (*lead*)
24. We had a ____ but hair-raising experience trip into the wilderness. (*thrill*)
25. The man said while he was walking home, he saw an unidentified ____ object. (*fly*)
26. The ____ car towed away by the police. (*abandon*)
27. Any ____ person must know that smoking is a destructive habit for both the smokers and the passive smokers. (*think*)
28. My advisor says I still have three more ____ courses to take. (*require*)
29. The ____ sea frightened all the passengers. (*roar*)
30. The boss made a ____ speech. (*stimulate*)

EXERCISE 476

Ayrıca içinde verilen ortaçlardan doğru olanı belirleyiniz.

1. The empty bottles are on the left, and the (*filled, filling*) bottles are to the right.
2. They thought that it had been a very (*satisfying, satisfied*) dinner.
3. The students thought that it was an (*interesting, interested*) assignment.
4. He can't afford to take long vacations to exotic places because he is a (*worked, working*) man.
5. The phone call from the insurance agent was (*annoying, annoyed*).
6. There is a (*fascinated, fascinating*) movie at the theater tonight.
7. The shoppers were (*impressed, impressing*) by the reducing prices.
8. Today the bookkeeper is working on the (*unpaid, unpaying*) bills.

EXERCISE 477

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde italik dizilmiş bulunan sıfat içtümceviklerini örneklerdeki gibi participle öbegi haline getirerek tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

Anyone who smokes too much is risking his life.

Anyone smoking too much is risking his life.

The child, who had been punished too often, has become stubborn.

The child, having been punished to often, has become stubborn.

1. *Anyone who wants to come with us is welcome.*
2. *The woman who is talking to Ayşe is from Korea.*
3. *The children who attend this school receive good education.*
4. *We have an apartment which overlooks the park.*
5. *The fence which surrounds our house is made of wood.*
6. *There is almost no end to the problems which face a head of state.*
7. *The battery which is being charged is a solar-cell.*
8. *The businessman who hurried home was out of breath.*
9. *The snow which melted rapidly in the sun turned to water.*
10. *Nat, who had become tired, wanted to rest.*
11. *The girls who are resting under the tree are Ann and Rita.*
12. *Doctors believe that we should avoid all foods which contain chemical preservatives.*

EXERCISE 478

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde italik dizilmiş bulunan participle öbeklerini sıfat içtümcevikleri haline getirerek tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

1. *Music played fast makes one feel lively.*
2. *Drapes made of velvet look beautiful in a formal room.*
3. *Olive oil exported from Türkiye to European countries is the best.*
4. *The bread placed on the tables is still warm.*
5. *The audience didn't enjoy the jokes told by the famous showman.*
6. *Ads found in the classified section are sometimes difficult to read.*
7. *Be sure to follow the instructions given at the top of the page.*
8. *Send me the reports prepared by Mr. Hudson.*
9. *I didn't like the photographs taken at the wedding.*
10. *The fertilizer being applied is useful.*
11. *The bicycle ridden by Melis wasn't a good one.*
12. *A battery charged by the sun is called a solar cell.*
13. *They like chicken baked with spices.*
14. *Lucy, taught by her aunt, won the piano contest.*
15. *A prisoner released from Guantanamo Camp said that US Marines beat many prisoners to death.*
16. *The truck crashed into the car parked on the side of the road.*

5. Past participle sıfatların bazıları VERY ile kullanılamaz. Pekiştirici olarak WELL, BADLY, GREATLY, HIGHLY vb. kullanılabilir.

Her performance was greatly admired.

Three of the passengers were seriously injured.

He is a highly-qualified engineer.

They are rebuilding the badly-damaged buildings.

We have rented a partly-furnished apartment.

6. Past participles WELL, BADLY ve HALF ile bileşik sıfatlar kurar.

He is a well-known painter.

He presented a badly-written paper.

She ate the half-cooked meat.

7. Kimi adlar, sanki eylemmiş gibi {-ed} alarak sıfatlaşırlar.



She has got fair hair.

a fair-haired girl

He has got blue eyes.

a blue-eyed man

He has got a beard.

a bearded man

The animal has four legs.

a four-legged animal

The engine has got four engines.

a four-engined aircraft



*"It is a book—it is
old-fashioned software."*

EXERCISE 479

Aşağıdaki tümcelere bağlı olarak örmektekine benzer öbekler yapınız.

She has curly hair.

She is a curly-haired girl

1. Springtails which have bright colours can leap long distances in search of food.
2. A person who has a broken heart cannot be happy.
3. The girl has got a red face.
4. People who use their left hands seem to be good at learning foreign languages.
5. Mites which have eight legs lay their eggs on plant matter.

EXERCISE 480

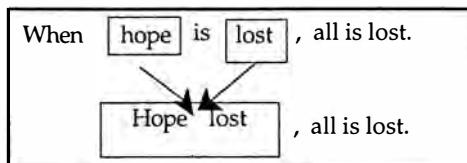
Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları verilenleri kullanarak doldurunuz. Her niteleyiciyi sadece bir kez kullanınız.

- | | |
|-----------------|--------------------|
| a. horn-rimmed | f. air-conditioned |
| b. well-behaved | g. white-faced |
| c. high-powered | h. fur-bearing |
| d. well-matched | i. white-frosted |
| e. well-known | j. good-looking |

1. The picture was painted by a _____ French artist.
2. Girls find the young pop star extremely _____.
3. My brother has always worn _____ glasses.
4. Mrs. Andrews brought in a _____ cake with pink candles.
5. The _____ little girl sat quietly on her father's lap.
6. I'm planning to buy some _____ binoculars to take with us on our trip.
7. The Hadleys were very proud of their expensive _____ home.
8. With their blond good looks and almost equal height they make a _____ couple.
9. The _____ little boy was obviously at the point of exhaustion.
10. Many _____ animals are hunted for the sake of their valuable pelts.

8. Absolute phrase'lerde kullanılabilir.

Absolute phrase'ler öznesi olmasına karşı çekimli bir eylemi olmadığı için tümcecik olamayan öbeklerdir. Bu öbekleri, temel tümceciğe bağlayan herhangi bir sözdizimsel öğe bulunmamaktadır.



The man being wounded, we had to help him.

The task having been completed, the men went to their barracks.

There being no further issues to be discussed, the meeting broke up

EXERCISE 481

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte gösterildiği gibi, absolute phrase'ler kullanarak bireleştiriniz.

Bill had rejected Mr. Hill's job offer. Mr. Hill decided to offer the position to Henry.

Bill having rejected his job offer, Mr. Hill decided to offer the position to Henry.

1. It was a nice day. We went swimming.
2. The prime minister was ill. The meeting had to be postponed.
3. The task had been completed. The men went to their barracks.
4. All his money had been spent. He was in a very difficult situation
5. Her family had lost all their wealth. She was forced to accept a job as a cashier.
6. There are thirteen major regions in India. Each has its own distinctive language.
7. The First Bank of the United States proved of great value to both business and the national government. Its eight branches were located in principal cities.
8. Pakistan was a state divided into two parts. The two parts were widely separated by Indian territory.
9. In two insane months in 1929 the stock market lost all the ground it had gained in two manic years. \$40 billion of values simply disappeared.
10. Only a skeleton of the fishing industry remains. The rest of it was stripped away by decades of ravaging problems.

9. Past participles zarf içtümceviklerinin kısaltılmış şekli olabilir.

He sank down in a chair, as if (**he had been**) stunned by the news.

(**When he was**) asked whether he would resign or not, he said that he might.

If (**it is**) properly used, reading can be an exciting avenue of learning.

EXERCISE 482

Aşağıdaki koyu dizilmiş zarf içtümceviklerini kısaltınız.

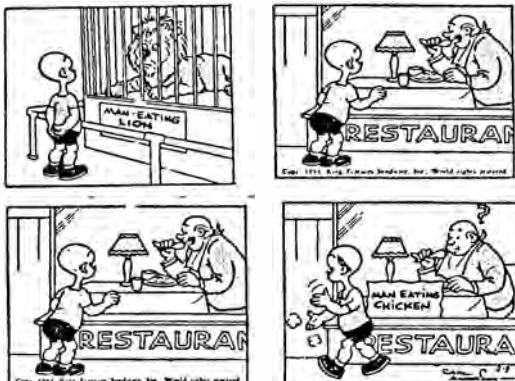
1. When it is alloyed with tin, it forms a series of alloys known as bronze.
2. When it is rolled into sheets, zinc can be used for roof-coverings.
3. Before it was delivered, the turbine was tested in the factory.
4. When it is freshly cut, thorium is very soft, but once it is exposed to the air, it oxidizes.

5. When it was examined, the part was found to be faulty.
 6. If it is run at very high speeds, the engine is liable to vibrate.

10. Eylem öbekleri özneyi nitleyen participle öbekleri şecline sokulabilir.

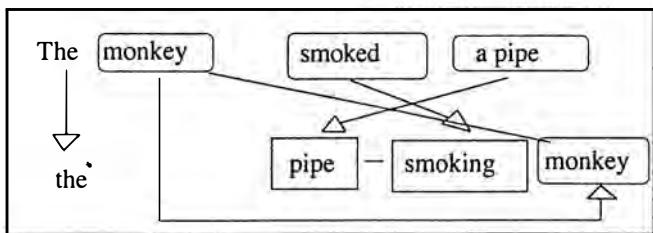
A MAN EATS CHICKEN.
 a man who eats chicken
 a man eating chicken
 a chicken-eating man

A LION EATS MAN.
 a lion which eats man
 a lion eating man
 a man-eating lion



 **A man eating chicken ile a man-eating chicken arasındaki fark nedir?**

Eylem öbekleri yapılarına bağlı olarak çeşitli *participle phrase* yapılarına olmak sağlarlar.



A. VERB + OBJECT → noun+participle

The firemen wield axes.	the <i>ax-wielding</i> firemen
-------------------------	--------------------------------

The Italians love fun.	<i>fun-loving</i> Italians
------------------------	----------------------------

The job consumes time.	a <i>time-consuming</i> job
------------------------	-----------------------------

The housewife pinches pennies.	a <i>penny-pinching</i> housewife
--------------------------------	-----------------------------------

People speak English	<i>English-speaking</i> people
----------------------	--------------------------------

Some husbands beat their wives.	<i>wife-beating</i> husbands
The prophecy fulfills itself.	<i>self-fulfilling</i> prophecy

**B. VERB + ADVERB → adverb+participle**

These planes fly low.	the <i>low-flying</i> planes.
The train moves fast.	a <i>fast-moving</i> train
This country is developing rapidly.	a <i>rapidly growing</i> country
The battles never end.	<i>never-ending</i> battles
The battles last long.	<i>long-lasting</i> battles
The machine functions badly.	a <i>malsfunctioning</i> machine
The floor has been recently waxed.	a <i>recently waxed</i> floor

C. V-EN BY MAN → man-made

These structures were made by man.	<i>man-made</i> structures
The book was written by hand.	a <i>handwritten</i> book
The bag is made by hand.	a <i>hand-made</i> bag
The factory was operated by machines.	a <i>machine-operated</i> factory
Turks build the cars.	<i>Turk'sh-made</i> cars

D. V-EN WITH/ IN → rose-filled

The garden was filled with roses.	a <i>rose-filled</i> garden
The book was bound in leather.	a <i>leather-bound</i> book

E. ADVERB OF MANNER+V3 → ADVERB+PARTICIPLE

The bridge was badly damaged.	a <i>badly damaged</i> bridge
The story was written cleverly	a <i>cleverly written</i> story
The case had been thoroughly investigated	a <i>thoroughly investigated</i> case

F. VERB+ADVERB OF PLACE → NOUN+PARTICIPLE

The bread is made at home.	<i>home-made</i> bread
Some animals live in soil.	<i>soil-dwelling</i> animals

G. VERB → PARTICIPLE

The election is coming up.	the <i>up-coming</i> election
The fridge was built in the wall.	a <i>built-in</i> fridge
They long for peace.	a <i>longed-for</i> peace



EXERCISE 483

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki adjective clause'ları participle kullanarak kısaltınız.

1. We want a nation which is undivided. *an undivided nation*
2. On the ocean floor are riches which are untold. *untold riches*
3. The man's life which is troubled and wasted brought him unhappiness.
4. Is this a motor which burns oil? *an oil-burning motor*
5. I will take the train which moves fast.
6. I hope he is a mechanic who is trained well.
7. Plastic is a substance which is made by man.
8. Fatma took a test which is administered by herself.
9. The factory which was managed wrongly lost lots of money.
10. The letter which was misaddressed was returned.
11. The fertilizer which was applied wrongly damaged the crops.
12. We are fond of nuts which are covered with chocolate..
13. Understandably, many who built carriages which were drawn by horses objected to the automobile.
14. We are tired of promises which politicians break.
15. A bomb which was made at home blew up in the terrorist's own hands.
16. Between 1733 and 1789, a series of ingenious machines which were designed to save labour were invented.
17. Artificial hearts which were powered by nuclear energy proved to be complicated, bulky, and expensive.
18. The young couple engaged in arguments which never ended.
19. We hate people who beat children.
20. Animals which dwell in the sea are seriously threatened by pollution.
21. Satellite photos offer information which is vitally needed.
22. Discoveries which fascinate most people are made every year.
23. Ice caps which melt could change world weather conditions.
24. Predictions which amaze the public are made daily.
25. The instructions to use the office machines which have been written on the bulletin board are not satisfactory.
26. Mount Ağrı stands firm with its summit which is capped with snow.

Chapter 50

COMPARISON OF VERBALS

Eylemsilerin Karşılaştırılması

gerund phrases vs. infinitive phrases



"Why do you spend so much time doing commercials on TV?"

To see is to believe.
Seeing is believing.

Gerund phrase'ler ve infinitive phrase'ler aynı tümcenin kısaltılmış şekli olabilir. Bu durumda aynı anlamda gelmeleri doğaldır.

Someone sees. Someone believes.
Someone's seeing is someone's believing.
Seeing is believing.

Someone sees. Someone believes.
For someone to see is for someone to believe.
To see is to believe.

Tümcenin öznesi ve BE eyleminin tümleci olarak kullanıldıklarında gerund phrase'ler ile infinitive phrase'ler aynı anlamda kullanılmaktadır.

Learning a foreign language may be enjoyable.
To learn a foreign language may be enjoyable.

Bill Clinton's strategy was not to be drawn into questions about his ethics.
Bill Clinton's strategy was not being drawn into questions about his ethics.

Her best point is to be punctual.
Her best point is being punctual.

To spend long winter nights around the fireplace is now a thing of past.
Spending long winter nights around the fireplace is now a thing of past.

EXERCISE 484

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte gösterildiği gibi tekrar yazınız.

To exceed the speed limit is illegal.

Exceeding the speed limit is illegal.

1. To study on an empty stomach is difficult.
2. To shake hands when introduced is a cultural convention.
3. To judge a composition only on the basis of correct grammar is unfair.
4. To buy food in very small quantities is uneconomical especially for big families.
5. To neglect one's health is unwise.
6. To join the army is compulsory in some countries.

EXERCISE 485

Aşağıdaki tümceleri örnekte gösterildiği gibi tekrar yazınız.

She may come to the meeting. It would be wise.

Her coming to the meeting would be wise.

For her to come to the meeting would be wise.

1. She might go to Ankara. It would be a good idea.
2. We will try to prevent that from happening. It will cost a lot of money.
3. Uncle Jack may donate the money. It would be wonderful.
4. Willy might buy a car. It will make his family happy .
5. She will ask for a rise. This might make things worse.
6. Pat thought her husband was seeing another woman. This was nonsense.

EXERCISE 486

Aşağıda verilenlerle örnekte gösterildiği gibi tümceler kurunuz.

his job—teach English

His job is to teach English.

His job is teaching English.

Teaching English is his job.

To teach English is his job.

1. his hobby —collect stamps
2. their business —sell ideas to industry
3. his only interest —make a lot of money
4. my career —write children's books
5. Her hobby— fix things around the house
6. His only amusement —catch butterflies
7. His favorite pastime —clean his antique pistols

Hem gerund'lar hem de infinitive'ler nesne olarak kullanılabilmektedir. Genel olarak, belli eylemler gerund'lari, belli eylemler de infinitive'leri nesne olarak almaktadır. Bir bölüm eylemse hem gerund'lari hem de infinitive'leri nesne

olarak alabilmektedir. Kimi eylemler hiçbir anlam değişikliği yaratmadan hem gerund hem de infinitive nesnelerle kullanılmaktayken bazı eylemlerin nesnelerinin gerund ya da infinitive olması anlam farkı yaratmaktadır.

A. ANLAM DEĞİŞİKLİĞİ YARATMADAN GERUND VE INFINITIVE NESNE ALABİLEN EYLEMLER

attempt	To forget our fear, we attempted singing. To forget our fear, we attempted to sing .
begin	Etna began erupting again in December, 1997. Etna began to erupt again in December, 1997.
cannot bear	I'm taking you to the hospital. I can't bear seeing you in pain. I'm taking you to the hospital. I can't bear to see you in pain.
continue	Although we were tired, we continued working . Although we were tired, we continued to work .
dislike	Most people dislike hearing about their faults. Most people dislike to hear about their faults.
dread	I really dread being alone in a big house at night. I really dread to be alone in a big house at night.
hate	I hate asking such a big favor from you, but I need help. I hate to ask such a big favor from you, but I need help.
intend	Who intends staying here tonight? Who intends to stay here tonight?
like	Nobody likes being embarrassed in front of others. Nobody likes to be embarrassed in front of others.
love	I love spending time with young children. I love to spend time with young children.
neglect	Have you neglected doing the review again? Have you neglected to do the review again?
prefer	The students prefer not having a final exam. The students prefer not to have a final exam.
start	She started giving a long explanation to the police officer. She started to give a long explanation to the police officer.

B. ANLAM DEĞİŞİKLİĞİ YARATARAK GERUND VE INFINITIVE NESNE ALABİLEN EYLEMLER

FORGET

<i>I forgot to mail the letter.</i>	<i>Mektubu postalamayı unuttum.</i>
<i>I forgot mailing the letter.</i>	<i>Mektubu postaladığımı unuttum.</i>

I forgot to take my camera to the mountains last weekend.

I'll never forget taking those beautiful pictures on our vacation last month.

The driver forgot putting gas in the car. (The driver put gas in the car, then forgot that he had done it.)

The driver **forgot to put** gas in the car.
(The driver forgot the car needed gas.)

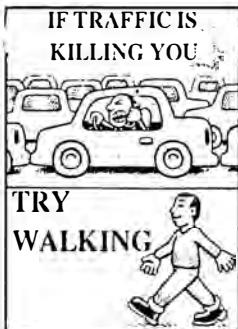
REMEMBER

- I remembered to mail the letter. (Mektubu postalamayı hatırladım, yani postaladım.)
 I remembered mailing the letter. (Mektubu daha önce postalamış olduğumu hatırladım.)
 I remembered to lock the door before we left. Don't worry.
 I remember doing it.

TRY



He tried to open the jar, but he couldn't.



- I tried to cook a Turkish dish. (Bir Türk yemeği pişirmeye çalıştım.)
 Having nothing to do, I was bored. I tried cooking a Turkish dish. (Canımın sıkıntısı geçsin diye bir de Türk yemeği pişireyim dedim/pişirmeyi denedim.)
 They tried to warn him of the danger of speeding. try (experiment)
 They even tried showing him pictures of accident victims.
 You never realize what a good memory you have until you try to forget something.
 —Franklin P. Jones



Why don't you try counting sheep?
 Sizce Hagar, Helga'nın söylediğini anlamış mı?

REGRET

We regret to tell you that you have failed to meet the requirements.

Regret genellikle kötü bir haber vermekte kullanılıyor.

I deeply regret having said such unkind things to my friend.

Arkadaşımı öyle kötü sözler söylemiş olduğuma çok pişmanım.

I regret to tell you that History 203 has been cancelled for this quarter.

I regret not being able to take that course.

MEAN

We mean to find a solution to this problem before we go home.

It may mean staying up all night until we arrive at an answer.

PROPOSE

(propose) As the chairman, I propose to start the meeting on time tomorrow.

(suggest) May I propose starting at nine instead of ten o'clock?

GO ON

Before the break we were talking about inflation. After the break we went on talking about inflation. (Enflasyon hakkında konuşmaya devam ettik.)

Before the break we were talking about inflation. After the break we went on to talk about energy crisis. (Konuşmaya devam ettik ve enerji krizi hakkında konuştuğum.)

LEAVE

I left Bob to work in the garden. (Bana bahçede çalışacağımı söyledi.)

I left Bob to work in the garden. (Bahçede çalışmak için Bob'dan ayrıldım.)

I left Bob working the garden. (Bahçede çalışırken bıraktım.)

Duyu eylemleri hem NP V NP Bare Inf hem de NP V NP V-ING kalıplarında kullanılabilir.

observe feel	hear look at	listen notice	see smell	watch
-----------------	-----------------	------------------	--------------	-------

Bu eylemlerle kullanılan GERUND, işin süregelmekte olduğunu, YALIN INFINITIVE'de işin tamamlanmış olduğunu ifade eder.

<i>I felt the train moving.</i>	Hareket devam ediyor.
<i>I felt the train move.</i>	Hareket tamamlanmış.

They	watched heard saw noticed	me	sing singing	the song.
------	------------------------------------	----	-----------------	-----------

AŞAĞIDAKİ EYLEMLERDEN SONRA KULLANILAN TO-INFINITIVE
gerçekte IN ORDER TO'nun kısaltılmış şeklidir.

STOP	She stopped talking to her husband five weeks ago. Kocasıyla konuşmayı 5 hafta önce kesti.
	Sue stopped (in order) to talk to Bob. Bob'la konuşmak için durdu.
PAUSE	She paused to check the latest figures.
WAIT	They are waiting here to help us.

INFINITIVE VE GERUND KARŞILAŞTIRMA TABLOSU

INFINITIVES		GERUNDS	
<i>Özne Olarak</i> To learn English is enjoyable.	1	<i>Özne Olarak</i> Learning English is enjoyable.	
<i>Nesne Olarak</i> She wants to learn English.	2	<i>Nesne Olarak</i> She enjoys studying English.	
<i>TO BE tümleci Olarak</i> To see is to believe.	3	<i>TO BE tümleci Olarak</i> Seeing is believing.	
<i>Tümce Kalibi 11 ve 12</i> We saw them paint the wall. We told them to be ready.	4	<i>Tümce Kalibi 13</i> We saw them painting the wall.	
<i>Noun Clause Kısaltması</i> I don't know what to say.	5	<i>Tümce Kısaltması</i> She is in the library studying.	
<i>Relative Clause Kısaltması</i> The first woman to climb Mount Everest was a lawyer.	6	<i>Adverb Clause of Reason Kısaltması</i> Having nothing to do, she went to bed early.	
<i>Belli Adlarla</i> She has no desire to learn English. She has the ability to write.	7	<i>USE ve GOOD adlarıyla</i> It is no use crying over spilt milk. It is no good trying to help him.	
<i>Belli Sıfatlardan Sonra</i> He is quick to take offence. It is important to learn English.	8	<i>İlgeçlerle</i> I object to working here. I am tired of listening to them.	
<i>TOO/ENOUGH Kalıplarıyla</i> She is too young to work here. It is warm enough to go fishing.	9	<i>WORTH ile</i> This book is worth reading.	
<i>ADJECTIVE +OF Kalibi</i> It is kind of you to help us.	10	<i>Birleşik Adlar</i> She bought a pair of running shoes.	
<i>AND'lı Tümcecik Kısaltması</i> He came home to find two uninvited guests.	11	<i>Adverb Clause of Manner Kısaltması</i> Crying, she went home.	
<i>Zorunluluk/Yargı</i> I have got a report to type. I am not to blame for the chaos.	12	<i>Yöntem</i> She made a fortune writing love novels.	

EXERCISE 487

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde infinitive mi yoksa gerund mı gerektiğini belirleyiniz.

1. He regretted (GIVE) her his favorite shirt.
2. George needs Margaret (HELP) him walk.
3. If you care (SEE) the apartment again, please give me a call.
4. Nancy suggested (GO) to the lake this weekend.
5. We should urge them (VISIT) us more often.
6. If you don't hand your assignment in on time, you risk (RECEIVE) a lower grade.
7. I cannot allow you (GO) out driving in this weather.
8. Elizabeth claims (KNOW) the president of the company.
9. We finished (EAT) at about 7:30.
10. The doctor recommended (WALK) every day for extra exercise.
11. The police caught the man (DRIVE) the stolen car.
12. The lost child was found (WALK) in the park.
13. Try to avoid (DRINK) before (DRIVE).
14. I tried (SEND) her flowers, writing her letters, and giving her presents, but she still wouldn't speak to me.
15. She had a good time (WATCH) the ice skating competition.
16. He spends a lot of time (PLAY) computer games.
17. I stood at the bus stop (WAIT) for 45 minutes.
18. He complained about (GET) a bad grade.
19. She is upset about (LEAVE) her homework at home.
20. At last I have managed (SEE) to ask my boss for a raise.

EXERCISE 488

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda verilen eylemlerin uygun şekillerini kullanınız.

1. _____ this math problem, I will need _____ my calculator. (*solve, use*)
2. His behavior leads me _____ that he doesn't enjoy _____. (*believe, study*)
3. She was hesitant _____ a commitment _____ on our project at this time. (*make, work*)
4. When trying _____ the assignment, don't forget _____ our notes. (*understand, read*)
5. The children are anxious _____ to the party, but the parents would be content _____ home. (*go, stay*)
6. Max used his wrench _____ the tire from his car before _____ it to the garage. (*remove, take*)
7. Several of the necessary ingredients for _____ my cake are nowhere _____. (*bake, is*)
8. I want everybody _____ comfortable while they are trying _____. (*is, work*)
9. The type of paint needed _____ this picture is difficult to find. (*complete*)
10. Although she wanted _____ to the concert tonight, she decided _____. (*go, stay*)

EXERCISE 489

Doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

- _____ has improved over the past few weeks.
A. Helen swims C. Helen swam
B. Helen to swim D. Helen's swimming
 - A clever game for _____ is tic-tac-toe.
A. keeping children happy C. children are happy
B. to keep children happy D. it keeps children happy
 - Freezing, drying, and canning have long been used for _____ nutrients and freshness in foods.
A. preservation C. to preserve
B. preserved D. preserving
 - This hot weather has affected my ability _____.
A. concentrating C. concentrated
B. to concentrate D. for me to concentrate
 - The fastest way _____ to my house is to take the freeway.
A. gotten C. to get
B. getting D. you get

EXERCISE 490

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ayrıc içindeki eylemlerin gerund ya da infinitive şékil-lerini kullanınız. Bazı tümcelerde hem gerund hem de infinitive kullanılabilir.

- She likes **TO TRAVEL / TRAVELLING**. (*travel*)
 - Health specialists recommend ____ dental examinations at least twice a year. (*have*)
 - The knee had begun ____ . (*ache*)
 - Most people enjoy ____ the Net, but few are serious-minded. (*surf*)
 - The United States has never hesitated ____ entire Indian populations. (*obliterate*)
 - He wanted ____ himself. (*enjoy*)
 - She couldn't bear ____ to another villa. (*move*)
 - The old man began ____ his experience. (*describe*)
 - You couldn't help ____ his company. (*enjoy*)
 - He planned ____ the matter later. (*mention*)
 - The Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) agreed in March ____ discussions with Israel. (*resume*)
 - I prefer ____ a taxi. (*take*)
 - Charles was preparing ____ his life to God. (*dedicate*)
 - The girl kept ____ (*smile*)
 - France did not even bother to deny ____ Armenian terrorists. (*support*)
 - He didn't know how ____ her. (*get rid of*)
 - It was difficult ____ that she was lame. (*tell*)

18. You oughtn't to keep ____ like that. (*swear*)
 19. I'll try ____ him win the arguments. (*let*)
 20. He remembered ____ beside his mother's bed. (*kneel*)

EXERCISE 491

Verilen eylemlerin infinitive ya da gerund şeklini kullanınız.

1. I'm sorry. I meant (*write*) to you, but I've been busy.
2. Harry says he doesn't remember (*meet*) Sally before.
3. Martin failed (*pay*) the rent on time again.
4. It's not worth (*buy*) a return ticket.
5. Have you ever considered (*work*) as a teacher?
6. I promise I won't forget (*feed*) the cat.
7. We've arranged (*meet*) outside the school at 4.30.
8. If you've got a headache, why don't you try (*take*) an aspirin?
9. I can't imagine (*not have*) a car!
10. Pauline couldn't manage (*type*) the whole report.
11. A witness reported (*see*) Terry at the scene of the crime.
12. William pretended (*not notice*) the 'No Parking' sign.
13. One of the boys finally admitted (*start*) the fire.
14. Suppose I tend (*buy*) more books than I used to.
15. Sometimes I regret (*move*) to this part of the country.
16. Did you notice anyone (*wait*) outside when you left?
17. Mark expects (*finish*) work round about 6.00.
18. Mary was so angry that she demanded (*see*) the manager.
19. The weather is so awful that I don't fancy (*go out*) this evening.
20. The children could hardly bear (*leave*) their pets behind.
21. Do you happen (*know*) when this castle was built?
22. It isn't right for us (*borrow*) something without (*return*).
23. They want Linda (*finish*) her homework before (*watch*) television.
24. She enjoys (*listen to*) while (*do*) her homework.
25. She hopes (*find*) a job after (*graduate*) from college.
26. I'm willing (*cut*) the grass if you don't mind (*wash*) the windows.
27. They expect us (*work*) hard without (*complain*).
28. They agreed (*pay*) Jimmy 15 dollars for (*paint*) the bathroom.
29. We're tired of him (*take advantage of*) everyone by (*ask*) for money all the time.
30. I criticized my sister for (*take*) the car without (*ask*) permission.
31. Don't forget (*call*) Peter and tell him (*meet*) us at six o'clock.
32. Please remind him (*turn off*) the lights before (*leave*).
33. We invited Helen (*come*) to the party and asked her (*bring*) her new records.
34. She wants (*impress*) everyone by (*wear*) her new dress to the party.

gerund phrases vs. participle phrases

GERUND ÖBEĞİ Mİ, PARTICIPLE ÖBEĞİ Mİ?

Present participle ile gerund biçimleri -ING görünüşüne sahip olduklarından kimi zaman karışıklığa yol açabilirler.

Cramming for tests is not a good study strategy.

→ özne / subject

Cramming for tests, tümcenin öznesi olduğundan gerund phrase olarak kullanıldığı açıklar.

Cramming for tests, Jack managed to pass the course.

→ (Because he crammed for tests)

Cramming for tests, bu tümcede özne olarak kullanılmamaktadır. Dersi geçmenin nasıl başarılığını anlatmaktadır. **Cramming for tests**, bir bakma bir adverb clause'un kısaltılmış şekli olarak kullanılmaktadır. Bu kullanımda da gerund phrase kullanımı söz konusudur.

Jack spent the weekend **cramming for tests.**

→ (HOW)

SPEND eylemi *spend a period of time doing something* kalıbında kullanılmaktadır. Bu kalıptaki DCING SOMETHING yapısı da gerund öbeği olarak görülmelidir.

Şimdi şu iki tümceye bakalım:

Jack had little money.

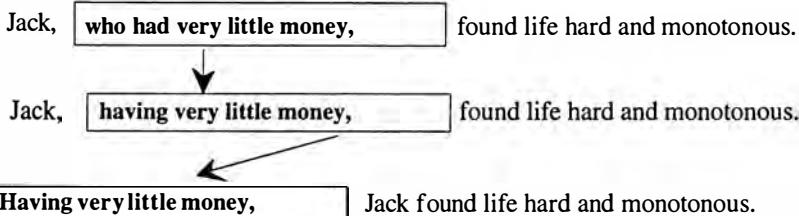
He found life hard and monotonous.

A tümcesi B tümcesinin bir nedeni olarak algılanabilir.

Because he had very little money , Jack found life hard and monotonous.

Having very little money

Tümceler arasında bir sebep-sonuç ilişkisi gözetilmiyorsa söyle birleştirme de mümkünündür.



Bu örneklerde bakılarak şu sonucun çıkarılması gerekmektedir. *Having very little money*, hem gerund öbeği hem de participle öbeğinin kısaltılmış şekli olabilir. Bu nedenle *Having very little money, Jack found life hard and monotonous* tümcesi iki ayrı anlama gelmek durumundadır:

Çok az parası olduğu için Jack, hayatını zor ve sıkıcı buluyordu.

Çok az parası olan Jack, hayatını zor ve sıkıcı buluyordu.

Adların iyelik (possessive) biçimleri sıfat niteliğinde olduğundan onları izleyen V-ING biçimlerinin zorunlu olarak gerund olması gerekmektedir.

☞ (A) Kızın sırada oturuşu /(B) Sırada oturan kız öğretmeni kızdırdı.

A.	The girl's sitting at the desk annoyed the teacher.
B.	The girl sitting at the desk annoyed the teacher.

EXERCISE 492

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilen öbeklerin anımlarını düşünerek GERUND ÖBEĞİ Mİ PARTICIPLE ÖBEĞİ Mİ olduğuna karar veriniz.

1. Being intelligent and creative, he soon discovered easier ways of doing the work.
2. Smiling warmly, Mary shook hands with me.
3. The man driving the car was wearing dark glasses.
4. Being ill, she couldn't attend the funeral.
5. Having eaten too much at dinner, I had a terrible stomachache.
6. Having drunk too much, he made a nuisance of himself at the party.
7. Needing somewhere to house my books, I rented a flat.
8. Walking in the park, I saw a lot of flowers.
9. The train leaving from Platform 9 goes to Ankara.
10. The couple living in the flat above us will help us find a better job.

EXERCISE 493

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde italik dizilmiş olan öğelerin işlevleri aşağıdakilerden hangisidir?

Subject

Adverb Phrase

Object of Verb

Object of Preposition

Complement of BE

Appositive

1. *Slaughtering defenseless people* is an American tradition. /SUBJECT
2. *Slaughtering defenseless people with overwhelming force*, the USA grew to be an evil empire. /ADVÉRB PHRASE
3. *Mowing the twenty-acre field* took them two days.
4. The USA governments have always been intent on *slaughtering defenseless people with overwhelming force*. /OBJECT OF PREPOSITION
5. *Firing on a crowd in Fallujah*, American soldiers killed 18 Iraqis and wounded 78.
6. Americans are liberating the people of Iraq by *massacring them*.
7. *Having finished his part of the work*, Mike left.
8. The worst crime is *murdering a human being*.
9. *Working with the IMF* cost Turkey its freedom.
10. Turkey's deadly mistake was *working with the IMF*.
11. The American soldier did not mind *breaking the neck of a prisoner*.
12. The US corporate media make lots of money *serving as a propaganda machine for the Bush regime*.
13. Bush's main tactic, *lying to the US public on a regular basis*, seems to have worked well.
14. *Treating Iraqis like animals*, the American soldiers simply displayed the real face of western civilization.
15. What UN member would ever contemplate *sending peace-keeping troops to Iraq now*?
16. *Looking at the past* is an important step towards understanding the future.
17. No one likes *being called a coward*.
18. *Looking at the American Congress*, I have the feeling that clowns are quite serious people.
19. *Putting it off until tomorrow* is the cause of all failures.
20. Very few serious observers expect the United States to achieve its declared aims of *establishing a democratic government in Iraq*.

shoes for dancing or shoes which dance?

shoes which are for dancing

shoes which are for dancing

shoes **dancing**

shoes which are dancing

shoes which are dancing

shoes **dancing**

dancing shoes



The magician is using a walking stick when walking.

A walking stick is a product of imagination.

EXERCISE 494

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde altı çizili öğelerin gerund mü yoksa participle mü olarak kullanıldığına karar veriniz.

1. We have got a beautiful washing machine.
2. We enjoyed swimming in the lake after dark.
3. Swimming in the lake after dark might be very dangerous.
4. The children swimming in the lake now are our new students.
5. Studying biochemistry for years is his greatest advantage.
6. Studying biochemistry for years, he has become quite famous.
7. Watching the news one night, he saw his hometown hit by an earthquake.
8. The students watching the match on TV were very noisy.
9. Tired of memorizing long formulas, we decided to quit studying.
10. The homeless woman having no warm clothes on caught our attention.

EXERCISE 495

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde italik dizilmiş olan öbeklerin türünü (gerund phrase, infinitive phrase, participle phrase) belirleyiniz.

1. *Raising his eyes from his book*, he saw a shadowy figure on the stairs.
2. I have always been grateful to my parents for *naming me John instead of Rock or Tab or Rip*.
3. Then the woman rushed back into the building *to rescue her canary*.
4. Paul was wearing an old pair of blue jeans *spattered with paint*.
5. Can you touch the floor without *bending your knees*?
6. Captain Parker's mission was *to destroy the bridge*.
7. *Being blamed a second time for my mistakes* made him furious.
8. The smoke and the flags had one purpose—*to distract our attention from the magician's left hand*.
9. His next step was *interviewing the manager of the team*.
10. After a bit of persuasion, Mr. Barnes gave us permission *to use his garage for our rehearsals*.
11. The only way to impress Miss Hill is *to do a good job*.
12. Then Leonard, *confused by my statement*, admitted breaking the window.
13. Two of the men *sitting in the back* escaped by crawling through the emergency door.
14. *Holding my nose*, I managed to drink a spoonful of the horrible cough medicine.

EXERCISE 496

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde ayraç içinde verilen eylemsinin doğru şeklini kullanınız.
Gerekliyorsa eylemsinin öznesini iyelik yapısına sokunuz.

Are you against children (watch) television?

Are you against *children's watching* television?

I can't bear (stand) there all by herself looking so sad and lonely.

I can't bear *her standing* there all by herself looking so sad and lonely.

I'm not going to stand (treat) like a slave any longer.

I'm not going to stand *being treated* like a slave any longer.

1. We have got used to (*do*) all sorts of things we never did as children.
2. I'm against (*watch*) television too often, either by children or adults.
3. Please forgive (*be*) so late; I was delayed by the fog.
4. Most people detest (*keep*) waiting, and I'm sure you're no exception.
5. Although Sheila looks quite like her younger sister, she's very different from her in character and dislikes (*mistake*) for her by strangers.
6. Shelia is kind but firm with the children in her classes and doesn't tolerate anyone (*fool about*).
7. I would appreciate (*tell*) me when you've finished the task.
8. Pardon (*mention*) it, but could I have the ten pounds back that I lent you last month?
9. I grudge (*lend*) money to people who are less than meticulous about (*pay*) it back.
10. (*Be*) my boss doesn't excuse (*treat*) me the way you do.
11. Pressure of work prevented me from (*take*) my usual summer holiday this year.
12. I'm very much looking forward to (*go*) to Mersin in the autumn.
13. I can't foresee anything (*happen*) to stop from (*have*) a holiday.
14. Willie is contemplating (*learn*) English with a view to (*read*) science fiction novels in the original.
15. (*Learn*) Arabic entails (*learn*) a new alphabet, but that's the least of one's difficulties.
16. I escaped from (*have*) to do the dishes by (*pretend*) to be sick.
17. As I'm nearly forty, I don't anticipate ever (*call up*) now.
18. Robert admits (*have*) too much to eat when he broke the chair he sat on.
19. I don't recollect (*apologize*), which you certainly should have done.
20. Charles's sister's in the garden practicing (*stand*) on one leg, as she's got the part of a stork in her college play.
21. Columbus' (*kill*) thousands of natives cruelly seldom gets mentioned in American history books.
22. The doctor says that I should stop (*eat*) between meals if I have to live longer.

EXERCISE 497

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin doğru şekillerini kullanınız.

1. Lucy called on her mother the other day and found her (*lie*) on the sofa scarcely able to move. When they got her mother to hospital she was found (*suffer*) from pernicious anemia.
2. You want to see Harry McArthur? I'm afraid he's gone (*fish*) and won't be back for some time.
3. Do you know what I've just heard Sheila (*say*)? She said she'd never speak to Helen again.
4. We are taking Charles and Christine up to London tomorrow (*see*) the sights.
5. Helen should stop (*criticize*) people behind their backs. Has she, I wonder, ever stopped (*think*) what people must be saying about her in return?
6. I regret (*say*) that Sheila didn't get the headmistress's post she applied for. She now regrets (*apply*) for it, because the application took up a lot of her time.
7. The world's political and social problems have, to tell you the truth, ceased (*interest*) me. I ceased (*try*) to put the world in order soon after leaving university.
8. Do you mean (*tell*) me that you didn't accept that wonderful contract with Microsoft?
Yes, I do, because if I had accepted it, it would have meant (*give up*) an even better contract with Apple.
9. Robert is putting on weight. He says he can't help (*eat*) large meals however hard he tries. He hopes that the new football season may help him (*take*) off a few pounds.
10. You say you've tried (stop) (*snore*) but have failed. Have you tried (*sleep*) on your stomach?
11. Although I generally prefer (*be*) frank to (*be*) secretive, on this particular occasion I prefer (*keep*) my opinion of Denis to myself, if you don't mind.
12. My uncle started (*smoke*) heavily a couple of years ago and now his health is starting (*deteriorate*).
13. However good one may think it is (*get*) out into the fresh air at weekends, it's no good (*try*) (*convince*) Toby of that; he prefers indoor pursuits like billiards.
14. I dread (*think*) what my father's reaction will be when I tell him the news. That's why I'm dreading (*go*) home tomorrow for the weekend.
15. My mother wants me (*cut*) the lawn. I know it wants (*cut*), but I really haven't time this weekend.
16. Supporters of the Internet fail (*mention*) that it contains a lot of trash (*package*) to look like reliable information.

Başkan BUSH'un 11 Eylül saldırısından sonra ABD içinde güvenliği sağlamak için her vatandaşın komşularını gözetlemesini ve kuşkulu davranışları polise bildirilmesini istemesi üzerine



NP ¹	Asking citizens to spy on neighbours whom they believe to be a threat to the American way of life
BE	isn't
NP ¹	such a good idea.



Tümcedeki eylemlerini gösterebilir misiniz?
Tümceyi Türkçe'ye çevirebilir misiniz?

PART EIGHT

PARTS OF SPEECH

CHAPTER 51	Parts of Speech	805
CHAPTER 52	Nouns	816
CHAPTER 53	Verbs	848
CHAPTER 54	Adjectives	874
CHAPTER 55	Adverbs	906
CHAPTER 56	Pronouns	937
CHAPTER 57	Prepositions	962
CHAPTER 58	Prepositions of Place and Position	970
CHAPTER 59	Prepositions of Direction	989
CHAPTER 60	Prepositions of Time	999
CHAPTER 61	Other Types of Prepositions	1005
CHAPTER 62	A General Look at Prepositions	1016
CHAPTER 63	As vs. Like	1043
CHAPTER 64	Conjunctions	1048
CHAPTER 65	Interjections	1063
CHAPTER 66	Articles	1065
CHAPTER 67	Determiners	1086
CHAPTER 68	Intensifiers	1100
CHAPTER 69	Quantifiers	1105

Chapter 51

PARTS OF SPEECH

sözcük türleri



"WHAT DOES RETIRED
MEAN, DENNIS ?"

"TIRED YESTERDAY, TIRED
AGAIN TODAY...I GUESS."

Sözcükler, anımlarına ve işlevlerine göre belli türlere ayrılmaktadır. Sözcük türlerini tanıtmak gereklidir. Karikatürde Dennis sözcük türlerini tanımadığı için *RETIRED* sözcüğünü yanlış yorumlamaktadır. {RE-} eki eylemlere eklenebilen bir önekdir. Dennis'in tahmin ettiği gibi sıfatlarla kullanılmaz; bu nedenle *RETIRED* sözcüğü *RE + TIRED* olarak düşünülemez.

İngilizce'de 8 sözcük türü olduğunu söylemek genel bir eğilimdir.

adlar / nouns

eylemler / verbs

sıfatlar / adjectives

zarflar / adverbs

zamirler / pronouns

ilgeçler / prepositions

bağlaçlar / conjunctions

ünlemeler / interjections

Saptanan bu 8 sözcük türüne girmeyen sözcükler olduğunu daha sonra göstereceğiz. Şimdi 8 sözcük türünü genel çizgileriyle tanıtalım.

nouns isimler/adılar	Varlıkların adları olan sözcüklerdir. <i>bird, water, honesty, John, etc.</i>
verbs fiiller/eyeciler	Bir durum ya da iş anlatan sözcüklerdir. <i>stay, run, be, etc.</i>
adjectives sifatlar/özellikler	Adları ve zamirleri niteleyen sözcüklerdir. <i>long, old, beautiful, happy, etc.</i>
adverbs zarflar/belirteçler	Eylemleri, sifatları ve zarfları niteleyen sözcüklerdir. <i>slowly, hard, carefully, etc.</i>
pronouns zamirler/öğüller	Tümcede bir adım yerine kullanılabilen sözcüklerdir. <i>I, me, mine, you, she, he, him, her, etc.</i>
prepositions edatlar/ ilgeçler	Adlarla tümce öğeleri arasında çeşitli ilişkiler kuran sözcüklerdir. <i>of, about, for, among, at, etc.</i>
conjunctions bağlaçlar	Sözcükleri, öbekleri ve tümceleri bağlayan sözcüklerdir. <i>and, although, thus, etc.</i>
interjections ünlemeler	Güçlü duyu ifade eden sözcüklerdir. <i>Ouch, eh, etc.</i>

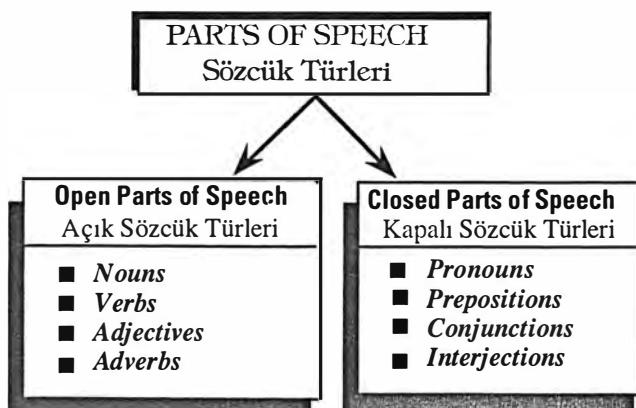


Yukarıdaki tabloda sözcük türlerinin kimileri için kullanımda olan iki ayrı karşılık verilmiştir. Bu kitapta kullanılan terimler koyu dizilmıştır.

İngilizce ve Türkçede 8 sözcük türü olduğunu söyleyebiliriz. Sözcük türleri genel olarak iki temel bölgeye ayrılmaktadır.

1. Açık sözcük türleri

2. Kapalı sözcük türleri



Kuşkusuz tümceler sözcüklerle kurulmaktadır. Sözcükler, tümce kuruluşunda kendi türlerine göre görevler üstlenmektedir. Örneğin, adlar özne ya da nesne olarak kullanılmaktaken sıfatlar tümcelerde adları nitelemekte kullanılmaktadır. Diğer taraftan zamirler, adların yerine kullanılmaktadır.

AÇIK SÖZCÜK TÜRLERİ

Adlar, eylemler, sıfatlar ve zarflar açık sözcük türleridir. Açık sözcük türleri, yeni öğeler kabul eden türlerdir. Bir başka deyişle, yeni adlar, eylemler, sıfatlar ve zarflar yaratılabilmektedir.

Açık sözcük türlerine yeni sözcükler eklemenin en yaygın yolu türetmedir. Aşağıdaki örnekte ACT sözcüğünden türetme ile elde edilen sözcükleri görüyoruz.



Türetme eklerinin anlamları belirlidir. ACT kökünün anlamını öğrendiğimizde ondan türetilmiş bulunan sözcüklerin anlamlarını tahmin etmek zor olmayacaktır.

KAPALI SÖZCÜK TÜRLERİ

Zamirler, ilgeçler, bağlaçlar ve ünlemeler kapalı sözcük türleridir. Kapalı sözcük türlerine ise yeni sözcükler eklenmediğinden sayıları sabittir.

Açık sözcük türleri ile kapalı sözcük türleri arasındaki bir önemli ayırım da açık sözcük türlerinin kavramsal, kapalı sözcük türlerinin de işlevsel olmasıdır. Açık sözcük türleri kavramları işaret ederken, kapalı sözcük türleri sadece sözdizimsel işlevler üstlenmektedir.

KAPALI SÖZCÜK TÜRLERİ SINIFINA GİRMESİ GEREKEN DİĞER SÖZCÜKLER

Dilbilgisi kitaplarında kapali sözcük türleri arasında gösterilmemekle birlikte kapali sözcük türü olarak değerlendirilmesi gereken sözcük grupları bulunmaktadır. Bunlar, *Determiners*, *Intensifiers* ve *Auxiliaries* gruplarıdır.

1	D	Determiners	
	E	Ad Belirleyicileri	
	T	a. Articles	<i>a, an, the</i>
	E	Tanımlıklar	
	R	b. Possessive Adj.	<i>my, your, his, her, our, their</i>
	M	İyelik Sifatları	
	I	c. Demonstrative Adj.	<i>this, that, these, those</i>
	N	İşaret Sifatları	
	E	d. Quantifiers	<i>many, much, a lot of, little, a little, few, a few, several, more, less</i>
	R	Miktar Belirleyicileri	
	S		
2.	Intensifiers Pekiştiriciler		<i>very, quite, somewhat, rather, pretty, mighty, a little, a bit, so, too, more, most, less, least, enough</i>
3.	Primary Auxiliaries Temel Yardımcı Eylemler		<i>am, is, are, was, were, do, does, did, have, has, had</i>
4.	Modal Auxiliaries Kip Belirteçleri		<i>can, could, shall, should, will, would, must, may, ought to, have to, had to, used to,</i>



*For the want of a nail the shoe was lost,
For the want of a shoe the horse was lost,
For the want of a horse the rider was lost,
For the want of a rider the battle was lost,
For the want of a battle the kingdom was lost,
And all for the want of a horse-shoe nail.*

-Benjamin Franklin

İNGİLİZCE VE TÜRKÇE AÇIK SÖZCÜK TÜRLERİ

Türkçe'de ad kökleriyle eylem kökleri ayrıdır. Yani bir sözcük hem ad hem de eylem olarak kullanılamaz. İngilizce'deysse eylem kökleriyle ad kökleri aynı olabilmektedir. Yukarıda Benjamin Franklin alıntısında sık kullanımı olan WANT eyleminin ad şeklini görüyoruz. Aşağıda *water* sözcüğü ilk tümcede ad, ikinci tümcede ise eylem olarak kullanılmaktadır. *Plant* sözcüğü de ikinci tümcede ad, üçüncü tümcede eylem olarak kullanılmaktadır.

1	The plants	need	water.
2	The gardener	will water	the plants.
3	The gardener	will plant	roses.

WE ARE NOT TEACHING MACHINES. tümcesinin iki ayrı şekilde algılanabileceğini görüyoruz.

1	WE	ARE NOT TEACHING	MACHINES.
	NP¹	TrV	NP²

2	WE	ARE NOT	TEACHING MACHINES.
	NP¹	BE	NP²

Teaching 1. tümcede eylem olarak kullanılmaktayken ikinci tümcede "present participle" olarak yani bir *verbal* (eylemsi) olarak kullanılmaktadır. Dilbilgisi kitaplarında ayrı bir sözcük türü olarak değerlendirilmeyen eylemsiler, kullanımları açısından geniş bir yelpazeye sahiptirler. Onları ilgili bölümde incelemekteyiz.

Birinci tümcede *TEACH* eylem olarak kullanılmaktadır. Tümcenin anlamı da "Biz makinalara öğretmiyoruz/makinalara öğretmenlik yapmıyoruz" şeklinde ifade edilebilir. İkinci tümcede *TEACHING* 'present participle' olarak kullanılmaktadır. Tümcenin anlamı bu durumda "Biz öğretim makinaları değiliz." olmalıdır.

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde *author* sözcüğünün hem ad hem de eylem olarak kullandığını görüyoruz.

<i>The author</i>	<i>seems</i>	<i>happy.</i>
NP¹	BE	NP²

<i>The pop singer</i>	<i>will author</i>	<i>a new biography.</i>
NP¹	TrV	NP²

İngilizce'de, Türkçe'de görülmeyen bir şekilde, pek çok ortak eylem ve ad kökü olduğunu görüyoruz. Bir başka deyişle, pek çok sözcük İngilizce'de hem ad hem de eylem olarak görev yapmaktadır.

Düzen tarafından kimi sözcükler değişik sözcük türleri olarak da kullanılmaktadır. BACK'i bir örnek olarak sunalım.

1. She is carrying her baby on her **back**. (=Noun, sırt)
2. We were sitting at the **back**. (=Noun, arka)
3. He left the building by the **back** door. (=Adjective, arka)
4. She looked **back** and waved good-bye. (=Adverb, geri)
5. He **backed** the car out of the garage. (=Verb, geri geri sürmek)
6. We will all **back** you up. (=Verb, desteklemek)

Türkçe'de kimi sıfatlar tümce içinde adların yerini alır gibi görünülmektedirler. İngilizce'deyse bu mümkün değildir.

Kolay soruları herkes yanıtladı.

Zorları sadece Ali yanıtladı.

Zor sözcüğü bir sıfattır. Buna rağmen çoğul ekiyle birlikte kullanılır gibi görülmektedir. Yukarıdaki tümceleri İngilizce'ye çevirelim:

Everybody answered the easy questions.

Only Ali answered the difficult ones.

Zor anlamındaki *difficult* ad yerine kullanılamamaktadır.

Türkçe'de *GÜZEL* gibi kimi sıfatlar, ad ve zarf kullanımında olabilmektedir. İngilizce'de bu mümkün değildir.

Iki güzel geldi. / Two beautiful girls came.

Güzel konuştu. / He spoke beautifully.

Hem İngilizce'de hem Türkçe'de pek çok eşsesli sözcük bulunmaktadır. Eşsesli sözcükler (homophonous words) söylenişleri aynı anlamları farklı sözcüklerdir.

A judge should always be *fair*. (sifat, adil)

A *fair* number of people came. (sifat, büyük)

There is a *fair* chance that you can win. (sifat, oldukça iyi)

We are hoping for *fair* weather. (sifat, iyi)

She was a *fair*-haired girl. (sifat, sarışın)

She made a *fair* copy of the letter. (sifat, temiz)

A *fair* is held here every spring. (ad, fuar)

At a *fair* people enjoy themselves. (ad, luna park)

You must play *fair*. (zarf, dürüstçe)

Sözcük türlerini tanıtmakta iki önemli ipucu vardır: sözcüğün tümcedeki yeri ve sözcükte tanıyalıbildiğimiz ekler.

1. **The hink is here.**
2. **The boy is hinkous.**

HINK sözcüğünün anlamını bilmesek de onun bir ad olduğunu kolayca anlayabiliriz çünkü *the _____ is* yapısında yer almaktadır. Diğer taraftan

HINKOUS sözcüğünün sıfat olduğunu görmek kolay çünkü -OUS ekini taşımaktadır. Üstelik de *The boy is _____* yapısında kullanılmaktadır.

Açık sözcük türlerine yeni sözcükler eklemenin en yaygın yolu türetmedir. Türetme ekleri belli sözcük türlerine eklenerken belli sözcük türleri türetirler. Örneğin, -OR eki için şöyle bir kural yazabiliriz:

EYLEM	- OR	→	AD
<i>act</i>		→	<i>actor</i>
<i>sail</i>		→	<i>sailor</i>
<i>grant</i>		→	<i>grantor</i>
<i>survive</i>		→	<i>survivor</i>
<i>collect</i>		→	<i>collector</i>

Bir köke değişik ekler eklenerken yeni yeni sözcükler türetilibilir. Örneğin, ACT eylem kökünden yeni eylemler, adlar ve sıfatlar türetilibilir. Türetilen sıfatlardan da zarflar türetilibilir.

EYLEM	EYLEM	AD	SIFAT	ZARF
<i>act</i>	<i>activate deactivate reactivate</i>	<i>action actor actress activity activist activation deactivation reactivation activeness inactiveness</i>	<i>active inactive activator</i>	<i>actively inactively</i>

EXERCISE 498

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş sözcüklerin ad mı eylem mi olduğunu belirleyiniz.

1. He has finished his **work** early today, and his **work** has pleased us.
2. What hours does your father **work**?
3. Let's get a cold **drink**.
4. **Drink** your coffee before you leave.
5. On the farm we **worked** from sunrise till dark.
6. The old couple lived on a **farm**.

7. Thank you very much for your **help**.
 8. The **rain** started a few minutes ago.
 9. Let's sit down in the **shade**.
 10. Did they have **fish** for dinner last night?
 11. TV shows **fuel** children's interest in witchcraft.
 12. I like the **taste** of that coffee.
 13. Their **visit** was a long one, and he decided to **visit** us again.
 14. Nobody heard the **whistle**.
 15. I'm not going to listen to his **demand**.
 16. You'll **fall** if you're not careful.
 17. Last night Rip had a bad **fall**.
 18. I have to sign this **check**.
 19. They never expected their son to **father** a child.
 20. We shall **return** tomorrow afternoon.
 21. Our language **shapes** the way we think.
 22. **Water** only the plants on the porch.
 23. She was shocked to see a man **knife** her dog.
 24. They **dress** as soon as they get up.
 25. **Turn** right at the next corner.
 26. Nicholas wanted to sit here and **smoke**.
 27. Can you **stop** this bus?
 28. He decided to **climb** the mountain.
 29. Don't take the pills without **water**.
 30. The **guide** told the travelers that landslides were a constant danger.
-

EXERCISE 499

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu diziilmiş bulunan sözcüklerin türünü belirleyiniz.

1. We went to the greenhouse for **cut** flowers and plants.
2. The florist and her assistants **cut** five hundred roses each day.
3. One of them has a **cut** on his thumb.
4. Many customers **long** for red roses.
5. Roses with **long** stems are very expensive.
6. How **long** do you think roses last?
7. Each day the **plants** are thoroughly watered.
8. The gardener **plants** many new seedlings each day.
9. On a large **stand** in the greenhouse are pots of geraniums.
10. They **stand** in a bright corner of the room.
11. The manager told the driver, "**Back** your car up."
12. The truck was at the **back** door.
13. The driver went **back** to see the manager.
14. The florist **bills** her customers at the end of the month.
15. Some of the **bills** are paid by check.
16. We were blinded by the **light**.
17. Please **light** the fire.

18. The box looked heavy, but it was really very **light**.
19. This year we are studying **plane** geometry.
20. One of the boys will **plane** these boards for you.

ÇEKİM VE TÜRETME EKLERİ



Sözcüklere eklenen eklerin iki genel bölümü vardır: çekim ekleri ve türetme ekleri. Bu ayrimı bilmek yararlıdır.

İNGİLİZCE ÇEKİM EKLERİ

Çekim ekleri, yeni sözcük türetiminde kullanılmazlar. Çekim ekleri tümcede belli ilişkileri göstermekte kullanılır. Aşağıdaki tabloda İngilizce'nin çekim ekleri gösterilmektedir.

Çoğul eki, iyelik eki ve geniş zaman ekinin, {-S}¹, {-S}² ve {-S}³ şeklinde gösterilmesinin nedeni bu eklerin okunuşlarının aynı olmasıdır. Aynı şekilde düzenli eylemlerde simple past ve perfect şekilleri aynı biçimde okundukları için bunlar {-D}¹ ve {-D}² olarak gösterilmiştir.

{-S} ¹	ad	Çoğul eki	<i>books, tables, boxes</i>
{-S} ²	ad	İyelik eki	<i>Ali's, teacher's, teachers'</i>
{-S} ³	eylem	Geniş zaman	<i>goes, eats, does</i>
{-ing}	eylem	Şimdiki zaman	<i>going, doing, writing</i>
{-D} ¹	eylem	Geçmiş zaman	<i>walked, studied, cleaned</i>
{-D} ²	eylem	Perfect	<i>walked, studied, cleaned</i>
{-er}	sifat, zarf	Karşılaştırma	<i>younger, harder</i>
{-est}	sifat, zarf	En üstünlük	<i>youngest, hardest</i>

TÜRETME EKLERİ

İngilizce ve Türkçe sözcük yapımında kullanılan yöntem temelde aynıdır. Yöntem, bir köke türetme eklerinin eklenmesi ilkesine dayanmaktadır.

A. SONEKLER / SUFFIXES

Bir köke ya da gövdeye eklenip yeni sözcükler üreten eklerdir.

	kök/gövde	sonek	türetilmiş sözcük
TÜRKÇE	kral	-lık	krallık
İNGİLİZCE	king	-dom	kingdom

Sözcük türlerini teker teker incelerken yaygın olarak kullanılan türetme eklerini de vereceğiz. Aşağıda yaygın soneklere örnekler veriyoruz.

EK	İŞLEVİ	ÖRNEKLER
-e n	adlardan eylem	lengthen frighten
-er/ar/or	eylemden ad	actor, writer, beggar
-(er)y	eylemden ad	discovery, robbery, injury
-ful	adlardan sıfat	beautiful, careful, wonderful, faithful
-ism	sıfatlardan ad	humanism, imperialism
-ize	sıfatlardan eylem	modernize, realize
-less	adlardan sıfat	careless, fearless, harmless
-ly	sıfatlardan zarf	actively, slowly, diligently, carefully
-ment	eylemden ad	government, agreement, payment
-ness	sıfatlardan ad	happiness, sadness, dullness
-sion	eylemden ad	decision, impression, confusion
-(t)ion	eylemden ad	attention, admission, action

B. ÖNEKLER / PREFIXES

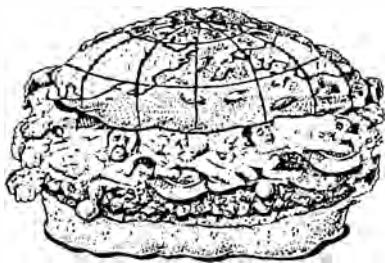
Önekler, **unnecessary**, **dislike** sözcüklerindeki **un-** ve **dis-** gibi kök ve gövdelerin önüne eklenirler. Türkçede önek bulunmaz. Türk söz dağarcığına girmiş bulunan **bıçare** ve **namüsait** sözcüklerinde gördüğümüz Bİ ve NA Türkçe önekler değildir.

Önekler İngilizce'de yaygın olarak kullanılmaktadır. Bu ekleri tanımak ve anımlarını öğrenmek çok yararlı olacaktır. Sözcük türlerini incelerken önekleri de vereceğiz. Aşağıda yaygın öneklere örnekler veriyoruz. Aşağıdaki eklerden çögünün olumsuz eki olduğuna dikkat ediniz.

EK	İŞLEVİ	ÖRNEKLER
dis-	eylemlerden eylem	<i>disagree, disarm, disapprove</i>
en-	sıfatlardan eylem	<i>enlarge, enrich</i>
il-	sıfatlardan sıfat	<i>illogical, illegal</i>
im-	sıfatlardan sıfat	<i>immoral,</i>
in-	adlardan ad	<i>inaction, inability</i>
in-	sıfatlardan sıfat	<i>inactive, insecure, incorrect</i>
ir-	sıfatlardan sıfat	<i>irresponsible, irresistible</i>
mis-	eylemlerden eylem	<i>misplace, mislead</i>
re-	eylemlerden eylem	<i>rewrite, redraw, reappear</i>
un-	eylemlerden eylem	<i>undo, unwrap, unfasten</i>
un-	sıfatlardan sıfat	<i>unafraid, uninteresting, unlawful</i>

MacDonaldization of the World

MacDonald+ize+tion



Türetim ekleri sonsuz sayıda sözcük üretilmesine olanak sağlarlar.

MacDonaldization sözcüğü gibi yeni türetilen bir sözcüğün anlamını anlamamıza yardımcı olacak şey türetim eklerini tanımayabilmemiz olacaktır.

Üretilen sözcüklerin ifade ettiğleri kavramları anlayabilmek kimi zaman "dil dışı" bilgi de gerektirebilir.

Örneğin, ABD'nin dünyaya yaydığı hamburger sadece ekmek arası köfte değildir. Hamburger'in bir ülkeye ayak basabilmesi için önce ABD'nin askeri gücü devreye girer. Hamburger, besin değeri çok düşük, sağlığa da çok zararlı bir yiyecektir. Hamburger bu yönyle ABD kültürünü temsil etmektedir.

MacDonaldization sözcüğü, bu durumdan şikayetçi olanlarca yaratılmıştır. Ancak bu bilgiler ışığında MacDonaldization sözcüğünün ifade ettiği kavram talimin edilebilir.

Yabancı dil öğretiminin dilbilgisiz yapılması da dil öğretiminin MacDonaldization'ı olarak değerlendirilebilir dersek, ne anlatmış oluruz?

Chapter 52

NOUNS

ADLAR



"On the Internet, nobody knows you are a dog."

Adlar, varlıkların, olayların, yerlerin ya da kavramların adları olan sözcüklerdir.

VARLIK	VARLIK	NİTELİK	DUYGU	OLGU
<i>dog</i>	<i>wine</i>	<i>beauty</i>	<i>anger</i>	<i>war</i>
<i>computer</i>	<i>money</i>	<i>courage</i>	<i>hate</i>	<i>epidemic</i>
<i>stone</i>	<i>gold</i>	<i>comfort</i>	<i>love</i>	<i>research</i>
<i>sea</i>	<i>salt</i>	<i>hypocrisy</i>	<i>happiness</i>	<i>discovery</i>
<i>man</i>	<i>air</i>	<i>honesty</i>	<i>fear</i>	<i>flood</i>

The critics admire the talent of the young conductor.

Members of an orchestra must spend hours rehearsing for a concert.

Her mother was an opera singer.

The bus inspector looked at all the passengers' passes.

According to Plutarch, the library at Alexandria was destroyed in 48 B.C.

Philosophy is of little comfort to the starving.

A rolling stone gathers no moss.

Actions speak louder than words.

Hunger is the best sauce.

Happiness is good health and a bad memory.

Beyond the horizon lies the enchanted city.

There is no cosmetic for beauty like happiness.

ADLARIN TÜMCE KURULUŞUNDAKİ YERİ

Tümce kalıplarındaki temel öğelerden birinin ad öbeği olduğunu biliyoruz. Bir adım tek başına ad öbeği olarak kullanılabildiğini söylesek, adların tümce içinde aşağıda belirtilen görevleri yerine getirebileceği anlaşılacaktır.

GÖREV		ÖRNEK
1	<i>özne</i>	Atatürk hated imperialism. Atatürk is the founder of our republic.
2	<i>dolaysız nesne</i>	Atatürk hated imperialism.
3	<i>dolaylı nesne</i>	John gave Tom money.
4	<i>ilgeç nesnesi</i>	We learned the news from Tom.
5	<i>BE tamamlayıcısı</i>	Time is money.
6	<i>nesne tamamlayıcısı</i>	We named the boy Tom.

Bir ad, bir diğer adı nitelendirmek için de kullanılabilir.

7	<i>ad nitelendirmesi</i>	We need more paper cups.
8	<i>nesne tamamlayıcı</i>	The Turks elected Atatürk President.



Atatürk is the first president of the Turkish Republic.



The Turkish people elected Atatürk President.

İkinci tümcede *Atatürk*, ELECT eyleminin nesnesidir. *President* ise *Atatürk'e* bağlıdır, yani nesneyi tamamlamaktadır. Bu özel yapı Tümce Kalıpları bölümünde 9. Tümce Kalibi olarak incelenmektedir. 9. Tümce kalıbında yer alan yaygın eylemler şunlardır: *appoint, call, consider, find, elect, name, select, think*.

ADLARA ÖZGÜ KONUMLAR

Adların tümce içindeki görevleri göz önüne alındığında aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşluklarda ad olan sözcükler kullanılması gerektiği anlaşılacaktır.

1.	I ate (a(n)) _____ .
2.	We don't have any _____ .
3.	The/A _____ is useless.
4.	The/ Some _____ s are useless.
5.	Clinton's _____ is a politician.
6.	We know _____
7.	We know the _____



AD KONUMUNDA KULLANILAN SIFATLAR

The rich are responsible for the misfortunes of the poor.

Yukarıdaki tümcede **rich** ve **poor** sıfatları adlara özgü konumda kullanılıyor görünülmektedir. Gerçekte tümcenin aslı *The rich people should help the poor people* olmalıdır. **Rich** ve **poor** gibi niteledikleri adların atılmasına izin veren bir bölüm sıfat bulunmaktadır. *French*, *Chinese* gibi ulus gösteren sıfatlar da bu öbek îçinde yer alır.

The French have always been a bit cunning.

The rich are growing richer, and the *poor* are growing poorer.

Philosophy is of little comfort to the *starving*.

The dead should be respected.

EXERCISE 500

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki adları bulunuz.

1. Trees in a tropical jungle have an ample supply of water.
2. Rain forests usually are located in tropical regions.
3. Along the coast of California grow the famous redwoods, the tallest trees in the world.
4. The woods in Canada contain mostly evergreens, which adapt well to a cold climate.
5. Woods in the temperate zones have evergreens and also trees that shed leaves, like oaks, beeches, and maples.
6. Many other types of plants are dependent on trees for their life.
7. Forests swarm with insects, mammals, birds, and reptiles .
8. Forests come in many different shapes, kinds, and sizes.
9. Forests arise in Sumatra and in the Congo to supply American corporations with rubber.
10. Rubber and oil become so valuable that people fight wars for their possession.

ADLARIN, AD NİTELEYİCİSİ OLARAK KULLANILMASI

Bir ad, bir başka adı nitelemekte kullanılabilir. Örneğin, *We need paper cups*, tümcesinde *paper* adı, *cup* adını nitelemektedir. Bu kullanım, *paper* adının sıfat olduğu anlamına gelmemektedir. Aşağıdaki tümcelerde *beautiful* sıfatı da *paper* adı da *cup* adını nitelemekte kullanılmaktadır ama *paper* adı olma özelliğini yitirmemektedir. *Paper* adı 2. *We don't have any _____* . yapısında kullanılabilecektir. Bu yapıda *beautiful* sıfatının kullanılamayacağı açıklıktır.

We have	beautiful	cups.
We have	paper	cups.

EXERCISE 501

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde niteleyici olarak kullanılan adları bulunuz.

1. She is an excellent history teacher.
2. I bought an expensive pocket watch.
3. His diamond ring was stolen last week.
4. We need more rubber tires.
5. I dislike metal furniture.
6. Turkish wool carpets are the best in the world.
7. Country life is much more peaceful than city life.
8. He is taking care of our rose gardens.

ADLARIN ANLAMSAL SINIFLANDIRILMASI

I. Cins adlar/Özel Adlar (Common Nouns/Proper Nouns)

Cins adlar: *dog, wine, courage*

Özel adlar: *Atatürk, Çanakkale, Türkiye, Mount Ağrı*

Cins adları, tür gösteren adlardır. Aşağıdaki tümcelerde cins adları koyu dizilmiştir.

According to the sign, the nearest town is 60 miles away.

All the gardens in the neighbourhood were invaded by beetles this summer.

I don't understand why some people insist on having six different kinds of mustard in their cupboards.

The road crew was startled by the sight of three large elephants crossing the road.

Many child-care workers are underpaid.

Özel adlar, belli bir kişinin, yerin ya da varlığın adlarıdır.

<i>KİŞİ adları</i>	Atatürk, George Orwell
<i>Ünvanlar</i>	the President of Turkey
<i>Yer adları, dağlar, nehirler, göller</i>	Ankara, Turkey, Scotland, China, Peru, Albania, Africa, Europe, Asia, Lake Victoria, Lake Michigan, the Rhine, the Nile
<i>Yapılar, parklar</i>	Hyde Park, the Empire State Building
<i>Gün adları</i>	Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Saturday
<i>Ay adları</i>	January, February, March, April, May, June, July, August, September, October, November, December
<i>Tatil adları</i>	New Year's Day, Thanksgiving Day
<i>Kurum adları</i>	NATO, WHO, IMF, TBMM

<i>Sanat yapıtları</i>	<i>Ateşten Gömlek, War and Peace</i>
<i>Din adları</i>	<i>Islam, Christianity, Buddhism</i>
<i>Ulus adları</i>	<i>Turk, American, Dutch</i>

The Maroons were transported from Jamaica and forced to build the fortifications in Halifax.

Many people dread Monday mornings.

Beltane is celebrated on the first of May.

Abraham appears in the Talmud and in the Koran.

 Özel adlardan cins adları, cins adlardan da özel adlar yapılabilir

The tenants in the *Garnet Apartments* are appealing the large and sudden increase in their rent.

The meals in the *Bouncing Bean Restaurant* are less expensive than meals in ordinary restaurants.

Many witches refer to the Renaissance as the *Burning Times*.

The Diary of Anne Frank is often a child's first introduction to the history of the *Holocaust*.

II. Somut adlar/Soyut adlar (Concrete Nouns/Abstract Nouns)

Somut adlar:	dog, wine, flag, meat, table, bus, key
---------------------	--

Soyut adlar:	beauty, anger, honesty, courage, deception
---------------------	--

Somut adlar, beş duyu ile algılanabilen varlıkların adlarıdır. Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki somut adlar koyu dizilmiştir.

The **judge** handed the **files** to the **clerk**.

Whenever they take the **dog** to the **beach**, it spends hours chasing **waves**.

The real estate **agent** urged the **couple** to buy the second **house** because it had new **shingles**.

As the **car** drove past the **park**, the thump of a disco **tune** overwhelmed the string quartet's rendition of a minute.

The **book binder** replaced the flimsy **paper cover** with a sturdy, cloth-covered **board**.

Soyut adlar, beş duyu ile algılayamadığımız varlıkların adlarıdır. Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki soyut adlar koyu dizilmiştir.

Buying the fire extinguisher was an **afterthought**.

Tillie is amused by people who are nostalgic about **childhood**.

Justice often seems to slip out of our grasp.

Some scientists believe that **schizophrenia** is transmitted genetically.

In 1990's George Bush was whipping America into a **frenzy** to attack Iraq.



For New Year's, could I have a cup of kindness?

III. Sayılabilen adlar/Sayılamayan adlar (Count nouns/Mass nouns)

<i>Sayılabilen adlar:</i>	dog, computer, pencil, toy, bottle
<i>Sayılamayan adlar:</i>	wine, beauty, anger, honesty, cruelty

Sayılabilen adlar, sayılması mümkün olan varlıkların adlarıdır. Aşağıdaki tümcelerde sayılabilen adlar koyu dizilmiştir.

We painted the **table** red and the **chairs** blue.

Since he inherited his aunt's **library**, Jerome spends every **weekend** indexing his **books**.

Miriam found six silver **dollars** in the **toe** of a sock.

The oak **tree** lost three **branches** in the **hurricane**.

Over the course of twenty-seven **years**, Martha Ballad delivered just over eight hundred **babies**.

Sayılamayan adlar, sayılması mümkün olmayan varlıkların adlarıdır.

<i>Madde adları:</i>	plastic, iron, paper, butter
<i>Sıvı ve gaz:</i>	water, oxygen, oil
<i>Soyut kavram:</i>	happiness, anger, frustration
<i>Küme, kitle</i>	luggage, baggage

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde sayılamayan adlar koyu dizilmiştir.

Joseph Priestly discovered **oxygen**.

Oxygen is essential to human life.

We decided to sell the **furniture** rather than take it with use when we moved.

The **furniture** is heaped in the middle of the room.

The crew spread the **gravel** over the roadbed.

George Orwell wrote that **freedom** of the press was almost non-existent in the British press of his day.

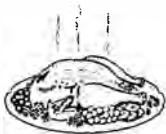
SAYILAMAYAN YAYGIN ADLARA ÖRNEKLER

advice	baggage	china	clothing	education	equipment
food	furniture	happiness	hypocrisy	garbage	greed
homework	honesty	information	knowledge	luggage	machinery
mail	magic	modesty	money	music	news
novelty	punctuation	spelling	tact	travelling	writing

**HEM SAYILABİLEN HEM SAYILAMAYAN AD OLARAK
KULLANILABİLEN ADLAR**



a chicken



chicken



a turkey



turkey

Kimi adların hem sayılabilen hem sayılamayan kullanımı vardır. Sayılamayan ad olarak, bir tür gösterirler. Sayılabilen ad olarak da sayılabilen bir parça gösterirler. Örneğin, *cake*, "pasta" anlamıyla sayılamayan bir addır. Belli bir pastadan söz ettigimizde de sayılabilen bir ad olur. İlginç bir kullanım da bir hayvanın adının sayılabilen adlarla, etinin de sayılamayan adlarla ifade edilmesidir. *The shark is a dangerous fish* tümcesinde "a fish" hayvanı göstermektedir. *She ate fish for dinner* tümcesinde ise *fish* eti ifade etmektedir. Aynı şekilde *a chicken* bir tavuğu, *chicken* tavuk etini ifade etmektedir. Aynı şekilde *a turkey*, bir hindiyi; *turkey* de hindi etini göstermektedir.

Coffee, tea, beer gibi adlar sayılamayan adlardır. Bunlar da *a cup of coffee*, *a cup of tea*, *a glass of beer* gibi yapıların kısa şekli olarak *a tea*, *a coffee*, *a beer* şeklinde kullanılabilmektedir.



Talk ve *difficulty* farklı anımlarla hem sayılabilen hem sayılamayan ad olarak kullanılabilen adlardır.

She has had some difficulties in adjusting to her new life.

The talks will take place in the new hall.

She made friends with little difficulty.

Some people consider idle talk a sin.

EXERCISE 502

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde sayılabilen adların önüne uygun bir tanımlık koyunuz.

1. Most Turks have ____ tea for ____ breakfast.
2. ____ chocolate comes from cacao beans.
3. There was ____ lamb in their garden.
4. If you are gaining weight, you should eat ____ big salad regularly.
5. ____ fish is high in protein.
6. Which do you prefer, ____ veal or ____ lamb?
7. The restaurant serves ____ lunch daily from 12 noon to 2:30 p.m.
8. When we went fishing, Jack caught ____ big fish.
9. They passed the box of candy, and she took ____ chocolate.
10. You can buy ____ pie for fifty cents at Johnson's Bakery.
11. You should eat ____ good breakfast every morning.
12. The three main meals are ____ breakfast, ____ lunch, and ____ dinner.

Sayılamayan adlar, özel anlamlar kazanarak sayılabilir ad olarak kullanılır.

SAYILAMAYAN		SAYILABİLİR	
<i>beauty</i>	güzellik	<i>a beauty:</i>	güzel kadın
<i>business</i>	iş	<i>a business</i>	sirket
<i>cake</i>	şeker ve undan yapılan yiyecek	<i>a cake</i>	şeker ve undan yapılan tatlı
<i>change</i>	para üstü	<i>a change</i>	değişiklik
<i>chicken</i>	tavuk eti	<i>a chicken</i>	tavuk
<i>exercise</i>	çaba	<i>an exercise</i>	alıştırma
<i>glass</i>	cam	<i>a glass</i>	bardak
<i>gossip</i>	dedikodu	<i>a gossip</i>	dedikoducu kimse
<i>hair</i>	sac	<i>a hair</i>	sac teli, kil
<i>iron</i>	demir	<i>an iron</i>	ütü
<i>light</i>	ışık	<i>a light</i>	lamba
<i>paper</i>	kağıt	<i>a paper</i>	gazete, tez, ödev
<i>room</i>	yer	<i>a room</i>	oda
<i>television</i>	iletişim aracı olarak	<i>a television</i>	televizyon alıcısı
<i>time</i>	zaman	<i>time</i>	çağ, devir
<i>wood</i>	odun, kereste	<i>a wood</i>	orman
<i>radio</i>	iletişim aracı olarak	<i>a radio</i>	radyo alıcısı

EXERCISE 503

Aşağıdaki koyu dizilmiş olan adları (*cins/özel, somut/soyut, sayılabilir/ sayılamaz*) olarak sınıflandırınız.

1. Radio has allowed us to communicate quickly over large distances.
2. Honesty is the best policy.
3. The **glass** was broken, and I had to buy a new **glass** for the car.
4. Unselfishness is a highly valued human trait.
5. My **radio** is better than yours.
6. Glass is a brittle material.
7. Exercise is important in maintaining good health.
8. Gunpowder helped to facilitate the transition from feudalism to the nation-state.
9. The books about the crisis were immediate **success**.
10. In medicine laser beams are used in delicate eye surgery.
11. Throughout history, the search for salt has played an important **role**.
12. Needless to say, the mechanical fuel **pump** was a welcome **invention**.
13. Accidental **injuries** become more frequent and serious in later life.
14. Attention to safety is especially important for older persons.
15. Poor eyesight and hearing can decrease **awareness** of hazards.

IV. Topluluk Adları (Collective nouns)

army	enemy	herd	public
audience	faculty	jury	staff
committee	family	majority	team
class	flock	minority	
company	folk	nation	
crew	government	orchestra	
crowd	group	police	

Topluluk adları, toplulukta yer alan bireylerin teker teker düşünülmesi durumunda çoğul kişi olarak değerlendirilir. Topluluk bir tek birim olarak algılanıyorsa, topluluk adı üçüncü tekil kişi olarak kabul edilir. Aşağıdaki tümcelerde topluluk adları koyu dizilmiştir.

The **flock** of geese spends most of its time in the pasture.

The **jury** is dining on take-out chicken tonight.

The steering **committee** meets every Wednesday afternoon.

The **class** was startled by the bursting light bulb.

EXERCISE 504

Aşağıdaki parçada kullanılan adları bulunuz.

Women now compete in sports that were once limited to men. Many teenage girls in this country play soccer. For years, the game had been played almost exclusively by males. Girls now also play baseball on teams in organized leagues. For the first time in history, female crews participate in international rowing events. Female runners are a familiar sight to spectators at marathons. Driving cars at high speeds women now race for the checkered flag.



**"Why are they called waiters
when we are doing all the waiting?"**

NOUN GENDER

Adlarda Cinsiyet

İngilizce adların çoğunluğu cinsiyet göstermez. Örneğin, *teacher*, *cousin*, *artist*, *writer* gibi sözcükler hem erkekleri hem de kadınları gösterebilir. Bununla birlikte adlarda cinsiyet gösteren farklı sözcükler de bulunmaktadır.

Mr. Tarquin Olivier, the son of the late great British *actor* Sir Lawrence Olivier, found a remarkable resemblance between Mustafa Kemal Atatürk and the Spanish *actor* Antonio Banderas.

The manager was trying to write a want ad, but he couldn't decide whether he was advertising for a "*waiter*" or a "*waitress*".

MESLEK	
erkek male	kadın female
actor	actress
author	authoress
barman	barmaid
headmaster	headmistress
host	hostess
landlord	landlady
manager	manageress
salesman	saleswoman
steward	stewardess
waiter	waitress

AİLE	
erkek male	kadın female
aunt	uncle
bachelor	spinster
boy	girl
bridegroom	bride
brother	sister
father	mother
heir	heiress
husband	wife
man	woman
nephew	niece
son	daughter
widower	widow

ÜNVAN	
erkek male	kadın female
baron	baroness
count	countess
duke	duchess
emperor	empress
gentleman	lady
god	goddess
hero	heroine
king	queen
murderer	murderess
prince	princess
shepherd	shepherdess

ZAMİRLERDE CİNSİYET

İngilizce zamirlerden sadece 3. tekil kişi cinsiyet göstermektedir.

özne	nesne	iyelik sıfatı	iyelik zamiri
he	him	his	his
she	her	her	hers

Ülke adlarıyla taşıt araçları "dişi" olarak kabul edilmektedir. Bu nedenle bu adlar yerine zamir kullanıldığında "dişi" zamirler kullanılmaktadır.

My son loves his car. **She** (the car) is his greatest passion.

Switzerland is a rich country, but much of **her** wealth is money stolen from other countries. **She** is a country that launders all kinds of dirty wealth. **She** is a like vampire that lives on stolen wealth.

We travelled from Trabzon to Baku on the Independence. **She** (the Independence) is a great ship.

ADLARIN TÜRETİLMESİ

EYLEMLERDEN AD TÜREten EKLER

-ment	agreement, payment, measurement, government,
-ion, -tion	action, admission, attention, attraction, destruction
(c)ation, -ition	application, expectation, invitation, multiplication
-sion	confusion, impression, division, decision
-ance, -ence	entrance, difference, excellence, insurance, attendance
-er, -or, -ar,	actor, beggar , writer, leader
-ist, -ant, -ent, -al	dependent, typist, arrival, trial, approval, proposal
-ure, -ture, -ature	departure, failure, furniture, pleasure, pressure
-y, -ery, -ary	bribery, discovery, injury, robbery
-ing	wedding, blessing
-age	package, carriage, passage, marriage

Eylemlerden ad türeten eklerden olan {-t} eklendiği eylemlerde diğer eklerden daha fazla değişikliğe neden olur.

<i>Verbs</i>	<i>Nouns</i>
complain	complaint
contain	content
deceive	deceit
descend	descent

<i>Verbs</i>	<i>Nouns</i>
fly	flight
give	gift
join	joint
produce	product

<i>Verbs</i>	<i>Nouns</i>
receive	receipt
see	sight
think	thought
weigh	weight

Sınıflandırmaya girmeyen kimi şekiller de bulunmaktadır.

<i>Verbs</i>	<i>Nouns</i>
advise	advice
bathe	bath
behave	behaviour
believe	belief
bleed	blood
breed	breath
choose	choice
compare	comparison
defend	defense

<i>Verbs</i>	<i>Nouns</i>
feed	food
grow	growth
hate	hatred
heal	health
know	knowledge
laugh	laughter
live	life
lose	loss
pray	prayer

<i>Verbs</i>	<i>Nouns</i>
prove	proof
sell	sale
serve	service
shoot	shot
sing	song
sit	seat
speak	speech
strike	stroke

SIFATLARDAN AD TÜREten EKLER

-ness	dullness, freshness, happiness, loneliness
-y, -ty, -ity	ability, certainty, cruelty, formality
-th	depth, length, strength, youth
-ce	importance, obedience, violence, silence
-cy	efficiency, frequency, secrecy, urgency
-ism	idealism, imperialism, humanism

ADLARDAN AD TÜRETEK EKLER

-dom	kingdom
-hood	childhood, brotherhood
-ist	capitalist, communist, impressionist
-ism	heroism, despotism, capitalism, impressionism
-ship	friendship, fellowship, statesmanship

EXERCISE 505

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde taşıdıkları ekler yardımıyla tanıyalabileceğiniz adları (nouns) yazınız.

1. Helen's eyes were widened with excitement. _____
2. She won the competition easily. _____
3. Don't expect any reward for your faithfulness. _____
4. Her eyes were gleaming. _____
5. The roughness of the sea did not disturb the sailors. _____
6. A lively discussion went on for hours. _____
7. Necessity is the mother of invention. _____
8. There was a strange expression on his face. _____
9. Your son needs your encouragement. _____
10. Unemployment has become a serious problem. _____
11. Women now compete in sports once limited to men. _____
12. Many teenage girls play soccer in USA. _____

EXERCISE 506

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde konumları yardımıyla tanıyalabileceğiniz adları (nouns) yazınız.

1. You can't teach new tricks to a dog. _____
2. Truth never hides in dark corners. _____
3. All work and no play makes Jake a dull boy. _____
4. Every child loves toys. _____
5. Haste makes waste. _____
6. Any fool can ask questions, but only a smart man can answer them. _____
7. A man's house is his castle. _____
8. A friend's envy is worse than an enemy's hatred. _____
9. We have no complaints about your service. _____
10. We don't have a new car. _____
11. Flowers and insects depend on each other for life. _____
12. English has borrowed many words from other languages. _____
13. A political leader should be an effective speaker. _____
14. There are many unverified legends and conjectures about the life of William Shakespeare. _____
15. Today mystery books flood the bookstores. _____

COMPOUND NOUNS BİRLEŞİK ADLAR

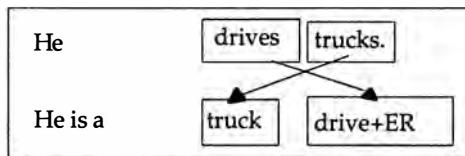
Adlar, diğer sözcük türleriyle birleşerek yeni sözcükler türetilmesinde kullanılabılırler.

1	<u>AD + AD</u>	address book, bathroom, burglar alarm, department store, film star, garden party, girlfriend, headache, heart attack, notebook, package holiday, painkiller, race horse, toothbrush
2	<u>İYELİK + AD</u>	lady's maid, traveler's check
3	<u>SIFAT + AD</u>	blackboard, common sense, blackbird
4	<u>ZARF+AD</u>	downfall, upgrade, downsize
5	<u>EYLEM+AD</u>	pickpocket, flashlight
6	<u>AD+EYLEM</u>	handshake, lifeguard, headache, haircut, milkshake
7	<u>ULAÇ+AD</u>	dining room, frying pan, running shoes, punching bag
8	<u>AD+ULAÇ</u>	data processing, fortune telling, housekeeping, water skiing
9	<u>AD+İLGEÇ ÖBEĞİ</u>	mother-in-law, commander-in-chief

Eylemler de ilgeç ve zarflarla birleşerek birleşik ad türetilmekteidir.

10	<u>EYLEM+İlgeç/Zarf</u>	breakdown, make-up, hold-up
----	-------------------------	-----------------------------

Birleşik adların en yaygın şekillerinden biri **VERB+OBJECT** yapısının **OBJECT+V-ER** şekline sokulmasıyla elde edilir.



EXERCISE 507

Aşağıdaki tümceleri compound noun'lar kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

1. He smokes a pipe.
2. It dries clothes.
3. He makes trouble.
4. He rides on a bus.
5. It lights cigarettes.
6. It holds candles.
7. It sharpens pencils.
8. It cools water.
9. It cooks with pressure.
10. It cleans by vacuum.
11. It divides the room.
12. He reads minds.



a pencil sharpener



a snake charmer

13. He cleans streets.
14. He collects stamps.
15. It kills weeds.
16. She tells fortunes.
17. It extinguishes fire.
18. He dwells in a city.
19. We hunt for treasure.
20. It removes spots.
21. He fights fires.
22. He eats fire.
23. He tames lions.
24. It saves life.

SINGULAR AND PLURAL NOUNS

Tekil ve Çoğu Adlar

İngilizce sayılabilen adlar, birden fazla kişi ya da nesneyi gösterdiklerinde çoğul ekini alırlar. Çoğul eki {-S}'dir. Bu ekin üç ayrı yazılışı vardır.

dog
watch
shelf
baby

dog	s
watch	es
shelf	ies



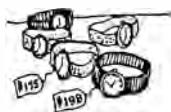
a dog



three dogs



a watch



good watches



a coat



two coats



a glass



three glasses

A *baby* is God's opinion that life should go on. —Carl Sandburg

Since the Gulf war in 1991, the number of Iraqi *babies* born with congenital deformities has soared.

He put the books on the top *shelf*.

The books on the top *shelves* are older than those on the bottom *shelves*.

He tripped over a *box* left carelessly in the hallway.

Since we are moving, we will need many *boxes*.

Çoğul Ekinin Telaffuzu

Çoğul ekinin, eklendiği sözcüklerin son seslerine göre belirlenen 3 ayrı telaffuz vardır: /-s/, /-z/, /-iz/.

book
dog
match

/buk	s/
/dog	z/
/mæç	iz/



Çoğul ekinin telaffuzu, adın yazılısına göre değil, son sesine göre belirlenmektedir. Örneğin **match** sözcüğünün okunuşu /mæç/'tir. Yani son ses /ç/ sesidir. /ç/ sesini çoğul ekinin /-iz/ okunuşu izleyecektr.

<i>/-s/</i>	<i>/-z/</i>			<i>/-ɪz/</i>		
<i>/p, t, k, f, θ/</i>	<i>/b, d, g, m, n, l, v, w, y, r/</i>			<i>/c, ɔ, s, z, ʒ, j/</i>		
maps books	cats cliffs	cabs beams tables doves	beads beans chairs	bags cows boys	badges buses bushes	churches buzzes garages

ÇOĞUL EKİNİN YAZIMIYLA İLGİLİ ÖZEL DURUMLAR

1. *S, z, ch, sh, ve x* harfleriyle biten adların çoğul şekillerinde */-es/* kullanılır.

bus	busses	brush	brushes
buzz	buzzes	box	boxes
church	churches		



Sözcük sonundaki **CH**, eğer */k/* olarak okunuyorsa çoğul ekinin okunuşu */s/* olacaktır. Bu durumda yazılışı da sadece */s/* harfiyle gerçekleşecektir.

stomachs monarchs epochs

2. Son harfleri *-f* ya da *-fe* olan sözcüklerin çoğul şekilleri iki şekilde gerçekleştirilebilir.

A. Doğrudan çoğul ekini alanlar

beliefs	chiefs	cliffs	gulfs
grieves	proofs	roofs	safes

B. F'nin V'ye dönüşmesi ve -ES eklenmesiyle çoğul yapılanlar

calf	calves	leaf	leaves	shelf	shelves
elf	elves	life	lives	thief	thieves
half	halves	loaf	loaves	wife	wives
knife	knives	sheaf	sheaves	wolf	wolves

Kimi adlar için her iki şekil de kullanılabilir:

calf	calfs	calves
wharf	wharfs	wharves
scarf	scarfs	scarves

The harbour at Marble Mountain has one **wharf**.

There are several **wharves** in Halifax Harbour.

A war of Bengalees against the English empire was like a war of sheep against **wolves**, of men against demons.

3. Son harfleri ÜNSÜZ+o ünlüsü olan adlarda çoğul eki /-es/ olarak yazılır.

<i>hero</i>	<i>heroes</i>	<i>tomato</i>	<i>tomatoes</i>	<i>veto</i>	<i>vetoes</i>
-------------	---------------	---------------	-----------------	-------------	---------------

Kimi sözcüklerde hem /-es/ hem de /-s/ şekli kullanılabilir.

<i>cargo</i>	<i>cargos/cargoes</i>	<i>motto</i>	<i>mottos/mottoes</i>
--------------	-----------------------	--------------	-----------------------

<i>no</i>	<i>nos/noes</i>	<i>zero</i>	<i>zeros/zeroes</i>
-----------	-----------------	-------------	---------------------

Aşağıdaki sözcüklerde ise kural dışı olarak sadece /-s/ şekli kullanılır.

<i>banjo</i>	<i>banjos</i>	<i>soprano</i>	<i>sopranos</i>	<i>piano</i>	<i>pianos</i>
--------------	---------------	----------------	-----------------	--------------	---------------

4. Son iki harfi ünlü olan adlarda çoğul eki /-s/ olarak yazılır.

<i>rodeo</i>	<i>rodeos</i>	<i>studio</i>	<i>-studios</i>	<i>video</i>	<i>videos</i>
--------------	---------------	---------------	-----------------	--------------	---------------

5. "—" işareti ile yazılan birleşik adların çoğulları, temel ada çoğul ekinin eklenmesiyle yapılır.

<i>mothers-in-law</i>	<i>attorneys-at-law</i>	<i>poets-in-residence</i>
-----------------------	-------------------------	---------------------------

Mothers-in-law are always difficult to please.

6. Son harfi —y olan sözcüklerde, y'den önceki harf de "ünsüz" ise, çoğul eki olarak /-es/ kullanılır. (y) harfi yerine de (i) harfi kullanılır.

<i>army</i>	<i>armies</i>	<i>country</i>	<i>countries</i>	<i>secretary</i>	<i>secretaries</i>
<i>baby</i>	<i>babies</i>	<i>enemy</i>	<i>enemies</i>	<i>sky</i>	<i>skies</i>
<i>berry</i>	<i>berries</i>	<i>fly</i>	<i>flies</i>	<i>trophy</i>	<i>trophies</i>
<i>cabby</i>	<i>cabbies</i>	<i>lady</i>	<i>ladies</i>		
<i>city</i>	<i>cities</i>	<i>memory</i>	<i>memories</i>		



Y'den önce bir ünlü bulunuyorsa sadece /s/ eklenmektedir.

<i>abbeys</i>	<i>boys</i>	<i>days</i>	<i>journeys</i>	<i>keys</i>
<i>monkeys</i>	<i>toys</i>	<i>trolleys</i>	<i>valleys</i>	

There are homeless people in almost every major American city.

In 1939 the IRA began a bombing campaign in English cities.

A joke never gains an enemy but often loses a friend.

Poverty, hunger, disease and war are man's greatest enemies.

Some diseases are so contagious that travellers can pass them from country to country in a short time.

Population explosion is a major problem that many countries are unable to cope with.

EXERCISE 508

Aşağıdaki adların çoğul şekillerini yazınız.

- | | | | |
|-----------|-----------|--------------|-----------------|
| 1. flea | 6. clash | 11. trench | 16. grudge |
| 2. splash | 7. outlaw | 12. opera | 17. convoy |
| 3. dash | 8. hangar | 13. approach | 18. judge |
| 4. canvas | 9. block | 14. badge | 19. wave |
| 5. image | 10. annex | 15. skirmish | 20. perspective |

EXERCISE 509

Aşağıdaki adların çoğul şekillerini yazınız.

- | | | | | |
|----------|------------|-----------|-----------------|--------------------|
| 1. toy | 4. array | 7. memory | 10. personality | 13. responsibility |
| 2. alloy | 5. comedy | 8. boy | 11. delay | 14. tray |
| 3. fly | 6. fantasy | 9. artery | 12. valley | 15. cry |

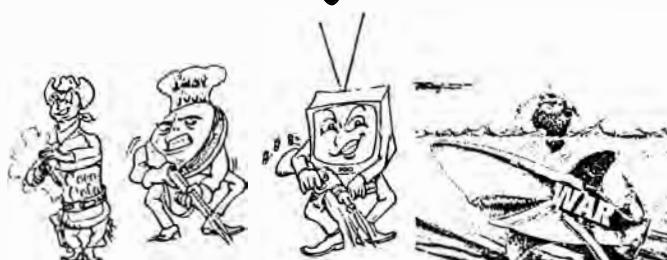
EXERCISE 510

Ayraç içindeki adların çoğul şekillerini kullanarak aşağıdaki tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

- The goalkeeper saved the game with two beautiful (*catch*).
- He was asked about several political (*controversy*), but his (*reply*) were almost meaningless.
- Many small Turkish (*business*) are having problems because of rising (*tax*).
- Foods that are considered (*delicacy*) in one culture may be regarded as inedible in another.
- He ate two (*orange*) and three (*peach*).
- A number of (*clash*) disrupted the peace talks.
- (*Flash*) of lightning illuminated the haunted house.
- These three (*company*) are (*subsidiary*) of TMT Electronics.
- Several (*family*) got together to plan the (*ceremony*).
- The (*juror*) were forbidden to disclose the testimony of the (*witness*).
- The (*beach*) were scarred by ugly (*patch*) of oil.
- Employees' (*salary*) are determined by the time they have spent with the company.
- These hand-blown (*glass*) have slight (*blemish*), but they are still very beautiful.
- Unilever sells over fifty (*variety*) of cleaning products.
- Before Hiroshima, no one had ever seen such massive (*casualty*).

5 Deadly ENEMIES of Human Civilization

HOLLYWOOD



IRREGULAR PLURALS

DÜZENSİZ ÇOĞULLAR

Çoğuş şekilleri düzensiz olan, yani çoğul eki {-S} ile yapılmayan adlar bulunmaktadır.

1	child brother ox	children brethren oxen	"Brethren" sadece dini metinlerde kullanılır.		
2	foot goose tooth	feet geese teeth	Çoğuş şekillerde /iy/ ünlüsü yer alıyor: /fiyt, giys, tiyθ/		
3	louse mouse	lice mice	Çoğuş şekillerde /ay/ ünlüsü yer alıyor. /lays, mays/		
4	man woman gentleman postman	men women gentlemen postmen	man /mæn/ → men /men/ woman /wumIn/ → women /wiymIn/		
5	deer fish means moose salmon	deer fish means moose salmon	sheep species swine trout aircraft species	sheep species swine trout aircraft species	Tekil ve çoğul şe-killer aynı biçim-de.

ÖZEL DURUMLAR

1	<i>physics, mathematics, statistics, linguistics,</i>	Bilim adları tekildir.			
2	<i>Naples</i> <i>the United States</i> <i>Wales</i>	Ülke adları çoğul eki de taşısa tekil olarak değerlendirilir.			
3	<i>chills</i> <i>mumps</i>	<i>measles</i> <i>rickets</i>	<i>dumps</i> <i>shingles</i>	<i>laryngitis</i>	Bu hastalık adları her za-man tekildir.

4	<i>bellows</i> <i>binoculars</i> <i>forceps</i> <i>glasses (gözlik)</i> <i>pincers</i> <i>pliers</i>	<i>scales</i> <i>scissors</i> <i>shears</i> <i>spectacles</i> <i>tweezers</i>	Bu araçlar her zaman çoğul olarak kullanılır.
----------	---	---	---

5	<i>news</i>	Bu ad her zaman tekildir. Sayılamayan bir addır.
----------	-------------	--

6	<i>jeans</i> <i>pants</i> <i>pajamas</i>	<i>trousers</i> <i>shorts</i> <i>clothes</i>	Bu giyim eşyaları her zaman çoğuldur.
----------	--	--	---------------------------------------

7	<i>goods, riches</i>	Bu adlar her zaman çoğuldur.
----------	----------------------	------------------------------

8	<i>billiards</i> <i>checkers</i> <i>darts</i>	<i>dominoes</i> <i>draughts</i> <i>ninepins</i>	Bu oyun adları tekildir.
----------	---	---	--------------------------

9	<i>means</i>	Bu ad tekil anlamla kullanılır. Language is a means of communication.
----------	--------------	--

Latince ve Yunanca'dan ödünç alınan sözcüklerin çoğul şekilleri özgün şekilde birlikte alınabildiği gibi, İngilizce çoğul eki kullanılarak da çoğul yapılabilir.

index indices
İngilizce çoğul: **indexes**

<i>alga</i>	<i>algae</i>	<i>hypothesis</i>	<i>hyhotheses</i>
<i>alumnus</i>	<i>alumni</i>	<i>index</i>	<i>indices, indexes</i>
<i>amoeba</i>	<i>amoeba, amoebas</i>	<i>matrix</i>	<i>matrices, matrixes</i>
<i>analysis</i>	<i>analyses</i>	<i>medium</i>	<i>media, mediums</i>
<i>apex</i>	<i>apices, apexes</i>	<i>minutia</i>	<i>minutia</i>
<i>appendix</i>	<i>appendices, appendixes</i>	<i>nucleus</i>	<i>nuclei, nucleuses</i>
<i>aquarium</i>	<i>acquaria, aquariums</i>	<i>oasis</i>	<i>oases</i>
		<i>opus</i>	<i>opera, opuses</i>

<i>bacterium</i>	<i>bacteria</i>	<i>parenthesis</i>	<i>parentheses</i>
<i>basis</i>	<i>bases</i>	<i>phenomenon</i>	<i>phenomena</i>
<i>cerebrum</i>	<i>cerabra, cerebrums</i>		<i>phenomenons</i>
<i>criterion</i>	<i>criteria</i>	<i>philodendron</i>	<i>philodendra</i>
<i>colosseum</i>	<i>coliseum</i>		<i>philodendrons</i>
<i>colossus</i>	<i>colossi, colossuses</i>	<i>phylum</i>	<i>phyla</i>
<i>corpus</i>	<i>corpora</i>	<i>prognosis</i>	<i>prognoses</i>
<i>cortex</i>	<i>cortices, cortexes</i>	<i>psychosis</i>	<i>psychoses</i>
<i>crises</i>	<i>crises</i>	<i>radius</i>	<i>radii</i>

datum	data, datas	stratum	strata, stratum
formula	formulae, formulas	thesaurus	thesauri, thesauruses
fungus	fungi, funguses	velum	vela
genus	genera	vertebra	vertebrae, vertabras
gymnasium	gymnasia, gymnasiums	vertex	vertices, vertexes
stadium	stadia, stadiums	vita	vitae
stimulus	stimula		

EXERCISE 511

Ayraç içinde verilen sözcüğün doğru şeklini kullanınız.

1. Different countries have different _____. (*weather*)
2. There is too much _____ on freeways on weekends. (*traffic*)
3. All areas of the skin are in fact covered in tiny _____. (*hair*)
4. We've looked at the menu and we all ordered _____. (*chicken*)
5. Jack is a millionaire and owns a lot of _____. (*business*)
6. Road construction requires heavy _____. (*machinery*)
7. Do you have a copy of the complete _____ of Shakespeare? (*work*)
8. We saw a lot of _____ when we visited Texas. (*cattle*)
9. None of the passengers had insured their _____. (*baggage*)
10. During the afternoon there will be _____ in many areas. (*thunder and lightning*)
11. Students must pass their _____ to the front. (*paper*)
12. I'd like coffee, _____, and marmalade please. (*toast*)
13. There is _____ all over the floor. (*litter*)
14. Can you get two _____ of bread for me? (*loaf*)

EXERCISE 512

Aşağıdaki boşluklara gerekiyorsa *a/an* ya da *some* koyunuz.

1. When the play ended, there was _____ lengthy applause.
2. I can't come out tonight. I have _____ homework to do.
3. What shall we do tomorrow evening? How about _____ dancing?
4. There is _____ very beautiful countryside near here.
5. Sue received _____ excellent education.
6. My trousers need pressing. Can you lend me _____ iron?
7. My friends bought me _____ coffee maker for my birthday.
8. David has just bought _____ new furniture.
9. Let me give you _____ advice.
10. The inside is strengthened with _____ steel frame.

EXERCISE 513

Ayraç içindeki adların çoğul şekillerini yazınız.

1. They caught three big (*fish*).
2. Both of his (*foot*) became senseless.
3. Which of the (*phylum*) do humans belong to?
4. Many cartoonists deal with the traditional battles between (*man*) and (*woman*).
5. The learning potential of different (*species*) of birds are puzzling scientists.
6. (*Goose*) are popular animals in this region.
7. We are proud of our two (*daughter-in-law*).
8. The causes of (*psychosis*) have long been a center of interest.
9. There are two (*appendix*) at the end of the book.
10. Their (*hypothesis*) are quite different.
11. What are the (*criterion*) you use to classify these animals?
12. They are studying both harmful and necessary (*bacterium*).
13. Because of a series of family (*crisis*), she has decided to take a leave of absence.
14. This pond is full of (*alga*).
15. The mass (*medium*) have become a major factor in shaping a society.
16. Are we expected to memorize all these (*formula*)?
17. A triangle has three (*vertex*).
18. He is studying the mind's reaction to visual (*stimulus*).

SAYILAMAYAN ADLARLA ÖLÇÜLER

Sayılamayan adlarla miktar belirlemek için çeşitli ölçü birimleri kullanılmaktadır. *PIECE* yaygın bir ölçü sözcüğüdür.

a	piece	of	advice
two	pieces		bread
			equipment
			furniture
			information
			jewelry
			luggage
			mail
			music
			news
			cherry pie

bread	a loaf of bread	gold	an ounce of gold
cabbage	a slice of bread	grass	a blade of grass
chocolate	a head of cabbage	milk	a bottle of milk
coal	a bar of chocolate	paper	a sheet of paper
coffee	a pail of coal		a piece of paper
corn	a cup of coffee	salt	a pinch of salt
cutlery	an ear of corn	soap	a bar of soap
detergent	a set of cutlery	stairs	a flight of stairs
garlic	a box of detergent	sugar	a lump of sugar
gasoline	a clove of garlic	thunder	a flash of thunder

EXERCISE 514

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları kutu içinden seçeceğiniz sözcüklerle doldurunuz.

blade	flight	item	piece	sheet
clap	head	lump	set	slice

- There is an interesting ____ of news in the paper.
- Let me give you a ____ of advice.
- A ____ of stairs takes you to the top of the house.
- Could I have another ____ of paper, please?
- Put another ____ of coal on the fire.
- Helen has a lovely ____ of hair.
- Do you want another ____ of toast?
- We bought Mike and Lynn a ____ of cutlery for a wedding present.
- There was not a single ____ of grass left standing.
- The lightning was followed by a ____ of thunder.

BELLİ ADLARLA KÜME GÖSTEREN ADLAR

Sürü halinde yaşayan hayvanları toplu halde ifade etmek için çeşitli sözcükler kullanılmaktadır.

<i>a drove</i>	of cattle, sheep, geese, or the like
<i>a flight</i>	of birds (uçarlarken)
<i>a flock</i>	of sheep, goats, birds
<i>a gaggle</i>	of geese
<i>a gang</i>	of elk, buffalo
<i>a herd</i>	of cattle, elephants, zebras, antelope, whales, seals
<i>a muster</i>	of peacocks
<i>a pack</i>	of wolves, wild dogs
<i>a pride</i>	of lions
<i>a school</i>	of fish, dolphins, porpoises

a swarm	of insects such as ants, bees, or wasps
a brood	of birds
a cast	of hawks or falcons (genellikle çift olarak)
a watch	of nightingales

EXERCISE 515

Aşağıdakileri eşleştiriniz.

- | | | | |
|-----------------|--------------|------------------|-----------------|
| 1 . a bundle of | a . flowers | 9 . a herd of | i . sticks |
| 2 . a crowd of | b . ships | 10 . a party of | j . cows |
| 3 . a fleet of | c . bees | 11 . a pile of | k . houses |
| 4 . a flight of | d . players | 12 . a school of | l . stones |
| 5 . a gang of | e . blankets | 13 . a row of | m . sheep/birds |
| 6 . a bunch of | f . tourists | 14 . a team of | n . people |
| 7 . a string of | g . stairs | 15 . a swarm of | o . beads |
| 8 . a heap of | h . workmen | | |

ADLARDA İYELİK



Jack's garden

(Jack has a garden.)

the garden of the house

(The house has a garden.)

İngilizce'de iki iyelik yapısı bulunmaktadır. Genel olarak insanlara ilişkin iyelik, iyelik eki ile ifade edilirken, cansız varlıkların iyeliği, **OF** yapısıyla ifade edilmektedir.

Jack's garden is beautiful.

The garden of the house is beautiful.

Bununla birlikte bu genel duruma uymayan kullanımlar da çoktur.

Mary is Jack's wife.	→	Mary is the wife of Jack.
the problems of our firm	→	our firm's problems

İngilizce iyelik eki, {-S}, çoğul eki ile sesteştir, yani aynı şekilde */-s, -z, -Iz/* olarak sesletilir. Yazımında ise, iyelik eki kesme imi ile birlikte kullanılır.

the teachers the teacher's name

☞ *Teachers* ve *teacher's* sözcükleri aynı şekilde sesletilir.

Teachers are underpaid. / The teacher's car was stolen.

İYELİK EKİNİN KULLANIMINDA ÖZEL DURUMLAR

I. -S harfiyle biten sözcüklerin iyelik şekilleri

Bus, *platypus* gibi -s ile biten sözcüklerde kesme iminden sonra (s) yazılabilir ya da atılabilir.

The bus's seats are very uncomfortable.

The bus' seats are very uncomfortable.

The film crew accidentally crushed the platypus's eggs.

The film crew accidentally crushed the platypus' eggs.

Özel adlar (-s) ile bitiyorsa iyelik iki şekilde gösterilebilir: (s) kesme imini izleyebilir ya da kullanılmaz.

Charles Dickens is a famous British author.

Charles Dickens's novels have always been popular.

Charles Dickens' novels have always been popular.

Charles Dickens' novels have been popular as popular as Mark Twain's.

II. Iyelik ekinin çoğul ekiyle birlikte kullanılması

Çoğul ve iyelik ekinin sesteş olması nedeniyle bu iki ekin birlikte kullanılması özel kullanımrlara yol açmaktadır. İyelik eki çoğul ekinden sonra kullanılır. Çoğul ekinin */-s/* olmasi durumunda, iyelik eki sesletilmez, yazımında da sadece kesme imi ile gösterilir. Adın çoğul şekli, */-s/* ile yapılmıyorsa, iyelik eki okunur ve yazılır.

Tekil ad	Tekil +iyelik	Çoğul ad	Çoğul ad +iyelik
writer	writer's	writers	writers'
lady	lady's	ladies	ladies'
man	man's	men	men's

Çoğul ekiyle çoğul yapılan sözcüklerin iyelik şeklinde sadece kesme imi kullanılabilir.

The concert was interrupted by the dogs' barking, the ducks' quacking, and the babies' squalling.

The janitors' room is downstairs and to the left.

My uncle spent many hours trying to locate the squirrels' nest.

The archivist quickly finished repairing the diaries' bindings.

Religion is usually the subject of the roommates' many late night debates.

The miners' faces were covered in coal dust.

Çoğul şekilleri çoğul eki ile yapılmayan adlarda iyelik eki tekil adlardaki gibi kullanılır.

The children's mittens were scattered on the floor of the porch.

The sheep's pen was mucked out every day.

Since we have a complex appeal process, a jury's verdict is not always final.

The men's hockey team will be played as soon as the women's team is finished.

The hunter followed the moose's trail all morning but lost it in the afternoon.

3. Birleşik adlarla iyelik ekinin kullanılması

Birleşik adların çoğul şekilleri /-s/ ile bitmiyorsa, iyelik eki yazılır ve okunur.

my daughters-in-law's cars

two friends of mine's cars

the Queen of England's throne

his mother-in-law's interference

The only luggage that was lost was the prime minister's.

The exhausted recruits were woken before dawn by the drill sergeant's screams.

4. İyelik ekinin insanlar dışında kullanımı

İyelik ifade etmek için, hayvan ve eşyalarla OF- öbeği kullanılmaktadır.

problems of country life

the tale of two cities

the speed of a vehicle

the war crimes of the USA

Bununla birlikte kimi özel durumlarda iyelik ekinin insan dışında varlıklarla da kullanıldığı görüyoruz.

1.	Ülkeler	Turkey's economy the country's tax system	Japan's economy Italy's lies
2.	Kurumlar, şirketler	the company's head office the railroad's employees	
3.	Mağazalar, işyerleri	the doctor's the butcher's	Woolworth's, the baker's
4.	Ölçü ifadeleri	a pound's worth of stamps a stone's throw from here	

5.	Zamanla ilgili ifadeler	a day's journey a day's work a month's campaign after a good night's rest ten minutes' walk	today's newspaper yesterday's newspaper tomorrow's program a week's holiday three days' work
6.	Kalıplaşmış ifadeler	For God's sake For heaven's sake at one's wits' end at a stone's throw	

5. İkili iyelik

Kimi yapılarda iyelik eki ile OF-öbeği birlikte kullanılmaktadır. Örneğin,

a friend of John's

a colleague of Mr. Brown's

one of John's friends = a friend of John's

Mehmet Ali Birand is a close friend of Karen Fogg's.

Bu yapı iyelik adıllarıyla da kullanılıyor.

one of my friends = a friend of mine

some of my students = some students of mine

6. İki Seçenekli İyelik

Aşağıdaki örneklerde iyelinin iki ayrı şekilde gösterilebildiğini görüyoruz.

1.	the locker room of the boys	<i>the boys' locker room</i>
2.	home of my sister-in-law	<i>my sister-in-law's home</i>
3.	personality of a person	<i>a person's personality</i>
4.	responsibility of Jack and Jill	<i>Jack and Jill's responsibility</i>
5.	research of Robert Dawning	<i>Robert Dawning's research</i>
6.	fears of the witnesses	<i>the witnesses' fears</i>
7.	a delay of a week	<i>a week's delay</i>
8.	a wait of ten minutes	<i>ten minutes' wait</i>
9.	worth of ten cents	<i>ten cents' worth</i>
10.	rays of the sun	<i>the sun's rays</i>

7. Gerund phrase'lerin Öznesini belirleyen iyelik

Gerund öbeklerinde özne iyelik ekini almaktadır.

We appreciate Tim's typing the report for us.

ADLARDA İYELİK YAPISININ ANLAMLARI

Bir adım iyelik eki ile ilişkili olduğu ad, aynı biçimle eylem olarak da kullanılabilir ya da eylemden türetilmiş bir adsa, iyelik yapısı iki ayrı anlama gelebilir.

1. *the author's murder*
 - a. yazarın birisini öldürmesi
 - b. yazarın birisi tarafından öldürülmesi

2. *the punishment of the teacher*
 a. öğretmenin birisini cezalandırması
 b. öğretmenin birisi tarafından cezalandırılması

İyelik yapıları farklı anlamların ifade edilebilmesine olanak verirler.

Jack's story

- a. *Jack'in anlattığı öykü*
 b. *Jack hakkında anlatılan öykü*
 c. *Jack'in sahip olduğu öykü*

EXERCISE 516

Aşağıdaki öbekleri örnekteki gibi iyelik eki taşıyan öbekler şekline sokunuz.

the book of the girl
the girl's book

- | | |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. the voices of the children | 7. the house of Charlie |
| 2. the noise of the space ship | 8. the shouts of the men |
| 3. the yards of the neighbors | 9. the throne of the king |
| 4. the suspicion of the crowd | 10. the rays of the sun |
| 5. the excitement of the girls | 11. the teacher of the students |
| 6. the engine of the car | 12. the fortune of Bill Gates |

EXERCISE 517

Ayraç içindeki doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. a (man's) (men's) job
2. the three (dogs') (dog's) collars
3. the two (child's) (children's) toys
4. my (father's) (fathers') car
5. one (days') (day's) work
6. several (ladies') (lady's) coats
7. six (week's) (weeks') pay
8. a (friend's) (friends') help
9. his oldest (son's) (sons') home
10. an (apples') (apple's) core
11. two (traveler's) (travelers') suitcases
12. the taller (tree's) (trees') trunk

EXERCISE 518

Aşağıdaki tümceleri iyelik yapısı kullanarak birleştirmeye çalışınız.

Helen has a neighbor. The neighbor is growing roses.
Helen's neighbor is growing roses.

1. The plane departed. That event was late.
2. The lion was captured. The event was exciting.
3. The man wrote a book. The book won first prize.
4. The manager was given a vacation. The vacation lasted a week.
5. The doctor has an office. I'll meet you there.
6. The man across the street has a dog. The dog bit me.
7. Plato had students. Aristotle was such a student.
8. My aunt baked a cake. The cake won first prize.

EXERCISE 519

Aşağıdaki tümceleri 's iyelik yapısı kullanarak yeniden yazınız.

Who stole the book of the girl?

Who stole the girl's book?

1. The voices of the children bothered us.
2. Nobody heard the noise of the space ship.
3. The yards of the neighbors were filled with exotic plants.
4. The suspicion of the crowd grew.
5. There was nothing to suppress the excitement of the girls.
6. The engine of the car roared again.
7. They decided to buy the house of Charlie.
8. The shouts of the men filled the quiet town.
9. The wagon of the rancher was a sight to see.
10. What is the title of the book you'd like to order?
11. The rays of the sun soon warmed us.
12. The toys of the children lay scattered all over the room.
13. The feathers of the bird were exceptionally colorful.
14. The friendship of the boys lasted all the summer.
15. The uniforms of the soldiers were spotlessly clean.
16. They weren't able to calculate accurately the cost of the visit.
17. The roof of the house was blown off in the gale last night.
18. The colour of that wall is rather unusual.

EXERCISE 520

Ayraç içindeki doğru seçenek bulunuz.

1. The two (*child's*) (*children's*) toys were all lost.
2. My (*father's*) (*fathers'*) cars are both in good shape.
3. Six (*week's*) (*weeks'*) pay bought him a new suit.
4. A (*friend's*) (*friends'*) help is always welcome.
5. His oldest (*son's*) (*sons'*) home overlooks the ocean.
6. Most people want to relax when they come home after a (*day's*) (*day*) work.
7. What I need now is a (*months'*) (*month's*) holiday in the sun!

8. You'll feel better when you've had a good (*night*) (*night's*) sleep.
9. He's just returned after (*two week's*) (*two weeks'*) absence.
10. They are now looking for someone with at least (*five years'*) (*five year's*) teaching experience.
11. I'm having an extra holiday this year, but I shall lose a (*fortnight's*) (*fortnight*) pay.
12. Her brother's coming home tomorrow. He's got a (*week's*) (*weeks*) leave.
13. The author eventually finished his autobiography, but it was a (*lifetime*) (*lifetime's*) work!
14. I did four (*hours*) (*hours'*) work last night.
15. After five (*year's*) (*years'*) captivity, the prisoners returned home.
16. The station is only ten (*minutes*) (*minutes'*) walk from here.
17. The USA is certainly planning to be the 21st (*century's*) (*centuries*) bully.
18. I can't leave my present job immediately. I shall have to give them a (*month'*) (*month's*) notice.

ADLARI NASIL TANIYABİLİRİZ?

Adları tanımadan önce söz edebiliriz.

1.	Tümce içindeki konumları	Sayfa 817
2.	Cekim ekleri	Çoğul ve iyelik ekleri
3.	Türetme ekleri	Sayfa 826-827

EXERCISE 521

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş adların nasıl tanınabileceğini konumları için (1), **çekim ekimleri** için (2), **türetme ekleri** için (3) yazarak belirtiniz.

1. He spent several **days** digging gold and had six small **bags** of it.
2. Many times she had put her hand on its rough **trunk** and looked up at those dark **branches** waving in the **wind**.
3. Almost every night during the **summer** Sylvia had to come and look a long time before she found the **cow**.
4. She knows every foot of ground in the **woods** as well as any wild **creature** living there.
5. Sylvia gave no **signs** of **interest** in talking about **birds**; she was thinking about the wonderful **things** she could buy with ten dollars.
6. There was no **reward** for her **faithfulness**.
7. Some day, Jenet, we'll die here in the **desert**. Our **bones** will lie on the **sand**. And nobody will know or care.
8. Few wrestlers had the **toughness** and **ability** of our son.
9. The USA possesses **weapons** of mass **destruction** that are an imminent threat to the **safety** of the free world.
10. The foreign **policies** of the US have caused illimitable **suffering** throughout much of the world for **decades**.

EXERCISE 522

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde kimi adlar koyu dizilmiştir. Adların taşıdığı çekim (inflectional) ve türetme (derivational) eklerini bulunuz. Kimi adlarda çekim ya da türetme eki bulunmamaktadır.

1. The blowing **sand** was almost as bad as the day's heat.
2. Mrs. Smith suspected that Jack's late **arrival** was not on account of work.
3. She would have taken the prize in any competition with her husband.
4. Besides the **feeling of loyalty** to the commander of the boat, there was **friendship and companionship**.
5. The **birds** sat comfortably in groups; the **roughness** of the **sea** did not disturb them at all.
6. Remembering the day's **pleasure** ahead of him, he got dressed quickly.
7. The moon produced a **reflection** on the water.
8. There were no hurried **words**, no **shouts**, no wild **excitement**.
9. The **sound** of the pine's green **branches** was still in her ears.
10. Each time a **man** took his **eyes** from the **waves**, he turned his attention toward the shore.
11. They stood looking at him with such strange **expressions** on their faces that his **knees** began to shake.
12. The **group** returned to the more important concerns of the **election**.
13. **Necessity** is the mother of invention.
14. You can't teach new **tricks** to an old dog.
15. Truth never hides in dark **corners**.
16. Any fool can ask **questions**, but only a smart man can answer them.
17. **Earthquakes** are the most lethal of all natural **disasters**.
18. One man's **meat** is another man's **poison**.
19. A liar needs a good **memory**.
20. A friend's **envy** is worse than an enemy's hatred.
21. Every **child** loves his **nurse** and forgets her when he grows up.
22. All **work** and no **play** makes Jack a dull boy.
23. Many **adventurers** lost their life **savings** trying to find Oak Island's **treasure**. A few even lost their lives.
24. The busy **schedules** in today's world have created a rising health problem in many **societies**.
25. The 3-year war between Britain and the Boer **Republics** reveals the barbarous **nature** of British imperialism very clearly.
26. In all **levels** of life, the **sheep** are safe only when the **wolves** are not hungry. —F. J. Lovret
27. **Terrorism** will be the core issue at talks between Turkish Prime Minister Bülent Ecevit and US **officials**.
28. In some **countries**, more people die from traffic pollution than from auto **accidents**.

YAYGIN OLARAK HEM AD HEM EYLEM OLARAK KULLANILABİLEN SÖZCÜKLER

address	curl	fence	land	plan	scratch
answer	curve	finish	laugh	plant	shout
arrest	cut	fish	lie	play	sound
attack	damage	flavor	light	plow	stain
bend	date	flood	load	point	start
blame	delay	fold	lock	polish	stay
boast	demand	form	look	pull	stop
bottle	desire	group	map	push	struggle
brush	doubt	guess	mark	quarrel	surprise
burn	dream	hammer	milk	question	swim
button	dress	hand	mine	race	talk
call	drink	heat	mistake	rain	touch
chain	drop	help	nail	reason	travel
cheer	dust	honor	neglect	request	turn
climb	end	hurry	notice	rest	twist
color	escape	increase	number	return	visit
control	exchange	influence	nurse	review	wait
copy	experience	iron	oil	reward	walk
cost	experiment	joke	order	ride	whisper
cover	face	judge	ornament	risk	whistle
crack	fall	jump	outline	roll	worry
crash	fan	kick	paint	rule	
crowd	favor	kiss	pause	rush	
cry	feast	knock	place	saddle	

YAYGIN OLARAK HEM AD HEM SIFAT OLARAK KULLANILABİLEN SÖZCÜKLER

	<i>AD</i>	<i>SİFAT</i>
average	Our hotel is far above average in food .	On an average day, we have 200 customers.
equal	Jack is certainly your equal in intelligence.	Black people in USA cannot enjoy equal opportunities.
ideal	Jack sees Bill Gates as his ideal.	This is an ideal spot for a holiday.
native	The natives here are friendly.	She has a native ability for music.
principal	The principal objected to the new project.	Our principal concern is to maintain good relations.
public	They attracted the public with clever advertisements.	Public taste in music has greatly changed.
secret	Nobody could learn her secret.	She did not reveal her secret plans.
square	The village square looked pretty.	She saw a strange square object.
standard	Our standard of living is still low.	Very few people in this country speak standard English.

ivedilik adları NOUNS OF URGENCY

Vurgulama ve ivedilik gösteren eylemlerden türetilen adlar da aynı anlam yükümlü taşırlar. Bu adlar, ad içtümceçiklerini yönettiklerinde, ad içtümceçigindenki eylem özne ile uyum göstermez ve eylemin yalın şekli kullanılır.

advice demand desire	insistence necessity order	preference proposal recommendation	request suggestion urge
----------------------------	----------------------------------	--	-------------------------------

The doctor ***recommended*** that ***Jack stay*** in bed.

The doctor's ***recommendation*** is that ***Jack stay*** in bed.

She ***requested*** that she ***be given*** a job.

Her ***request*** is that her husband ***be given*** a job.

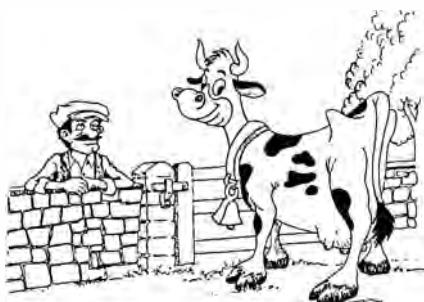
Her ***demand*** that she ***be given*** a new apartment was finally met.

Before TB was understood, it was the ***recommendation*** of most doctors that a TB patient ***spend*** time in a different climate in order to recover.

The ***suggestion*** that everyone ***become*** aware of the danger signals of cancer is a good one.

The ***suggestion*** that research on the changing of human genetics ***be prohibited*** is now being seriously considered.

President Bush's ***insistence*** that Turkey ***support*** the USA army unconditionally is a clear example of USA aggressiveness.



"My only demand is that I be given more to eat
if I am to give more milk."

Chapter 53

VERBS

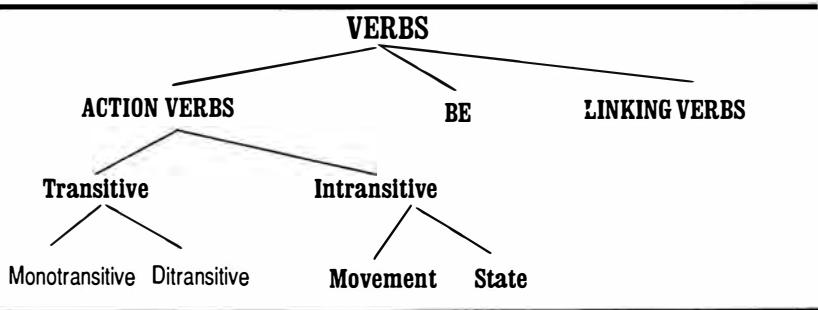
EYLEMLER (fiiller)



Eylem, tümçenin en önemli öğesidir. Tümçenin kurulmasını sağladığı gibi, tümcede kullanılacak özne ve nesnelerin özelliklerini de saptar. Örneğin, EAT eylemi, öznenin bir canlı, nesnenin de yenebilir bir varlık olmasını gerektirir. İngilizce eylemleri genel olarak üç bölge ayıralım.



I.	Action Verbs	I have lost 30 pounds.
II.	BE	What is the new royal diet?
III.	Linking Verbs	The new royal diet sounds ridiculous.



Temel tümce kalıplarının saptanmasında bu üçlü sınıflandırmayı dayanak olarak kullanmıştık.

BE eylemi 3 farklı tümleç alabiliyor.

1	<i>dangerous =sifat</i>	Gifts from enemies are dangerous.
2	<i>money = ad</i>	Time is money.
3	<i>in, out =adverb</i>	Wine is in ; wit is out.

BE, THERE ile yer ya da varlık gösteren tümceler kurar.

4	<i>BE, THERE ile özel bir kullanımda.</i>	There is a devil in every grape.
---	---	----------------------------------

Intransitive eylemler devinim ya da durum gösterirler. Kimi intransitive eylemler yer ya da zaman gösteren tümleçler gerektirir.

5.a	Devinim	Time flies.
5.b	Yer	He lives in Ankara.
5.c	Zaman	The film lasted an hour.
6	<i>OPEN</i> , monotransitive bir eylem. Tek nesne gerektiriyor.	Good clothes open all doors.
7	<i>KEEP</i> , yer tümleci isteyen mono-transitive bir eylem.	Work keeps the devil away.
8	<i>GIVE</i> , ditransitive bir eylem. İki nesne gerektiriyor.	We gave her nothing. We gave nothing to her.

Linking verbs iki ayrı tümleç alabilir.

15	<i>a poor person =ad öbeği</i>	He remained a poor person.
16	<i>warm =sifat</i>	Money feels warm.



*"Adam and Eve were lucky.
They didn't have any childhood disease."*

EXERCISE 523

Aşağıda koyu dizilmiş eylemlerin hangi türe girdiğini belirleyiniz.

INT	Intransitive	TR2	Ditransitive	BE	be
TR1	Monotransitive	LV	Linking Verb		

1. Dracula **bites** his victims on the neck.
2. His coat **felt** wet and soggy.
3. By 1967, about 500 U.S. citizens had **received** heart transplants.
4. This calculus problem **looks** difficult.
5. Money **is** the root of all evil.
6. In early October, she **planted** twenty tulip bulbs.
7. Some of the speakers **seem** rather nervous.
8. The only thing you can get without working is hunger.
9. The teacher **remained** calm during the stressful day.
10. Since the oil spill, the beach has **smelled** bad.
11. Karl Creelman **bicycled** around in world in 1899, but his diaries and his bicycle were destroyed.
12. Until the early 1960s, desk calculators **were** essentially mechanical in operation.
13. Her style of clothing has long **become** outdated.
14. Nature, time, and patience **are** the three great physicians. –*Bulgarian proverb*
15. One dispute between Canada and the United States **is** over their maritime boundaries and fishing quotas.
16. An old car well used may **outlast** a new one abused.
17. George will **make** a good father.
18. Very few jobs have **fallen** vacant recently.
19. Silicon **conducts** electricity in an unusual way.
20. I am **writing** her about a number of problems
21. He quickly **grew** weary of computer games.
22. The US **launched** a one-sided high-tech war of aggression against Iraq.
23. The talk by the professor **gave** us a new perspective on the new plundering policies of the European imperialists and the USA.
24. She **handed** each person in the chorus a rose.

EXERCISE 524

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş bulunan eylemleri, **transitive (TR)** , **intransitive (INT)**, **to be (BE)** ve **linking verb (LV)** olarak sınıflandırınız.

1. Over the centuries, English has **borrowed** many words from other languages.
2. Because a newly borrowed word **sounds** unfamiliar, people sometimes do not **hear** it correctly.
3. They will **pronounce** the word and will spell it as if it had **come** from other, more familiar, English words.

4. The wrong spelling **hides** the true origin of the word and **gives** the false impression that its source is contemporary English.
5. The word **woodchuck**, for example, might have **come** from two English words, **wood** and **chuck**.
6. Actually, the origin of **woodchuck** is the Algonquian word **otchek**.
7. Another Algonquian word for a kind of animal is **musquash**.
8. When the English-speaking settlers **adopted** the word, it **became** **muskrat**.
9. In a similar way the Dutch word for **cabbage salad**, **koolsla**, **became** the English word **colelaw**, and the French word for a kind of cart, **cariole**, is now the English word **carryall**.
10. Linguists usually **call** this kind of word change "folk etymology."

EXERCISE 525

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş bulunan eylemleri, transitive (TR) , intransitive (INT), ve linking verb (LV) olarak sınıflandırınız.

1. Inflation in the United States is **resulting** from many causes.
2. In the 1970s, West Germany was **experiencing** far less inflation than the United States.
3. People are **talking** about the need for the government to control its spending.
4. Many economists are **working** to arrive at new ways to control inflation.
5. Few of their solutions, however, are **proving** satisfactory.
6. The price of oil is **causing** much of America's problem with inflation.
7. The Middle Eastern countries are **raising** the price of oil.
8. Rising oil prices are **affecting** the entire world.
9. Moreover, the supply of oil is **dwindling**.
10. As a result, the American consumer is **paying** more than ever for petroleum products.

TRANSITIVE VE INTRANSITIVE EYLEMLERİN ÖZEL DURUMLARI

I. YAYGIN INTRANSITIVE EYLEMLERİN TRANSITIVE KULLANIMI

- A. Kimi intransitive eylemler, ettirgen anlam üstlenmek üzere nesne alabilirler. Örneğin, **walk** bu kullanımda **cause someone to walk** anlamına gelecektir.

I am walking in the park. (walk = intransitive)

- *He walks his dog in the park every morning. (walk = transitive)*
- We are running in the garden. (run= intransitive)*

She is running her father's business now. (run= transitive)
The company runs additional trains during national holidays.

**B. Kimi intransitive eylemler kendi ad şekillerini nesne olarak alabilirler.
(cognate objects)**

We ran a dreadful race.
We dreamt a marvelous dream.
He lived a happy and good life.
He died a tragic death.
She laughed a bitter laugh.

II. INTRANSITIVE EYLEMLER GİBİ KULLANILABİLEN TRANSITIVE EYLEMLER

Kimi transitive eylemler, passive anlamla intransitive eylem görünüşünde kullanılabılırler.

Glass breaks easily. > We can break glass easily. > Glass is easily broken.
This book reads pleasantly. > We can read this book pleasantly. > This book can be read pleasantly.
This car drives comfortably. > We can drive the car comfortably.
> The car can be driven comfortably.
The bread baked too long.
His last book sold out in a month.
Cheap houses rent easily.

III. NESNELERİ ATILABİLEN TRANSITIVE EYLEMLER

Genel kural olarak, geçişli eylemlerin nesneleri tümcede görünmek zorundadır. Bununla birlikte özellikle konuşma dilinde nesnelerin atılıldığı özer durumlar da bulunmaktadır.

A. Eylemin nesnesi bağlamdan kolayca anlaşıluyorsa, nesne atılabilir.

I know (what you are talking about).
I accept (your offer).
I remember (what you have told me).
We have won (the match).
He has already left (the office).

B. Belli eylemlerin belli nesneleri atılabilir.

I shaved (myself).
He ate (a meal).
He drinks (alcoholic drinks).

İLGI EYLEMLERİ

LINKING VERBS

Hareket ya da oluş ifade etmeyen, temel olarak BE anlamıyla kullanılan bir bölüm eylem bulunmaktadır. Örneğin, *He looks young* tümcesinde *LOOK* eylemi, bir hareket ya da oluş ifade etmemektedir. *LOOK*, eylemi bu tümçede "görünmek" anlamında kullanılmaktadır. Kendisini YOUNG sıfatı izlemektedir. *LOOK* gibi kullanılabilen eylemlere LINKING VERBS adı verilmektedir.

LINKING VERBS iki tür tümleçle kullanılır:

1. *He looks young.* (young =sıfat)
2. *She seems a nice girl.* (a nice girl =ad öbeği)

YAYGIN LINKING VERBS

appear	grow	seem	taste
become	keep	smell	turn
feel	look	sound	
get	remain	stay	

appear	The country appears stronger than ever before.
become	Only in the last decade did the computer become affordable.
get	Teachers complain that classes are getting too crowded.
grow	She grew tall and beautiful. She grew into a fine woman.
look	She looks happy. She looks like her mother.
remain	President Kennedy's assassination has remained a mystery.
seem	That word processing program seems adequate for our needs.
smell	Since the oil spill, the beach has smelled bad.
sound	Her cough sounds bad.
stay	On the boring drive home, I had to turn up the radio to stay awake.
taste	The meal tasted delicious after our long hike.
turn	She turned red. She turned into a monster.

LINKING VERBS OLARAK KULLANILABİLEN EYLEMLER

Kimi eylemler belli durumlarda *linking verb* olarak kullanılabilir.

come	His prophecy did not come true. The handle came loose.
-------------	---

go	Perhaps America will one day go fascist democratically, by popular vote. – <i>William L. Shirer</i>
grow	He quickly grew weary of computer games.
fall	Jake fell asleep although he had a good night's sleep.
prove	The journey to the wilderness proved disastrous.
run	Still waters run deep The well has run dry. Our supplies are running low.
stand	Modern armies are vulnerable to attack if they stand still.
wear	The carpet has worn thin.



GO, linking verb olarak kullanıldığında, genellikle “istenmeyen birşey olmak” anlamını taşımaktadır.

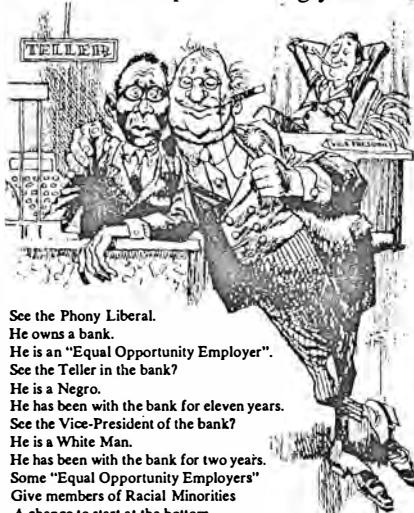
<i>They went communists.</i>	<i>The meat went bad.</i>
<i>The milk went sour.</i>	<i>The iron went rusty.</i>
<i>Fruits have gone rotten.</i>	<i>The engine/line went dead.</i>
<i>Her cheeks went red.</i>	<i>They all went mad.</i>
<i>She went crazy.</i>	<i>Everything is going wrong these days.</i>

EXERCISE 526

Altı çizili eylemlerin linking verb olup olmadığını karar veriniz.

1. Nuclear weapons mean that a new world war will result in the total destruction of our planet.
2. Her birthday cake tasted sweet and delicious.
3. The waiting seemed endless to me.
4. The black people in America have never tasted real freedom.
5. Because she grows prize-winning dahlias, she grows richer.
6. Martha first tasted snails in a French restaurant.
7. The next day proved a day of great sorrow for the back people, for a police helicopter dropped bombs on the people in the town square.
8. After smoking three cigars, Flannery turned green.
9. The cat fastidiously smelled the dish of food placed before it.
10. The flowers always grow quickly during a sunny summer.
11. The stew that Gordon made smells too spicy to me.
12. Walter was annoyed because Ross turned pages too quickly.
13. The power of the US rests on its massive military power.
14. Power-hungry people have been running the USA governments for a very long time.
15. The more attention he received, the happier he seemed to become.
16. A nation never falls but by suicide. –*Ralph Waldo Emerson*
17. Carbon dioxide cannot be seen, smelled, or tasted.

18. After a storm passes, the sea grows calm.
19. If you run after two hares, you will catch neither.
20. Your expression is the most important thing you can wear.



EYLEMLERİN TÜMCE İÇİNDEKİ KONUMU

Aşağıdaki tabloda BE ve LINKING VERBS dışındaki eylemlerin bulunu-
bileceği yaygın konumları görüyoruz.

1	<u>Calm down</u> .	9.	He rarely <u>does</u> it.
2.	<u>Drive</u> carefully.	10.	He <u>does</u> it carefully.
3.	<u>Do</u> it.	11.	He didn't <u>do</u> it.
4.	Don't <u>do</u> it.	12.	Let's <u>go</u> .
5.	He <u>died</u> .	13.	Let's <u>do</u> it.
6.	He <u>did</u> it.	14.	Can he <u>lax</u> ?
7.	He rarely <u>works</u> .	15.	Can he <u>do</u> it?
8	He <u>works</u> carefully.	16.	Never has he <u>done</u> it.

EXERCISE 527

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde eylemin hangi kullanımda olduğunu yukarıdaki tablodaki rakamları kullanarak belirtiniz.

1. She **bought** two beautiful dresses.
2. A golden mask may **hide** an ugly face.
3. Barking dogs seldom **bite**.
4. Don't **put** all your eggs in one basket.
5. Eat sensibly.

6. One rotten apple spoils the whole barrel.
7. A watched pot never boils.
8. Dinosaurs died out rather suddenly.
9. Never has Edison invented weapons.
10. An elephant never forgets his enemy.



"You don't say, 'he taked my chair'. ..It is 'my chair was tooken'."

EYLEMLERİN 5 ŞEKLİ

Eylemler, "tense"lere göre şekil değiştirirler.

YALIN	3. TEKİL	-ING	PAST	P. PARTICIPLE
walk	walks	walking	walked	walked
go	goes	going	went	gone
begin	begins	beginning	began	begun
cut	cuts	cutting	cut	cut
think	thinks	thinking	thought	thought

Genel olarak eylemlerin PAST ve PAST PARTICIPLE şekilleri -ED ekiyle yapılmaktadır: walk, walk-ed, walk-ed. Bu eylemlere düzenli eylemler (*regular verbs*) denmektedir.

GO gibi kimi eylemlerin PAST ve PARTICIPLE şekillerini belirlemek için belirli bir kural söz konusu değildir. *GO* gibi eylemlere düzensiz eylemler (*irregular verbs*) denmektedir.

IRREGULAR VERBS düzensiz eylemler

Aşağıda düzensiz eylemlerini benzer özelliklerine göre sınıflandırıyoruz. Düzensiz eylemlerin anımlarıyla birlikte abecesel dizinini APPENDIX'te sunuyoruz.

I. Herhangi bir ortak özelliği olmayan eylemler

be	was/were	been	go	went	gone
do	did	done	have	had	had
get	got	got			

II. Her üç şekli de aynı olan eylemler

cost	cost	cost	let	let	let
cut	cut	cut	put	put	put
hit	hit	hit	set	set	set
hurt	hurt	hurt	shut	shut	shut

III. Yalın şekilde bir ünlü değişikliği yapılmıyor. İkinci ve üçüncü şekilleri aynı olan eylemler

feed	fed	fed	read /riydl/	read/red/	read/red/
find	found	found	shine	shone	shone
hang	hung	hung	sit	sat	sat
hold	held	held	stick	stuck	stuck
lead	led	led	strike	struck	struck
light	lit	lit	win	won	won
meet	met	met			

IV. Birinci şekildeki ünsüzden sonra /ought/ ya da /aught/ getirilerek ikinci ve üçüncü şekilleri oluşturulan eylemler

bring	brought	brought	fight	fought	fought
buy	bought	bought	teach	taught	taught
catch	caught	caught	think	thought	thought

V. İkinci ve üçüncü şekillerde bir ünlü değişikliği yapılmıyor.

begin	began	begun	sing	sang	sung
drink	drank	drunk	swim	swam	swum
ring	rang	rung			

VI. Birinci ve üçüncü şekilleri aynı olan eylemler

become	became	become
come	came	come
run	ran	run

VII. Ünlü değişikliği yok. Eylemin birinci şekli sonundaki /d/, /t/ yapılıyor. /d/ yoksa, /t/ ekleniyor.

build	built	built	make	made	made
lay	laid	laid	send	sent	sent
learn	learnt	learnt	smell	smelt	smelt
lend	lent	lent	spend	spent	spent

VIII. Bir ünlü ve bir ünsüz değişikliğinin yapıldığı eylemler.

dream	dreamt	dreamt	mean	meant	meant
feel	felt	felt	say	said	said
hear	heard	heard	sell	sold	sold
keep	kept	kept	sleep	slept	slept
lean	leant	leant	stand	stood	stood
leave	left	left	tell	told	told
lose	lost	lost	understand	understood	understood

IX. İkinci şekillerde ünlü değişimi var. Üçüncü şekillerde /-en/ var.

bite	bit	bitten	lie	lay	lain
blow	blew	blown	ride	rode	ridden
break	broke	broken	rise	rose	risen
choose	chose	chosen	see	saw	seen
draw	drew	drawn	shake	shook	shaken
drive	drove	driven	slay	slew	slain
eat	ate	eaten	speak	spoke	spoken
fall	fell	fallen	steal	stole	stolen
fly	flew	flown	tear	tore	torn
forget	forgot	forgotten	throw	threw	thrown
freeze	froze	frozen	wake	woke	woken
give	gave	given	wear	wore	worn
hide	hid	hidden	write	wrote	written
know	knew	known			

EXERCISE 528

Aşağıdaki tümceler <http://www.korpios.org/resurgent/L-overclass.html> adresinden derlenmiştir. Ayrıcık içindeki eylemlerin uygun şekillerini kullanınız.

1. The ultra-rich in America have (*drive*) the USA government to adopt the methods of military conquest and colonial rule abroad.
2. Historically, the CIA and society's elite (*be*) one and the same people.
3. By 1953, the dirty tricks department of the CIA (*grow*) to 7,200 personnel
4. The CIA (*have*) no trouble recruiting elites who (*seek*) a more exciting life. Between 1948 and 1959, more than 40,000 American individuals and companies acted as sources for the U.S. intelligence community.
5. By the 1950s, thousands of university professors (*become*) CIA's on-call operatives.
6. What (*bring*) the CIA and Corporate America together was their intense dislike of democracy.
7. The CIA (*overthrow*) many foreign governments that did not bow to American business.
8. From the first day, CIA agents never (*give*) a thought to legality or morality. They (*do*) whatever (*get*) them their reward.
9. Using propaganda stations like Voice of America and Radio Free Europe. The CIA (*feel*) justified in manipulating the public for its own good.
10. The CIA (*sink*) ships carrying food and created food shortages.

11. The CIA conducted a mind-control experiment that (*give*) LSD and other drugs to Americans against their will or without their knowledge.
12. The CIA (*keep*) friendly and extensive working relations with the Mafia.
13. The CIA actively (*trade*) in drugs around the world since the 1950s to fund its operations
14. The CIA (*have*) their fingerprints all over the assassinations of John F. Kennedy, Robert F. Kennedy, Martin Luther King, Jr., and Malcolm X.
15. The CIA (*overthrow*) the democratically elected Mohammed Mussadegh government in Iran in 1953
16. The CIA (*stole*) trade secrets from Toyota, Nissan and Honda and (*give*) those secrets only to the Big Three: Ford, Chrysler and General Motors.
17. Howard Hughes not only (*let*) the CIA use his business firms as fronts, but he also (*fund*) countless CIA operations.
18. The CIA (*begin*) a mission in the late 1940s to recruit American journalists on a wide scale
19. The CIA (*try*) to negotiate with the Mafia to assassinate Fidel Castro
20. The CIA also secretly (*buy*) or created its own media companies.
21. John F. Kennedy (*set up*) the U.S. Peace Corps to serve as cover for CIA operatives.
22. The CIA also (*make*) extensive use of missionaries, and other religious organizations as fronts.
23. The CIA (*put*) all Americans abroad at risk, whether they are CIA agents or not.
24. The CIA routinely (*lie*) to Congress about all of the above and (*get*) away with all its crimes.

EXERCISE 529

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin uygun şekillerini kullanınız.

1. In the past most Americans (*think*) that the CIA was fighting against communism.
2. Noam Chomsky (*tell*) to an interviewer yesterday that CIA's main mission was to deter democracy, not communism.
3. Few people (*bring*) the matter to the attention of the American public.
4. Trillions of dollars (*go*) into arming the USA and the Soviets to the teeth.
5. The British often (*give*) support to terrorism for economic gains.
6. We (*eat*) a good lunch before we boarded the bus.
7. The Blair government (*give*) the PKK all the support it needed.
8. She (*give*) me a lovely crystal vase before she died last week.
9. Her kitten (*lie*) in the basket in the corner all day yesterday.
10. That coat (*lie*) on the sofa for two days for the last two days.
11. The Russian-Jewish Mafia (*begin*) arriving in the U.S. in the 1980s.
12. When we stopped for a break, we (*drink*) a whole pitcher of fruit punch.
13. The desert plants (*drink*) up the rain as soon as it touched the ground.
14. I was a witness when an American soldier (*break*) one prisoner's neck.
15. The burglar alarm (*ring*) before the thieves could break in the door.
16. Helga (*swim*) poorly in the competition.
17. The U.S. government (*break*) the Geneva Convention many times up to now.
18. Along with the Israelis, the Bush regime (*know*) about the impending 9-11 attacks.
19. We (*choose*) Mona to head the planning committee.
20. The Bush regime must (*be/make*) to account for their crimes against humanity in Iraq.

EXERCISE 530

Kevin Begley, *The Tale of Nestlé and a Nation in Famine* (www.counterpunch.org) adlı yazısında Nestle'nin günahlarından birini anlatıyor. Bu yazıştan derlenen tümcelerde ayaç içinde verilen eylemlerin doğru şekillerini kullanınız.

1. Nestle Corporation (*make*) 5.5 billion dollars in profits last year.
2. In 1975 a military dictatorship (*take*) over Ethiopia.
3. Epidemics always (*strike*) the poor and downtrodden on this planet.
4. The arms of famine (*catch*) Ethiopia once again.
5. Nestle Corporation never (*write*) off debts in the past, and it seems unlikely that it will in the future.
6. Nestle often (*take*) the path of moral corruption.
7. Nestle (*) underhandedly peddling baby formula as a breast-milk substitute to mothers in the third world.*
8. Nestle (*send*) sent sales representatives into hospitals dressed as nurses to promote its products to mothers.
9. Nestle often (*give*) mothers a free supply of baby formula that lasted just long enough to dry out their own breast milk.
10. According to the World Health Organization a child bottle- (*feed*) using unsafe water is up to 25 times more likely to die as a result of diarrhea than a breast- (*feed*) child.
11. 1.5 million children (*die*) in this manner each year, a contribution of Nestle to the poor.
12. In 1984 Ethiopia (*) by a famine in which a million people died.*
13. So far Nestle (*do*) nothing to fight hunger in Third World Countries, for which it is partly responsible.
14. Those of you who (*buy*) Nestle products unknowingly supported infant mortality and famine.

EXERCISE 531

Ayaç içindeki eylemlerin uygun şekillerini kullanınız.

1. Today western science (*become*) an instrument of cultural imperialism.
2. In 1975, the richest 1 percent (*have*) 22 percent of America's wealth.
3. By 1992, the richest 1 percent (*come*) to own 42 percent of America's wealth.
4. The occupation of Iraq (*come*) as no great surprise to those who (*know*) the USA wanted Iraq's oil.
5. In the centuries after Christopher Columbus the Butcher, more than 100 million native people (*fall*) under the sadistic, racist rule of the invading European-Americans.
6. American journalists (*write*) nothing but lies since the invasion of Iraq.
7. I don't feel we (*do*) wrong in taking this great country away from the Indians and killing them. -*John Wayne*
8. First many people (*think*) that politics was going to shake the world. Then it turned out that consumption (*shake*) the world.
9. The prime minister of China (*take*) a test ride on the new high-speed train yesterday.
10. The Iraqis eventually (*drive*) the British from their country after a long bloody British occupation.

11. The Tigris and Euphrates Rivers-the water from which our civilization first (*spring*) -are under attack of European and American looters.
12. Every year she spends two weeks in the small town where she (*grow up*).
13. In 1969, Mr. Blum (*write*) and published an exposé of the CIA in which its crimes were listed.
14. In the 16th century the Spanish (*bring*) tons of gold from America to Europe.
15. The Bush regime lied about what (*hit*) the Pentagon.
16. In Baghdad, up to 70 corpses - of Iraqis killed by American gunfire - (*be/bring*) to the mortuaries each day.
17. Martin Luther King, Jr. (*think*) that the USA (have) no right to be in Vietnam.
18. In 1492 Columbus (*begin*) the enslavement and slaughter of the Indian peoples.
19. The British massacred in 1715 the whole Yamasee nation who (*rise*) against them.
20. In the 14th century millions of people in England (*catch*) the plague and died.

EXERCISE 532

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin uygun şekillerini kullanınız.

1. The Iraqi woman (*lose*) all her family to the USA bombs.
2. In 1803 the United States (*buy*) Louisiana from Napoleon for 15 million dollars.
3. Columbus (*leave*) Spain in August 1492 and arrived at America on October 12th.
4. Russia (*sell*) Alaska to the United States in 1867.
5. For centuries the Incas (*keep*) llamas as domestic animals.
6. In the old days a person (*put*) his or her seal on important letters.
7. Lindbergh (*fly*) 'The Spirit of St. Louis' across the Atlantic in 1927.
8. Thousands of years ago, farmers (*grow*) crops on what is now the Sahara Desert.
9. When the USA soldiers opened fire, about 12 Iraqi children (*fall*) dead.
10. Most Jews who were expelled from Spain (*go*) to the Ottoman Empire, where the Islamic culture welcomed them.
11. Prime Minister Tony Blair seems (*lose*) all remnants of shame.
12. Leaving more than a billion dead behind, the Satanic US government (*withdraw*) its forces from Vietnam.
13. Al-Khowarizmi (*write*) the first book bearing the name *al-jabr* (algebra).
14. American companies (*steal*) the lifeblood and foodsource of the Native Americans.
15. In the Middle Ages, soldiers (*wear*) armour.
16. The American government carefully and prudently (*slay*) thousands of Indians.

EXERCISE 533

Ayraç içindeki eylemlerin uygun şekillerini kullanınız.

1. Sir John Browning (1792-1872) (*speak*) 100 languages fluently.
2. Acclaimed journalist Toby Rogers claims that George W. Bush (*steal*) American presidency.
3. In 1912, the Titanic, the biggest ship in the world, (*sink*) after hitting an iceberg.
4. In 1905, Captain M. Well (*find*) a diamond weighing one and a quarter pounds, by chance.
5. Mustafa Kemal (*say*) that "it is much better to be dead than a slave."
6. The heart of a typical Nestle CEO (*be/made*) of burnt asphalt.

7. During the Second World War, many Londoners (*dig*) deep holes in their gardens and (*build*) shelters to protect themselves from bombs.
8. As is obvious, the modern West (*be/build*) on a ruthless exploitation of the Earth's resources, particularly oil.

EYLEMLERDE "TENSE" VE "MOOD"

İngilizce'nin 12 "tense"i ilgili bölümde ayrıntılarıyla incelenmektedir. Tense tablosunu animsayalım.

Simple Present	She works hard. I work hard.
Present Continuous	She is working hard.
Simple Past	She worked hard last year .
Past Continuous	She was working hard last year .
Future Tense	She will work hard next year .
Future Continuous	She will be working hard next year .
Present Perfect	She has worked hard all her life .
Present Perfect Continuous	She has been working hard for years .
Past Perfect	She had worked hard before she became rich .
Past Perfect Continuous	She had been working hard when she was fired .
Future Perfect	She will have worked as a teacher for 20 years by next April .
Future Perfect Continuous	She will have been working as a teacher for 20 years by next April .

Tense'in genel olarak eylemin gösterdiği işin ne zaman olduğuna ilişkin bilgileri içerdigi söylenebilir. İngilizce tümcelerde tümcenin yaratıcısının konusuna yaklaşımını gösteren bir özellik daha söz konusudur. Bu özellik genel olarak MOOD (kip) diye adlandırılmaktadır. MOOD geleneksel olarak 3 bölükte toplanır.

1. **Indicative Mood (Bildiri Kipi)**
2. **Imperative Mood (Buyruk Kipi)**
3. **Subjunctive Mood (Dilek Kipi)**

Bildiri Kipi ile Buyruk Kipi yaygın olan kiplerdir. Onları Chapter 13'te incelemiştik. Dilek Kipi, gerçek düşlik, varsayılm, dilek, koşul, ivedilik gibi yaklaşımları içermektedir. Bu kipte tense kullanımı diğer kiplerdekinden farklıdır. Dilek Kipinin aşağıdaki ilk üç kullanımında **SIMPLE PAST TENSE**, geniş zaman ifade ediyor. Bütün kişilerle BE'nin **WERE** şekli kullanılıyor. İvedilik gösteren **IT IS HIGH TIME THAT-NP** yapısında yine **SIMPLE PAST TENSE**, simdiki/geniş zaman ifade etmek için kullanılıyor. İvedilik gösteren **necessary**, **imperative** ve **insist** gibi sözcüklerle kullanılan **THAT-NP** ad içütmecisiğinin eylemi yalnız olarak kullanılıyor.

1. Gerçeğe Aykırı Durumlar

If I *were* you, I would learn Turkish.

If I *had been* you, I would have learned Turkish.

2. Dilekler

She wishes she knew Turkish.
She wishes she had learned Turkish.

3. Akıl yürütütmeler

He acts as if he were a billionaire.
He acts as if he *had been* a billionaire.

4. İvedi durumlar

It is imperative that she *take* her medicine.
I insisted that she *be* operated on.
It is high time I *started* working.

CONTINUOUS TENSE'LERDE KULLANILMAYAN EYLEMLER

Belli eylemlerin anlamları gereği continuous tense'te kullanımları mümkün değildir.

İYELİK EYLEMLERİ

have	lack	belong	contain	owe
------	------	--------	---------	-----

DÜŞÜNCE VE DUYGU EYLEMLERİ

admire	guess	love	prefer	think	want
believe	know	mean	remember	trust	wish

GEREKSİNME EYLEMLERİ

need	require	want
------	---------	------

GÖRÜNTÜ EYLEMLERİ

resemble	look	seem	appear
----------	------	------	--------

EYLEM TÜREΤEN EKLER

ADLARA EKLƏNİP EYLEM TÜREΤEN SONEKLƏR

-en	frighten, hasten, lengthen, strengthen, threaten
-ze, -ize	apologize, criticize, memorize, standardize, sympathize
-fy, -ify, -efy	beautify, classify, solidify, terrify, glorify

ADLARA EKLENİP EYLEM TÜRETEK ÖNEKLER

en-	encamp, encircle, encourage, enforce, enjoy, enslave
-----	--

SIFATLARA EKLENİP EYLEM TÜRETEK EKLER

-ize	civilize, modernize, equalize, realize
-en	deepen, fatten, sharpen, weaken, blacken
en-	enable, enlarge, enrich, encircle

EYLEMLERE EKLENİP EYLEM TÜRETEK EKLER

de-	deactivate, decode, decentralize
dis-	disagree, disembark, disapprove, disarm
mis-	misinform, mislay, misplace, mislead
out-	outdo, outbox, outrun, outshoot
over-	overact, overwork, overcook, overeat
pre-	precook, preheat, preregister
re-	rewrite, redo, reteach, redraw, reappear
un-	undo, unzip, unwrap, unclasp
under-	undercut, undergo, underpay
up-	update, uplift, uphold, upset, upstage

YARDIMCI EYLEMLER AUXILIARIES

Yardımcı eylemler, ilgili bölümlerde ayrıntılı olarak incelenmektedir. Özette temel yardımcı eylemlerin "tense"lerin kurulmasını sağladıklarını, kip belirteçlerinin de eyleme çeşitli anlam öğeleri yüklediklerini belirterek hepsini bir tabloda gösterelim.

PRIMARY AUXILIARIES (TEMEL YARDIMCI EYLEMLER)				MODAL AUXILIARIES (KİP BELİRTEÇLERİ)			
BE				can may shall will			
be is am are				could might should would			
was were				must dare used to need			
being been				be to have to had to ought to			
DO		do	did	be able to	be going to	have got to	
				be used to		get used to	
HAVE		have	has	be supposed to		be accustomed to	
				had better		had best	
				would rather		would sooner	



"No, I didn't actually read the book, but I did play the video game loosely based on the book."

EXERCISE 534

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki eylemleri bulup altlarını çiziniz.

1. There are two or three rare birds which we have been hunting for years.
2. We could fight evil men, but we could not fight natural disasters.
3. Much to our surprise, there was a lot of money in the safe.
4. These great trees can be seen from miles away.
5. The sun had gone behind the mountains, but it had left the rock so hot that nobody could touch them.
6. Two or more wars of this magnitude may finish the human population.
7. Too many cooks will spoil the soup.
8. One rotten apple may spoil the whole barrel.
9. Let's stay in good company; we may become one of its members.
10. Don't quit your job because it is boring; your next job may be even worse.

EXERCISE 535

Aşağıdaki parçadaki eylemlerin altını çiziniz.

The boomerang has long interested people. It was developed by the aborigines of Australia and may be used for amusement, hunting, or war. A different kind of boomerang is used for each purpose. The kind of boomerang which will return to its owner after it has been thrown is used almost entirely for amusement. This kind of boomerang can hurt an inexperienced thrower. But the aborigines of Australia do not use this type of boomerang for hunting. They have developed one which will move near the ground for many feet and then suddenly will fly upward at a great speed. With this kind of weapon the natives can surprise the game that they are hunting. The boomerang which is used in war can be thrown only by a strong person. This weapon will easily break the arm of a person who is standing five hundred feet from the thrower. It may even inflict a fatal wound.

EYLEMLERİ NASIL TANIYABİLİRİZ?

Eylemleri tanımamızı sağlayacak üç ögeden söz edebiliriz.

1.	Tümce içindeki konumları	Sayfa 855'teki <i>Eylemlerin Tümce İçindeki Konumu</i> tablosunu inceleyiniz.
2.	Çekim ekleri	{-ing}, {-S} ve {-ed}
3.	Türetme ekleri	Sayfa 863

EXERCISE 536

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş eylemlerin nasıl tanınabileceğini konumları için (1), çekim ekleri için (2), türetme ekleri için (3) yazarak belirtiniz.

1. Something begins as a custom and becomes the law of the land.
2. A leopard can't change his spots.
3. Walls have ears and mountains have eyes.
4. Take the weather as it comes; nothing can be done about it.
5. Too many cooks will ruin the soup.
6. Let's stay in good company; we might become one of its members.
7. One rotten apple has spoiled a barrel-full.
8. An old dog doesn't bark without a reason.
9. Don't quit your job because of a bad boss; your next one may be worse.
10. I'll do my best; no man can do more.

Verbs of Urgency İVEDİLİK EYLEMLERİ

THAT-NP ad içtümceciklerini nesne olarak alan eylemlerden bir bölümü, vurgulama, ısrar ve önem göstermeleri nedeniyle Verbs of Urgency bölümü olarak adlandırılmaktadır. Bu eylemlerin aldığı THAT-NP'nin eylemi yalnız şekilde kullanılır.

advise ask beg command	demand desire forbid insist	move propose recommend request	require stipulate suggest urge
---------------------------------	--------------------------------------	---	---

I recommend that John go to the doctor immediately.

They advised that the government pass a law dealing with gun control.

We are requesting that all students take the test.

It has been suggested that the president be responsible for his actions.

Some doctors recommend that the word "cancer" be avoided.

Some doctors suggest that a doctor not lie to a patient.

It is generally *recommended* that a patient **seek** a second opinion if he has been told that he has cancer.

The patient *insisted* that he **be told** the truth.

Many people now *urge* that medicine **be** socialized.

On religious grounds, some people strongly *demand* that research on test-tube babies **be** stopped.

Many patients *prefer* that standardized fees **be** set for all medical services.



Ad içtümceziklerinde eylemlerle SHOULD kullanılabilir.

Many people now *urge* that medicine **should be** socialized.

TROUBLE SOME VERBS

Aşağıda benzerlikleri nedeniyle karıştırılan eylemleri gösteriyoruz.

adapt	uyarlamak
adopt	benimsemek, edinmek

An Eskimo would probably have trouble *adapting* to life in the equator.

The police department *adopted* a more liberal policy toward gambling.

accept	kabul etmek
except	hariç tutmak

We *accepted* their offer of a 10% salary increase.

They *excepted* him from testifying at the trial.

affect	affected	affected	etkilemek
effect	effected	effected	oluşturmak

Her words *affect* us all deeply.

The rapid change in the economy was *effected* by power-driven machines.

bind	bound	bound	bağlamak
bound	bounded	bounded	sınrlamak, sığramak

The executive was *bound* hand and foot by the kidnappers.

Turkey is *bounded* by several countries.

The lion *bounded* forward and sprang at the deer.

complement	tamamlamak
compliment	iltifat etmek

Weight lifting and running are exercises that *complement* each other.

All her neighbours *complimented* her on her garden.

die	dying	died	died	ölmek
dye	dyeing	dyed	dyed	boyamak

We are ready to *die* for our country.

She *dyed* her dress yellow.

fall	fell	fallen	düşmek
fell	felled	felled	kesmek
feel	felt	felt	hissetmek
fail	failed	failed	başarısızlığa uğramak

Prices *fell* sharply last week.

Little strokes *fell* great oaks. —Benjamin Franklin

John *failed* his last exam.

find	found	found	bulmak
found	founded	founded	kurmak

I *found* a photograph of our old house in the attic.

Hiroshima was *founded* in 1593 around a nobleman's castle.

grind	ground	ground	ezmek, öğütmek
ground	grounded	grounded	karaya oturmak, dayandırmak

The coffee beans are *ground* in a machine.

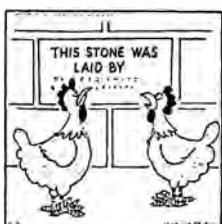
A lawyer should *ground* his defense on facts.

hang	hung	hung	eşya asmak
hang	hanged	hanged	idam etmek

They will *hang* the murderers.

Hang the picture over there.

lie	lied	lied	yalan söylemek
lie	lay	lain	uzanmak, yatmak
lay	laid	laid	koymak



Karikatürdeki tavuğun inanmadığı şey nedir?

She can *lie* in the sun for hours.

Our village *lay* at the foot of a mountain.

She *laid* the necklace in the safe.

His eyes wide open, the injured man *lay* on the pavement.

“I just don’t believe it.”

rise	rose	risen	yataktan kalkmak, (güneş) doğmak
raise	raised	raised	yükseltmek, kaldırmak, yetiştirmek

Gasoline prices *rose* when demands exceeded supplies.

Advances in science *raise* productivity and improve health.

see	saw	seen	görmek
saw	sawed	sawed	testere ile kesmek
sew	sewed	sewed, sown	dikiş dikmek

He *sawed* the branch into two.

Finally we *saw* an ambulance approaching.

sit	sat	sat	oturmak
set	set	set	kurmak
seat	seated	seated	oturtmak

Before I left the office I *set* a cover on my typewriter.

He *sat* down by the side of the road to think a little.

He *seated* himself under a bush.

wander	gezmek, dolaşmak
wonder	merak etmek

The tourists are *wandering* around the old city.

One sometimes *wonder* what the point of one's life is.

wind	wound	wound	kurmak, sarmak
wound	wounded	wounded	yaralamak

He *wound* the wires around the pins.

Better to die ten thousand deaths than *wound* my honor. —J. Addison

DİĞER SÖZCÜK TÜRLERİYLE KARIŞTIRILAN EYLEMLER

except	prep.	hariç	All European countries except yours support terrorism.
except	verb	hariç tutmak	Women are excepted from the draft in many countries.

advice	noun	ögüt	He gave me some excellent advice.
advise	verb	ögüt vermek	He advised me to finish the report on time.

effect	noun	etki	Smoking has many harmful side effects.
effect	verb	oluşturmak	We can effect a reconciliation between them.

breath	noun	nefes	We hold our breath when swimming underwater.
breathe	verb	nefesalmak	Her asthma attack made it difficult for her to breathe.

desert	verb	terketmek	One should never desert his family or friends in trouble.
desert	noun	çöl	It is impossible to survive in the desert without water.
dessert	noun	tatlı	Ice cream is a popular dessert in America.

loose	adjective	gevşek	The noise was caused by a loose shock absorber.
lose	verb	kaybetmek	He might lose all his savings in the crisis.

passed	past verb	geçmek	As hours passed, the crowd got more restless.
past	adjective	geçmiş	Our firm has grown astoundingly in the past few years.
past	noun	geçmiş	In the past, there were few businesswomen.
past	prep.	geçe	A third of the population in Venice is past 60.

very	adverb	çok	Economic growth is a very important goal.
vary	verb	değişmek	Petroleum products vary greatly in physical appearance.

wind <i>/waynd/</i>	verb	kurmak,sarmak	The path winds up the hill.
wind <i>/wind/</i>	noun	rüzgar	The air contains dust carried by the wind.

EXERCISE 537

Ayraç içindeki doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. Mrs. Smith (*set, sat*) down wearily on the porch.
2. The value of the real estate has (*raised, risen*) during the past year.
3. I am planning to (*lay, lie*) down for an hour before I get ready for the dance.
4. Do not (*loose, lose*) any more weight.
5. If you (*accept, except*) his smoking, he has got no bad habits.
6. She is (*laying, lying*) in front of the fireplace.
7. She never has (*desert, dessert*) in the morning.
8. Conventional bombs (*fell, felled*) on both military and civilian targets during the Korean and Vietnam wars.
9. Will the new promotion (*affect, effect*) your working hours?
10. Please do not (*lose, loose*) these papers.
11. Always accept a (*compliment, complement*) graciously.
12. The salesman told Frank that the dark gray slacks would (*complement, compliment*) his sport coat.
13. It is easy to (*lose, loose*) control of an automobile if one of the tires is punctured.
14. My father (*raised, rose*) from his chair when I introduced him to my girl friend.
15. The horror movie had no (*affect, effect*) on me.
16. To survive, an animal must (*adopt, adapt*) to its environment.

EXERCISE 538

Ayraç içindeki doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. (*Lay, Lie*) the letter on Mrs. Cornell's desk.
2. Doris (*sat, set*) a pan of water on the stove to heat for coffee.
3. The dog is (*laying, lying*) on the grass. She (*laid, lay*) there an hour ago, and she has (*laid, lain*) there ever since.
4. Ralph was an admirable young man (*accept, except*) that he was not too dependable.
5. After Mary talked with the psychiatrist, she (*adapted, adopted*) a more friendly attitude toward people.
6. David seemed embarrassed over the (*complement, compliment*) his friends paid him.
7. (*Effects, Affects*) of the strike were felt everywhere in New York.
8. Everyone in the class (*accept, except*) Jane decided to (*accept, except*) my offer to help.
9. Everyone is expected to (*raise, rise*) when the captain enters the wardroom.
10. For (*desert, dessert*) we had vanilla ice cream garnished with fruit salad.
11. How did the defeat (*affect, effect*) the team?
12. Inflation is one of the many (*affects, effects*) of war.
13. Definitions of ideal weight (*very, vary*) among cultures.
14. The (*past, passed*) months have flown by.
15. The ending of the movie had a great emotional (*affect, effect*) on the audience.

EXERCISE 539

Ayraç içindeki doğru seçeneği bulunuz.

1. Edna's chic red hat (*complements, compliments*) her stylish black dress.
2. Solar heating and solar cooling are (*very, vary*) attractive environmentally.
3. Of all the candidates, I do not believe anyone is qualified for the post (*accept, except*) Allen.
4. Sally (*laid, lay*) on the beach an hour before she entered the water.
5. The budget cuts have (*effected, affected*) all departments.
6. The death of his father (*effected, affected*) him very much.
7. The lifeguard was (*laying, lying*) on the beach when he heard someone scream for help.
8. The new product has had a harmful (*effect, affect*) on farm animals.
9. They (*passed, past*) many hours telling jokes.
10. When I entered college, I had to (*adapt, adopt*) myself to a new way of life.
11. The (*desert, dessert*) is unbearably hot during the day but surprisingly cool at night.
12. She explained the reason why the prices (*raised, rose*).

13. The causes of amnesia (*very, vary*).
 14. It seems that the rainy weather (*affects, effects*) my disposition.
 15. We (*accept, except*) that you have meant no harm.

EYLEMLERİN ANLAMBİLİMSEL SINIFLANDIRILMASI

<i>Duyu Eylemleri Verbs of Perception</i>	<i>feel, hear, notice, observe, see, smell, taste, touch, watch</i>
<i>Duygu Eylemleri Verbs of Emotional State</i>	<i>abhor, admire, adore, appreciate, detest, dislike, hate, loathe, love, prefer, regret, trust</i>
<i>Zihinsel Etkinlik Eylemleri Verbs of Mental State</i>	<i>agree, believe, claim, consider, doubt, guess, hesitate, imagine, know, prefer, realize, reckon, suppose, trust, want, wish, wonder</i>
<i>Durum Eylemleri Verbs of State</i>	<i>belong, contain, depend, equal, owe, hold, indicate, mean, need, require, resemble, tend</i>
<i>Bildirme Eylemleri</i>	<i>acknowledge, add, affirm, announce, assure, cite, declare, deny, explain, insist, mention, proclaim, remind, say, state, suggest, tell, warn</i>

Belli ilgeçlerle kullanılan eylemler

1 .	about	agree argue	boast dream	know laugh	read	talk
2 .	against	discriminate protest	react rebel	turn		
3 .	at	aim bark connive frown gaze	glare growl guess hint jeer	laugh look point rebel shoot	shudder smile snap sneer stare	wave wink
4 .	for	apologize apply arrange ask for ST beg blame	budget care forgive hope for long look	mourn pay plead pose pray prepare	press search shop substitute register vote	vouch wait wish yearn

5.	from	abstain benefit deduct derive desist detach deter	detract deviate differ dissent divert emerge escape	extricate flee infer profit protect quote radiate	recede recoil recover refrain result retire separate	shrink stem suffer withdraw
6.	in	believe confide in SO engage intervene	invest involve SO in ST participate persist		specialize succeed result take part	
7.	into	change convert delve	dip develop divide	fall merge plunge		pry sink transform
6.	of	accuse SO of ST beware conceive consist	deprive (dis)approve die of ST dream	remind SO of ST rob SO of ST smell	talk taste warn SO of ST	
7.	on	blame ST on SO concentrate congratulate SO on ST depend depend	embark impinge impose insist intrude	live plan pounce reflect rely	report spy subsist	thrive
8.	to	adapt add adhere adjust admit amount	apologize belong confess conform contribute correspond	explain lend listen object pertain prefer	refer relate reply resort respond revert	submit subscribe succumb surrender talk yield
9.	with	agree argue associate begin collaborate charge SO with a crime discuss ST with SO provide SO with ST	combine communicate comply concur consort	contend cooperate cope correspond deal share ST with SO talk to SO about ST trust SO with ST	flirt mingle share sympathize	

Chapter 54

ADJECTIVES

SİFATLAR

Patience is *bitter*, but its fruit is *sweet*.



Sıfatlar adları niteleyen sözcüklerdir. İngilizcede sıfatlar çoğunlukla niteledikleri adların önünde yer alırlar. Sıfatların 1. Tümce kalibinde BE'nin tamamlayıcısı olarak kullanıldığını anımsayınız.

These roses are **beautiful**.

These roses are **yellow**.

The British Empire has been always **cruel**.

She sells **beautiful yellow** roses.

She wrote an **excellent** novel.

Turks are a **friendly** people.

She bought an exceptionally **beautiful** house.

Sıfatlar gibi adları niteleyen tek sözcüklü eylemsi öbekleri de adların önünde yer alır.

A **plane-shaped** balloon was flying over the crowd.

A **watched** pot never boils.

A **barking** dog seldom bites.

All the shops in the town are playing **irritating** Christmas music.

SIFATLARIN TÜMCE İÇİNDEKİ KONUMLARI

Aşağıdaki tabloda sıfatların tümce içinde bulunabileceği konumları görüyoruz.

1.	He is (very) <u>clever</u> .	Tümce Kalıbü 1
2.	I have a <u>good</u> PC. I have an exceptionally <u>good</u> PC.	Sıfat, nitelediği adın önünde.
3.	We painted the house <u>red</u> .	Tümce Kalıbü 10.
4.	It is <u>obvious</u> that the British Empire is cruel.	Slot-filling IT in subject position
5.	I am <u>tired</u> of working overtime.	"Nesne" alabilen sıfat
6.	The old man looked <u>unhappy</u> .	Tümce Kalıbü 15
7.	The <u>poor</u> should never be forgotten.	THE+ADJECTIVE, ad olarak kullanılıyor.
8.	I find it <u>annoying</u> that she is always lying.	Slot-filling IT in object position
9.	How <u>beautiful</u> —she is!	HOW'lı ünlem tümcesinde
10.	I am happy that you are here.	Noun Clause ile
11.	I am pleased to see you here. He is a difficult person to like. I am anxious for her to be <u>happy</u> .	TO-INF ile

EXERCISE 540

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki koyu dizilmiş sıfatların yukarıdaki tabloda hangi örnekte gösterilebileceğini saptayınız.

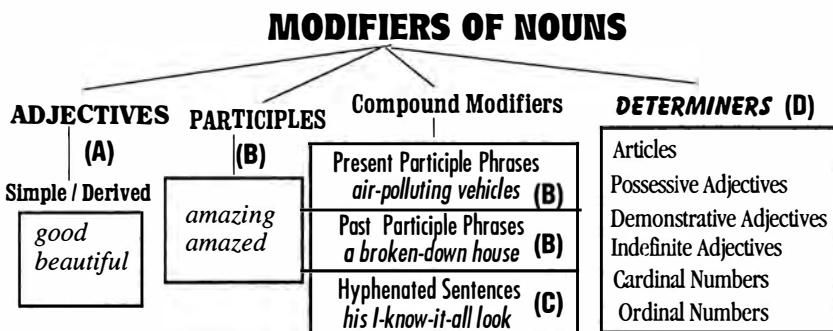
Man is *mortal*. (1)

An unusually *honest* man returned my wallet. (2)

1. He found a **counterfeit** banknote.
2. An **antique** map was banging on the wall.
3. He suggested the **obvious**.
4. We found the movie very **dull**.
5. The bus was completely **full**.
6. A **strange** thing was happening.
7. He was **uncertain** about driving, so he decided to take the bus.
8. Johnson is **taller** than I am.
9. Louis left his room **messy**.
10. The race is not always to the **swift**.
11. You can return these bottles when they are **empty**.
12. That is a **difficult** question to answer.
13. How **nice** of her to help us!
14. The **new** document has to be certified by a notary public.

15. No matter what she wears, she looks **beautiful**.
16. It is **improbable** that anyone will buy such a thing.
17. Many countries now find it **necessary** to fight corruption.
18. When a man is **tired** of working, he is **tired** of life.
19. She wrote an exceptionally **beautiful** poem.
20. Nothing is **wonderful** when you get used to it.

Sıfatlar, adları niteleyen sözcüklerdir. Adları niteleyen her ögenin sıfat olmadığını anımsayalım. Aşağıdaki tabloda adları niteleyen öğeler gösteriliyor. *Paper cup* örneğindeki gibi adları niteleyen adlar tabloda gösterilmemiştir.



- A. Sıfatların, yalnız ve türetilmiş biçimleri vardır. Çoğu dilbilgisi kitabında kullanılan *descriptive adjective* (*betimleyici sıfat*) terimi, onları determiner'lerden ayırmak için kullanılmaktadır.
- YALIN: *cheap, nice, good*
 DERIVED: *beautiful, excellent, active*
- B. Sıfat içümcükleri kısaltıldılarında çeşitli niteleme yapıları ortaya çıkar.
1. **Eylemlerin sıfat gibi kullanılan -ING ve -EN şekilleri oluşur.**

<i>irritating music</i>	<i>melting snow</i>	<i>melted snow</i>
<i>an interesting movie</i>	<i>a growing boy</i>	<i>a grown boy</i>
<i>a watched pot</i>	<i>broken hearts</i>	<i>petrified forests</i>
 2. **Present ve Participle öbekler oluşur.**
 - a. Present Participle Phrases
a long-suffering patient *nerve-wrecking problems*
long-lasting friendship
 - b. Past Participle Phrases
new-born kittens *partially demolished houses*
a crisis-hit economy
- C. Doğrudan tümceler de niteleme öbegine dönüştürülebilir: Bunların yazılışında sözcükler arasına (hyphen) konur; bu nedenle (Hyphenated Compounds) adını alırlar.
- It seems that he doesn't care what people say.*
His I-don't-care-what-people-say attitude annoys me.



"She has us on
the same eat-like-a-bird diet."

SIFAT İÇTÜMCEİKLERİNİN KISALTILMASI SONUCU OLUŞAN ÇEŞİTLİ BİRLEŞİK (COMPOUND) SIFAT ÖRNEKLERİ

1.	ADJECTIVE NOUN-ED	an ill-tempered person	a kind-hearted man
2.	NOUN+NOUN-ED	a heart-shaped box	
3.	ADJ+NOUN-ED	a gray-haired man	a sweet-voiced child
4.	NOUN+GERUND	a paper-cutting machine	
5.	ADJ+TO INFINITIVE	an easy-to-find solution	a hard-to-please employer
6.	COOR. CLAUSES	a hit-and-run driver	a life-and-death struggle
7.	MEASUREMENT SENTENCES	She is ten years old. The pole measures ten feet. a 100-page book	a ten year-old girl a ten-foot pole a five-star general
8.	TO BE TO	a never-to-be-forgotten lesson	
9.	NOUN-TO-NOUN	a wall-to-wall carpet	
10.	NOUN/ADJ +PARTICIPLE	ready-made clothes	Turkish-made cars
		hand-made clothes	hand-painted clothes
11.	Imperative Sentence	a get-rich-quick scheme	
		a catch-as-catch-can policy	
12.	Ordinal Numbers	twentieth-century literature	
13.	PARTICIPLE+ PREP	a built-in cabinet	a longed-for peace
14.	ADJ+PREP. PHR.	young-at-heart artists	
15.	PREP+PARTICIPLE	the up-coming elections	
16.	ADVERB+V-EN	a seldom-used utility	a well-made speech

YAYGIN "COMPOUND ADJECTIVE" ÖRNEKLERİ

absent-minded	good-looking	old-fashioned	soft-hearted
accident-prone	good-tempered	one-sided	strong-minded
air-conditioned	hand-picked	open-ended	tailor-made
big-headed	ill-advised	open-minded	thick-skinned

blood-thirsty	kind-hearted	penny-pinching	time-consuming
clean-shaven	labour-saving	ready-made	trouble-free
clear-cut	left-handed	record-breaking	two-edged
cold-blooded	light-hearted	right-handed	two-faced
easy-going	long-standing	second-hand	warm-hearted
empty-handed	low-paid	second-rate	well-balanced
face-saving	mass-produced	short-lived	well-dressed
far-fetched	narrow-minded	short-tempered	well-known
far-reaching	never-ending	single-handed	world-famous
full-grown	nice-looking	slow-witted	worldly-wise



Past participle eki olan {-ed}, normal olarak sadece /-t/ ve /-d/ ile biten sözcüklerden sonra /-Id/ olarak telaffuz edilmektedir.

Aşağıdaki sözcüklerde kural dışı olarak {-ed}, /-Id/ olarak telaffuz edilmektedir.

aged /eycId/ (= very old)	naked /neykId/
beloved /bI'IAVId/	ragged /rægid/
blessed /blesId/	rugged /ragid/
crooked /krukId/	sacred /seykrId/
cursed /körsid/	wicked /wikId/
dogged /dogId/	wretched /reçId/
learned /lörnId/	one/three/four-legged /legId/

D. Determiners (Ad Belirleyicileri)



Bu sözcükler çoğu zaman dilbilgisi kitaplarında adları nitelemeleri nedeniyle sıfat olarak gösterilmektedir. Determiner'lerin kapalı sözcük türleri olduğunu anımsayınız.

Tanımlıklar /Articles	<i>a, an, the</i>
İyelik Sıfatları Possessive Adjectives	<i>my, your, his, her, its, our, your, their</i>
İşaret Sıfatları Demonstrative Adjectives	<i>this, that, these, those</i>
Belgisiz Sıfatlar Indefinite Adjectives	<i>several, some, any, either, each, many, (a) few, (a) little, other, more, both, all, half</i>
Sıra Sayı Sıfatları Ordinal Numbers	<i>first, second, third, fourth</i>
Asıl Sayı Sıfatları Cardinal Numbers	<i>one, two, three, four</i>

ADLARI NİTELEYEN SORU SÖZCÜKLERİ

WHICH ve WHAT soru sözcükleri adları nitelemede kullanılabilir.

Which plants should be watered twice a week?

Which country has done this?

What book are you talking about?

Adları Niteleyen Adlar



Sıfatlar adları niteler ama her ad niteleyicisi sıfat değildir.

Yerli ve yabancı dilbilgisi kitaplarındaki ortak yanlışların en yayğını SIFAT terimi ile NİTELEME terimi arasındaki ilişkiyi karıştırmaktır. Kisaca açıklamak gerekirse, sıfatlar adları niteler ama, adları niteleyenler sadece sıfatlar değildir. Adlar, başka adlar tarafından da nitelenebilir. Örneğin, **stone** bir addır ve **a stone wall** öbeğinde, wall adını nitelemektedir. **Stone**, adı niteleyen bir addır, yani bir ad niteleyicidir. Ad niteleyicileri anımları açısından iki genel bölüğe ayıralımız.

Madde gösterenler	stone, steel, silk, paper, glass, nylon
Tür gösterenler	family, school, picnic, town, village

a paper cup= kağıt bardak

a paper picnic cup= kağıt piknik tabağı

apple juice= elma suyu

a leather jacket= deri ceket



Eylemsilerden gerund'lar da adlar gibi diğer adları niteleyebilir. Gerund ve participle arasındaki farka dikkat ediniz.

GERUND: *a walking stick*: yürümek için kullanılan sopa, yani baston

PARTICIPLE: *a walking stick*: yürüyen sopa

NİTELEYİCİLERİN ADLAR ÖNÜNDEKİ SIRASI

Bir adım önünde birden fazla niteleyici kullanıldığında, niteleyicilerin belli bir sırada kullanılması gerekmektedir. Genel kuralları söyle ifade edebiliriz:

- I. Sıfatlar genelden özele bir sıralanma içindedir. Örneğin, **beautiful** sıfatı, **renk sıfatlarına göre** daha geneldir.

a beautiful red car

- II. Ad niteleyiciler sıflardan sonra kullanılır.

a beautiful silk dress

- III. Ad niteleyicilerden madde adı olan, tür adından önce kullanılır.

the beautiful red and white paper picnic cups



Niteleyicilerin sırası, en uzaktaki niteleyiciden temel ada en yakın niteleyiciye doğru olmak üzere şöyledir:

1. AD BELİRLEYİCİLERİ / DETERMINERS

Ad belirleyicileri ada en uzakta kalan niteleyicilerdir. Ad belirleyicilerinin kendi aralarında da sıralanması söz konusudur.

all my friends

all my ten friends

all those books

my first two books

his two books

his last two books

2. Genel Betimleme Sıfatları

Bunlar, genel özellikler gösteren sıfatlardır.

3. Ölçü Sıfatları
4. Yaşı ve İşı Sıfatları
5. Eylemlerin V-ing Ve V-en Şekilleri
6. Biçim Sıfatları
7. Renk Sıfatları



Adların ölçü, yaşı, biçim ve renk gibi fiziksel özelliklerini gösteren sıfatlar da verilen bu sırada olmak üzere adların önünde yer alırlar.

8. Kaynak ve Yer Gösteren Sıfatlar

Turkish, western, Asian

a Turkish film

American imperialism

a French attack

British hypocrisy

9. Madde Adları

silk, gold, wood, stone

a stone wall

a brass handle

a silk scarf,

the iron curtain

10. Tür Adları

school, house, office

office furniture

picnic chairs

school cafeteria

street lamp

1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	
	GENEL BETİMLEME SİFATLARI	ÖLÇÜ	YAŞ ISI	V-EN V-ING	BİÇİM	RENK	KAYNAK YER	MADDE	AD	TEMEL AD
the our this these	good awful nice cheap costly	big small wide thin	old new warm cold hot cool	broken stolen boring horrifying painted	round square oblong	pink red white	Turkish British	steel stone iron silk wool	school family summer winter garden	RUGS CARS HOUSES

Aynı tabloyu biraz daha ayrıntılı olarak vermeye çalışalım:

DET.	GENERAL	Physical Description				Origin	Material	NON-MATERIAL	NOUN
		Size	Shape	Age	Color				
a	beautiful			old		Turkish		country	house
an	expensive			antique			silver		pistol
four	gorgeous		oblong		red		gold		boxes
her	strange		short		red				hair
our		big		old		Turkish			cottage
those			square				wooden	hat	boxes
that	dilapidated	little						hunting	cabin
several		tall		young		Turkish			soldiers
some	delicious			fresh		Turkish		picnic	food

EXERCISE 541

Temel adların önünde verilen sıfatları, ad belirleyicilerini ve ad niteleyicilerini doğru şekilde sıralayınız.

shirts cotton — his — old — dirty — white
 his dirty old white cotton shirts

- | | |
|------------------|---|
| 1. morning | spring — warm — beautiful — a |
| 2. buildings | new — several — office — handsome — tall |
| 3. correspondent | young — an — newspaper — intelligent |
| 4. kittens | pretty — three — white — little |
| 5. limousine | old — their — black — enormous |
| 6. politician | dishonest — that — German — disgusting |
| 7. dress | first — her — long — evening |
| 8. cloths | linen — two — those — table — old — beautiful |
| 9. movies | Turkish — fascinating — several — new |
| 10. eyes | beautiful — her — blue — big |
| 11. twilight | long — June — the — lovely |
| 12. coat | black — his — old — bearskin — heavy |
| 13. pilot | cocky — a — airforce — young |
| 14. report | important — weather — an — new |
| 15. wife | new — his — young — charming |
| 16. shirt | cotton — his — old — dirty — white |
| 17. journalist | American — middle-aged — the — vicious |
| 18. writer | talented — young — Turkish — fearless — a |
| 19. boat | old — a — Turkish — beautiful — touring |
| 20. mirror | silver — antique — an — experienced — Ottoman |
| 21. flowers | gorgeous — four — red — silk — long-stemmed |
| 22. boxes | square — those — computer — plastic |
| 23. cabin | little — that — dilapidated — hunting |
| 24. lies | British — disgusting — those — war |
| 25. businessmen | blood-sucking — those — greedy — European — cunning |

EXERCISE 542

Aşağıdaki kutuyu doldurmaya çalışınız.

DET.	GENERAL	Physical Description				Origin	MAT.	NON-M	Noun
		Size	Shape	Age	Color				
									cars
									river
									book
									computer
									actress

INTENSIFIERS/ pekiştiriciler**SIFATLARI VE ZARFLARI DERECELENDİREN SÖZCÜKLER**

Our house is comfortable.

Our house is very comfortable.

very	pretty	so	less
quite	mighty	much	least
somewhat	a little	more	enough
rather	a bit	most	too
slightly	far	a lot	

Very gibi sıfatları derecelendiren sözcüklerle pekiştirici (intensifier) denir. Aşağıdaki örnekte MUCH'ı bir pekiştirici olarak görüyoruz. Pekiştiriciler sıfatlar ve zarflarla kullanılır.

The British Empire has always been much more insensitive to human values than the Roman Empire.

Stephen's father had died when he was very young.

You'll probably think it's pretty bad.

Father became a little angry with me.

This is one of the facts which makes life so discouraging.

The Gales were too poor to go to the movies.

This made Stephen less efficient than ever as a bill collector.



ARTICLE +ADJECTIVE+NOUN normal diziliştir. As / How / Too / So / This/ That sözcükleri pekiştirici olarak kullanıldığından özellikle yazın dilinde ADJECTIVE+ARTICLE+NOUN dizilişinin kullanıldığı yapılar görülmektedir.

We have as good a project as you do.

How honest a politician is he?

It was so fierce an attack that all the Indians were killed.

Columbus was too greedy a person to care for human life.

We couldn't afford that expensive a house.

SIFATLARIN SÖZDİZİMSEL ÖZELLİKLERİNE TOPLU BAKIŞ

1. Sifatlar niteledikleri adların önünde yer alırlar.

 He is an *old* man.

It was a *dangerous* journey.

This man is *old*.

The journey was *dangerous*.

PERFECT,CERTAIN ve TRUE sıfatları niteledikleri adlara göre değişik anlamlar ifade ederler.

<i>a perfect alibi</i> (kusursuz bahane)	<i>a perfect stranger</i> (bütünyle yabancı)
<i>a certain result</i> (belli sonuç)	<i>a certain man</i> (belli bir kişi)
<i>a true report</i> (doğru rapor)	<i>a true scholar</i> (gerçek bir bilimadamlı)

2. Sifatlar TO BE eylemini ve LINKING VERB'leri izleyebilir.

She is pretty *intelligent*.

She looks *sad*.

That wars are inevitable is *self-evident*.

A woman being a prime minister is no longer *exceptional*.

The applicant appeared *angry* and *upset*.

She remained *motionless* for an hour.

3. "A" -ile başlayan sıfatlarla *ill*, *well*, *unwell* niteledikleri adların önünde kullanılamazlar.

ablaze	afloat	ajar	alone	averse
adrift	afraid	alike	ashamed	awake
afire	aghast	alive	asleep	aware

Their ambitions are *alike*.

The children were *ashamed*.

We were *alone*.

The professor remained *aloof*.

The birds are *alive*.

The trees were *ablaze*.

Everybody is *afraid*.

The patient is *awake*.



A-sıfatları bir zarf tarafından nitelendiğinde adların önünde kullanılabilir.

the fast asleep patient

the wide awake guard

a somewhat alike offer

a really alive section

a nearly awake patient

the terribly alone scholar



A-sıfatları, bir adın önünde yer alacaksa anlamlarına uygun biçimler kullanılmaktadır.

The woman is *afraid*. the *frightened* woman

The ship is still *afloat*. a *floating* vessel

4. Kimi sıfatlar sadece niteledikleri adların önünde kullanılabilir.

certain	little	mere	principal
chief	live	particular	sheer
elder	main	old*	utter

The *main* reason for her being out of shape is lack of self-discipline.
What is the *chief* objective of man? To live in comfort?

Certain areas of the world are quake prone.

There is *little* hope that peace will prevail in the Middle East.

The pianist began a concert career as a *mere* child.

She finally saw the *utter* absurdity of her marriage.

He won the race through *sheer* luck.

Lack of haste is the *principal* advantage of the country life.

Is there any *particular* kind of cheese you want?

a *live* fish (canlı) It is still alive.

*An *old* friend of mine visited me. (OLD eski anlamında.)

5. Kimi kalıplasmaşı ifadelerde, sıfatlar niteledikleri adın arkasına gelir.

astronomer <i>royal</i>	attorney <i>general</i>	body <i>politic</i>
court <i>martial</i>	God <i>Almighty</i>	notary <i>public</i>
postmaster <i>general</i>	secretary <i>general</i>	the president <i>elect</i>
vice-chancellor <i>designate</i>		from time <i>immemorial</i>

6. Ölçü, boyut, süre, derinlik, uzunluk, genişlik gösteren tümce kalıplarında ilgili sıfatlar adlardan sonra kullanılır.

He is six feet *tall*.

In 1798, the Frenchmen Louis Robert invented a method of paper-making by which sheets up to 3 meters *wide* and 16 meters *long* could be made.

He is nearly a hundred years *old*.

By law, children less than 16 years *old* cannot work in many industries.

7. Present, involved, concerned gibi sıfatlarla /-able/ ve /-ible/ ekleriyle biten sıfatlar niteledikleri adların arkalarında yer alır. Bu sıfatlar adların önüne getirildiklerinde farklı anımlar ifade edebilir.

the members present	→ toplantıda hazır bulanan üyeleri
the present members	→ şu andaki üyeleri
the stars visible	→ şu anda görülebilen yıldızlar
the visible stars	→ dünyadan görülebilen yıldızlar

There is no solution *possible*.

Are there any cars *available*?

We looked for the person *responsible*.

8. Kimi sıfatlar hem ad önünde hem de ad arkasında kullanılabilir.



<i>the best possible use</i>	<i>the best use possible</i>
<i>the greatest imaginable attack</i>	<i>the greatest attack imaginable</i>
<i>the best available position</i>	<i>the best position available</i>
<i>the only suitable lot</i>	<i>the only lot suitable</i>



<i>at the appointed time</i>	<i>at the time appointed</i>
<i>in past years</i>	<i>in years past</i>
<i>the preceding years</i>	<i>the years preceding</i>
<i>positive proof</i>	<i>proof positive</i>
<i>the required courses</i>	<i>the courses required</i>
<i>the following questions</i>	<i>the questions following</i>

9. Sıfatlar, belli tümce kalıplarında tümce ögesi olarak kullanılır.

He held the ropes *tight*.

She finds her home *comfortable*.

It drove me mad that my son was so *rude*.

I consider their plan *impossible, unrealistic* and *foolish*.

His family problems made Jack less *efficient* than ever as a boxer.

They find English *difficult*.

10. Kimi sıfatlar THE tanımılığı ile bir ad öbegi olarak kullanılabilir.

blind	good	jobless	sick
brave	handicapped	living	unemployed
dead	homeless	old	wealthy
deaf	ill	poor	wise
disabled	injured	rich	wounded

If the blind lead the blind, they will end up in a pitch.

The innocent are often deceived by politicians.

The poor are getting poorer every day.

The young and the old cannot communicate well.

The mentally handicapped need the aid of the society.

The rich should help the poor.

The rural poor have been ignored by the media.

The rich of Connecticut are responsible.

The elderly are beginning to demand their rights.

The young at heart are always a joy to be around.

The generous can forget they have given, but the grateful can never forget what they have received.

11. Milliyet gösteren sıfatlar THE ile birlikte ad öbeği kurabilir.

The British are a nation of businessmen.

The Dutch have always lived here.

12. Sıfatlar niteledikleri belirsiz adılların (-body, -one, -thing, ve -where ile kurulan adıllar) arkasında yer alırlar.

Nothing good ever comes of violence. – *Martin Luther King*

Anything free is worth what you pay for it.

Say something nice.

13. Bazı devrik yapıtlarda sıfatlar, tümçenin ilk ögesi olurlar.

Beautiful she is not!

Beautiful was she as the roses in full blossom!

14. Kimi sıfatlar belli bir ilgeçle kullanılır ve sanki nesne gerektiren bir eylem gibi davranışır.



Most of us are afraid of growing old. (Çoğumuz yaşlanmaktan korkar.)
She is a little angry with her son.

We	are	angry bored clever delighted disappointed disgusted enthusiastic excited familiar fond good interested keen sick tired weak worried	at with at with with with about about with of at in on of of at about	politics.
----	-----	---	---	-----------

ADJECTIVE + PREPOSITION

angry with someone about something	innocent of s't.
angry at something	inseparable from
anxious about something	interested in
appreciative of someone	(ir)relevant to
apprehensive for	jealous of
ashamed of	lacking in
aware of	liable for something
bad at	loyal to
bereft of	mad at
blind to	mad with pain
bound for	mindful of
crazy about	mistaken about
capable of something	noted for something.
comparable to something	obedient to someone
compatible with	particular about something
conducive to	patient with
consistent with	pleased by something
crazy about	pleased with something /someone
deficient in	popular with someone
delighted with	proud of something /someone
desirous of	quick at
detrimental to something	related to
devoid of a quality	reminiscent of
different from	representative of
disappointed by	responsible to someone for something
disappointed with	rich in
disgusted at	sad about
disgusted by	safe from something
displeased at	safe with someone
displeased with	satisfied with
eager for	sensitive to unkindness
envious of	serious with
enthusiastic about	sick of doing something
faithful to	sick with an illness
familiar to	similar to
familiar with	sorry for somebody about something
famous for	
filled with	
fond of	sure of/about
fraught with	surprised at/by
full of	suspicious of
good at	sympathetic towards
good for	terrified by
good with	tolerant in
grateful to	thankful to
guilty of	tolerant of/towards
heedless of	unjust to
hostile to	valued at
ignorant of	valued for
impatient with	vexed at
(im)polite to	vexed with someone about/for something
incapable of	void of
indebted to s	weak at
independent of	weak in
indifferent to	worried about
inferior to	worthy of
inherent in	

EXERCISE 543

Aşağıdaki tümceleri uygun ilgeçlerle tamamlayınız.

1. I'm amazed ____ the extent of his knowledge on computers.
2. I am amused ____ people who treat their dogs as their masters.
3. We are annoyed ____ Sweden's open support of the PKK.
4. Good managers try to make their work force less bored ____ their jobs.
5. We were confused ____ the noise in the hall.
6. Turkey is extremely disappointed ____ the British support of the PKK.
7. I am quite disappointed ____ the general appearance of the project.
8. The USA government is totally indifferent ____ the sufferings of the poor.
9. His body has been exhausted ____ long hours of tremendous emotion.
10. We all got excited ____ the new project; it looked very promising.
11. The USA soldiers believe that Iraqi prisoners are not worthy ____ the same rights as Westerners.
12. Most American people are totally ignorant ____ the terrible war crimes that the USA soldiers have committed.
13. The American plan in Iraq is fraught ____ many difficult problems.
14. The US is only interested ____ increasing its wealth at all costs.
15. The Belgian empire ____ guilty of forced labour, systematic rape, torture and murder of 10 million Congolese.
16. We should all be opposed ____ the invasion of Iraq by the USA.
17. Many people in the US today are not satisfied ____ the education that their children are receiving in schools.
18. I was shocked ____ what I read about Norway's support of PKK terrorism.
19. She was tired of ____ trying to keep her son out of mischief.
20. President Ford was worried ____ CIA involvement in many assassinations.



"I am glad to see you guys!"

15. Kimi sıfatları TO-INFINITIVE yapısı izleyebilir.

I am happy to be here.

He is foolish to buy that house.

He is easy to convince.

We are anxious to meet them.

He is quick to go mad.

We are powerless to prevent the war.

We	are	afraid, amazed, annoyed, astonished bound, concerned, delighted disappointed, eager, excited, fit fortunate, glad, happy, inclined interested, loath, overjoyed overwhelmed, pleased, prepared ready, satisfied, sorry, surprised unhappy, unwilling, upset, willing	to	hear the news. receive the invitation. get the offer. succeed so easily. see her here. find her so friendly.
----	-----	---	----	---

Bu kullanımda dikkat edilmesi gereken bir özelliği dilbilimci Chomsky'nin örneğiyle gösterelim.

1	John	is	eager	to please.
2	John	is	easy	to please.

Birinci tümcede "John", işi yapan kişidir, yani gerçek öznedir. İkinci tümcede ise "John" gerçekte işi yapan değildir. "Memnun etme" işini bir başkası yapacaktır. Aşağıdaki kutuda "Lucy"nin işi yapan kişi olmadığına dikkat ediniz.

Lucy	is	all right, convenient, difficult easy, fun, good, hard, impossible, nice, wonderful	to talk to.
------	----	---	-------------

16. Kimi sıfatları THAT'lı tümcecik izler.

I am happy that you can come.

We	are	afraid, amazed, angry, annoyed certain, confident, convinced delighted, excited, fortunate, frightened furious, glad, grateful, happy, lucky mad, pleased, positive, proud satisfied, sorry, sure, surprised unaware, upset, worried	that they are coming.
----	-----	--	-----------------------



Yukarıdaki tabloda yer alan *angry*, *aware*, *unaware* ve *upset* dışındaki sıfatlar ADJECTIVE + TO INFINITIVE kalibinde da kullanılmaktadır.

I am afraid that she can't come with us.

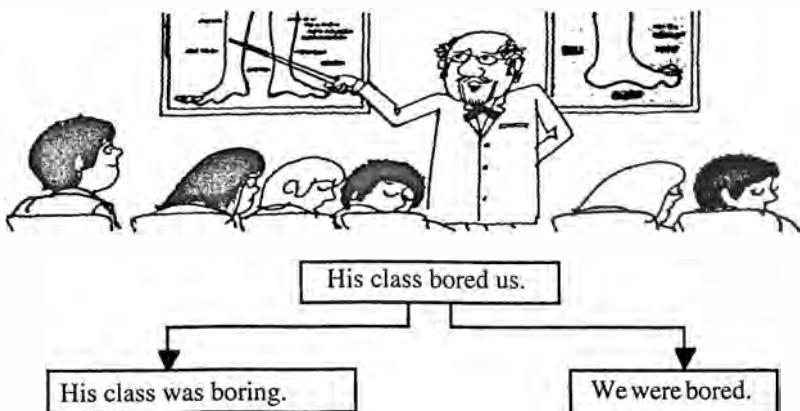
Don't be afraid to make mistakes.

17. Kimi sıfatlar boşluk doldurucu ***IT*** ile kullanılır.

It is *obvious* that the world is round.
 It is *imperative* that my son learn English.
 It is a bit *risky* to invest in foreign currency.
 It remains *problematic* whether the treaty will be signed.
 We find it *impossible* to solve our financial problems.
 It is *self-evident* that he is the best candidate.
 It seems *unlikely* that they will join us.
 It is *unfortunate* that the modern society is becoming more and more competitive.

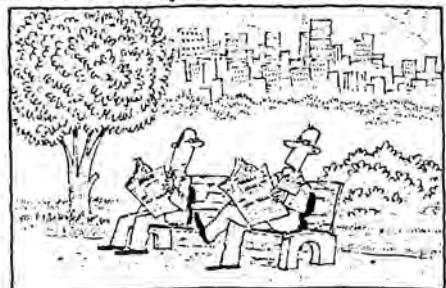
18. Kimi eylemlerin -ING ve -EN şekilleri sıfat olarak kullanılır.

a boring teacher and bored students



☞ Diğer örnekler için Sayfa 777'e bakınız.

Aşağıdaki karikatür *The New York Times* gazetesinin uydurma haberlere dolu olduğu ortaya çıktıktan sonra yalanların yeni bir sınıflandırmasını yapıyor. LIES adını niteleyen sıfatlara dikkat ediniz.



*There are four kinds of lies:
 everyday lies, white lies,
 damned lies, and the New
 York Times.*



"I AM EXHAUSTED, AND HE IS EXHAUSTING."

3

EXERCISE 544

Boş bırakılan yerlere koyu dizilmiş eylemlerin doğru -ING ya da -EN şeklini koyunuz. Örneği inceleyiniz.

Tom **amused** his friends with his high spirit and unfailing gaiety.

a. He was a most **amusing** companion.

b. However, his brother was not **amused** by his behavior.

1. Rumors of Tom's spending his money on worthless antiques **shocked** his wife.
a. His _____ wife wondered what would happen to them.
a. Tom's wife found the news _____ .
2. The show **bored** me utterly.
a. I found the performance completely _____.
b. I was _____ to death by the whole thing.
3. Horror **overwhelmed** the driver.
a. He grasped the steering wheel with a look of _____ horror.
b. He was _____ with horror at the thought of what he had done.
4. Larry's solution to the problem **annoyed** his mother.
a. She said he was a most _____ person.
b. She was very much _____ by his attitude.
5. It **embarrassed** Ali to admit that he didn't drive a car.
a. The policeman asked the _____ young man for the driver's license.
b. Ali found it very _____ to have to admit he didn't have one.
6. Judy said that her hands would **freeze** if she didn't keep them in her sleeves.
a. In spite of the _____ weather there wasn't enough ice to go skating.
b. It was so cold that I was almost _____ by the time I got home.
7. Your sister **charmed** us all with her singing.
a. We found her performance utterly _____.
b. Jack was especially _____ by her lovely voice.

8. The thunder and lightning **terrified** the little boy.
 a. The _____ boy couldn't sleep.
 b. It was a truly _____ experience.
9. The tone of his letter **surprised** me.
 a. I was _____ that he would write in such an unfriendly manner.
 b. I found the tone of his letter quite _____.
10. The trip **exhausted** me.
 a. I have seldom taken such an _____ trip.
 b. We were all completely _____ before the trip was half over.

18. Sifatlar TOO ve ENOUGH ile belli kalıplarda kullanılır.



Jack is *not strong enough* to lift the armchair.

The armchair is *too heavy* for Jack to lift.

He is *too young* to have a drink at the bar.

He is *not old enough* to have a drink at the bar.

He is *too short* to reach the apple.

He is *not tall enough* to reach the apple.

He is *too lazy* to cut the grass.

He is *not hardworking enough* to cut the grass.



INFINITIVE Bölümünde gördüğümüz şu tümceleri anımsayalım:

The donkey is *not strong enough* to draw the cart.

The donkey is *too weak* to draw the cart.

The cart is *too heavy* for the donkey to draw.



He is *too tired* to go anywhere.

She is *too young* to be a teacher.

She is *young enough* to be a tennis player.

No kitchen is *large enough* to hold two women.

People *clever enough* to avoid dangers live long.

Those tomatoes are *not ripe enough* for us to eat (them).

No one is rich enough to do without a neighbor.– Danish Proverb
 It is too cold for us to play in the garden.

We haven't got a big enough office.
 Our office is not big enough.



"He is too absorbed in the football match to notice what he is eating."

This is too expensive a project to finance.
 This project is too expensive to finance.
 She is too young a teacher to be appointed principal.
 She is too nice a girl to do a thing like that.

19. Kimi sıfatlar IT + BE+SIFAT+ OF+ ADJ+ TO INFINITIVE kalıbında kullanılabilir.

It is clever of her to buy this house.

It was quite brash of you to ask for a raise on your first day on the job.

Bu kalıpta kullanılabilen diğer sıfatlar:

brave	cruel	nice	stupid
careless	foolish	optimistic	sweet
clever	idiotic	sensible	wise
cowardly	kind	silly	wrong

EXERCISE 545

Aşağıdaki tümceleri ayraç içindeki sıfatları kullanarak örnekteki gibi yeniden yazınız.

You helped her with her work. (good)

It was good of you to help her with her work.

1. Tom will sell his house. (wrong)
2. She slapped Ali's face. (wrong)
3. She misses class very often. (stupid)
4. Bob imagined he would be rich soon. (optimistic)
5. He arranged for an investigation. (sensible)
6. I forgot to write the letter. (careless)
7. He guessed who had stolen the money. (clever)
8. She went there alone in the dark. (brave)

9. Robert drove carelessly. (idiotic)
10. She expected me to buy her a ring. (foolish)
11. The hunter ran away when he saw a lion. (cowardly)
12. She lent me some money. (kind)

SİFATLARDA KARŞILAŞTIRMA



Karşılaştırma yapılarında kullanılan sıfatlar için üç seçenek vardır.

1. Eşitlik Derecesi (Positive /Equality Degree)
2. Üstünlük Derecesi (Comparative Degree)
3. En üstünlük Derecesi (Superlative Degree)

Eşitlik (Positive Degree)	She is AS clever AS her sister. She is not SO young AS her friends.
Üstünlük (Comparative Degree)	She is YOUNGER than her friends. She is MORE INTELLIGENT than Jack.
En Üstünlük (Superlative Degree)	She is the YOUNGEST student in class. She is the MOST INTELLIGENT student in class.

Eşitlik derecesinde sıfatın yalın şekli kullanılmakta, karşılaştırma **as ... as** ya da **not so as** yapılarıyla gerçekleştirilmektedir.

Üstünlük derecesinde karşılaştırma ya sıfata {-ER} eki eklenerek ve THAN sözüğü kullanılarak yapılmakta ya da MORE+ADJECTIVE+THAN yapısıyla gerçekleştirilmektedir. Üstünlük derecesiyle iki şey/kişi ya da iki gurup karşılaştırılmaktadır.

En üstünlük derecesi de iki şekilde gerçekleştirilmektedir. Ya sıfata {-EST} eki eklenmekte ya da THE MOST+ADJECTIVE yapısı kullanılmaktadır. Her iki durumda da THE tanımılığı kullanılmaktadır. En üstünlük derecesinde ikiden çok kişi ya da gurup arasından seçim yapılmaktadır.

She is as hardworking as her brother.

People are not as honest as they used to be.

She is much happier than last year.

This is the largest fish ever caught in the Black Sea.

This is the strongest of all the horses we have had.

KARŞILAŞTIRMADA DÜZENSİZ BİÇİMLER

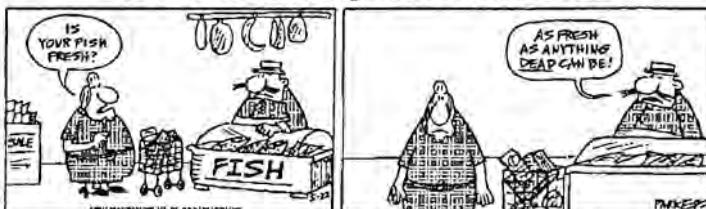
Yukarıda belirtilen genel yapılara uymayan sıfatlar da bulunmaktadır. Aşağıdaki tablo bu sıfatları sergilemektedir.

ADJECTIVE	COMPARATIVE	SUPERLATIVE
good	better	best
well	better	— (sağlık)
bad	worse	worst
much	more	most
many	more	most
little	less	least
far	farther	farthest
—	further	furthest

My car is good. Your car is better than mine. My brother's car is the best of all.

We have little money. They have less money than we do. You have the least money of all of us.

SİFATLARDA EŞİTLİK DERECESİ



- Eşitlik derecesi olumlu tümcelerde AS + ADJECTIVE+ AS yapısıyla kurulur.

Jack is clever. His brother is clever.

Jack is AS clever AS his brother (is).

Jack is AS clever AS him.

- Eşitlik derecesi olumsuz tümcelerde NOT SO + ADJECTIVE + AS yapısıyla kurulur.

The British Empire has never been SO innocent AS it looks.

- Eşitlik derecesi ile miktar karşılaştırmaları AS+MUCH +NOUN + AS ve AS + MANY +NOUN + AS yapılarıla gerçekleştirilir.

AS	MUCH	Uncountable Noun	AS
	MANY	Countable Noun	

The British Empire inflicted AS MUCH VIOLENCE AS Hitler.

The British Empire killed AS MANY CIVILIANS AS Hitler did.

4. AS +ADJECTIVE+AS yapısını izleyen değişik öğeler de bulunmaktadır.

A man is as old as he feels; a woman is as old as she looks.

(Erkek hissettiği yaştadır, kadın göründüğü yaşta.)

The USA has always been as cruel as greedy.

(*ABD, her zaman açgözlü olduğu kadar acımasız olmuştur.*)

A good politician is quite as unthinkable as a God-worshipping devil



AS+ADJECTIVE+AS yapısı olumsuz tümcelerde SO+ ADJECTIVE+AS olarak kullanılır.

According to Noam Chomsky, history has never seen so cruel an empire as the British Empire.

AS ... AS Yapısının Deyimleşmiş Örnekleri



AS STRONG AS A TURK
as black as coal
as blind as a bat
as bold as a lion

as busy as a bee	as obstinate as a mule
as clear as crystal	as old as the hills
as cold as ice	as poor as a church mouse
as cool as a cucumber	as proud as a peacock
as cunning as a fox	as quiet as a mouse
as fat as a pig	as red as a rose
as fierce as a tiger	as sharp as a razor
as flat as a pancake	as silly as a goose
as fresh as a rose	as slippery as an eel
as gentle as a lamb	as sober as a judge
as <i>greedy</i> as a wolf	as strong as a horse
as <i>hungry</i> as a bear	as weak as a baby
as light as a leather	as white as wool
as nervous as a kitten	

SİFATLARDA ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ

Sıfatların üstünlük derecesi iki yolla ifade edilir.

1. ADJECTIVE + er THAN
2. {MORE} ADJECTIVE THAN
LESS

*Health without wealth is better than wealth without health.
Having good health is more important than having wealth.*

Sıfatların üstünlük derecesinde **THAN** karşılaştırmanın kiminle ya da neyle yapıldığını gösterir.

It is easier to catch flies with honey than with vinegar. –English proverb

A good memory is more useful for scholastic achievements than mental power.

The ink of the scholar is more sacred than the blood of the martyr.
—*Mohammed*

There are more fools among buyers than among sellers.—*Proverb*

Miktar ifadeleriyle üstünlük derecesi kurulurken “daha az” ifadesi için sayılabileş adlarla FEWER sayılamayan adlarla LESS kullanılır.

We have	FEWER	friends	than you do.
	LESS	energy	



Sayı ifadelerinde FEWER yerine LESS kullanılır.

They spent less than a thousand dollars on the project.

It's less than twenty miles to Bursa.

She's less than six feet tall.

By law, children less than 16 years old cannot work in many industries

Your essay should be a thousand words or less.

SİFATLARDA EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ

Sıfatların en üstünlük derecesi iki yolla ifade edilir.

1. THE ADJECTIVE + est
2. THE { MOST } ADJECTIVE
LEAST

En üstünlük derecesi, ikiden fazla şey ya da kişi arasında bir karşılaştırma ifade ettiği için, bu dereceyi taşıyan tümcelerde karşılaştırmanın hangi gurup içinde yapıldığını belirleyen yapılar kullanılır.

-ER, -EST vs. MORE, MOST

Hangi sıfatların -ER, -EST eklerini aldığı, hangi sıfatların MORE ve MOST ile kullanıldığı konusunda genel gözlemler şunlardır:

1. Tek heceli sıfatların büyük çoğunluğu -ER, -EST eklerini alır.

old	older	oldest
tall	taller	tallest
large	larger	largest
small	smaller	smallest
big	bigger	biggest



Tek heceli sıfatlarda son ünsüzden önce tek bir ünlü bulunuyorsa, ünsüz yinelenerek /-er/ ve /-est/ getirilir.

<i>big</i>	<i>bigger</i>	<i>fat</i>	<i>fatter</i>	<i>hot</i>	<i>hotter</i>
<i>slim</i>	<i>slimmer</i>	<i>thin</i>	<i>thinner</i>	<i>red</i>	<i>redder</i>

2. İki heceli sıfatların çoğu, MORE ve MOST ile kullanılır.

<i>selfish</i>	<i>more selfish</i>	<i>most selfish</i>
<i>recent</i>	<i>more recent</i>	<i>most recent</i>
<i>honest</i>	<i>more honest</i>	<i>most honest</i>
<i>useful</i>	<i>more useful</i>	<i>most useful</i>
<i>fearless</i>	<i>more fearless</i>	<i>most fearless</i>
<i>urgent</i>	<i>more urgent</i>	<i>most urgent</i>

3. İki heceli sıfatlardan son harfleri -er, -ow, -y olan sıfatlar -ER ve -EST eklerini alırlar.

<i>lazy</i>	<i>lazier</i>	<i>laziest</i>
<i>happy</i>	<i>happier</i>	<i>happiest</i>
<i>narrow</i>	<i>narrower</i>	<i>narrowest</i>
<i>pretty</i>	<i>prettier</i>	<i>prettiest</i>
<i>lovely</i>	<i>lovelier</i>	<i>loveliest</i>

4. İki heceli kimi sıfatlar hem -ER ve -EST eklerini alabilir hem de MORE ve MOST ile birlikte kullanılabilir.

<i>shallow</i>	<i>shallower/more shallow</i>	<i>shallowest/most shallow</i>
<i>clever</i>	<i>cleverer/more clever</i>	<i>cleverest/most clever</i>
<i>slender</i>	<i>slenderer/more slender</i>	<i>slenderest/most slender</i>

5. Üç veya daha fazla heceli sıfatlar MORE ve MOST ile kullanılır.

<i>intelligent</i>	<i>more intelligent</i>	<i>most intelligent</i>
<i>important</i>	<i>more important</i>	<i>most important</i>
<i>ridiculous</i>	<i>more ridiculous</i>	<i>most ridiculous</i>

6. V-ING ve V-EN sıfatları MORE ve MOST ile kullanılır.

<i>tired</i>	<i>more tired</i>	<i>most tired</i>
<i>bored</i>	<i>more bored</i>	<i>most bored</i>
<i>interesting</i>	<i>more interesting</i>	<i>most interesting</i>
<i>frightened</i>	<i>more frightened</i>	<i>most frightened</i>
<i>amusing</i>	<i>more amusing</i>	<i>most amusing</i>

SIFAT TÜRETME EKLERİ

ADLARA EKLENİP SIFAT TÜRETEN EKLER

-y	angry, bloody, guilty, windy, juicy, greedy, risky
-ly	friendly, lovely, costly, orderly, timely, cowardly
-ful	beautiful, careful, cheerful, faithful, wonderful
-less	careless, endless, fearless, harmless, homeless
-(t)al, -(t)ial,	accidental, confidential, conversational, formal
-ic, -etic, -atic	artistic, patriotic, poetic, sympathetic
-ish	bookish, childish, foolish, selfish,
-ous	ambitious, anxious, cautious, religious, various
-ary	complimentary, revolutionary, customary
-ic	historic, artistic, athletic, photographic
-less	powerless, useless, worthless, faultless

EYLEMLERE EKLENİP SIFAT TÜRETEN EKLER

-ent, -ant	different, obedient, urgent, observant, pleasant
-able, -ible	noticeable, considerable, observable, enjoyable
-ive, -(a)tive	active, creative, explosive, attentive
-ed, -en	bored, determined, advanced, crowded, disappointed
-ing	interesting, charming, disappointing, willing
a-	afraid, asleep, alone, awake, aware

SIFATLARI NASIL TANIYABİLİRİZ?

Sıfatları tanımadımızı sağlayacak üç ögeden söz edebiliriz.

1.	Tümce içindeki konumları	Man is mortal. She is a clever person.
2.	Çekim ekleri	younger, youngest
3.	Türetme ekleri	hopeful, hopeless, beautiful
4.	Pekiştiriciler	very young, too expensive

EXERCISE 546

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş sıfatların nasıl tanınabileceğini konumları için (1), çekim ekleri için (2), türetme ekleri için (3) ve pekiştiriciler için (4) yazarak belirtiniz.

- Stephen's work was much **harder** than the title suggests.
- "Maybe it's **easier** to write that kind of poetry," suggested Roberts.
- Louisa's face was **paler** and **smoother** than Joe's, and people thought she looked **older**.
- The **biggest** consumer in town is Mrs. Arnold Peters.

5. Sitting at her window during long afternoons, she spent the **happiest** hours of her life.
6. The farmer was smoking the **worst** tobacco the peddler had ever smelled.
7. The stranger insisted that this was the **best** supper he had eaten in a month.
8. He frequently cut **funny** stories and articles from the local newspapers.
9. You know I can't afford a **costly** gift.
10. For ten years they tried to make our chicken farm **successful**.
11. Finally they decided it was **hopeless**.
12. With **nervous** hands she lighted a lamp.
13. Father became a little **feverish** in his anxiety to please.
14. I hope next year I can make things more **pleasant**.
15. It was mother's idea that the restaurant would be **profitable**.
16. An **attractive** young woman pressed through the crowd to see the man with the **gray** beard.
17. On a chicken farm **surprising** things sometimes happen.
18. She looked at the food with **greedy** eyes. It was days since she had last had a **decent** meal.
19. The USA has the **largest** prison population per capita in the world.
20. No country can claim to have a free press because only the **wealthiest** can own the press.

YAYGIN OLARAK HEM SIFAT HEM EYLEM OLARAK KULLANILABILEN SÖZCÜKLER

average	complete	dull	hollow	smooth	welcome
blind	cool	empty	idle	steady	wet
brown	correct	equal	level	tame	
calm	direct	faint	open	thin	
clean	dirty	fit	quiet	tidy	
clear	dry	free	slow	upset	

Ours is a **free** country.

The Haitian Revolution was history's only successful slave rebellion, where a land of slaves **freed** themselves.

Lincoln technically **freed** the slaves, but they soon became slaves of another kind.

The **average** person in the United States is unaware of the terrible conditions in Iraq.

We **averaged** 60 miles per hour.

You have always been **blind** to my merits.

Jelousy has **blinded** her.

He always kept his room **tidy**.

You can't watch television until you've **tidied** up your room.

**YAYGIN OLARAK HEM SIFAT HEM ZARF OLARAK
KULLANILABİLEN SÖZCÜKLER**

Adjective	Adverb	Adjective	Adverb
early	early	high	high
better	better	last	last
dead	dead	late	late
fast	fast	long	long
fair	fair	right	right
fine	fine	straight	straight
first	first	well	well
hard	hard	worse	worse

It is a *fast* car.

This steak is too *hard* to eat.

He is a *better* swimmer than me.

The *early* bird catches the worm.

Your payment is *late* again.

We should expect schools to have genuinely *high* standards.

The *first* Christians were Jews, and they spread Christianity.

He drives very *fast*.

He works *hard*.

He swims *better* than me.

He usually gets up *early*.

She came too *late* to watch the game.

I went as *high* as \$10,000 for the painting.

Most hypertension *first* appears before the age of 50.

EXERCISE 547

Aşağıda koyu dizilmiş sözcüklerin eylem mi sıfat mı olduğunu belirleyiniz.

His hands were **dry**. (*adjective*)

Dry your hands with that towel. (*verb*)

1. The grass remained **wet** all night.
2. Noah Webster wanted to **free** Americans from British English.
3. They wanted me to **empty** the garbage cans.
4. After 4 o'clock the room was completely **empty**.
5. I helped her **clean** the house.
6. This sentence looks **correct**; ask Jack if there are any mistakes in it.
7. The child has **dirty** hands; tell him to wash them.
8. There are no hills along the river; the land there seems to be **smooth**.
9. Please **correct** my mistakes.
10. People make the air **dirty** with machines that produce gases and smoke.
11. When you have some **free** time, call me on the telephone.
12. The farmers have to **clean** the canals every year.
13. The train sounds **near** already. What time does it reach the station?
14. It's a wild bird. It has to be **free**.
15. She hung the clothes on the line to **dry**.
16. You may smell the pollution as you **near** the lake.

17. Some children **wet** their beds.
18. You can't cut very well with those **dull** scissors.
19. Give me a **clean** handkerchief, please.
20. We expect **calm** weather this weekend.

SİFATLARI İZLEYEN İLGEÇLER

Prepositions Following Adjectives

Aşağıdaki tablolarda yaygın kullanımı olan ADJECTIVE + PREPOSITION yapılarını gösteriyoruz.

ABOUT

angry	crazy	enthusiastic	pleased	sorry
annoyed	curious	excited	puzzled	stern
anxious	depressed	happy	right	uneasy
certain	doubtful	mad	sad	wrong
concerned	dubious	pessimistic	serious	worried

AT

adept	amazed	annoyed	expert	good	shocked	swift
alarmed	angry	astonished	bad	overjoyed	surprised	weak

FOR

blamed	famous	known	praised	ready	sorry
eager	fit	late	punished	responsible	suitable
eligible	homesick	noted	qualified	ripe	

FROM

absent	different	exempt	immune	protected	
derived	detached	far	isolated	removed	
descended	distinct	free	omitted	safe	

IN

absorbed	engaged	immersed	involved	rich
disappointed	fluent	interested	poor	zealous



"You said you were sick and tired of those bills."

☞ What did Dennis do? Why?

OF

afraid	certain	devoid	independent	sick	tired
ashamed	cognizant	envious	jealous of	suspicious	tolerant
aware	conscious	fond	mindful	sure of	unaware
capable	deprived	ignorant	proud	terrified	worthy

ON

based	dependent	intent	keen
-------	-----------	--------	------

TO

acceptable	detrimental	indispensable	partial	senior
accessible	devoted	inferior	peculiar	sensitive
adapted	equal	injurious	preferable	similar
addicted	equivalent	kind	proportional	subject
adjacent	essential	loyal	reconciled	subordinate
attached	exposed	married to	reduced	suited
attributable	faithful	obedient	related	superior
close	favorable	obliged	relative	susceptible
committed	foreign	oblivious	relevant	tied
comparable	impervious	opposed	resistant	
dedicated	indifferent	parallel	restricted	

WITH

acquainted	compatible	disappointed	identified	preoccupied
affiliated	concerned	dissatisfied	infatuated	satisfied
angry	consistent	exasperated	lax	sympathetic
associated	content	familiar	harsh	unconcerned
besieged	covered	frantic	patient	unfamiliar
bored	cursed	furious	pleased	



Bazı sıfatlar kullandıkları adlara göre farklı ilgeçlerle (preposition) kullanılırlar.

angry **with** someone

angry **at** something

disappointed **in/with** someone

disappointed **at/about** something

happy **in /about/ with** something

EXERCISE 548

Aşağıdaki boşluklarda uygun ilgeçleri kullanınız.

- I shall be for ever grateful my first teacher.
- Martin grew to be very fond his pet snake.
- Tea is different coffee in that it contains much less caffeine.
- Everyone was shocked Susan's strange appearance.
- Helen is very excited going to work in Turkey.
- Thank you very much. It's very good you to help me.
- Alpine Saint Bernards are very good following the scent of man.

8. Robert has been married ____ Deborah for over a year.
9. You were right after all ____ the result of the election.
10. She is not adept ____ controlling people.
11. David was ashamed ____ what he had done, and he blushed.
12. I'm not very keen ____ the idea of going climbing.
13. Jim was often late ____ work, and lost his job as a result.
14. Their food was poor ____ nutritional value.
15. William is capable ____ better work.
16. We were all sorry ____ Peter.
17. We should be kind ____ animals.
18. My boss shouted at me, he was really angry ____ me!
19. Most people are bitterly critical ____ the drastic economic measures.
20. We thought we would be safe ____ the storm if we sheltered under a tree.
21. My father is very stern ____ my getting chores done on time.
22. You must be mindful ____ the possible danger involved in the expedition.
23. The teacher was not popular because she was too harsh ____ her students.
24. Are you uneasy ____ the science test tomorrow?
25. They were unaware ____ the approaching storm when they left on their trip.
26. The artist was unconcerned ____ state politics.
27. We are dubious ____ our team's chance for success.
28. An effective treatment can be prescribed if the doctor is fully cognizant ____ the patient's symptoms.
29. At first, her parents were aghast ____ the idea of her learning to fly a plane.
30. The developed countries that live in great luxury are totally indifferent ____ the poverty in the poor countries.
31. We are content ____ the present situation.
32. A man who is addicted ____ drugs should be treated.
33. Nobody is free ____ faults.
34. My grandmother is quite good ____ sewing.
35. This organization is committed ____ helping underdeveloped countries.
36. The United Nations must be concerned ____ world peace.
37. UNICEF is dedicated ____ preventing child poverty all over the world.
38. Noam Chomsky is preoccupied ____ exposing inhumane activities of the western civilization throughout the world.
39. Some people may be so committed ____ their work that they neglect family responsibilities.
40. He was fortunately immune ____ the disease and could take care of the sick.

Adjectives of Urgency ivedilik sıfatları

Sıfatlardan bazıları önem, israr, vurgulama anımları taşımları nedeniyle **IT IS ADJECTIVE+THAT-NP** kalibunda kullanıldıklarında **THAT-NP** ad içümceciğinin eyleminin yalnız olmasını gerektirirler. **THAT-NP** ad içümceciğinin eylemi günlük kullanımda **SHOULD +VERB** olarak da kullanılabilir.

advisable	fitting	mandatory	right
crucial	good(better, best)	necessary	urgent
desirable	imperative	preferable	vital
essential	important	requisite	wise

It is **advisable** that she **not drive** this car until it is fixed.

It is **urgent** that Mr. Taylor **get** my message today.

Günlük kullanım: It is **urgent** that Mr. Taylor **should get** my message today.

It is **necessary** that a patient **not learn** of his illness.

Some people think it is **imperative** that inflation **be prevented**.

Many people think it is **better** that the life of a terminally ill patient **not be prolonged**.

It is **important** that every citizen who expects to cast his vote **take** the time to evaluate the issues clearly.

It is **imperative** that your wife **get** a license if she intends to drive.

It is **obligatory** that books borrowed from the library **be returned** within two weeks.

It is not **mandatory** that we **vote** when we reach 21, but we should.

It is urgent that the US government stop handguns before they stop us.



**LAST YEAR,
HANDGUNS KILLED 48 PEOPLE IN
JAPAN.
8 IN GREAT BRITAIN.
34 IN SWITZERLAND.
52 IN CANADA.
58 IN ISRAEL.
21 IN SWEDEN.
42 IN WEST GERMANY.
10,728 IN THE UNITED STATES.
GOD BLESS AMERICA.**

Chapter 55

ADVERBS

ZARFLAR



Zarflar, tarz, yer, zaman, sıklık, vurgulama ve derece gösteren sözcüklerdir. Zarflar, eylemleri, sıfatları ve diğer zarfları niteleyebilirler. Zarf türetme ekrından biri olan {-ly} öylesine yayındır ki zarf olan sözcüklerin büyük bir çoğunluğu bu ekle türetilmiştir.

Eylemi niteliyor.	She approached the topic cleverly . (tarz) The broadcast will begin soon . (zaman)
Sıfatı niteliyor.	Something is terribly wrong. (vurgulama) The students were unusually silent. (derece) An extremely expensive necklace was stolen. (derece) The British Empire has always been greedy. (sıklık)
Zarfi niteliyor.	He drove dangerously fast. (derece) The teacher congratulated the student very sincerely. (derece) Helen arrived quite late in the evening. (derece)
Tümceyi niteliyor.	Luckily , there was nobody in the house when the bomb hit it.

EYLEMLERİ NİTELEYEN ZARFLARIN TÜRLERİ/Kinds of Adverbs

Eylemi niteleyen zarflar, anlamlarına göre sınıflandırılabilirler.

1.	Tarz Zarfları	Adverbs of Manner	He works hard .
2.	Zaman Zarfları	Adverbs of Time	She came here yesterday .
3.	Yer Zarfları	Adverbs of Place	Steve works here .
4.	Sıklık Zarfları	Adverbs of Frequency	She is always hungry. He never tells the truth.



1. TARZ ZARFLARI (Adverbs of Manner)

Tarz zarfları, eylemin ifade ettiği işin nasıl yapıldığını gösterir. Soru sözcüğü HOW sorusunun yanıt olabilirler. Genel olarak, geçişsiz eylemlerden hemen sonra, geçişli eylemlerle de dolaysız nesneden hemen sonra gelirler.

Hemingway	could box		well.
Hemingway	spoke	English	fluently.

actively	carefully	equally	loudly	sincerely
aggressively	carelessly	foolishly	neatly	reluctantly
awkwardly	diligently	generally	promptly	(un)willingly
boldly	eagerly	honestly	quickly	wrongly
calmly	easily	intentionally	quietly	wisely

He ran ____ rapidly, slowly, quickly.

She spoke ____ softly, loudly, aggressively.

James coughed loudly to attract her attention.

They speak Italian badly.

He swims well.

She dances gracefully.

Time passes quickly.

Kimi ilgeç öbekleri, tarz zarfı gibi işlev görür.

She moved beautifully, *like a gazelle*.

He talks *like an actor*.

He works *with difficulty*.

He came *by bus/train/taxi/ship*.

He went there *on foot*.

EXERCISE 549

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki tarz zarflarının altını çiziniz. Tümcelerden bazılarında tarz zarfı bulunmamaktadır.

1. The broadcast will begin soon.
2. The newscaster seemed to speak incessantly.
3. The panel explored the issue thoroughly.
4. The audience asked questions eagerly.

5. The reporters had done their research conscientiously.
6. The information was presented accurately.
7. Everyone had worked tirelessly on the project.
8. The topic was approached cleverly.
9. Later, the station manager congratulated the researchers on their work.
10. Finally, the broadcast was over.
11. The entire hour had passed smoothly.
12. The students who had worked on the program sighed loudly.

İŞLERİN NASIL YAPILDığINI GÖSTEREN ZARFLARA DİĞER ÖRNEKLER

ZARF	ANLAM	
correctly	<i>without errors</i>	yanlışsız, hatasız
effectively	<i>meeting a need</i>	etkili biçimde
efficiently	<i>without waste</i>	verimli şekilde
conscientiously	<i>thoughtfully, with care</i>	dikkatle
deftly	<i>skillfully</i>	ustalıkla
concisely	<i>briefly and clearly</i>	kıscıca ve açıkça
erroneously	<i>incorrectly</i>	yanlış şekilde; hatalı
precisely	<i>to the point, accurately</i>	eksiksiz olarak
sloppily	<i>without care, carelessly</i>	gelişigüzel şekilde

If you don't read the directions **correctly**, you might make a mistake in assembling the model.

You should see a drop in the fever within a few hours after taking this medicine; it works very **effectively**.

The furnace heats more **efficiently** if the damper is properly regulated. You use less fuel and have a more constant temperature.

Before leaving the office every day the manager **conscientiously** checks for messages, turns off the lights, and locks the door.

Sylvan impressed his boss by **concisely** describing the nature of the problem in just a few minutes.

The chef cooks the dishes **precisely** as the recipes direct, and the results are always the same.

The young gymnast continued her routine, **deftly** executing the movements to the applause of the crowd.

John **erroneously** turned on the hot water instead of the cold and burned his hand badly.

Compositions that are written **sloppily** and handed in without being proofread will always receive low grades.

EXERCISE 550

Doğru seçenekği bulunuz.

1. This letter should be shorter and to the point. It should be _____ written.
(*concisely, hastily, sloppily*)
2. These craftsmen do an excellent job on woodwork. Their tableware is _____ carved. (*sloppily, deftly, concisely*)
3. Robert never takes a day off and always arrives at work on time. She does her job very _____. (*conscientiously, carelessly, erroneously*)
4. I can't accept this application of yours. Be more careful. This is _____ done. (*carelessly, cleverly, concisely*)
5. President George Washington killed many Indians _____ so that he could steal their land. (*conscientiously, precisely, mercilessly*)
6. Some USA journalists _____ peddle CIA propaganda and cover stories. (*clearly, shamelessly, precisely*)
7. Lucy received the highest grade in the class. She answered all of the questions _____. (*sloppily, precisely, correctly*)

HİZ ZARFLARI

quickly	with speed or promptness; in a short time
hastily	in a hurry; speedily; too quickly to be careful
promptly	without delay; in a timely manner; at once
slowly	with little speed; unhurriedly; taking a long time
lethargically	drowsily; without energy; with apathy or dullness
tardily	late; not prompt or on time

quickly/slowly

Tom wanted to get to the football game on time, so he did his work carefully but *quickly*.

Sally was not in a hurry to reach the library, so she walked *slowly* and window-shopped along the way.

hastily/lethargically

When Martha found that her mother was coming to visit in an hour, she *hastily* cleaned the house, not bothering to polish the silver.

The children seemed tired and sleepy as they *lethargically* put their toys away.

promptly/tardily

The two sisters are quite different. Elena always tries to be on time and arrives for class *promptly* at 8:30.

Nelly, however, arrives at about 8:40 and always enters the class *tardily*.

Kimi hız zarfları tümce başında, tümce sonunda ve eylemden önce kullanılabılır.

Quickly he typed the report.

He typed the report **quickly**.

He **quickly** typed the report.

2. ZAMAN ZARFLARI (Adverbs of Time)

Zaman zarfları, işin ne zaman yapıldığını belirterek eylemi niteler. Zaman zarfları genel olarak tümçenin sonunda ya da başında yer alırlar.

	Jack	went fishing	<i>yesterday</i> .
<i>Yesterday</i>	Jack	went fishing	
today	now	after	early
tomorrow	first	before	late
yesterday	then		later
ago	soon		yet
	afterwards		still
			recently

Kesin Zaman Gösterenler: *today, yesterday, two days ago*

Kesin olmayan zaman: *recently, soon, still, immediately*

We finished the report *yesterday*.

We *soon* realized the danger.

She tries to get back *before dark*.

It's starting to get dark *now*.

She finished her tea *first*.

They left *early* to avoid traffic.

The lilacs will be in bud *soon*.

Habit, if not resisted, *soon* becomes necessity. —*Saint Augustine*

Austin, Texas, has *recently* built its citizens a system of bikelanes.

Very few jobs have fallen vacant *recently*.

It is only to the very unfortunate that success comes *early*.

When motorless aircrafts were *first* made, they were all called gliders.

YET & STILL



Yaygın olarak kullanılan iki zaman zarfı YET ve STILL'dır.

YET**1. Olumsuz tümcelerin sonunda ya da NOTtan sonra kullanılır.**

Computer technology has not *yet* reached its peak.

Computer technology has not reached its peak *yet*.

They haven't met him *yet*.

2. Soru tümcelerde kullanılır.

—Have you finished your work *yet*?

—No, not *yet*.

3. TO BE TO yapısında kullanılır.

Cheer up, the worst is *yet* to come. — *Philander Johnson*

STILL

TO BE eyleminden önce, diğer eylemlerden sonra kullanılır.



I am *still* hungry.

She is *still* waiting for you.

Jack *still* walks 10 kilometres a day although he's over ninety.

My grandmother *still* talks of her childhood as if it were yesterday.

Scientists *still* do not know what caused dinosaurs to disappear.

She has lived on the island all her life. She *still* lives there now.

JUST

Just zaman zarfı olarak "çok kısa bir süre önce" anlamında kullanılabilir.

She *just* finished the test.

3. YER ZARFLARI (Adverbs of Place)

*here, there, away, in, out, across, along, back,
below, down, downstairs, nowhere, anywhere,
somewhere, there, up, upstairs.*

They live *here*. We bought our car *here*.

I looked *everywhere*.

John looked *away, up, down, around...*

I'm going *home, out, back, there, nowhere, anywhere..*

Here it is.

His mother came *out* and the boy ran towards her.

Injustice *anywhere* is a threat to justice *everywhere*. —*M. Luther King*



Kimi eski zarflar edebi dilde hâlâ görülebilmektedir.

hither (here)	thither (there)
yonder (over here)	hence (from here)
wither (where)	thence (from there)

4. SIKLIKZARFLARI (Adverbs of Frequency)

Sıklık zarfları, eylemin gösterdiği işin ne kadar sıklıkla yapıldığını gösterir.

daily weekly weekly annually	always continually generally regularly	often frequently usually	sometimes occasionally infrequently	seldom rarely scarcely hardly ever ever never
---------------------------------------	---	--------------------------------	---	---

A SCALE OF FREQUENCY

Aşağıda sıklık zarflarının anlamlarını belirleyen bir tablo verilmektedir.



%	100	<i>always</i>
90	<i>almost always</i>	
80	<i>generally</i> <i>usually</i>	
70	<i>often</i> <i>frequently</i>	
50	<i>as often as not</i>	

40-30-20	10	<i>sometimes</i> <i>at times</i>
	5	<i>occasionally</i> <i>from time to time</i>
	0	<i>rarely</i> <i>seldom</i> <i>hardly ever</i> <i>never</i>



1. Sıklık zarfları *TO BE* eyleminden sonra ve diğer eylemlerden önce yer alırlar.

He is **always** late for work.
Films that draw crowds are **usually** comedies.

He **always** comes to work late.
He **often** goes fishing.
She **always** tells the truth.
Polly **never** watches tragedies.

A joke **never** gains an enemy but **often** loses a friend.

2. Yardımcı eylemlerden sonra kullanılırlar.

We are *sometimes* invited to dinner.
Jack has *never* been to Italy.
They have *never* learned how to apply the rules.

3. Kimi sıklık zarfları tümce başında yer alabilir.

I *sometimes* go to England in the summer.
Sometimes I go to England in the summer.
Sometimes we stay at home and watch television.
Sometimes even to live is an act of courage.

4. *Every day, now and then, now and again, from time to time* gibi zarfların olağan olarak tümce sonunda kullanılırlar. Uurgulama amacıyla tümce başında da kullanılabilirler.

She takes the boat to the mainland *every day*.

5. *Never, seldom, rarely* tümce başında kullanıldığındá tümce devrik olarak kurulur.

Never has she found happiness before!

6. Olumsuz tümcelerde sıklık zarfları *TO BE*'den ve yardımcı eylemlerden sonra kullanılır.

She is always friendly.
She always helps me.

She isn't always friendly.
She doesn't always help me.

EVER

A. Olumsuz tümcelerde kullanılır.

No one ever went broke underestimating the taste of the American public. —H. L. Mencken
Nothing good ever comes of violence. --Martin Luther

B. Sorularda kullanılır.

Do you ever go hunting?
Have you ever had a party given in your honor?

Have you ever seen a live elephant?

Have you ever heard the adage "A penny saved is a penny earned"?



SIKLIK ZARFLARINA DİĞER ÖRNEKLER

<i>constantly</i>	araliksız
<i>continuously</i>	durmaksızın, araliksız
<i>continually</i>	çok sık aralıklarla
<i>intermittently</i>	bir durup bir başlayarak
<i>occasionally</i>	arasıra, nadiren
<i>periodically</i>	belli aralıklarla
<i>regularly</i>	düzenli olarak
<i>sporadically</i>	kestirilemeyen aralıklarla
<i>steadily</i>	düzenli olarak

We didn't see him every day; he only stopped in **occasionally**.

It is hard for the secretary to get much work done because the telephone rings **continuously**. She never gets a minute to herself.

The accountant visits the office once a year; she checks the books **annually**.

The doctor ordered the overweight man to take long walks every day. He needed to exercise **daily**.

The captain went on the deck **regularly** to talk to the passengers. He thought it was important to be available to them at certain times during the day.

The rain showers occurred **sporadically** throughout the day. No one knew when to expect another downpour.

In order to be in top condition a horse needs to be exercised **periodically**, not just when it seems convenient.

The news program is broadcast every Saturday. It can be viewed **weekly** on Channel 6.

ZARFLARIN DİĞER TÜRLERİ

1	Derece Zarfları	Adverbs of Degree
2	Sıra Zarfları	Adverbs of Sequence
3	Vurgulama Zarfları	Adverbs of Emphasis
4	Tümce Niteleyicileri	Conjunctive Adverbs

1. DERECE ZARFLARI (Adverbs of Degree)



Sifatın gösterdiği özelliğin derecesini gösteren zarflardır. En üst dereceden en alt dereceye sıralanma aşağıdaki gibi gösterilebilir.

extremely	very	quite	rather	fairly	slightly
-----------	------	-------	--------	--------	----------

She is **very** energetic.

She is **quite** happy.

The group's concert was **very** impressive.

She doesn't **quite** know what she'll do after university.

The guitarist has a **rather** unusual style.

YAYGIN DERECE ZARFLARI

<i>absolutely</i>	<i>entirely</i>	<i>just</i>	<i>rather</i>	<i>utterly</i>
<i>almost</i>	<i>exceedingly</i>	<i>much</i>	<i>scarcely</i>	<i>very</i>
<i>completely</i>	<i>greatly</i>	<i>nearly</i>	<i>somewhat</i>	<i>wholly</i>
<i>considerably</i>	<i>hardly</i>	<i>partly</i>	<i>thoroughly</i>	
<i>enough</i>	<i>immensely</i>	<i>quite</i>	<i>too</i>	

Aşağıdakiler günlük kullanımında yaygın şekilde derece zarfı olarak kullanılmaktadır.

awfully, dreadfully, horribly, pretty, terribly

The movie was **pretty** bad.

This is **terribly** wrong.

ENOUGH ve TOO derece zarfı olarak kullanılır.

It was **too** cold to swim.
 I am **too** tired to go out tonight.
 She is young **enough** to work hard.

Kimi derece zarfları işin "ne kadar tamam" olduğunu gösterirler:

almost, entirely, completely, nearly, practically, partially, utterly, virtually, essentially, wholly

We *almost* finished the work.
 We have *partially* recovered from the crisis.
 You have *completely* misunderstood my remarks.
 She was *utterly* exhausted.
 They were *practically* hopeless.
 They are *completely* exhausted from the trip.
 She saved *almost* no money last year.
 She saved *practically* no money last year.
 The actress won *practically* all the awards.
 The actress won *almost* all the awards.
 The accident victims escaped *virtually* unharmed.
 The accident victims escaped *essentially* unharmed.
 Jon and Will are doing *essentially* the same experiment.
 Jon and Will are doing *virtually* the same experiment.

scarcely, hardly, barely

Bu sözcükler "hemen hemen hiç", "büyük zorlukla" anımlarına gelmektedir.
Enough ve *any* sözcükleri sık sık bu sözcüklerle birlikte kullanılır.

The child can *scarcely* read.
 John didn't study and *scarcely* passed the test.
 We had *scarcely* enough food to feed the family.
 There was *scarcely* any light in the old tunnel.
 It was snowing so much that we could *hardly* see the road.
 I could *hardly* stand because I was very tired.
 It is *hardly* possible to save money when you are in school.
 I have *barely* any money.
 We had *barely* arrived when the movie began.
 I have *barely* enough money to pay the tuition.
 It is *barely* 11:00. We can't eat lunch yet.

merely =sadece

I didn't break the glass, I *merely* dropped it.
 I wasn't worried about missing the bus. I *merely* walked to school.
 The child can't talk yet. She's *merely* a baby.
 She did not mean to forget you; it was *merely* an oversight.
 The rapidly evolving global media monopoly is *merely* one feature of
 global capitalism.

rather =birazcık, oldukça
 (somewhat, a little bit)

She is *rather* shy.

It is *rather* cloudy today.

Today, British imperialism shows *rather* greater concern for the well-being of its armed forces.

roughly, approximately = aşağı yukarı, takiben, yaklaşık

I have *roughly* one dollar in coins.

The scientists have completed *roughly* two dozen experiments.

Mary wears *roughly* a size ten dress.

The American Army sprayed *roughly* 12 million gallons of chemical agents over 10% of South Vietnam during the Vietnam War.

EXERCISE 551

Doğru seçenekin bulunuz.

1. She was ____ late, but not really absent. (*merely, rather, barely*)
2. I can't leave yet. Work finishes at 5:30 and it is ____ 5:00. (*practically, barely, rather*)
3. We can go home soon. Our work is ____ completed. (*merely, hardly, virtually*)
4. Because of the fire, the house was ____ destroyed. Therefore, they had to rebuild everything. (*partially, completely, barely*)
5. The concert had ____ started when we arrived. We didn't miss much at all. (*almost, hardly, roughly*)
6. Joan was in such a hurry that she ____ ran through the store. (*practically, rather, barely*)
7. We were sitting so far from the speaker that we could ____ hear the talk. (*barely, rather, virtually*)
8. She has so little money that she can ____ afford to buy bread. (*almost, barely, rather*)

DİĞER DERECE ZARFLARI

<i>assuredly</i>	<i>immensely</i>	<i>mildly</i>	<i>somewhat</i>
<i>certainly</i>	<i>increasingly</i>	<i>moderately</i>	<i>tremendously</i>
<i>concisely</i>	<i>laconically</i>	<i>more and more</i>	<i>ultimately</i>
<i>enormously</i>	<i>marginally</i>	<i>positively</i>	<i>urgently</i>

It was his greed that *ultimately* ended the thief's career.

After the earthquake, medical supplies were *urgently* needed.

Taking orders in advance didn't help much; it was only *marginally* useful in marketing the product.

The anti-nuclear movement has grown *tremendously* in the late seventies and early eighties.

As different criteria were added to the selection process, the decision became *more and more* difficult.

Thanks so much for your advice. You've been *enormously* helpful.

Traveling by air is *assuredly* the fastest mode of transportation.

Because of the advance preparations for the storm, the homes in our area were only *mildly* affected.

Even though the newscaster spoke *laconically* on the topic and did not elaborate much, the broadcast was quite informative.

EXERCISE 552

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki derece zarflarının altını çiziniz.

1. For the first half of the concert, the audience was unusually subdued.
2. Fortunately, an extremely lively number perked them up.
3. After intermission, the concert proceeded at a very fast pace.
4. Some of the drum solos were too long.
5. Some of the songs had exceptionally clever lyrics.
6. The singer's interpretations of several old '30s hits were especially rewarding.
7. The light show enhanced the rather bleak stage.
8. The audience went nearly wild with the addition of some very special guests.
9. At the end of the second encore, the band was noticeably tired.
10. The grand finale prompted an unusually long standing ovation.
11. Finally, the extremely satisfied audience filed quietly out of the theater.
12. Most of them expressed very different opinions.
13. Some found the show unusually inventive.
14. However, others felt that the older songs were most satisfying.

2. SIRA ZARFLARI (Adverbs of Sequence)

We do it next. Next, we do it.

First, we wash it. Then, we cook it.

3. VURGULAMA ZARFLARI (Adverbs of Emphasis)



***even, only, especially, exactly, merely, purely,
simply, solely***

She is *only* a child.

You don't *even* listen to me.

Even an idiot can do that.

Even John agreed to come.

We ordered a new computer, *not* a music set.

You shouldn't work, *especially* after you have been ill.

Fear the Greeks, *especially* when they bring gifts. –Proverb

ONLY, önüne geldiği ögeyi vurgular

Only the old man had a pistol in his hand.

The old man **only** had a pistol in his hand.

The old man had **only** a pistol in his hand.

The old man had a pistol **only** in his hand.

The old man had a pistol in his hand **only**.

Only those who are not afraid of thorns can pick flowers.

You can help me *only* with this.

She *only* likes people who like her.

Only yesterday I got a letter from her. (= as recently as)

I have been to India *only* once.

Only recently have scientists begun to understand how to effectively treat depression, one of the most common of mental disorders.

It is the *only* watch I have got. (=one single thing or person)

Only in the last decade, the computer became affordable for individuals.

(= Not until the last decade did the computer become affordable for individuals.)

Production *only* fills a void that it has itself created. – J. K. Galbraith

Only painters and lawyers can change white to black.

Getting angry will *only* aggravate your headache.

If you procrastinate, the task will *only* become more difficult.

An eye for eye *only* ends up making the whole world blind.– Gandhi

EVEN, nitelediği ögeye yakın kullanılır.

Even a child can do that.

Even I cannot do it (so certainly nobody else can).

He'll eat anything - *even* raw potatoes.

He can't *even* write his name.

Even smart people can make silly mistakes.

Einstein showed that *even* matter is a form of energy.

Powered aircraft are noisy *even* in the cabin.

Even today, some European nations have slaves.

When our hatred is violent, it sinks us *even* beneath those we hate.

—François de La Rochefoucauld

The third chapter was bad, but the fourth chapter was *even* worse.

Jack is richer than Tom. But George is *even* richer.

especially, specially

Their car goes *especially* fast.

My dentist is *especially* careful with children.

He is careful, *especially* with children.

They had their car *specially* made.

My dentist was *specially* recommended to me.

I don't like bright colours, *especially* red.

The machine was *specially* designed for a left-handed operator.

†

4. TÜMCE NİTELEYİCİLERİ (Conjunctive Adverbs)

fortunately, unfortunately, luckily, actually obviously, evidently, honestly, certainly

Bu sözcükler tümcenin tamamını niteleyebilirler.

Tümceyi Niteliyor.	Eylemi Niteliyor.
<i>Honestly</i> , he won the election.	He won the election <i>honestly</i> .
<i>Doğrusu</i> , seçimi kazandı.	Seçimi dürüstçe kazandı.
<i>Luckily</i> , he died	He died <i>luckily</i> .
<i>İyi</i> ki öldü.	<i>Sanslı bir şekilde</i> öldü.

SON:	I won the election.
FATHER:	Honestly?

Yukarıdaki konuşmada babanın sorusunun

- A) Gerçekten mi söylüyorsun?
B) Seçimi dürüst bir şekilde mi kazandın?

anımlarına gelebileceğine dikkat ediniz. Bunun nedeni *HONESTLY* zarfinin hem *WIN* eylemini hem de tümcenin tamamını niteleyebilecek bir zarf olmasıdır.

EXERCISE 553

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki koyu dizilmiş zarfların türünü belirlemeye çalışınız.
(*TIME, DEGREE, MANNER*)

1. The USA may attack another country **soon**.
2. The British and Americans **ruthlessly** plundered North America.
3. American imperialism has **thoroughly** corrupted the national government and the media.
4. Britain's Lord Avebury **happily** acts as the PKK's main strategist.
5. Very few journalists do their work **conscientiously**.
6. The war crimes of the US has been **fully** documented in this book.

7. Some Italian ministers **tirelessly** distribute the seeds of terrorism.
 8. The US-led allied forces **deliberately** destroyed Iraq's water supply during the Gulf War.
 9. The USA has **unilaterally** denied the people of Iraq their freedom to live a normal life for years to come.
 10. President Bush seems to be **extremely** pleased with the US atrocities.
 11. The USA U.S. has **wickedly** perverted dozens of foreign elections.
 12. The U.S. Navy's shooting down an Iranian commercial aeroplane and killing 270 civilians was **grossly** immoral.
-
-

EXERCISE 554

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde zarfların hangi öğeleri nitelediklerini bulunuz.

1. The fingerprint is most certainly an aid in verifying the identity of a criminal.
 2. Before 1900, fingerprinting was very rarely used by the police.
 3. As a matter of fact, the use of fingerprinting was almost entirely confined to verifying personal identification.
 4. People used their fingerprints quite often to protect themselves from forgers.
 5. As a means of identification the fingerprint has been fairly consistently used for at least two thousand years.
 6. The walls of caves show quite undeniably that primitive people were also interested in the use of fingerprints.
 7. Fingerprinting has been used much longer than we ordinarily think.
 8. Finally, around 1900, it was established that a fingerprint very clearly distinguishes one individual from all others.
-
-

EXERCISE 555

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde zarfların hangi öğeleri nitelediklerini bulunuz.

1. The snowstorm has completely blocked traffic and has temporarily grounded airplanes.
2. Americans obstinately refuse to recognize the USA war crimes.
3. The CIA has reported to Congress that it typically commits 100,000 crimes per year.
4. The doctor came immediately, but the patient had already recovered.
5. The IMF is like a criminal who dresses elegantly and kills mercilessly.
6. The coach argued violently, but the referee calmly threw him out of the game.
7. February is never a cold month in Mersin.
8. The US reacts angrily to the showing of its war crimes on TV.
9. Today astronomers can accurately chart the course of planets, yet the motions of some celestial bodies are still a mystery.
10. The USA commits war crimes unrestrainedly.

EXERCISE 556

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki zarf öbeklerini bulunuz.

1. The first coffee houses were built in Egypt.
 2. The first English coffee house opened in 1650.
 3. Soon coffee houses were popular beyond belief.
 4. Almost everyone went to the coffee house.
 5. At such a place one learned the latest gossip.
 6. People sat late into the night drinking coffee and talking.
 7. They never shied away from a discussion.
 8. Instead they argued on every occasion.
 9. They were witty in their arguments.
 10. For thirty years Will's Coffee House was often crowded.
 11. The famous writers could often be found at Will's.
 12. Artists of our time also like to come together at certain coffee houses.
-

EXERCISE 557

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde sıfatları nitleyen zarfları bulunuz.

1. The food they served at the ceremony seemed unusually spicy and hot.
2. People who eat at fast foods are extremely foolish about what they eat.
3. The CIA has been committing very serious crimes all over the world.
4. Those conceited people think that they are too good to be our friends.
5. A writer must have an exceptionally good mastery of his mother tongue.
6. Full colour is especially desirable for food and fashion advertising because the color of these products is part of their appeal.
7. What I like most is rather old-fashioned science fiction.
8. Toledo is located in the center of Spain, and strategically it is nearly impregnable.
9. At the end of the meeting, the president was noticeably tired.
10. Any country that works with the IMF is bound to become extremely poor.
11. Industrial pollution has become extremely dangerous in some countries.
12. Young people today are very different from their predecessors in the 60s.
13. The children were unusually silent, so I thought something was wrong.
14. Play is the most natural way for children to express their feelings.

ZARFLARIN TÜMCE İÇİNDEKİ KONUMU

Positions of Adverbs

Zarflar, tümce içinde farklı konumlarda bulunabilirler. Farklı zarf türleri, tümcede farklı konumlara sahiptir. Diğer taraftan zarflar, belli nedenlerle olağan konumları dışında da yer alabilirler.

Solemnly the prime minister addressed the cabinet.

The prime minister **solemnly** addressed the cabinet.

The prime minister addressed the cabinet **solemnly**.

I. TARZ ZARFLARI

Yaygın Konumu	Tümce sonu They advanced toward the enemy slowly .
Farklı Konumu	Vurgulamak için Eylemden önce They slowly advanced toward the enemy. Daha fazla Vurgulamak için tümce başında Slowly they advanced toward the enemy. <i>Hard, fast, well, nicely, badly, poorly</i> sadece tümce sonunda kullanılır.

II. YER ZARFLARI

Yaygın Konumu	Tümce sonu They watch TV at home all day long.
Farklı Konumu	Vurgulamak için tümce başında At home they watch TV all day long.

III. ZAMAN ZARFLARI

Yaygın Konumu	Tümce sonu We saw them yesterday .
Farklı Konumu	Vurgulamak için tümce başında Yesterday we saw them.

IV. SIKLIK ZARFLARI

Yaygın Konumu	Eylemlerden Önce To BE'den Sonra We rarely watch TV. She was never happy. I am certainly sick of your lies.
Farklı Konumu	Vurgulanan siklik zarfi TO BE'den önce She never was happy. I certainly am sick of your lies. Vurgulanan siklik zarfi tümce başında Sometimes we fear the future.



NEVER, Seldom, Rarely tümce önüne geldiğinde tümce devri kurulur.

Never have I said anything to annoy her.
Seldom does silence harm.

V. ÇEŞİTLİ DURUMLAR

Tümcede kip belirteçleri (modals) varsa zarflar farklı yerlerde kullanılabilir.

They could have **easily** arrested the politician.

They could **easily** have arrested the politician.

You must **often** be annoyed.

You **often** must be annoyed.

Kimi tarz zarfları bütün yardımcı eylemlerden sonra kullanılabılır.

The work has been *properly* done.

They will have *completely* combed the area.

Keep this wound bandaged until it has *completely* healed.

Kimi zarflar vurgulama amacıyla olağan yerleri yerine eylemden önce yer alırlar.

She *accidentally* erased all her data.

She *actually* told me she had no intention to help us.

We *deeply* regret the fact that the British support terrorists.

We *really* think that the United States has to do more to insure world peace.

We *now* come to a new period of international cooperation.

The Vietnamese people *deeply* love independence, freedom and peace.

INVERSION WITH ADVERBS



"WELL, THERE GOES
MR. FIXIT."

"AND HERE COMES
MASTER BROKEIT"

Karikatürde Mr. Wilson THERE ve HERE zarflarını COME ve GO eylemleriyle devrik tümcelerde kullanıyor.

There goes Mr. Fixit.

(İşte Bay Tamirci gidiyor.)

Here comes Master Brokeit.

(İşte Bay Bozucu geliyor.)

Dennis, zavallı Mr. Wilson'un pek çok eşyasına zarar vermiş olmalı.

Aşağıdaki tabloda devrik yapıtlarda kullanılan zarfları gösteriyoruz.

no	<i>At no point in my speech did I say such a thing.</i> <i>At no time have I ever thought such a thing.</i> <i>In no way do I want to stop you.</i> <i>In no sense whatever can the word be used to mean that.</i> <i>In no circumstances will I allow you to go there.</i> <i>For no other person would I do this. To no other person would I give this.</i> <i>With no other person would I go there.</i>
hardly	<i>Hardly had she got into the train than it started.</i> <i>At hardly any other place would you find such kindness.</i>
no sooner	<i>No sooner had I found my hat than I lost my coat.</i>

not	<i>Not in a thousand years</i> do you find people with such integrity. <i>Not before he apologizes</i> will I go. <i>Not until he loses all his money</i> , will he stop gambling. <i>Not a fraction</i> would it move. <i>Not a trace</i> did they ever find of her brooch. <i>Not a word</i> would he utter.
not only	<i>Not only</i> is Belgium tolerant of forced labor, <i>but it</i> is also guilty of murder of 10 million Congolese.
nowhere	<i>Nowhere (else)</i> will you see such irresponsibility.
only	<i>Only in the country</i> can one get really fresh vegetables. <i>Only when it rains</i> do you feel cool.
rarely	<i>Rarely</i> has it been so wet.
scarcely	<i>Scarcely</i> had they got back than the phone went.
seldom	<i>Seldom</i> has the US been fair to the Indians and blacks.
never	<i>Never</i> has there been such a thing as equality in the US.
neither	I can't stand noise, and <i>neither</i> can my wife.
so	She is a good writer, and <i>so</i> is her son.

Yön gösteren zarflar da tümce başına gelip devrik tümceler kurabilir.

Out went the light.

Over went the table.

Up goes the price.

Away ran the hare.

Down went McGinty.

In rushed the Marines.

Back came the answer like lightning.

EXERCISE 558

Aşağıdaki tümceleri devrik yapıya çeviriniz.

1. I have never seen such a beautiful horse before.
2. She is not only hardworking but she is also very clever.
3. He had no sooner bought a car than he had a traffic accident.
4. He had scarcely come to our village when his first book got published.
5. One can seldom accomplish such a great deed.
6. She will gain her health only after an operation.
7. She has disappointed me in only one case.
8. A vast expanse of desert lay before us.
9. We should place our trust in God alone.

ZARFLARIN YERİNİ NİTELEDİKLERİ ÖĞELER BELİRLER

Tümcede birden çok eylem soylu sözcüğün olduğunda zarflar yakın oldukları eylemi nitelerler.

She next asked him what happened.	She asked him what happened next.
They soon asked her to visit them.	They asked her to visit them soon.
Watch carefully the things that are marked.	Watch the things that are marked carefully .
Her essay simply needed reshaping.	Her essay needed reshaping simply .

EXERCISE 559

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde koyu dizilmiş sözcüklerin sıfat mı zarf mı olduğunu belirtiniz.

1. I knew that I had seen her **before**.
2. Our star athlete could not have done **better** if he had practiced **daily**.
3. Students were advised to come to the game **early**.
4. "Place your books **here**," said the librarian.
5. "Do not take my advice **lightly**," warned the stranger.
6. Jet planes fly so **rapidly** that whole continents can be crossed in hours.
7. "That was not very **polite**," I responded when he spoke **sarcastically**.
8. If you do very **well** on college entrance tests, you may be able to enter the college of your choice.
9. "This group is too **noisy**," said the teacher to the **unruly** class.
10. Although the U.S. space project is an extremely **costly** one, it probably is quite **valuable**.

EXERCISE 560

Doğru seçenekleri bulunuz.

1. Your hands feel (*cold*) (*coldly*), you must get them warm.
2. A discordant note may not sound (*bad*) (*badly*) to an untrained ear.
3. We have kept the milk cold, but it (*sure*) (*surely*) does smell (*sour*) (*sourly*).
4. The shortest rule is not necessarily the (*easiest*) (*most easily*) learned.
5. I was (*real*) (*really*) sorry to hear that you are leaving.
6. Roses smell (*sweeter*) (*more sweetly*) than any other flowers.
7. The dog barked so (*loud*) (*loudly*) that it frightened the child.
8. Wet and bedraggled as he is, he certainly looks (*sad*) (*sadly*).
9. The new uniforms look (*nice*) (*nicely*), especially on tall people.
10. The orchestra played very (*good*) (*well*) yesterday; it has (*sure*) (*surely*) improved.



ORDER OF ADVERBS

Zarfların Sırası

Kuşkusuz iki ya da üç zarfın birlikte kullanılması nadiren olur. İki ya da daha fazla zarfın birlikte kullanıldıklarında olağan sıralanmaları aşağıda gösterilmektedir.

	MANNER	PLACE	FREQUENCY	TIME	PURPOSE
He swims	briskly	in the pool	every day	at night	to keep in shape
She works	willingly	in the office	every May		to help Jack
She naps		on the sofa	every day	after lunch	

EXERCISE 561

Zarfları doğru sıraya koyarak aşağıdaki tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

1. She arrived (*last week, in London*).
2. They left (*yesterday, late*).
3. He went (*in a hurry, there*).
4. The sun shone (*yesterday, all day, in town*).
5. They studied (*last year, less carefully*).
6. He walked (*quickly, down the road*).
7. It is (*this afternoon, very foggy*).
8. It rained (*last week, in the morning, occasionally*).
9. He was (*this morning, over there*).
10. She hasn't been (*for ages, here*).

EXERCISE 562

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce içinde uygun yerlere koyunuz.

1. I think he is lazy. (*personally*)
2. He wanted to leave the money to your sister. (*originally*)
3. She found the purse again. (*luckily*)
4. They may be on the next train. (*possibly*)
5. It will be autumn again. (*soon*)
6. You could drop in on your way home. (*perhaps*)
7. We have to discuss insect vocabulary. (*next*)
8. They leave before tea. (*generally*)
9. She has been resting after lunch. (*lately*)
10. I had met them before. (*actually*)

EXERCISE 563

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce içinde uygun yerlere koyunuz.

1. Stop making that noise. (*kindly*)
2. I shall have to go there myself. (*now*)
3. There will be no squirrels left at all. (*soon*)
4. She is lucky at cards. (*usually*)
5. They didn't believe me. (*evidently*)
6. She was mistaken. (*possibly*)
7. I would rather not go at all. (*frankly*)
8. Does she use so much make-up? (*always*)
9. Economic imperialism is achieved through international trade. (*evidently*)
10. She had left the address at home. (*unfortunately*)

EXERCISE 564

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce içinde uygun yerlere koyunuz.

1. I agree with you. (*absolutely*)
2. They ruined the evening. (*completely*)
3. He remembered the incident. (*scarcely*)
4. She may go there in a year's time. (*possibly*)
5. They resent her attitude. (*greatly*)
6. They knew what to say. (*hard'ly*)
7. She goes home in the winter term. (*rarely*)
8. He irritated her. (*thoroughly*)
9. He has returned from the country. (*just*)
10. She goes to an aunt in Brighton. (*occasionally*)

EXERCISE 565

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce içinde uygun yerlere koyunuz.

1. I wonder if he is happy. (*sometimes*)
2. They ask how you are. (*continually*)
3. You would like an early answer. (*doubtlessly*)
4. She is to go there next week. (*unlikely*)
5. They disagree over politics. (*often*)
6. They go out in the evenings. (*seldom*)
7. He has lunch in town. (*frequently*)
8. She was at her aunt's when you called. (*most likely*)
9. They fly home every Christmas. (*regularly*)
10. She missed her last train. (*nearly*)

EXERCISE 566

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce içinde uygun yerlere koyunuz.

1. He closed the book. (*unhappily*)
 2. She saw him in the park. (*this morning*)
 3. He drove home (*slowly*)
 4. Drop me a line when you arrive. (*there*)
 5. They went out of the room. (*quickly*)
 6. I hope to see you. (*on Monday*)
 7. There is a lot of work to be done. (*this afternoon*)
 8. They exported all their wine. (*in 1961*)
 9. He handled all their business. (*stupidly*)
 10. They received him. (*coldly*)
-

EXERCISE 567

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce içinde uygun yerlere koyunuz.

1. When did they see each other? (*last*)
 2. I have seen such stupid behaviour. (*before*)
 3. They have not visited us. (*recently*)
 4. She will begin marking the exam papers. (*next week*)
 5. She read the letter. (*sadly*)
 6. He lived in Rome. (*in 1960*)
 7. We are going to buy a new car. (*next month*)
 8. She closed the door. (*quietly*)
 9. They emptied the paint into bowls. (*carefully*)
 10. You have nothing to be afraid of. (*here*)
-

EXERCISE 568

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce içinde uygun yerlere koyunuz.

1. She helped him from the plane. (*gently*)
2. He hid the paper in a drawer. (*quickly*)
3. He asked which horse had won. (*anxiously*)
4. She offered to take them all to dinner. (*generously*)
5. The true horror of war is depicted in the popular media. (*never*)
6. US imperialism has played a counter-revolutionary role on the world arena. (*always*)
7. The bombings of Hiroshima and Nagasaki were directed toward civilian populations. (*entirely*)
8. The US dropped atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. (*in August 1945*)
9. The global power the USA enjoys is immensely costly. (*immensely*)
10. The judicial system in the U.S. is biased against Blacks. (*systematically*)

EXERCISE 569

Ayraç içindeki zarfları tümce başına getirerek tümceleri yeniden yazınız.

1. Brown ran (off) followed by the police.
2. She went there (at no time) alone.
3. The balloon went (up) before Mr. Fogge had time to think.
4. The towel went (into the boxing ring) just in time.
5. He is (not only) married, but he has three children.
6. The thieves ran (out), straight into the arms of the police.
7. Mr. Green walked (in) to announce he had won a car.
8. Fares go (up), the moment we are able to make ends meet.
9. She would have played that kind of trick (on no one else).
10. The swallows come (back) every year just like clockwork.

ZARFLARDA KARŞILAŞTIRMA

Zarflarda karşılaştırma, sıfatlarda olduğu gibi üç derecede olmaktadır.

I.	Eşitlik	(Equality)
II.	Üstünlük	(Comparative)
III.	En üstünlük	(Superlative)

A cheetah can run as *fast* as a tiger.

Walk *faster* if you want to keep up with me.

The student who reads *fastest* will finish first.

With sneakers on, she could move *more quickly* among the patients.

The flowers were the *most beautifully* arranged creations I've ever seen.

KURALLI ZARFLARIN KARŞILAŞTIRMA TABLOSU

	kısa zarflar	uzun zarflar
EQUALITY	early	comfortably
COMPARATIVE	earlier	more comfortably
SUPERLATIVE	earliest	most comfortably

KURAL DIŞI ZARFLARIN KARŞILAŞTIRMA TABLOSU

ADVERB	COMPARATIVE	SUPERLATIVE
well	better	best
badly	worse	worst
much	more	most
-----	less	least
far	farther	farthest
-----	further	furthest

EŞİTLİK DERECESİ

Eşitlik derecesi sıfatlarda olduğu gibi AS AS ve NOT SO ...AS yapılarıyla ifade edilir.

Jack can play the piano as well as her mother (does).

Bill Gates does not work so hard as most honest people (do).

ÜSTÜNLÜK VE EN ÜSTÜNLÜK DERECESİ

Üstünlük ve en üstünlük derecelerinde sıfatlarda olduğu gibi ya -ER, - EST ekleri ya da MORE, MOST sözcükleri kullanılır.

A. -LY ile biten zarflar MORE ve MOST ile kullanılır.

B. Sıfatlarla aynı biçimde sahip olan zarflar -ER, -EST eklerini alırlar.

LESS & LEAST

Zarflarla yapılan karşılaştırmalarda da “daha az” ifadesi için LESS ve LEAST kullanılmaktadır.

She worked less confidently after her accident.

Jack drives the least carefully of all.

He reacted less kindly than yesterday.

ZARF TÜRETME EKLERİ

En yaygın zarf türetme yöntemi sıfatlara -ly ekinin eklenmesidir.

quick	quickly
happy	happily
lucky	luckily
slow	slowly

GOOD-WELL

GOOD sıfatının zarf şekli WELL'dır.

He is a good student.	He studies well.
She is a very good piano player.	She plays the piano very well.
They are good swimmers.	They swim very well.

SİFATLARA EKLENİP ZARF TÜRETN EKLER

-y, -ly	beautifully, bravely, calmly, easily, efficiently, obviously
a-	abroad, along, aloud ,around

ADLARA EKLENİP ZARF TÜRETN EKLER

-y, -ly	daily, formerly, weakly, yearly, leisurely
-ward(s)	backward(s), homeward, northward
a-	aboard, across, aground, ahead, apart, away



Daily, hourly, nightly, weekly, yearly aynı zamanda sıfat ve ad olarak da kullanılabilirler.

SİFATLAR VE ZARFLARLA KULLANILAN ÖNEKLER

un-	unnaturally, unhappily, unwisely, unreasonably, unbelievably
in-	inefficiently, incorrectly, informally, inaccurately, incompetently
im-	imperfectly, immoderately, immorally, impartially, impatiently
dis-	dishonetly, disapprovingly, discontentedly, discourteously
ir-	irregularly, irrefutably, irrelevantly, irreparably, irreversibly

Sıfat ve Zarf Biçimleri Aynı Olan Sözcükler

better	early	fast	hard	late	straight
--------	-------	------	------	------	----------

We were late due to the storm.	Their offer to help us came too late .
It is better be born lucky than rich.	He swims better than we all do.
Hard practice made him a good boxer.	He worked hard all day long.

-LY İLE BITEN SİFATLAR

{-LY} eki sıfatlardan zarf türetmekte yaygın olarak kullanılan bir ektir. {-LY} şeklinde adlardan sıfat türeten bir başka ek daha vardır. SLOWLY sözcüğündeki {-LY} zarf türeten bir ektir çünkü SLOW sıfatına eklenmektedir. FRIENDLY sözcüğündeki {-LY} ise sıfat türeten bir ektir çünkü FRIEND adına eklenmektedir.

<i>brotherly</i>	<i>deadly</i>	<i>homely</i>	<i>lovely</i>	<i>ugly</i>
<i>costly</i>	<i>fatherly</i>	<i>likely</i>	<i>motherly</i>	
<i>cowardly</i>	<i>friendly</i>	<i>lonely</i>	<i>silly</i>	<i>unlikely</i>

She wrote him a *friendly* letter, thanking him for his help.

He has been very *lonely* since his wife died two years ago.

A courageous enemy is better than a *cowardly* friend. —Proverb

The new actress had a very *lovely* voice.

The ring is very *costly* because it is set with precious stones.

Any drug can be *deadly* if taken in large doses

EXERCISE 570

Ayraç içinde verilen uygun ögeyi seçiniz.

- Nothing smells more (*delicious, deliciously*) than freshly baked bread.
- She felt quite (*happy, happily*) about her new job.
- They disappeared as (*sudden, suddenly*) as they had appeared.
- I (*surely, sure*) don't blame them for my misfortunes.

5. Doesn't the butter taste (*rancid, rancidly*) to you?
6. She looked at me (*skeptical, skeptically*) when I told her I knew 10 languages.
7. The child looked (*hopeful, hopefully*) toward his mother, but she merely shook her head.
8. They looked (*hopeful, hopefully*) although they had many problems.
9. I can't know why she left so (*sudden, suddenly*).
10. I can fall asleep as (*easy, easily*) in a factory as in a quiet room.
11. Although her voice sounded quite (*calm, calmly*), I knew that she was (*real, really*) angry.
12. She was never given the chance to work (*regular, regularly*).
13. The work is (*near, nearly*) finished.
14. The servant has been (*false, falsely*) accused of stealing the money.
15. This coffee is (*fresh, freshly*) made. I know that you like (*fresh, freshly*) coffee.

INTENSIFIERS

pekiştiriciler: sıfatları ve zarfları derecelendiren sözcükler

Sıfatları derecelendiren sözcükler zarfların derecelendirilmesinde de kullanılır.

She dances *more* gracefully than her sister.

She dances *far more* gracefully than her sister.

He drank *far too* much coffee.

very	pretty	so	less
quite	mighty	much	least
somewhat	a little	more	enough
rather	a bit	most	too
slightly	far	a lot	

EXERCISE 571

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde varsa pekiştiricileri bularak altlarını çiziniz.

1. Changes in our economy have occurred somewhat rapidly.
2. Cancer research have advanced rather dramatically in the last few years.
3. To our surprise, Mother took the news quite calmly.
4. Usually it seems that each week goes much more rapidly than the week before.

5. The poor, so far, have always and everywhere been far more numerous than the rich.
 6. Most of US money has been spent destructively, waging bloody wars against defenseless nations.
 7. The prancing horses were loudly applauded by the delighted audience.
 8. In 1845 the US Congress annexed 390,000 square miles of Mexican territory. Not surprisingly, Mexico declared war on the US.
 9. The CIA is above the law with quite unlimited power and authority and conducts a reign of terror around the globe.
 10. A moderately hard rain always turns this road into a swamp.
-

EXERCISE 572

Avrupanın Türkiye üzerindeki emellerini açıklayan aşağıdaki parça da koyu dizilmiş zarfların hangi öğeleri nitelediklerini belirleyiniz.

In 1911, Italy and France were in competition over Libya. Fearful that France might attack the Ottoman Empire and seize Libya, the Italians attacked first. They defeated the Ottomans and, through a peace treaty, obtained the Dodacanese Islands and Libya from the Ottomans.

Seeing this as a good idea, the states of Greece, Serbia, Bulgaria, and Montenegro attacked the Ottomans, hoping to gain all of the Ottoman provinces in the north of Greece, Thrace, and the southern European coast of the Black Sea. They (1) **easily** defeated the Ottomans and drove them back, almost to the very edge of Europe. The Second Balkan War erupted (2) **just** two years later (1913), when Greece, Serbia, and Montenegro disapproved of the amount of territory that Bulgaria had annexed. Joined by the Ottomans, these three powers managed to roll back Bulgarian territorial gains. This was the last military victory in Ottoman history. (3) **Interestingly** the Ottoman territories that fell into European hands precipitated a crisis among European powers that would (4) **eventually** lead directly World War I.

As a result of this conflict and the Treaty of Versailles in 1919, the Ottomans lost all their territory in Syria, Palestine, Arabia, and Mesopotamia. The European powers fought each other in Africa and the Middle East by encouraging revolution among the peoples there. The British, for instance, promised Arabs independent states if they revolted against the Ottomans and aided the British. By 1919, the Ottoman Empire was reduced to Turkey only, which extended from the southern European shores of the Black Sea, to Asia Minor in the west, to Iran in the east, and Syria and Iraq, newly created states in 1919, in the south. Ottoman power had (5) **effectively** come to an end. The Russians, torn apart by a revolution in 1917, (6) **never** did annex Istanbul and the Dardanelles; the city is (7) **still** under the control of Turkey.

EXERCISE 573

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde sıfatları niteleyen zarfları bulunuz ve hangi sıfatları niteliklerini belirleyiniz.

1. Kangaroos are extremely fast animals.
2. Kangaroos seem very graceful when they are leaping about.
3. But they look quite awkward when they are still.
4. Their back legs are extremely long.
5. Their front legs are too short to be of much use in moving about.
6. The baby kangaroo, called a "joey," is hardly longer than an inch at birth.
7. It looks thoroughly contented in its mother's pouch.
8. Some kangaroos are unusually small even after they have reached their full growth.
9. One kind is no larger than a rabbit.
10. The great red kangaroo, the largest variety, is surprisingly tall.

**ZARFLARI NASIL TANIYABİLİRİZ?**

Zarfları tanıtmamızı sağlayacak üç öğeden söz edebiliriz.

1.	<i>Tümce içindeki konumları</i>	The skaters put on a <i>very</i> exciting show. Our committee is <i>especially</i> busy at this time of year. It is better to have loved and lost than never to have loved <i>at all</i> .
2.	<i>Cekim ekleri</i>	Motivated students learn <i>faster</i> .
3.	<i>Türetme ekleri</i>	An <i>unusually</i> fast starter, Karen <i>easily</i> won the hurdles event. Gambling addicts <i>gradually</i> ruin their family life. <i>Eventually</i> , they die, homeless and lonely.

EXERCISE 574

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki zarfları bulunuz ve onları tanımıayı sağlayan öğeleri yukarıdaki "Zarfları Nasıl Tanıyalırız" çizelgesine göre (1), (2) ya da (3) ile belirleyiniz. Kimi tümcelerde birden fazla ögenin bulunabileceğine dikkat ediniz.

1. The front door should be carefully locked when you leave the house.
2. I have recently borrowed \$1,000 to pay for my tuition.
3. The new student is frequently absent because of illness.
4. We go to the beach once a week.
5. Seldom had he eaten such delicious dishes.
6. Hardly had I put the phone down when it started ringing.
7. He has always been fond of gardening.
8. She works as hard as we do.
9. They haven't lived here as long as we have.
10. She wanted to do her shopping quickly.
11. The diamond shone brilliantly when placed under a light.
12. She told us hastily what the problem was.
13. Our spinal cords are not perfectly rigid.
14. You must eat absolutely nothing with sugar in it.
15. The problem of unemployment apparently gets more and more serious year by year.



Karikatürdeki tümcede **YET** ne anlamına gelmektedir?

Chapter 56

PRONOUNS

ZAMİRLER (adıllar)



Zamirler adların yerlerine kullanılan sözcüklerdir. Bu özelliğiyle zamirler tümce ve metin oluşturulmasında çok önemli işlevler üstlenmektedirler.

Jack said, "I am tired."

Bu tümceyi dolaylı anlatıma (indirect speech) aktaralım. Şöyledir bir tümce kabul edilemez.

~~Jack said that Jack was tired.~~

Jack adının ikinci kullanımında yerine bir zamir kullanma zorunluluğu doğmaktadır.

Jack said that **he** was tired.
↑ ↑

Bu tür bir zorunluluğun olmadığı durumlarda bile, zamir kullanmadan metin oluşturmak pek mümkün değildir.

Aşağıdaki metin zamirlerin gerekliliğini gösteren başka bir örnektir.

COMPUTERS

Computers have many uses today. *Computers* can solve difficult problems and control complex machines. Scientists use *computers* to solve many problems simultaneously. You can play games with *computers*, and *some computers* can help you learn foreign languages.

Computer sözcüğünün zamir kullanılmadan tekrar edilmesi, metnin birbirinden bağımsız tümcelerden oluştuğunu izlenimini vermektedir. Zamir kullanımı bu kusuru giderecektir.

Computers have many uses today. **They** can solve difficult problems and control complex machines. Scientists use **them** to solve many problems simultaneously. You can play games with **them**, and some of **them** can help you learn foreign languages.

Bir metinde zamirlerin hangi adların yerine kullanıldığını anlamadan metnin anlamını çkarabilmek mümkün olamaz.

ZAMİRLERİN YAYGIN İŞLEVLERİ



1	Özne	<i>She</i> is a talented artist.
2	Dolaysız nesne	We saw <i>them</i> downtown.
3	Dolaylı nesne	We sent <i>them</i> a new computer.
4	BE tümleci	That's <i>us</i> .
5	İlgeç tümleci	After <i>that</i> , she said nothing.
6	Kısıtlayıcı	The students <i>all</i> attended the garden party.

ALL, BOTH, EACH zamirleri kısıtlayıcı (restrictive) kullanımın yaygın zamirleridir.

They were *both* seen at the scene of the crime.

You may *each* have a piece of candy.

The sailors were *all* sick.

PRONOUN MISTAKES CAN KILL YOU!

Aşağıdaki olayda, çocuğa kazık (stake) çakmayı öğretmeye çalışan ustabaşının (foreman) hayatını kaybetmesine neden olan yanlışlığı açıklayabilir misiniz?

A foreman was teaching a boy how to drive a stake.

"I'll hold the stake," he said, "and when I nod my head,
you hit squarely with the sledge hammer."

The boy did.

The foreman left a widow and three children.



ADLARIN YERİNE KULLANILMAKTAN ÖTE

Zamirler sadece adların değil, tümce öğelerinin de yerine kullanılabilirler.

Aşağıdaki parçayı dikkatle okuyunuz. Koyu dizilen zamirlerin hangi adlar ya da tümce öğeleri yerine kullanıldığını bulmaya çalışınız.

Learning a second language can be frustrating, yet **it**(1) can also be one of the most rewarding experiences of a lifetime. A second language may be important for your education or profession. But beyond **this** (2), **it** (3) is a pass key that allows you to explore the world and **its** (4) people in a way that no monolingual person can.

- 1: *it* =learning a second language
- 2: *this*=that a second language may be important for your education
- 3: *it*=a second language
- 4: *its*= the world's

Aşağıdaki parçayı dikkatle okuyunuz. Koyu dizilen zamirlerin hangi adlar ya da tümce öğeleri yerine kullanıldığını gösteriyoruz.

Several scientists recently set out to find a dinosaur in the African jungle. **They** (1) became convinced of **its** (2) existence after hearing natives of the Congo region describe a forty-foot beast resembling a brontosaurus, one of the dinosaurs that supposedly became extinct sixty million years ago. The natives call the creature mokele-mbembe. **They** (3) say that **it** (4) lives most of the time in the water, coming to the shore at down and dusk to feed on plants. Usually a vegetarian, **it** (5) may turn vicious if provoked. One villager claims that **his** (6) son was killed by the creature.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1: <i>they</i> = several scientists | 4: <i>it</i> = the creature |
| 2: <i>its</i> = dinasour's | 5: <i>it</i> = the creature |
| 3: <i>they</i> = the natives | 6: <i>his</i> = one villager's |

EXERCISE 575

Aşağıdaki parçayı dikkatle okuyunuz. Koyu dizilen zamirlerin hangi adlar ya da tümce öğeleri yerine kullanıldığıını bulmaya çalışınız.

Have you ever wondered about the difference between cocoa and chocolate? **They** (1) both come from the cacao bean. **They** (2) resemble each other in appearance. **They** (3) taste somewhat alike, although nearly everyone can taste the difference. Chocolate is more expensive than cocoa, however, because **it** (4) has a richer flavor. There must be differences in the way **they** (5) are produced. **It** (6) would be interesting to know just what makes one better and costlier than the other.

Cacao beans, the chief ingredient of chocolate or cocoa, have to be treated very carefully before **they** (7) are ready for the factory. **They** (8) develop in pods on cacao trees, which grow only in tropical sections of South America or in the West Indies. The beans are really the cocoa seeds. **They** (9) are white when **they** (10) are scooped out of the pods, but **they** (11) turn brown almost at once. **They** (12) are spread out in heaps on the ground, and the moist pulp on their skins is allowed to ferment for a week under a blanket of leaves. This treatment develops their flavor. Then the beans are dried in the sun. When **they** (13) are properly fermented and dried, they are sent on to be converted into chocolate or cocoa.

cocoa: a powder made from cacao seeds after they have been fermented, roasted, shelled, ground, and freed of most of their fat

ZAMIRLERİN TÜRLERİ



1	Kişi Zamirleri	Personal Pronouns
2	Belgisiz Zamirler	Indefinite Pronouns
3	İşaret Zamirleri	Demonstrative Pronouns
4	Dönen Zamirler	Reflexive Pronouns
5	Soru Zamirleri	Interrogative Pronouns
6	Ülestirmeye Zamirleri	Distributive Pronouns
7	İlgili Zamirleri	Relative Pronouns
8	Bağlantı Zamirleri	Coherence Pronouns
9	Kalıp Tamamlayıcı Zamir	The Slot-filling Pronoun

1 Kişi Zamirleri / Personal Pronouns

Kişi zamirleri, belli bir kişiye ya da şeye gönderme yapan zamirlerdir. Tümcede özne ve nesne olmalarına göre değişiklik gösterirler. Üçüncü tekil kişi zamirleri cinsiyet de gösterirler.

Subject	Object	Possessive Adjective	Possessive Pronoun	Reflexive Pronoun
I	me	my	mine	myself
you	you	your	yours	yourself
he	him	his	his	himself
she	her	her	hers	herself
it	it	its	-----	itself
we	us	our	ours	ourselves
you	you	your	yours	yourselves
they	them	their	theirs	themselves

She was glad to find the bus pass in the bottom of the green knapsack.
When he was a young man, he earned her living as a coal miner.

After many years, they returned to their homeland.

We will meet at the library at 3:30 p.m.

It is on the counter.

Are you the delegates from Kenya?

EXERCISE 576

Aşağıda koyu diziilmiş olan zamirlerin hangi adlara gönderme yaptığını gösteriniz.

The abolitionists in the 1830s and 1840s sought to emancipate the slaves. Unfortunately, many Americans disagreed with them.
(them —> the abolitionists)

1. The ideas of the abolitionists encountered resistance not only in the South but in the North as well. They were not much more popular with people who did not own slaves than with slave owners.
2. Charles Stuart tried to rid America of slavery. He was driven out of Plainfield, Connecticut, by farmers with whips.
3. Elijah Lovejoy published a newspaper in Illinois. He was murdered because he persisted in printing abolitionist ideas in his paper.
4. The abolitionists gained followers. They made converts of people such as Cassius M. Clay, the nephew of Henry Clay.
5. The abolitionists tended to be religious people. They depended greatly on Puritan ethics.
6. Most Americans considered the abolitionists as somewhat crazy. They thought that they would give up abolitionism sooner or later.
7. John Greenleaf Whittier joined the movement of abolitionism. He wrote poetry to support the abolitionist cause.

8. James Russell Lowell was another literary member. **He** used satire to communicate the ideas of the movement.
9. One of the principal abolitionists was Theodore Dwight Weld. **He** studied slavery at first hand and closely observed the social conditions of the South.
10. The abolitionists gained the support of a Southerner, James G. Birney. **He** worked with them.
11. Birney became the first abolitionist candidate for president. However, **he** gained only 3,000 votes in 1840.
12. Weld promoted the movement at Oberlin College. **It** became the first college in the United States to admit women and black men.



EXERCISE 577

Ayraç içinde verilenlerden doğrusunu seçiniz.

1. It was (*he, him*) who solved the puzzle.
2. My cat hurt (*it's, its*) feet.
3. Just between you and (*me, I*), I am planning to retire soon.
4. Mother asked Tom and (*me, I*) to wash the dishes.
5. Terry and (*me, I*) will have to do everything since nobody else is here.
6. (*Its, It's*) never too late to learn new things.
7. He (*him, himself*) did all the painting.
8. I will never forgive (*me, myself*) for this error.
9. I told him to keep the news to (*him, himself, myself*).
10. Terry is the one (*who, whom*) received the award.
11. We do not know (*who's, whose*) house this is.
12. We will hire (*whoever, whomever*) has the qualifications for the job.
13. (*Whoever, whomever*) arrives first will be given the free tickets.
14. Most of (*we, us*) are pleased with the new equipment.
15. Somebody wants you to call (*him, them*); this is his telephone number.
16. Don't tell me about your problems. I have got enough of (*me, my own*).
17. Is that man a friend of (*your, yours, you*)?

18. Information is important because (*it, they*) help(s) us make decisions.
19. Newspapers may provide lots of details about a particular issue, but (*it, they*) can be read only by literate people.
20. Thanks to the media, people now have access to information. But can (*it, they*) use (*it, them*) properly?



THAT, pronoun olarak ilginç bir şekilde kullanılıyor.

That which is everybody's business is nobody's business. –Izaak Walton (1593-1683)

That which we call sin in others is experiment for us. –Ralph Waldo Emerson



REPORT CARD: Karne; STRAIGHT A'S: Baştan aşağı pekiyi

Feminizmden Dilbilgisine

<i>he or she</i>
<i>his or her</i>
<i>him or her</i>

İngilizce'nin temel eğilimi cinsiyeti belli olmayan üçüncü tekil kişiler için erkekler için kullanılan *he, him, his* sözcüklerini kullanmaktadır.

A teacher should always be tolerant. He should know that learning is never easy.

Feminizm İngilizce'nin bu genel eğilimini "erkek-egemen" bulduğu için günümüz İngilizesinde "he or she" kullanımı yaygınlaşmıştır.

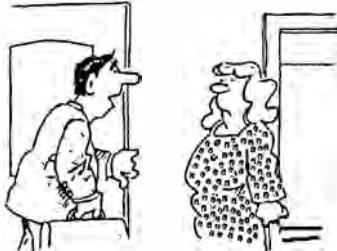
A teacher should always be tolerant. He or she should know that learning is never easy.

We live in a society which tends to measure a person's worth by how much money he or she has.

2. Belgisiz Zamirler / Indefinite Pronouns

Belgisiz zamirler, yerine geçikleri adın açıkça belirli olmadığı zamirlerdir. Tabloda gösterilen -ONE, -BODY ve -THING zamirlerinin bir de ELSE şekilleri vardır: *someone else, anyone else, anything else*.

	-ONE	-BODY	-THING
one	someone	somebody	something
ones	anyone	anybody	anything
	everyone	everybody	everything
	no one	nobody	nothing



"I can't smell anything burning. Are we eating out tonight?"

Many were invited to the lunch, but only twelve showed up.

The office had been searched, and **everything** was thrown onto the floor.

We donated **everything** we found in the attic to the woman's shelter garage sale.

Although they looked everywhere for extra copies of the magazine, they found **none**.

Give a registration package to **each**.

Someone won the 400-metre race.



no one vs. none

No one sadece kişileri gösterir. **None** miktar ifade etmekte de kullanılır.

No one helped me.

None of my friends helped me.

We needed some butter, but there was none left.

None can comprehend eternity but the eternal God.

***iNSAN, BİRİSİ, HERKES** anlamında kullanılabilen zamirler:*

we	We all like a good story .
they	They say that air pollution is a serious threat. It is said that air pollution is a serious threat.
you	You have to work hard to be successful.
one	One should eat to live, not live to eat.
everyone	Everyone can ask a question .
everybody	Everybody wants to live in comfort.
anyone	Anyone can make mistakes.

1. **YOU** yaygın bir kullanıma sahiptir.
You don't see many tourists around here.
You can't do much without money.
2. **ONE** zamiri "you" ya göre daha resmidir.
One can't do much without money.
3. **WE** zamiri kullanımında konuşmacı kendisini söz konusu kişi-ler arasında görmektedir.
In Turkey we like football.
4. **THEY** zamiri iki işlevde sahiptir.
 - a. *Bizim dışımızdaki insanlar*
In England they have small houses.
 - b. *Tanımlanmamış yetkililer*
They are going to build a new bridge.
They're building a new office block.
They ought to do something about all this pollution .
They say he's a good doctor.

MİKTAR İFADE EDEN BELGİSİZ ZAMİRLER

Bu sözcükler miktar göstermektedirler. NONE dışında bu sözcüklerin hepsi *determiner* olarak da kullanılabilirmektedir.

all	each	both	one	many	(a) few (a) little a lot plenty
any	either	several	another	much	
enough	neither		the other	more	
half	none		others	less	
some				most	

a lot	We have learned <i>a lot</i> from our neighbour There is quite <i>a lot</i> to tell about American imperialism.— <i>N. Chomsky</i>
all	<i>All</i> are not thieves that dogs bark at. <i>All that we have is yours.</i>
another	One may prefer mountains. <i>Another</i> may prefer the sea. Still <i>another</i> may prefer noisy streets.
any	Discuss your ideas with your friends, if you have <i>any</i> .
enough	I have <i>enough</i> on my mind. I don't want any more problems. Nothing will satisfy those for whom <i>enough</i> is not enough.
both	There are two cats in the garden. <i>Both of the cats are white.</i> <i>Both of them are white.</i> <i>The cats both are white.</i> <i>Both are white.</i>

each	They have two cars <i>each</i> . <i>Each</i> of them has two cars. These apples are ten cents <i>each</i> .
either	<i>Either</i> of us has the right to say that. Which one do I want? — <i>Either</i> is fine.
(a) few	Few of the travellers reached the peak.
half	<i>Half</i> the men survived the shipwreck. Even <i>half</i> the universe is not enough for the Americans; they want the other <i>half</i> , too.
less	As I know more of mankind, I expect <i>less</i> of them. — <i>Samuel Johnson</i>
(a) little	We spent only <i>a little</i> of the money.
many	<i>Many</i> receive advice, only the wise profit from it. — <i>Publilius Syrus</i>
more	If you like our coffee, you can have <i>more</i> .
most	He spent <i>most</i> of his time in the library.
much	<i>Much</i> of what you say is true. In the second half of the twentieth century the United Kingdom lost <i>much</i> of her prestige.
neither	Between two evils, choose <i>neither</i> ; between two goods, choose both. — <i>Tryon Edwards</i>
	If you run after two hares, you will catch <i>neither</i> . — <i>Proverb</i>
none	None of these suggestions is very helpful. We must remember that <i>none</i> of us is infallible. <i>None</i> preaches better than the ant, and she says nothing. — <i>Benjamin Franklin</i>
	Their country has plenty of oil, while ours has <i>none</i> .
plenty	There is no shortage of money. We have got <i>plenty</i> .
some	25% of the oil was bad. [Some of the oil was bad.] The burglar stole 25% of the money. (The burglar stole some of the money.)
	Some men rob you with a gun; <i>some</i> , with a fountain pen. — <i>W. Guthrie</i>
one	<i>One</i> cannot make an omelet without breaking eggs.
ones	Supernatural ideas should give way to technological ones.
other	He held the book in one hand and the apple in the other.
others	Some books are to be tasted; others swallowed; and some to be chewed and digested. — <i>Francis Bacon</i>
several	If you need any diskettes, there are <i>several</i> in the box.
the other	One half of the world cannot understand the pleasures of the other. — <i>Jane Austen</i>

3. İşaret Zamirleri/ Demonstrative Pronouns



**this those
that those**

İşaret zamirleri bir şeyi ya da kimseyi işaret etmekte kullanılır. *This* ve *these* yakın olanları, *that* ve *those* da uzakta olanları işaret eder.

"This is the key to my piggy bank."

This is the end of our story.

These are what we have been looking for.



Karşılaştırma yapılarında sadece *THAT* ve *THOSE* kullanılabilir.

Average wages in the third world are 70 times lower than *those* of their western colleagues.

His car is much older than *that* of mine.

The problems of most developed countries are not as discouraging as *those* of the underdeveloped countries.

The furniture we produce is as good as *that* produced anywhere in the world.

My income is less than *that* of my wife.

Today's books are not as good as *those* of a generation ago.

That ve *those*, *the*'nın vurgulama gösteren bir biçim gibi kullanılabilir.

Those (=the) people that pollute the environment should be severely punished.

A sidewalk is *that (=the)* part of the street on which a pedestrian must be safe.

This ve *that* bağlantı zamirleri olarak bir tümceyi işaret etmek üzere kullanılabilir. *These* ve *those* bu şekilde kullanılamaz.

Inflation is still on the increase. This makes life difficult.

Inflation is still on the increase. That does not bother some people.



SUCH belli durumlarda işaret zamiri gibi kullanılır görünülmektedir.
Such was the end of a wealthy family; all the members died in poverty.

If such was his intention, he did not say anything about it.



This, that, these ve those aynı zamanda işaret sıfatı olarak da kullanılmaktadır.

This book is mine.

Those tapes are expensive.



SUCH da işaret sıfatı gibi kullanılabilir.

Such men as these cannot be trusted.

Men such as these cannot be trusted.



4. DÖNÜŞLÜ ZAMİRLER / Reflexive (Reciprocal) and Intensive Pronouns



Dönüştülü zamirler, kişi zamirlerine -SELF ve -SELVES ekleri getirilerek oluşturulmuştur.

myself	ourselves
yourself	yourselves
himself	themselves
herself	
oneself	
itself	

1	Özne vurgulama (intensive)	I <i>myself</i> will repair your computer. I will repair your computer <i>myself</i> .
2	Nesne vurgulama (intensive)	I spoke to the president <i>himself</i> .
3	Dolaysız nesne (Reflexive)	She blamed <i>herself</i> for the failure. She can look after <i>herself</i> .
4	Dolaylı nesne (Reflexive)	Let her speak for <i>herself</i> .
5	İlgeç tümleci (Reflexive)	You should depend on <i>yourself</i> rather than on us. He is angry with <i>himself</i> for doing such a thing.

- A. Öznenin yaptığı işten yine öznenin etkilendiğini gösterirler. (Reflexive)
 She blamed **herself** for the accident.
 He was so old and sick that he couldn't dress **himself**.
 I bought **myself** a good watch.
 We should depend on **ourselves**, not on others.
 Diabetics give **themselves** insulin shots several times a day.
 After the party, I asked **myself** why I had faxed invitations to everyone in my office building.
 Richard usually remembered to send a copy of his e-mail to **himself**.
- B. Tümcede bir ögenin vurgulanmasını sağlarlar. (Intensive)
Bu kullanımda vurgulama iki ayrı şekilde olmaktadır.
1. * *İşi yapan ya da etkilenen kimse vurgulanmaktadır.* Aşağıdaki karikatürde konuşmacı, konunun kendisi olduğunu vurgulamaktadır.

Q&A

?



"I am a stranger here myself."

- The Prime Minister **himself** aid that he would lower taxes.
 The Dean often does the photocopying **herself** so that the secretaries can do more important work.
 Osama Bin Laden **himself** was trained in terror tactics by the CIA to fight Soviet forces in Afghanistan.
 They **themselves** promised to come to the party even though they had a final exam at the same time.
 My mother **herself** could not have cooked a better dish. (Even my mother could not have cooked a better dish.)
 Bill Gates **himself** could not have created a better software. (Bill Gates could not have created a better software himself.)
2. Öznenin gösterilen işi kendi başına, başkasından yardım almaksızın yaptığı vurgulanmaktadır. Bu kullanımda *BY* ilgeci de kullanılabilir. Karikatürdeki çocuk cips paketini kendi başına açtığını söylemektedir.

Although the landlord promised to paint the apartment, we ended up doing it *ourselves*.



"Mommy! I opened the potato chips by myself!"

DÖNÜŞLÜ ZAMIRLERİN TÜMCE İÇİNDEKİ YERİ

1. Nesne olarak kullanılan dönüşlü zamirler nesnelerle aynı konumda kullanılır.

The boy hurt *his sister*.

The boy hurt himself.

2. Vurgulama gösteren dönüşlü zamirler vurguladıkları adın arkasında ya da tümce sonunda kullanılabilir.

I myself dislike such film.

Jack saw the president himself.

We cleaned the whole house all by *ourselves*.



Günlük kullanımda vurgulama amacıyla yukarıdaki kullanımların dışında da dönüşlü zamirler kullanılmaktadır.

This is strictly between ourselves = (us).

Did anyone know this beside yourself = (you)?

A teacher like myself (=me) is always busy.

My wife and myself (=I) hate late horror movies.

EXERCISE 578

Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları uygun dönüşlü zamirlerle doldurunuz ve zamirin "reflexive" mi yoksa "intensive" mi olduğuna karar veriniz.

She made *herself* a dress. (**reflexive**)

She *herself* had nothing to do with the robbery. (**intensive**)

1. He's very selfish; he thinks only about _____.
2. The report was written by the department head _____.
3. They are always quarreling among _____.
4. He's telling a story about _____.
5. The victims _____ can't explain how the accident happened.
6. It's time I bought _____ a new car.

7. The children washed and dressed _____ quickly.
8. Mrs. Mason _____ told me I could use her computer.
9. They are constantly talking about _____.
10. He's angry with _____ because he has made a terrible mistake.
11. We _____ must do the work.
12. They built _____ a beautiful house.
13. You should always depend on _____ rather than on someone else.
14. God helps those who help _____.
15. The governor _____ cannot help the condemned man.
16. We must now devote _____ wholeheartedly to the task at hand.
17. My friend said she _____ heard the baby talking.
18. Albert Schweitzer dedicated _____ to caring for the sick in Africa.
19. You _____ would not care to be put into such an unpleasant situation.



Irak'ı işgal eden ABD ve İngiltere birbirlerine ilİfat ediyorlar. İngiltere, "Çok kötüsün," diye ilİfat ediyor. USA da, İngiltere'ye "Eh, sen de fena sayılmazsin," diyor.

20. Many people think he's a great man. I once thought so _____, but I don't any more.
21. I kept telling _____ that it really didn't matter.
22. Lucy stared at _____ in the mirror with obvious satisfaction.
23. Their unexpected success at the polls surprised the candidates _____.
24. The robbers _____ could hardly have expected such a thing to happen.
25. The party members _____ don't believe that their leaders are honest.
26. She seems to like to go walking by _____.
27. You shouldn't leave that little child all by _____ in the house!
28. The President _____ gave instructions on what to serve for the state dinner.
29. The lunch _____ was excellent, but I wasn't very hungry.
30. There's an old saying: "See _____ as others see you!"



behave oneself= saygılı davranışmak

enjoy oneself= hoş vakit geçirmek

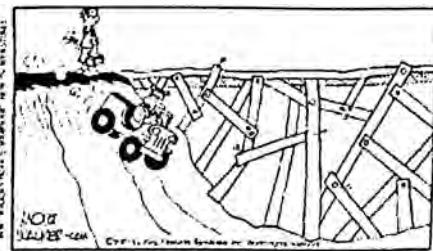
be beside oneself= kendini kaybetmek

You'd better behave *yourself!* (Terbiyeli ol.)

Did both of you enjoy *yourselves* at the show?

We always enjoy *ourselves* in the park.

She was beside *herself* with rage when she read the letter.



5. Soru Zamirleri /Interrogative Pronouns

Soru zamirleri özne ya da nesneyi sorarlar.

who	Özne /nesne	Who stole your money? Who are you waiting for?
whom	nesne	Whom did you visit yesterday?
what	özne/nesne	What frightens people most? What does he want?
whoever	özne	Whoever told you to do this?
whomever	nesne	Whomever have you elected president?
whatever	özne	Whatever made you say such a thing?
whichever	özne/nesne	Whichever is from my uncle? Whichever have they bought?

☞ WHICH ve WHOSE soru sıfatı olmakla birlikte zamir olarak kullanılabilir.

Which (book) did you read?

Whose (book) did you borrow?

☞ Soru sözcüklerinden HOW hiçbir zaman zamir olarak kullanılmaz.

☞ -ever'lı yapılar iki tümceyi bağlamak için de kullanılabilir.

Whoever asks for it, don't give it.

Whatever he said, we were not.

Whatever he does, he does well.

☞ Whatever ve whatsoever olumsuz tümcelerde vurgulamayı güçlendirmek için kullanılır.

I have no money whatever/whichever.

He doesn't understand any Turkish whatever/whichever.

☞ Whichever daha çok determiner olarak kullanılır. Kimi durumlarda WHICH soru sözcüğünün vurgulanmış şekli olarak kullanılmaktadır.

These two books are both boring death. Whichever would you like to read?

6. Üleştirmeye Zamirleri/Distributive Pronouns

each
either
neither

There were three boys, and each did something.
You should give each of the students a book.
I have got two books, but neither of them is good.

7. İlgi Zamirleri /Relative Pronouns

Bu zamirler Relative (Adjective) Clause yapımında kullanılmaktadır. Örneklerle göstereлим.

WHO	I have got a friend who knows Chinese.
WHOM	Everybody needs a friend who(m) he can trust. I don't know whom he is working for. We have here several friends, one of whom is an artist.
THAT	The dog that ate my hamburger was yours. The fish that I caught was very big. She is the best chess player that I have ever seen.
WHICH	Cigarettes are killers which travel in packs. The last book which he wrote made him famous. She came an hour late, which made her boss furious. The book the first chapter of which he wrote was never finished.
WHOSE	She met a young man whose hobby was to collect rare stamps. The child whose family was panic-stricken was seriously ill.

The candidate *who* wins the greatest popular vote is not always elected.
In a time of crisis, the manager asks the workers *whom* she believes to be the most efficient to arrive an hour earlier than usual.

The crate *which* was left in the corridor has now been moved into the storage closet.

8. Bağlantı zamirleri



THIS ve THAT zamirleri, kimi zaman bir adım yerine değil de bir fikri ya da yargıyı işaret edecek şekilde kullanılabilirler.

THIS ve **THAT** zamirleri, kimi zaman bir adın yerine değil de bir fikri ya da yargıyı işaret edecek şekilde kullanılabilirler.

Her husband forgot her birthday. This made her furious.

Preventive measures had been taken. This did not prevent the disaster.

He drives carelessly. I don't like that.

9. Kalıp Tamamlayıcı Zamirler / The Slot-filling IT ve THERE

Slot-filling IT, bir adın değil, tümcede bir ögenin yerine geçmektedir. İlgili bölümde ayrıntılarıyla incelenmektedir. Burada bir özet sunuyoruz.

- İklim, zaman, mesafe ifadelerinde olmayan özne yerine kullanılır. Örneğin *Kar yağıyor* ifadesinde *snow* özne olarak kullanılamayacağından yerini IT alır.

İklim, hava	It is snowing. It is very cold today.
Zaman	It is 8 o'clock. It is May 14, 2001.
Mesafe	It is about fifty kilometers from here to the picnic area.

Uzun özneler tümce gerisine çekilince boş kalan konumu Slot-filling IT doldurur.

To be brave from a safe distance is easy.

?

is easy

to be brave from a safe distance

IT

is easy

to be brave from a safe distance

That smoking is harmful is obvious.	It is obvious that smoking is harmful.
That governments do not ban smoking is surprising.	It is surprising that governments do not ban smoking.
To learn English is enjoyable.	It is enjoyable to learn English.
To make mistakes is easy.	It is easy to make mistakes.

To seek to reduce international tension will be our principal purpose	<i>It will be our principal purpose to seek to reduce international tension.</i>
To hear that his father had died unexpectedly shocked Paul.	<i>It shocked Paul to hear that his father had died unexpectedly.</i>
Crying over spilt milk is no use.	<i>It is no use crying over spilt milk.</i>
Having to make new friends again is a drag.	<i>It is a drag having to make new friends again.</i>
What doctors can do these days is unbelievable.	<i>It is unbelievable what doctors can do these days.</i>
Talking about going on a holiday when you are penniless is silly.	<i>It is silly talking about going on a holiday when you are penniless.</i>
I find doing all this work hard.	<i>I find it hard to do all this work.</i>

Cleft Sentences with the Slot-filling *IT*

She was chosen beauty queen twenty years ago.

It was twenty years ago that she was chosen beauty queen.

It was her that was chosen beauty queen twenty years ago.

SEEM and APPEAR with the Slot-filling *IT*

It seems that we have no money left.

It appears that she is capable of doing the job.

The Slot-filling *IT* with **SAY, BELIEVE, KNOW, THINK in the passive voice**

Doctors believe that smoking is harmful.

It is believed that smoking is harmful.

The Slot-filling *THERE*

THERE belirli yapılarda özne boşluğun dolduracak şekilde de kullanılırmaktadır.

1. Yer ifadelerinde

There is nobody in the living room,

There is nothing here.

2. Varrık gösteren ifadelerde

There was once a good king.

There are several reasons for his living in a small town.

There is no such thing as an honest thief.

There are three reasons for rejecting their first proposal.

There are three kinds of drivers.

3. -ING öbekleriyle

There is a bird singing in the tree.

There is a sale going on at the moment.

4. *Appear, come, go, happen, live, remain, seem* gibi eylemlerle

Once upon a time there lived a wicked king.

There seems to be a certain reason for his failure.

There comes a time in a man's life when he chooses between two evils.

There goes our new friend.

-EVER ZAMIRLERİ

whoever, whomever, whatever, whichever, whatsoever

-EVER zamirleri, *no matter QW* ve *the person who/the thing which* yapıları yerine kullanılarak vurgulama gösterirler.

☞ (*) işaretli tümcelerde **-ever** sözcüklerinin zamir olarak kullanılmadıklarına dikkat ediniz.

whatever	Some Americans defend whatever President Bush and corrupted politicians do. <i>Whatever you do, you can't make me buy a second-hand computer.</i> <i>Whatever made you insult that man?</i> <i>Whatever is begun in anger ends in shame. —B. Franklin</i> <i>We've given her everything she asked for; whatever else can she want?</i> <i>Whatever suggestions we make, they don't take us seriously.*</i> <i>He doesn't understand any English whatever (or whatsoever).*= He doesn't understand English at all.</i>
whoever	<i>Whoever told you to do such a thing?</i> <i>Whoever broke the window will have to replace it.</i>
whomever	<i>You may invite whomever you like to the party.</i> <i>Whomever we nominate is likely to be elected.</i>
whichever	<i>I will read whichever manuscript arrives first.*</i> <i>Buy whichever you like.</i>
whatsoever	<i>He had no help whatsoever; he did it all by himself.*</i> <i>Due to colonialism, Africans still have no control whatsoever in any shape over their countries.</i>

EXERCISE 579

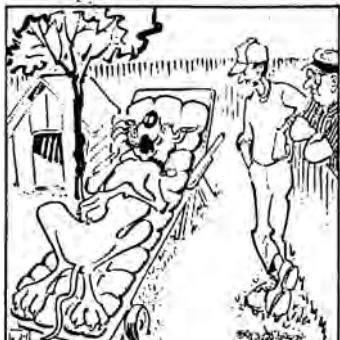
Aşağıdaki tümcelerdeki boşlukları **whoever, whomever, whatever, or whichever** kullanarak doldurunuz.

- _____ gave you permission to leave the office early?
- He will borrow money from _____ is willing to lend it to him.
- _____ happened to those nice people who used to live next door?
- Poor nations are trying to earn more by exporting _____ they have at hand.
- _____ loves danger will perish by it.
- You are welcome, _____ you are, _____ you are. —Mevlana
- _____ is its pluses and minuses, colonialism is a dictatorial regime.
- This is my motto: I like _____ likes me. _____ I like likes me.
- Mr. Jordan is free to offer job assistance to _____ he chooses

10. ____ controls the media rules the nation.
11. The US should allow people to vote ____ the color of their skin.
12. ____ marries her will be a lucky man.
13. Let me have your answer this evening, either personally or by letter, ____ you like best.
14. They lived without working. They did this by begging and stealing, ____ came handy in the time of need.
15. They did ____ they could to aid the accident victims.

USING PRONOUNS CLEARLY

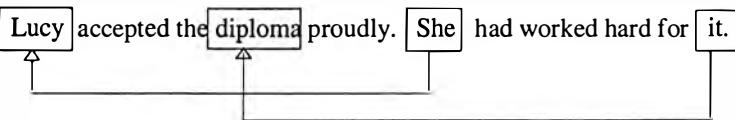
Zamirlerin Doğru Kullanımı



"What I wonder is who it is
he talks to."

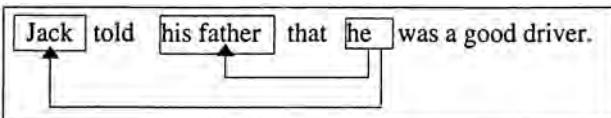
IT zamirinin hangi adın yerine kullanıldığını söyleyebilir misiniz?

Zamirlerin, adların yerine geçen sözcükler olduğunu biliyoruz. Aşağıdaki örnekte *She*, *Lucy'nin*, *it* de *diploma'nın* yerine kullanılmıştır.



Hangi zamirin hangi adın yerine kullanıldığına dikkat etmek gerekir. Belli durumlarda bir zamirin hangi adın yerine geçtiğini anlamak olaksız olabilir. Örneğin:

Jack told his father that he was a good driver.



tümcesinde *he* zamirinin hangi adın yerine kullanıldığını anlamak mümkün değildir.

Zamirlerin kullanımında göz önünde tutulması gereken kimi özellikleri sıralayalım:

- 1. Bir adla, onun yerine kullanılacak zamir tekillik-çoğulluk yönünden uyuşmalıdır.**

If a student parks a car on campus, he has to buy a parking sticker.

(NOT: If *a student* parks a car on campus, *they* have to buy a parking sticker.)

Belirsiz zamirler (*everybody, anybody, anyone, each, neither, nobody, someone, a person, etc.*) tekildirler.

Everybody ought to do **his** best.

Neither of the girls brought **her** umbrella.

- 2. Bir adla onun yerini alacak zamir kişi yönünden uyuşmalıdır.**

When **a person** comes to class, **he** should have his homework ready.

- 3. Bir zamirin birden fazla adım yerine kullanıldığını yorumlamaya neden olacak tümcelerden kaçınılmalıdır.**

Although **the motorcycle** hit the tree, it was not damaged.

(IT zamiri, *motorcycle*'nın da *tree*'nin de yerine kullanılabilir.)

George worked in a national forest last summer. This may be his life's work.

(*THIS* zamirinin hangi adım ya da yargının yerine kullanıldığı belli değil. George'un yaşamının işi olacak olan nedir?)



"My parents always send me here
for their summer holiday."

(Karikatürdeki çocuğun annesiyle babası kendi tatilleri için neden çocuklarını yaz kampına göndermiştir acaba?)

- 4. EITHER ...OR ve NEITHER ...NOR ile yapılmış öznelerde, zamirler ve iyelik sıfatları kendilerine yakın olan adla uyum sağlarlar.**

Either *you* or *your friends* must pay *their* debts.

Either *your friends* or *you* must pay *your* debt.

5. *It was I vs. It was me*

Ayrık (cleft) tümcelerde TO BE'yi zamirlerin hangi durumunun (özne/nesne) izlemesi gerekiği konusunda tam bir görüş birliği bulunmamaktadır. Genel olarak, tümcede zamirin üslendiği görevde uygun olan seçimin yapılması gerekiği söylenmektedir.

It	was	I	who	punished the guilty player.
		me	whom	they punished.

Bununla birlikte zamir özne olarak kullanılırken bile nesne durumunun kullanılması oldukça yaygındır. Tümce öznesinin slot-filling it olduğu diğer durumlarda TO BE'yi genellikle nesne durumu izler.

It	was	him
-----------	------------	------------

6. *Than I vs. than me*

Karşılaştırma ifadelerinde THAN'i izleyen zamir nesne durumunda da özne durumunda da olabilir. Günlük kullanımda zamir durumu eğlenmektedir. Karşılaştırma yapılarında dikkat edilmesi gereken önemli bir ayırm bulunmaktadır.

She likes Ankara more than me.

(She likes Ankara more than she likes me.)

She likes Ankara more than I do.

(She likes Ankara more than I like Ankara.)

Günlük kullanımda **She likes Ankara more than me** yapısının her iki anlamda da kullanıldığı görülmektedir.



EXERCISE 580

Ayraç içindeki uygun seçeneği bulunuz.

1. They took (*their/theirs*) children to the amusement park.
2. Everybody except (*he/him*) came to the rehearsal last night.
3. Bryan finished the project by (*himself/him*).
4. Velda will show this work to a colleague of (*her/hers*).
5. Mobile homes are relatively inexpensive, so many people own (*it/them*).
6. Cats bathe (*them/themselves*) several times a day.
7. Playing a musical instrument is the best way to understand (*its/their*) capabilities.
8. Only (*he/him*) was injured in the accident.
9. It was (*they/them*) who sent us the information about colleges.
10. (*Him/His*) writing is more polished than (*mine/my*).
11. Because Margaret and Sue were late, we had to start the meeting without (*they/them*).
12. The apartment manager gave (*we/us*) back our deposit.
13. I'm sorry that you have to clean your room by (*you/yourself*).
14. I didn't expect Anne to be at home this evening, but it was (*her/she*) who came to the door when I arrived.
15. I must keep (*myself/me*) busy, or I will get bored.

**EXERCISE 581**

Ayraç içindeki doğru seçeneği belirleyiniz.

1. Uncle Smith really loved Tom. He left all his money to his wife and (*his/him*).
2. A student in that all-women's college should have no fears about (*her/their*) future.
3. Neither Jack nor (*I/me*) am responsible for this mess.
4. This is a matter for you and (*I/me*) to decide.
5. Everybody in this class has completed (*his or her/their*) assignment already.
6. No one on this bus seems to know (*his or her/their*) way around this part of Istanbul.

8. If a person watches too much television, (*his/their*) eyes may suffer.
9. The system rewards (*whomever/whoever*) works hard.
10. The more a man reads, the more (*he/they*) will know about mankind.

EXERCISE 582

Ayraç içindeki uygun seçenek bulunuz.

1. Each of the contestants has completed (*their/his*) job.
2. (*Neither/Either*) of these vases is pretty; I shall return both.
3. (*Whoever/Whomever*) left that lawnmower out in the rain all winter should be required to replace it with a new one.
4. (*None/All*) but the hardiest climbers should even attempt to scale those peaks.
5. The package was addressed to mother and (*I/me*).
6. Every student should be in (*his/their*) own seat before the bell rings.
7. Ed (*himself/themselves*) is to blame for most of his trouble.
8. No one thought that it could be (*he/him*) who won' the prize.
9. John and (*myself/I*) will take charge of the entertainment.
10. Was it (*he/him*) and (*she/her*) who were injured?
No, it was May and (*I/me*).
11. Everybody seems to know more than (*I/me*).
12. The principal told (*us/we*) girls that the committee would meet after school
13. The task of decorating the stage was given to Anne and (*I/me*).
14. Give the flowers to (*whoever/whomever*) you wish.
15. He said he would punish (*whoever/whomever*) did it.

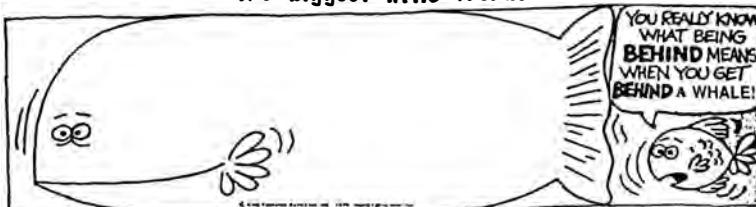


Chapter 57

PREPOSITIONS

İLGEÇLER (edatlar)

"the biggest little words"



Aşağıda bisikletli kişi ile çiftçi arasında geçen konuşmada ilgeçler eğik olarak dizilmiştir: *to, through, in, for, on, by*. İlgeçleri kullanmaksızın aşağıdaki konuşmanın gerçekleştirilebilmesi mümkün değildir.

CYCLIST: I would like to go *to* the train station as soon as possible. If I ride my bicycle *through* your field, will I get *in* time *for* the 6 o'clock train?

FARMER: Yes, you will. But if my bull *on* the field sees you, you will do it *by* 5 o'clock!

Aşağıdaki kutuda da *to, from, for* ve *by* ilgeçlerinin anlamı nasıl değiştirebildiğini görüyoruz.

The flowers were sent	from	Antalya.
	to	Helen.
	for	her.
	by	

Sınırlı sayıda olan ilgeçler, kullanım sıklığı açısından tanımlıklarla (articles) ile birlikte en önde gelen sözcük türüdür. Kullanımları öylesine yaygın ve öylesine ayrıntılar içermektedir ki İngilizce'nin öğrenilmesi ve kullanılması belki de en güç olan sözcük türüdür. İlgeçler sadece İngilizce'yi yabancı dil olarak öğrenenler için değil, anadili İngilizce olanlar için de zordur. Bu nedenlerle ilgeçlerden "the biggest little words in English" diye söz edilmektedir.

İLGEÇLER kendilerini izleyen adlar, zamirler ve ulaşır (gerunds) ile öbekler oluşturarak, **yer, yön, zaman, tarz, iyelik, ölçü, araç ve mantıksal bağıntı (amaç, neden, zıtlık)** gibi ilişkileri göstermek üzere tümce öğeleri arasında bağlar kurmaktadır.

The dog is hiding under the porch because it knows that his master is mad at him and that it will be punished for chewing up a new pair of shoes.

- Under the porch* (ilgeç + ad) saklanma işinin nerede yapıldığını göstermektedir.
- At him* (ilgeç + zamir), köpeğin sahibinin kime öfkelendiğini göstermektedir. İlgeçlerden sonra kullanılan zamirler nesne durumunda olmalıdır.
- For chewing up a new pair of shoes* (ilgeç + ulaç obeği) köpeğin hangi nedenle cezalandırılacağını belirtmektedir. *For* ilgeci neden ifade edilmesine olanak sağlamaktadır.

YAYGIN KULLANIMI OLAN İLGEÇLER *COMMON PREPOSITIONS*

aboard	barring	down	next to	throughout
about	because of	during	of	till
above	before	except (for)	off	to
according to	behind	for	on	toward(s)
across	below	from	onto	under
after	beneath	from ... to	opposite	underneath
against	beside	from ... until	out	unlike
along	besides	in	outside	until
amid	between	in addition to	over	unto
amidst	betwixt	in front of	past	up
among	beyond	in spite of	regarding	upon
amongst	but	inside	save	via
around	by	instead of	since	with
as	concerning	into	than	within
at	despite	like	through	without
		near		

İLGEÇLERİN TÜRLERİ

1	YER&KONUM (PLACE&POSITION)	The lion is in the cage. The book is beneath the table. There was rejoicing throughout the land when the enemy was defeated. She held the book over the table. The spider crawled slowly along the banister. The book is leaning against the table.
2	YÖN (DIRECTION)	The detective saw the burglar going into the house. He took a notebook out of his pocket. We went to Bursa by way of Ankara.

3	ZAMAN (TIME)	She gets up early <i>in the morning</i> . They should be back by seven <i>at the latest</i> . She learned to drive <i>in six months</i> . The office is open <i>from nine to six</i> every day except Sunday. The US used chemical weapons <i>during</i> the Vietnam War.
4	TARZ (MANNER)	The children climbed the mountain <i>without fear</i> . She walked like a wounded horse. We went there <i>by boat</i> .
5	İYELİK (POSSESSION)	The house belongs to an American. The tower of the church was damaged.
6	ARAÇ (AGENT)	Clean the monitor with a soft cloth. The declaration was written by a politician.
7	ÖLÇÜ (MEASUREMENT)	We walked for miles and miles <i>with no rest at all</i> . Milk is sold by the liter or the by the kilo. We paid a fortune <i>for this house</i> . His books are now <i>selling by the hundred thousand</i> .
8	AMAÇ (PURPOSE)	She took an aspirin <i>for her headache</i> . An altimeter is used for measuring height <i>above sea level</i> .
9	NEDEN (CAUSE)	All the buses were late <i>due to bad weather</i> . She was given a reward <i>for her exceptional performance</i> .
10	ZİTLİK (CONTRAST)	She will be admitted to the university <i>despite her bad grades</i> . In spite of his illness, he managed to look cheerful. Modern computers, notwithstanding trashy software, are still more efficient than the human brain.

İLGEÇLERİN KULLANIMI NEDEN ÇOK ZORDUR?

Sayıları hiç te fazla olmayan ilgeçler, pek çok anlam üstlenmektedirler. Somut ve soyut ilişkileri göstermek üzere kullanılmaktadır. Ayrıca aynı ilgeç pek çok değişik ilişkinin gösterilmesinde kullanılmaktadır. Örneğin *in* ilgecinin şu kullanımlarına bakalım:

She lives <i>in New York</i> .
Fill in this form <i>in ink</i> .
She gets up early <i>in the morning</i> .
She learned to drive <i>in six months</i> .
She likes walking <i>in the rain</i> .
She is <i>in a hurry</i> .
She stood there <i>in silence</i> .
She is <i>in trouble again</i> .

Göründüğü gibi, *in* yer ve zaman gösternesinin yanısıra farklı ilişkileri de gösterilmektedir. Yer ve zaman için genel kullanım ilkeleri vermek mümkün ise de, diğer kullanımları açıklayabilecek genel ilkeler bulunmamaktadır.

EN YAYGIN İLGEÇLER

Place and Position (1)		Direction (2)	Time (3)
above	in	about	about
across	in front of	across	after
after	inside	along	around
against	near	around	at
among	next to	at	before
around	on	by way of	by
at	on top of	down	during
before	opposite	into	from ... to
behind	outside	off	from ... until
below	over	onto	in
beneath	under	out of	
between	underneath	over	
by		through	
		to	
		toward	
		up	
		upon	

Manner (4)	Possession (5)	Agent (6)	Measurement (7)	Purpose (8)
by	of	by	for	for
like	to	in	of	
in	with		by	
with			for	

Cause (9)	Contrast (10)	Exception (11)	Reference (12)
because of	despite	but (for)	in/with regard to
owing to	in spite of	except (for)	in/with respect to
due to	notwithstanding	save (for)	in/with reference to
thanks to		apart from	regarding
on account of			as to
in view of			as for



"Anytime I am in trouble in school, I am in worse trouble at home."

İLGEÇLERİN VE İLGEÇ ÖBEKLERİNİN GENEL ÖZELLİKLERİ

- 1. Genel kural olarak ilgeçler, bir ad öbeğini yönetirler, yani kendilerini ad öbekleri izler.**
 into the building at two o'clock without a coat
 - 2. Belirli durumlarda zarflarla birlikte kullanılabılır.**
 until tomorrow
 through there at once
 - 3. Gerund'lar ad gibi kullanıldıklarından ilgeçler onları da yönetebilir.**
 We're thinking of *moving into the country*.
 - 4. İlgeçler, QW-ad tümceciklerini de yönetebilirler.**
 I'd better make a list of *what we need*.
 - 5. İlgeç öbekleri yer, zaman, yön, tarz, konum, neden, amaç göstererek tümcenin eylemini nitelerler; yani zarf gibi görev yaparlar.**
 They walked *towards the setting sun*.
 On Saturday there's going to be a disco.
 We drove *along a country road*.
 - 6. İlgeç öbekleri, sıfat içtümceciklerinin (adjective clause) kısa şekli olabilir. Bu kullanımda ilgeç öbeği bir eylemi değil bir adım niteleyicisi olarak kullanılmaktadır; yani bir sıfat öbeği olarak görev yapmaktadır.**
 The disco *on Saturday* has been cancelled.
 The shop *at the corner* sells rare books.
 The flat on the second floor caught fire and was badly damaged.
 We should take the road *along the river*. (The road *along the river* is safer.)
-  **İlgeç öbekleri, sıfat ya da zarf öbeği olarak kullanılırken yapıları değil tümce içindeki konumları değişir.**
- The disco *on Saturday* has been cancelled. (Sıfat öbeği)
 We went to the disco *on Saturday*. (Zarf öbeği)

ZARF MI, İLGEÇ MI?

Bazı sözcükler hem ilgeç hem de zarf olarak kullanılmaktadır. İlgeç olan sözcükleri mutlaka bir ad izlemek durumundadır.

WORD	Preposition	Adverb
outside	I waited for Max outside the bank.	Max went into the bank and I waited outside.
up	There was no lift. We had to walk up the stairs.	There was no lift. We had to walk up.
since	We haven't seen Julia since last summer.	We haven't seen Julia since.

BAĞLAÇ MI, İLGEÇ MI?

After, before, until , hem ilgeç hem de bağlaç olarak kullanılmaktadır.

WORD	Preposition	Conjunction
before	We must be ready before their arrival.	We must be ready before they arrive.
after	After treatment he was able to return to work.	After he was treated, he was able to return to work.
until	The discussion between the father and the son lasted until midnight.	I will not talk to him until he apologizes.

İLGEÇ / BAĞLAÇ ÇİFTLERİ

İlgeçlerden bazlarına THE FACT eklenerek bağlaçlar oluşturulur.

<i>despite</i>	<i>despite the fact that</i>
<i>in spite of</i>	<i>in spite of the fact that</i>
<i>due to</i>	<i>due to the fact that</i>
<i>owing to</i>	<i>owing to the fact that</i>
<i>because of</i>	<i>because of the fact that</i>
<i>on account of</i>	<i>on account of the fact that</i>
<i>in view of</i>	<i>in view of the fact that</i>
<i>regardless of</i>	<i>regardless of the fact that</i>
<i>notwithstanding</i>	<i>notwithstanding the fact that</i>
<i>but for</i>	<i>but for the fact that</i>
<i>apart from</i>	<i>apart from the fact that</i>

TÜMCE SONUNDA İLGEÇ KULLANIMI

A miser isn't much fun to live with, but he's surely a good ancestor.



"Could I have a different pencil to write with? This one won't stay on the lines."

Tümcelerin bir ilgeçle bitirilmemesi, gerektiğine inananlar bulunmaktadır. Bu gereklik, dile dayalı bir kural gibi görünmemektedir. Belli durumlarda tümce sonunda ilgeçlerin kullanılması ya mümkün değildir ya da gerçekten zorunludur.

1. *Soru sözcükleri nesneyi sorarken eylem ilgeç gerektiren bir eylemse, ilgeç genellikle tümce sonunda yer alır.*
 In what sport did you compete? What sport did you compete in?
 To whom are you speaking? Who (Whom) are you speaking to?
 For what are you looking? What are you looking for?
2. *QW-sorularında kimi zaman ilgeçler zorunlu olarak tümce sonunda yer alır. QW-tümceciklerinde ise zorunlu olarak ilgeç tümcecik sonunda bulunur.*
 Where are you from?
 What we are looking for is a cheap and clean hotel.
 What is your new job like?
 What a lot of things you complain about!
3. *Relative pronoun THAT ilgeçlerle birlikte kullanılamaz; bu durumda ilgeç zorunlu olarak tümce sonunda kullanılır.*
 This is the house that I used to live in.
 There is the man that I was speaking of.
4. *Sifat içtümcecığında ilgi adılı (relative pronoun) atılmışsa ilgeç zorunlu olarak tümce sonunda yer alır.*
 This is the house I used to live in.
 (Here is the book of which I was speaking./Here is the book which I was speaking of.) Here is the book I was speaking of.
5. *Edilgen tümcelerde ilgeç zorunlu olarak tümce sonunda yer alabilir.*
 Don't worry. The children are being looked after.
6. *Kimi infinitive phrase'lerle de ilgeç zorunlu olarak tümce sonunda yer alır.*
 He used his new pen to write with.
 A miser isn't much fun to live with.

Winston Churchill, tümce sonunda ilgeç kullanılamaz kuralına sıkı sıkıya bağlı olanlarla aşağıdaki tümceyi kurarak alay etmiştir.

This is the kind of English up with which I will not put.

Winston Churchill (1874-1965)

İLGEÇ OLAN BUT ve BUT FOR

Hariç, dışında anlamında kullanılan BUT ile, ...*olmasaydı* anlamında kullanılan BUT FOR ilgeç olarak kullanılmaktadır. BUT ilgeci, bir ilgeç öbeğinin önünde de kullanılabilmektedir.

There is a remedy for all things *but* death.

He has travelled everywhere *but* in his own country.

But for the help from the police, he might have been killed.

But for the storm, I would have been home before eight.

EXERCISE 583

Aşağıdaki tümcelerde eğik dizilmiş sözcüklerin ilgeç mi (preposition) , zarf mı (adverb) yoksa bağlaç mı (conjunction) olduğunu belirleyiniz.

1. Come and sit *beside* me.
2. What shall we have *besides* soup and bread?
3. There is nobody in the office *but* Jack.
4. Don't stand *in* the rain. Please come *in*.
5. The patients waited *outside*. They did not let them *in*.
6. Be just *before* you are generous.
7. Vows made *in* storms are forgotten *in* calm.
8. The horse was man's best friend *until* someone invented a machine that went faster.
9. Known reserves of petroleum are only sufficient *until* the end of the century.
10. The magician claims that he will vanish right *before* our eyes.
11. There are *about* 200 pages in this book.
12. The sky *above* was bright blue.
13. The turtle returns to the sea *after* it has laid its eggs.
14. We have heard that story *before*.
15. They went to Germany in 1987 and have lived there ever *since*.
16. Letter writing has almost been forgotten *since* the appearance of the telephone.
17. He was fine *before* lunch; he felt ill *afterward*.
18. Has the sun gone *down* yet?
19. A shopper should read the ingredients on a label *before* buying canned food.
20. The boys ran *up* and *down* for a few minutes to get warm.
21. Mr. Taylor is not *at* home. He has gone *away on* business.
22. My watch was *on* the table, but it fell *off*.
23. My money was in the bag. Who took it *out*?
24. Somebody might have put my pen *into* his pocket by mistake.

Chapter 58

PREPOSITIONS OF PLACE AND POSITION

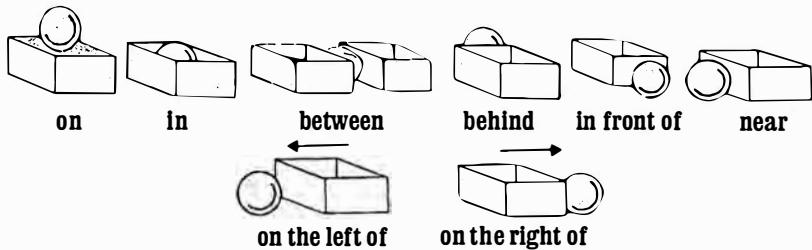
YER VE KONUM İLGEÇLERİ



Yer ve konum ilgeçleri, varlıkların bulunduğu yerleri ve konumları başka varlıklarla ilişkili olarak gösteren sözcüklerdir. Örneğin, aşağıdaki resimlerde topun yerini, kutu ve kutularla ilişkisi açısından belirliyoruz.

Where is the ball?

Aşağıdaki resimlerde topla kutu arasındaki ilişkileri hangi ilgeçlerin ifade edebileceğini görüyoruz.



Yer ve konum ilgeçlerinin kimileri soyut ilişkileri açıklamak üzere de kullanılmaktadır. Bu kullanımı ayrı bir bölümde vereceğiz. Aşağıdaki örneklerde **on**, **at**, **under** ve **among** ilgeçlerinin soyut ilişkileri ifade ettiklerini görüyoruz.



His favourite pop singer was **ON** TV last night.

His last book is **ON** poverty.

Five software engineers are working **UNDER** him. (emrinde)

She was mad **AT** her husband.

Diamond is highly prized **AMONG** women.

YAYGIN YER VE KONUM İLGEÇLERİ

above	among	behind	beyond	inside	opposite
across	around	below	by	near	over
after	around	beneath	in	next to	under
against	at	beside	in back of	on	
	before	between	in front of	on top of	

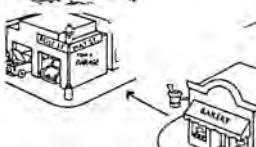

above

The plane is **above** the clouds.

The mountains tower **above** the city.

The water came up **above** our knees.

He hasn't got a roof **above** his head for the night.


across

Tom's Garage is **across** the street from the bakery.
His house is just **across** the street from us.


after

Put a question mark **after** each question.

The first street **after** the bridge is State Street.


against

The man is leaning **against** the desk.

I leaned my bicycle **against** the wall.


alongside

The bank is **alongside** the cafeteria.

Her car was parked **alongside** mine.

among

She is **among** the trees.

Her house was **among** huge pine trees.

The letter might be **among** those papers.

We live in a small village **among** the mountains.

I don't like living **among** strangers.


around

There is a supermarket **around** the corner.

The fence **around** the cemetery will be painted white.

**at**

There is a bus **at** the bus stop.
The car was waiting **at** the lights.
There's someone **at** the door.

We met **at** Daphnia's party, didn't we?

The Browns are **at** the theatre. (= watching a play)

before

Your paper is **before** the committee now.
He stood **before** the door leading to the attic.

**behind**

The man is **behind** a rock.
There is a rock **in front of** the man.

**below**

Jack's apartment is **below** Bill's.
They live in the apartment **below** ours.
The valley is **below** sea level.

beneath He had two pillows **beneath** his head.

beside

The lamp is **beside/next to** the armchair.
The man was sitting **beside** his wife.

**between**

The hunter is **between** two fierce lions.
The boy sat **between** his mother and his father.

beyond

All the houses are **beyond** the river.

There was a long sandy beach **beyond** the factory.

by / beside / next to

There is a garage **by/beside/next to** the house.
Sit **by** your mother.
That house **by** the lake is my dream house.
We live right **by** the hospital.

**in**

The lion is **in** the cage.
Hang your coat **in** the closet.



in front of

between

behind

in front of

The truck is **in front of** the ambulance.
The ball stopped **in front of** the bus.

inside**outside****inside / outside**

Come in. It is warmer **inside** the house.
You will find the gift **inside** the box.
There was no one **inside** the room.

next to

The shop **next to** the post office has a lot of rare books.
We live **next to** a supermarket.

on

The frog is **on** the mushroom.
The cat is **on** the bed.

There were modern paintings **on** the wall.
She put the dishes **on** the table.

on top of

The castle is **on top of** the hill.
There's a monument **on top of** the hill.
I want whipped cream **on top of** my strawberries.
Why are your books **on top of** the cupboard?

opposite

She was sitting **opposite** her husband.
My new school is just **opposite** a bank.

outside

There's a bird's nest **outside** my window.

Every candidate must wait **outside** the office.

**over**

There is a bridge **over** the river.
The helicopter flew **over** the city.
There is a light **over** the table.
He had a plaster **over** his eyes. (covering it)
They live **over** the road. (on the other side)
Put your coat **over** the chair.

**under**

Avni is **under** the table
The book was **under** the desk.
The cat is sleeping **under** the table.
The dog ran **under** the chair.

The town lies **under** a thick black cloud of smoke.

underneath

The book is **underneath** the papers.

There is a huge cellar **underneath** the house.
Put a pillow **underneath** his head.

AT**ON****IN**

Yer ve konum ilgeçlerinin en yaygınları **AT**, **ON** ve **IN**'dir. Bu ilgeçler arasındaki temel ayrılıkları aşağıda sıralıyoruz.

in = içinde

The cat is
in the box.

on = üstünde

The dog is sleeping
on the bed.

at = bir noktada

The teacher is at her
desk.

1. IN, AT'e göre daha büyük alanı gösterir.

She lives in Bursa. She soon arrived at a small village.

Büyük bir yer de olsa, bulunulan yer bir nokta gibi düşünülüyorsa, **AT** kullanılır.

The plane is to stop for an hour **at** New York.

The plane arrived **at** Baltimore an hour late.

2. IN, içinde olmayı vurgular; AT bir yerde olmayı ifade eder.

They met **in** the cinema. (Binanın içinde)

They met **at** the cinema. (Film seyrediyorlar)

It was cold **in** the library. (= inside the building)

We were **at** the library. (= choosing a book)

We stayed **at** the Seaview Hotel.

There are 60 bedrooms **in** the Seaview Hotel.

There are 300 seats **in** the cinema.

It is raining outside. Let's wait **in** the pub.

My friends are **at** the pub. (They are having a drink.)

It must be very hot **at** the centre of the world.

Turn right **at** the next corner.

They are waiting **at** the bus stop.

Helen is fifteen. She's still **at** school.

I had a cup of coffee **at** Angela's (house/flat).

3. Yer, bir ÇİZGİ gibi algılanıyorsa ON kullanılır.

Silifke is **on** the Göksu River.

Mersin is **on** the south coast of Turkey.

5. Şirket özel adlarıyla AT tercih edilir.

She works **at** General Motors.

She works **in** a big printing company.

6. Etkinliklerle AT kullanılır.

*at a birthday party at a meeting at a concert
 at a lecture at the match at a church service
 A timid person might hesitate to complain about poor service at a restaurant. (Lokantaya yemeğe gittiğinde)*

5. ON, yüzeyde olmayı vurgulamaktadır.

His house is on the way from here to London.

Chesterfield is on the River Thames.

There is an interesting picture on page 78.

There is a spider on the ceiling.

There is a beautiful painting on the floor.

What is that strange thing on the floor?

They live in a flat on the third floor.

6. ON, taşıt araçlarıyla da kullanılabilir,

She is arriving on the next train.

There is no room on the bus.

She is booked on flight THY 487.

7. CORNER ile hem ON hem AT kullanılabilir.

There's a newsagent's at/on the corner.

He stood on a busy street corner selling chestnuts.

An old beggar used to stand at the corner of our office block on Friday evenings playing a flute.

8. Ev numarasının da verildiği adreslerde AT kullanılır. Sadece sokak adı veriliyorsa İngiliz İngilizcesinde IN, Amerikan İngilizcesinde ON kullanılır.

We live at 555 Rosewood Street.

Sherlock Holmes lived in/on Baker Street.

A federal government computer sent checks to more than 15,000 individuals at the wrong addresses.

9. İyelik ekiyle yapılan işyerleriyle AT kullanılır.

She is always at the hairdresser's.

IN-ON-AT KARŞILAŞTIRMA ÇİZELGESİ

IN	ON	AT
to live in London to live in a building to be in a room to live in Güл Street	to live on Güл Street to live on the third floor to live on the premises drive on the left	to live at 14 Güл Street at the hairdresser's at the baker's
to arrive in a town to arrive in Bursa	to go/to be on a journey to go/to be / an excursion	to arrive at the station /airport/bus stop
in the corner	on a street corner	at a street corner

in the sea in water in the country/(the) town in the sky in the (open) air in the desert in the woods in the rain in the sun(shine) in the world in a queue	on the sea on land on the beach to live on an island to live on a farm work on land work on the land on the ground on the beach on earth on the earth	at home at the seaside at the station at the airport at the back of a queue
in school in hospital in prison in the school in the hospital in the prison in the cinema	on the stage on the platform on this page on the beach on the coast	at school at hospital at prison at the school at the hospital at the prison at the cinema
in bed (=sick) to sit in an armchair	to sit on a chair to lie on the bed	
in a newspaper in a book in a film	on paper on page 12 on television on the radio on the telephone	
in one's hand tears in one's eyes carry in a bag/pocket	on one's hand /finger/ wrist on one's back a scar on one's face	
in the middle		at the beginning at the end
in a queue/line/row in front of in the front of in the distance of	a doctor on call on the right side on the front of on both sides on my side on the left on top of on the edge of	at the back of row at the front/the back/the side of at both sides at the right side at the foot of at the bottom of at the edge of at the point of at a distance of



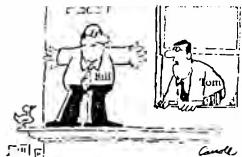
KARŞILAŞTIRMALAR



below - under

above - over

The armchair is **below / under** the photograph.
The photograph is **above / over** the armchair.



in - inside - outside

Tom is **in/inside** the office.
Bill is now **outside** the office and may jump.



on - on top of

There is a tie **on** the lamp.
There is a tie **on top of** the lamp.



under - underneath

The dog is **under** the table.
The dog is **underneath** the table.



next to - beside - by

The man is sitting **next to** the woman.
The man is sitting **beside** the woman.
The man is sitting **by** the woman.

in inside	IN = içinde; INSIDE= içinde olmayı vurguluyor <i>The money is in the safe.</i> <i>There is nobody inside the cafe.</i>
in on	IN= içinde, ON=üstünde. <i>He was sitting in an armchair.</i> <i>He was sitting on a chair.</i>
on on top of	ON= üstünde (yüzeyinde) ON TOP OF = yüksek bir şeyin üstünde <i>Put the money on the desk.</i> <i>The case was on top of the wardrobe.</i>
over above	OVER = bir noktadan daha yüksekte; ABOVE = bir şeyle aynı hizada olarak yüksekte. Aynı anlamda da kullanılır.

	<p><i>The plane flew over the mountains.</i> <i>They live on the floor above us.</i> <i>There was a clock above/over the entrance.</i> <i>The plane flew low over the houses.</i></p> <p>Bir bölge söz konusuya OVER kullanılır. <i>Thick black smoke hangs over the town.</i> <i>Someone had spread a sheet over the body.</i></p> <p>Sayılarla OVER kullanılır. <i>There are well over fifty thousand people in the stadium.</i> Düsey ilişki düşünülüyorsa ABOVE kullanılır. <i>Temperatures will rise above freezing.</i></p>
under underneath	UNDER=altında; UNDERNEATH =altında (gizli olabilir) <i>A subway runs under this street.</i> <i>She swept the dirt underneath the rug.</i>
below beneath under	BELOW = altında (aynı hızada) BENEATH = (arada mesafe) altında; UNDER =altıda <i>Parts of this country are below sea level.</i> <i>They shivered beneath their blankets.</i> <i>They are building a new tunnel under the Channel.</i>
near by close to	NEAR, BY ve CLOSE TO yakınlık gösterir. CLOSE TO yakınlığı vurgulamaktadır. <i>Sit down here by / near / close to the fire.</i> <i>We live close to the hospital.</i>



YER gösteren ilgeçler arasında yukarıda açıkladığımız farklılıklar çoğu zaman kullanımında dikkate alınmamaktadır. Bu ilgeçler arasında mecazi kullanımda ayrılıklar ortaya çıkmaktadır. Örneğin, aşağıdaki örneklerde **under** ve **below** birbirleri yerine kullanılamazlar.

Everything is under control.

To be proud of your rank is to show that you are below it.

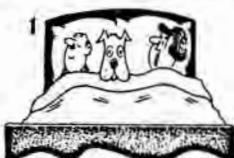


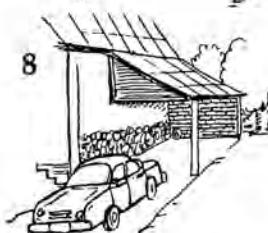
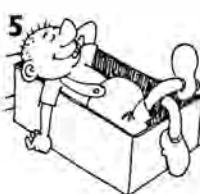
British: There is a fence **about** the garden.

American: There is a fence **around** the garden.

EXERCISE 584

Aşağıdaki resimlere ait tümceleri uygun ilgeçlerle tamamlayınız.





1. The dog is ____ Mr. and Mrs. Taylor.
2. The cabin is ____ pine trees.
3. The cats are ____ the garbage can.
4. The dog stood ____ Avni and Suna.
5. Avni is ____ the box.
6. He stood ____ the fireplace.
7. The car is ____ the garage.
8. The car is ____ the garage.
9. The Taylors are hiding ____ the curtain.
10. A van stopped ____ the car.
11. The ship is ____ bridge.
12. The magician is holding Tom ____ the shark's mouth.
13. The chick is ____ the nest.
14. The bird is ____ the nest.
15. There is a pine tree ____ the house.
16. The stork is ____ the chimney.
17. There is a bicycle ____ the door.
18. The radio is ____ the bookcase.

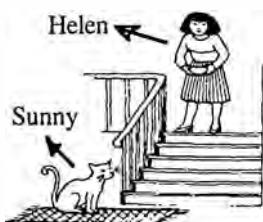
İLGEÇ ÖBEKLERİNDE **TOP, BOTTOM, BACK, FRONT**

Top, bottom, back ve *front* sözcükleri addır. Aşağıdaki resimlerde ve tümceerde bu adların kullanımlarını görüyoruz.

The dog is in the back of the car.	The dog is in the front of the car.
	

"He is not happy in the back of the car."

"See, I told you so. He is happier in the front of the car."



Helen is *at the top of* the stairs.
Sunny is *at the bottom of* the stairs.

The ship sank to the bottom of the sea.
You should put a few stones at the bottom of the flower-pot.
You can write either at the top or at the bottom of the page.
☞ *What factors may be at the bottom of violent behaviour?*
☞ *Now he is at the top of the school.*

TOP, BACK, FRONT ADLARIYLA KURULAN İLGEÇ ÖBEKLERİ

Bu adlar, *in front of*, *in back of* ve *on top of* ilgeçlerinde kullanılmaktadır. İlgeçlerde bu adların önünden *the* kullanılmadığına dikkat ediniz.

NOUN	PREPOSITION
top, front, back	on top of, in front of, in back of
There's a castle at the top of the hill.	There's a castle on top of the hill.
He read the story in the back of the newspaper.	The pharynx is the space situated in back of the nose.
The old man sat in the front of the car.	No sensible person would step out in front of a moving car.

ÖRNEKLER

Every day the world turns over on someone who was sitting **on top of** it.
-Hugh Allen

The Jews established a state right **on top of** Arabs that had lived there, in relative harmony with Jews, for thousands of years.

The vital adrenal glands lie **on top of** the kidneys.

Don't use that kind of language **in front of** my children.

She enjoys ironing **in front of** TV game shows.

There is a place for the orchestra **in front of** the stage.

My car is parked **in front of** the post office.

I am **in front of** you on the waiting list.